

THE BOOK WAS
DRENCHED

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

OU_210593

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

OSMANIA UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

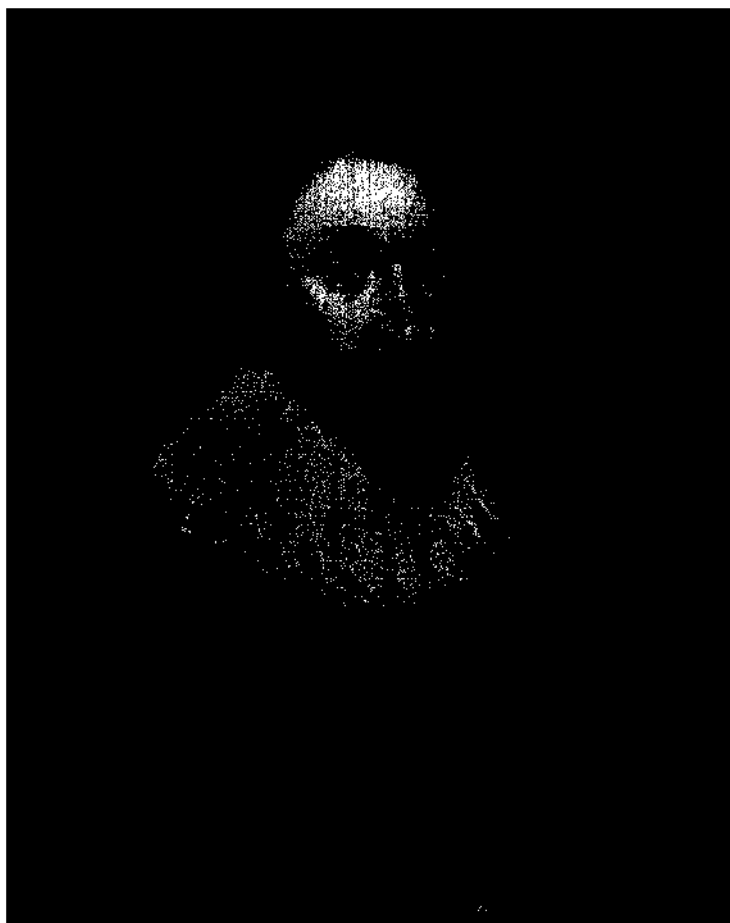
Call No. 822.34/H54B Accession No. 35456

Author Herford & Simpson.

Title Ben Jonson. vol. 8. 1952

This book should be returned on or before the date last marked below.

BEN
JONSON



The third Earl of Pembroke

From the portrait by a Flemish artist at Wilton House ...

BEN J O N S O N

Edited by C. H. HERFORD
PERCY *and* EVELYN SIMPSON

VOLUME VIII

The Poems
The Prose Works

O X F O R D
At the Clarendon Press

Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C. 4

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MLLBOURNL WELLINGTON

BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS KARACHI CAPE TOWN IBADAN

Geoffrey Cumberlege. Publisher to the University

FIRST EDITION 1947

REPRINTED LITHOGRAPHICALLY IN GREAT BRITAIN

AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, OXFORD

FROM CORRECTED SHEETS OF THE FIRST EDITION

1954

P R E F A C E

THE publication of this volume has been delayed five years by the war, and we have now carefully revised it. It marks an important stage of the edition, for it completes the text. Two subsidiary volumes will contain a commentary, supplementary notes to bring the first and second volumes up to date, Jonson's literary record, and an index.

The present volume owes much to a variety of helpers. The portrait of the Earl of Pembroke at Wilton House is reproduced by the kind permission of the Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery. Mr. Henry Hake obtained this permission for us through Captain Lord Herbert. His Grace the Duke of Bedford has allowed us to reproduce the beautiful portrait at Woburn Abbey of Jonson's patron, Lucy Countess of Bedford. The Governing Body of Dulwich College has allowed us to reproduce the portrait of Venetia Lady Digby, which is in the Dulwich Picture Gallery; we have to thank the Clerk to the Governors, Mr. W. S. Connop, for a photograph of it. Mr. C. F. Bell has, as usual, given us invaluable advice about the illustrations. We have also to acknowledge the help of Mr. Henry M. Hake, the Director and Keeper of the National Portrait Gallery, and of Mr. C. K. Adams, the Assistant to the Director. We are indebted to Mr. Ellis Waterhouse for notes on the Althorp portrait of Lady Digby.

In the matter of text the Governing Body of Christ Church, Oxford, allows us to reproduce from Jonson's autograph the opening stanzas of his Ode to the Earl of Desmond (*Underwood*, xxv), Mr. W. G. Hiscock, the Sub-Librarian of Christ Church, obtained this permission for us. The late N. M. Broadbent sent us the verses which we have added to the printed text of the 'Celebration of Charis' (*Underwood*, ii. 4). Dr. Giles E. Dawson, the Reference Librarian of the Folger Shakespeare Library at Washington, sent us a photograph of the manuscript of the Jermyn Epitaph (*Inscription* i), and obtained leave for us to print it. Captain R. B. Haselden of the Henry E. Huntington Library sent us a photograph of the autograph inscription to Francis Segar (*Inscription* vii), and got leave for us to print it. The late William Andrews Clark sent us, through Professor F. P. Wilson, a photograph of the verses to Lady Bedford in his copy of *Cynthia's Revels* (*Inscription* ii); the volume is now in the Clark Memorial Library. Mr. Frank Capra sent us a photograph of the autograph lines to Alexander Glover in a copy of the 1616 Folio (*Inscription* xi). Messrs. Glyn, Mills & Co., the successors of Childs Bank, allowed us to copy the 'Verses over the Door of the Apollo' from the original panel preserved in their bank (see page 657).

The late Bertram Dobell sent us transcripts of all the Jonson poems in two of his manuscripts. The late Marquis of Salisbury allowed us to collate

at Hatfield the autograph copies of *Epigrams* xliii and Ixiii addressed to the first Earl of Salisbury. Mr. S. Christie Miller allowed us to transcribe from his copy of *Love's Martyr* the text of 'The Phoenix and Turtle'¹ (*Forest*, x, xi, *Ungathered Verse*, iv, v). The Council of St. John's College, Cambridge, through their Librarian, Mr. Hugh Gatty, allowed access to Jonson poems in their College manuscripts. The Library Committee of Edinburgh University, through their Librarian, Mr. L. W. Sharp, deposited in the Bodleian Library Edinburgh MS. DC. 7 94, a transcript of the 1640 Duodecimo edition of the *Poems*. The Bishop of Stepney, the Right Reverend Robert Moberly, enabled us to date the epitaph on Robert Jermyn from the Church Register of St. Margaret's, Lothbury.

The engraved title-page of Coryat's *Crudities* is taken from the special copy which he gave Prince Henry ; it is now in the British Museum. In all the ordinary copies at London, Oxford, and Cambridge the paper is too badly worn to use for a reproduction ; before the Museum copy returned from its war-time shelter, we despaired of reproducing it, and Mr. Basil Blackwell came to the rescue by giving us permission to reproduce the collotype copy in Mr. B. H. Newdigate's edition of Jonson's *Poems*.

An acknowledgement of another kind is to reco'rd the generosity of Oriel College, Oxford, in making a research grant of £100 towards the edition after our Leverhulme Research Fellowship expired.

Finally, we have once again gratefully to acknowledge the skill and care with which the staff of the Clarendon Press have threaded their way through the tangle of the critical apparatus. This volume, like the last volume of the *Alasqucs*, has been a severe test both for the printers and the editors.

P. S.

Oriel College, Oxford.

3 October 1946.

C O N T E N T S

LIST O F ILLUSTRATIONS	x

LIST OF FACSIMILES	xiii

THE TEXT: Introductory Note	xv

POEMS

The Text o f the Poems	3
Epigrams	21
The Forest	91
The Underwood	123
Horace his Art o f Poetry	297
Appendix XV: The First Version of the Duodecimo	338
Ungathered Verge	357
Appendix XVI: Poems ascribed to Jonson	421

PROSE WORKS

The English Grammar	453
Timber, o r Discoveries	555
Leges Convivales	651
Inscriptions	659
Index o f firstlines of the P o e m s	667

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

THE THIRD EARL OF PEMBROKE. From the portrait by a Flemish artist at Wilton House, in the collection of the Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery . . . *Frontispiece*

This is a portrait of Jonson's generous patron, who gave him twenty pounds every new-year's day to buy books. The Earl's head and shoulders are turned to his left. He wears a black doublet slashed with yellow, a broad falling ruff, and a broad blue riband with a pendant jewel round his neck. He has dark hair and beard, and the background is dark. The portrait is inscribed: 'William Earl of Pembroke ob^t 1630.'

The painter is unknown; he is an artist of the school of Mytens. The portrait is reproduced in Neville R. Wilkinson's *Wilton House Pictures*, 1907, i, facing p. 113.

LUCY COUNTESS OF BEDFORD, from the portrait at Woburn Abbey in the collection of the Duke of Bedford *Facing page 60*

¹A rich, deep-toned, melancholy picture', as Sir George Scharf describes it in his *Catalogue of the Pictures at Woburn Abbey*, 1877, part I, p. 50. A pensive figure, seated towards her right, resting her cheek on her hand and looking fixedly at the spectator. She wears a black dress adorned with black jewellery; the black background of the picture heightens the sombre effect. Her gold coronet introduces a touch of colour, and her hair is a fairly warm *blonde-cendrée*. She wears a large ruff and cuffs trimmed with bone-lace; in her left hand she carries a handkerchief of white lace. The rings on the third finger of either hand are tied to the wrists by a black string. The portrait was engraved by W. Freeman in 1826 for Edmund Lodge's *Portraits of Illustrious Personages*, v, no. 2.

In the Edwards collection at the Town Hall of Stow-on-the-Wold there is a picture of the Countess wearing a similar dress with white embroidery on which the jewels are fastened. She stands facing the spectator.

Both these pictures are attributed to Gerard Honthorst, who visited England in the latter half of 1628, a year after the death of the Countess.

Thomas Pennant in his *Tour of Scotland*, 1776, ii, pp. 219-20, describing the Erskine collection at Alloa Castle, says: 'In the house are some good portraits, particularly one of the celebrated *Lucy*, Countess of *Bedford*, a full length, in black, with a ruff, and a coronet on her head. She sits with a pensive countenance, her face reclined on one hand, and is, without beauty, an elegant figure.' In a footnote he adds: 'Painted by *Cornelius Jonsen*, in 1620, in the 38th year of her age.'¹ The Countess was born in 1581, and the date 1620 is on a scroll at the bottom of the picture; the attribution is traditional. Horace Walpole is not to be trusted on such a point, but it is at least a coincidence that, when he described the Woburn portraits to George Montague in a letter of 8 October 1751, he made the same attribution: 'One countess', he says, 'is a whole-length, dancing in the drollest dress you ever saw';¹ and another picture of the same woman leaning on her hand, I believe by Cornelius Johnson, is as fine a head as ever I saw' (*Letters*, ed. Toynbee, 1903, iii, p. 70).

The Alloa portrait is reproduced by H. Collins Baker in *Lely and the Stuart Portrait Painters*, 1912, i, opposite page 64. He believes this to be the original of the Woburn and other portraits of the Countess.

LADY DIGBY ON HER DEATH-BED, from the portrait
in the Dulwich Picture Gallery *Facing page 274*

Venetia, Lady Digby, was found dead in her bed on 1 May 1633.
'She past away', said Habington,
So sweetly from the world, as if her clay
Laid only down to slumber.

In this pathetic portrait the figure is life-size. The head and the right arm, against which she leans her cheek, alone are visible; she is seen full face, turned a little to her right. Her hair is dark brown. There is the faintest tinge of colour in her cheek, and the lips are pallid red: the portrait was painted immediately after death, before 'decay's effacing fingers' had marred her features. A faded rose is on the sheet; the counterpane and the curtain draped on the right of the picture are dark blue. The pillow is a greyish blue, perhaps a white which has darkened.

A miniature copy by Peter Oliver was at Strawberry Hill and

¹ Namely, the adaptation of the masquing dress she wore for *Hymenaei*; see vol. vii, p. xvii.

afterwards in the Baroness Burdett-Coutts's collection; it formed one of a considerable group, all portraits of Sir Kenelm and his family, from a representative of which they were bought all together by Horace Walpole. Lord Spencer has a similar picture at Althorp. The attitude and setting are the same. Details which suggest that Lord Spencer's was a finished copy of the Dulwich portrait are that the rose is in bloom, adding a touch of colour to the picture, and that there is a double chain of pearls round the neck. The drapery is silver-grey and the curtain dark blue.

Aubrey saw one version of the portrait. After speaking of other Digby pictures which he had seen, he says: 'Also at Mr. Rose's, a jeweller in Henrietta-street in Covent Garden, is an excellent piece of hers, drawn after she was newly dead' (*Brief Lives*, ed. Clark, i, p. 230). Both copies of the portrait are attributed to Van Dyck; the story is that Sir Kenelm sent for him to paint her at once when she lay in death. We have failed to find any contemporary record of this, and expert opinion inclines to reject the attribution. Dibdin, in the *Aedes Althorpianae*, p. 269, calls the Althorp portrait 'after Van Dyck'. Sir Lionel Cust, in his monograph *Anthony Van Dyck*, 1905, p. 89, merely notes, 'Her broken-hearted husband is said to have called in Van Dyck to paint her portrait as she lay on her death-bed', and makes no reference to the two pictures. They are omitted from the *Klassiker der Kunst* volume on Van Dyck by Gustav Gliick, 1931, though reproduced in the edition of 1909 by Emil Schaeffer. The association with Van Dyck may suggest that some member of his workshop was sent to take the sketch. Of Sir Kenelm Digby's intimate relations with him there is ample evidence: Van Dyck painted him more than once, and there is at Windsor Castle an allegorical portrait of Lady Digby by Van Dyck in which she is personified as Prudence.

Dulwich College acquired the portrait in 1811 in the collection of Sir Peter Francis Bourgeois.

LIST OF FACSIMILES

'Epigrams': the title-page in the Folio of 1616	Page 23
'Epigrams ¹ ': the title-page in the Folio of 1640	„ 24
The engraved title-page to Raleigh's 'History of the World'	<i>Facing page i n</i>
Ode to the Earl of Desmond: lines 1-25 from the auto- graph MS. at Christ Church, Oxford	Page 178
'Horace his Art of Poetry': the title-page in the Folio of 1640.	„,303
The engraved title-page of Coryat's ' Crudities', 1611 <i>Facing page 373</i>	
The printed title-page of the ' Crudities'	Page 373
The title-page of 'The English Grammar' in the Folio of 1640.	„,463
The title-page of 'Timber, or Discoveries' in the Folio of 1641.	„,561

THE TEXT: INTRODUCTORY NOTE

THE *Epigrams* and *The Forest* are printed from the authoritative Folio of 1616; *The Underwood*, *Horace his Art of Poetry*, *The English Grammar*, and *The Discoveries* from the posthumous Folio of 1640-1. The sources from which the *Ungathered Verse* has been collected are noted in the headings of each poem. The spurious poems in Appendix XVI are critically discussed and reasons are given for rejecting them.

The following symbols and abbreviations are used in the critical apparatus. In the printed texts

D, Q = Benson's duodecimo and quarto editions of the Poems, 1640.

F1 = the Folio of 1616.

F2 = the Folio of 1640.

Ff in the *Epigrams* and *The Forest* = readings common to the Folios of 1616 and 1640.

F in *The Underwood* and later texts = the Folio of 1640.

F3 = the Folio of 1692.

W = Whalley's edition of 1756.

G = Gifford's edition of 1816.

corr. *F* is a formula used to indicate an author's or printer's correction, the earlier reading being indicated by *F originally*. Changes for which the Editor is responsible are marked *Editor*.

Conical brackets enclose words inserted in the text to supply an omission of the original; square brackets enclose a letter, a word, or a poem wrongly inserted in the original. Thus poems by Donne, Godolphin, and Wotton found among Jonson's papers and printed as his in *The Underwood*, xxxix, lxxx, lxxxi, are bracketed.

Manuscripts of the poems in the British Museum and the Bodleian Libraries have been collated; those in the Bodleian have been checked, but the British Museum manuscripts have not, at the time of going to press, been returned

xvi *The Text: Introductory Note.*

to London from their war-time shelter ; one or two were not collated in time, and for the rest we have had to rely on our original collations. The following is a list of the manuscript sigla used in the critical apparatus.

Add li = Additional MS. 82, British Museum.

992 2 =	=	=	225,	99	99
99 3 3=	99	"	10309,	"	"
99 4 4=	"	"	111811,	"	"
99 5 5 =	99	"	"	15227,	15227* " 31
" 66 =	"	"	18040,	"	"
" 11= =	99	99	19268,	"	"
" 8 =	"	"	21433,	21433,	" 99
99 9 =	"	"	22602,	"	"
" 10 =	99	99	22603,	"	"
" 11 =	99	99	23229,	"	"
" 12 =	"	"	25303,	99	99
" 13 =	99	99	25707,	"	"
" 14 =	39	99	27406,	"	"

" 15 —	"	"	302591	30259,	99
" 16	"	"	"	30529,	"
" 16 TM =	"	"	"	30549,	"

" 17 =	"	"	"	33992,	"
" 18 =	"	"	"	33998,	"

" 19 =	"	"	22582,	"	"
" 20 =	"	"	23070,	p. 8190,	British Museum.

Ash i = MS. Ashmole 36-7, Bodleian Library.

" 2 2=	"	"	"	39	"
" 3=	"	"	"	47f	47, "
" 4 =	"	"	"	48,	"

" 5 5=	"	"	"	781	"

Aub i = MS. Aubrey 6, Bodleian Library.

" 2 =	"	"	"	8	"

CCCI = MS. 184, Corpus Christi College, Oxford.

" 2 =	MS. 322,	"	"	"
" 3 =	MS. 328,	"	"	"

Ch i = MS. 2217, Chatham Library, Manchester.

" 2 =	MS. 8012,	"	"	"

Digby = Poems from Sir Kenelm Digby's Papers in the possession of Henry A. Bright, 1877.

Douce i = MS. Douce 5, Bodleian Library.

Douce 2 = MS. Douce B 131, Bodleian Library.

EPz = MS. English poetry e 14, Bodleian Library.

" 2 = " " " f 9, " "

" 3 = " " " " 37, " if

Ed = MS. DC. 7. 94 in the Library of Edinburgh University.

Eg i = Egerton MS. 923, British Museum.

" 2 = " ft 2013, " "

" 3 — " " 2026, " "

" 4 == " " 2421, " "

" 5= " « 2725, " "

Firth = MS. Firth e 4, Bodleian Library.

Hi = Harleian MS. 791, British Museum.

H2 = " " 35¹¹! " "

H3 = " " 3910, " "

H4 = " " 4064, " "

HS = " " 6057, " "

H6 = " " 6917, " "

H7 = " " 6931, " "

H8 = " " 4094, " "

J1 = MS. S. 23, St. John's College, Cambridge.

J2 = MS. S. 32, " " "

J₃ = MS. 5. 82, " " "

L = Lansdowne MS. 740, British Museum.

Mai = MS. Malone 19, Bodleian Library.

N = Harleian MS. 4955 (Newcastle MS.), British Museum.

Ri = MS. Rawlinson B 20/Bodleian Library.

R2 = " " D 1092, " "

RP i = MS. Rawlinson poetry 23, Bodleian Library.

" 2 = " " 20, " "

" 3 = " " 31, " "

" 4 = " " " " "

" 5 = " " 116, " "

" 6 = " " 117, " "

" 7 = " " 142, " "

" 8 == " " 147, " "

" 9 = " " 100, " "

" 10 = " " 172, " "

" 11 == " " 206, " "

" 12 = " " 210, " "

" 13 = " " 246, " "

xviii ***The Text: Introductory Note.***

RP 14 = MS. Rawlinson poetry 166, Bodleian Library.

SI i = Sloane MS. 396, British Museum.

" 2 = " " 1446 „ "

" 3 = " 1489 " "

" 4 = " " 1792 " "

St = Stowe MS. 961, British Museum.

TCD = MS. G. 2. 21, Trinity College, Dublin, in two hands (i)
pages 1-292, (2) pages 293-565-

Where a poem is in only one manuscript of a set, the critical apparatus has ' Add ', ' H ', ' RP \ without repeating the numbers. Where a manuscript text is worthless, its existence is mentioned, but the collations are not printed.

POEMS

THE TEXT OF THE POEMS

The *Epigrams*, 'book I'—the only book Jonson lived to publish; he seems to have merged later examples in the collection of *The Underwood*—and *The Forest* appeared in the first Folio of 1616. *The Underwood*, collected by Sir Kenelm Digby from Jonson's papers, was published in the second Folio of 1640-1. In 1640, before this Folio appeared, John Benson issued two small volumes of Jonson's verse the manuscript of which he had surreptitiously acquired. The first of these he entered on the Stationers' Register on 16 December 1639:

John Benson. Entred for his Copie vnder the hands of Master Clay and Master Bourne warden a booke called Ben Johnsons Execration against Vulcan with other his smaller Epigrams vj^d
Arber, *Transcript*, iv. 493.

It appeared early in 1640—*Ben: I orison's Execration against Vulcan. With divers Epigrams by the same Author to severall Noble Personages in this Kingdome. Never Published before.* The printer was John Okes. The collation, A to G in fours, is as follows: A I recto, blank; A I verso, Robert Vaughan's engraved portrait of Jonson; A 2 recto, the title-page with the verso blank; A 3 recto to A 4 recto, the dedication to Lord Windsor; A 4 verso, 'Imprimatur Matth. Clay. Decemb. 14. 1639'; B I recto to C I recto, the *Execration against Vulcan*; C I verso to G 3 recto, the *Epigrams*, with two leaves of 'f' inserted after F 4 verso; G 3 verso, lines by Zouch Townley 'To Mr. Jonson'; G 4 recto, a few *corrigenda*, 'Courteous Reader, some litterall faults are escaped, by oversight of the Corrector to the Presse, which I entreat thee to mend with thy Pen as thou espyest them, which are these'; G 4 verso, blank.

The *Epigrams* are (i) a birthday ode to King Charles,¹ This is King Charles his day' (*Und.* Ixxii); (2) a birthday address to the Queen, 'Vppublicke ioy, remember' (*ib.* Ixvii); (3) lines on the birth of Prince Charles, 'And art thou borne,

brave Babe' (ib. Ixv), followed by two poems not in the Folio, (4) 'Another on the Birth of the Prince' beginning 'Another Phoenix, though the first is dead' (App. XV. i) and (5) 'A Parallel of the Prince to the King', beginning 'So Peleus when he faire Thetis got' (ib. ii); (6) the elegy on Lady Pawlet (*Und.* Ixxxiii); (7) 'ODE PINDARICK On the Death of Sir *Hen. Morison*' (ib. Ixx); (8) lines to Lord Weston on his return from his embassy, beginning 'Such pleasures as the teeming earth' (ib. Ixxiv); (9) further lines to Lord Weston, 'If to my mind, great Lord, I had a state' (ib. Ixxvii); (10) John Eliot's attack on the preceding poem, 'To Mr. *Jonson* upon these Verses' and (11) Jonson's reply 'To my Detractor' ('My verses were commended, thou didst say') (*U.V.* xxxvii); (12) to Lord Newcastle 'on the Backing of his Horse' (*Und.* liii); (13) another on his fencing (ib. lix); (14) lines on Sir Kenelm Digby (ib. Ixxviii); (15, 16) two poems on Lady Digby, 'His Mistress drawn' and 'Her Mind' (ib. Ixxxiv. 3 and 4); (17) Sir W. Borlase's lines to Jonson (ib. Hi), not followed by Jonson's reply, because of the printer's clumsy inset of two leaves containing (18), the lines to the Queen, 'Hail, Mary, full of grace' (ib. Ixvi) and (19) Jonson's 'Ode to Himself on the failure of *The New Inn*, 'Come, leave the loathed stage'; (20) Jonson's answer to Borlase (ib. Hi); (21) 'Upon my Picture left in Scotland' (ib. ix); (22) 'On a Gentlewoman working by an Hourglass' (ib. viii); (23) an ode to the Ladies of the Court, 'Come, noble nymphs', written for *Neptune's Triumph* and *The Fortunate Isles*; (24) Karolin's song in *The Sad Shepherd*, Act i, scene v, 'Though I am young, and cannot tell'. The running headlines are 'Ben: Jonson's *Execration against VULCAN*' and '*Epigrams*'. Most of the poems are printed alternately in italic and roman.

Next Benson reissued these poems in duodecimo, preceding them with Jonson's version of the *Ars Poetica* and *The Gypsies Metamorphosed*. He had registered the former on 8 February 1640, and the latter on 20 February (Arber, *Transcript*, iv. 498, 500). The trouble in which this involved

Thomas Walkley, who had bought the manuscript of the later masques, the poems, and the prose works for forty pounds from Sir Kenelm Digby, has been noticed earlier.¹ The volume had an engraved title-page with William Marshall's portrait in a niche above, and below 'Q: HORATIVS FLACCUS, his Art of POETRY. *Englisht by Ben: Jonson.* London. *Printed for John Benson.* 1640.' There is a second state of the imprint: 'London. *Printed for J. Benson and are sold by W. Ley at Paules-Chayne.* 1640.' A printed title-page is added, which is copied from the Quarto. The collation, A to G in twelves, is in detail: A I, blank; A 2 recto, 'Imprimatur: Mat. Clay. And by other Authority. Febr. 21. 1639.' [i.e. 1640]; A 2 verso and A 3 recto, blank; A 3 verso, the engraved title-page; A 4 recto, the printed title-page, with the verso blank; A 5 recto to 6 verso, a new dedication to Lord Windsor; A 7 recto, verses by Sir Edward Herbert; A 7 verso to 9 verso, verses by Barton Holyday; A 10 recto, Zouch Townley's lines reprinted from the Quarto; A IO verso to 12 verso, I. C.'s encomium of Jonson's Ode on *The New Inn*; B¹², C I, C 2 recto, the version of the *Ars Poetica*; C 2 verso, blank; C 3 recto, title-page of the *Execration against Vulcan*, with the verso blank; C 4 recto to 8 verso, the text of the *Execration*; C 9, a blank leaf; C IO recto, the title-page of *The Masque of the Gypsies*, with the verso blank; C II recto to E 4 verso, e¹², the text of the masque;² F I recto, the title-page of the *Epigrams*, with the verso blank; F 2 recto to G 11, the text of the *Epigrams*; G 12, a blank leaf. The text, except for the twenty-four leaves of preliminary matter, is paged: the *Art of Poetry* pages 1-27; the *Execration* pages 29-40; the *Gypsies* pages 43 to 94 originally, extended to page 104 in the resetting; the *Epigrams* pages 93-138. The poems are uniformly printed in roman. There are no running-titles.

Okes corrected the errors of arrangement in the Quarto:

¹ See vol. vi, pp. 145-6.

^a For the changes caused by resetting see vol. vii, pp. 551-5.

thus, he placed '*An Epgram (sic) to the Queens Health*' after the second poem in the collection, '*To the Queen on her Birth-day*', so the sequence of Borlase's poem and Jonson's reply to it was not broken. In one poem, Ixxxiv (4), '*The Minde*' of Lady Venetia Digby, the Duodecimo corrects some errors of the Quarto, as if, for that poem at least, the manuscript copy was available. And there are occasional variants, as in Ixxvii. 6 where the Quarto reads (with the Folio) '*Romano, Tintaret*' and the Duodecimo '*Romans famous Tintaret*'. But, generally speaking, their identity in error points to their having a common source. For instance, in the elegy on Lady Pawlet (Ixxxiii. 25-7) the Folio reads :

I durst not aime at that: The dotes were such
Thereof, no notion can expresse how much
Their Carract was !

Duodecimo and Quarto both wreck the verse by reading

I durst not aime at, the Dotes thereof were such
No Nation can expresse how much
Their Charact was.

In the Library of Edinburgh University is a contemporary transcript (MS. DC. 7. 94) in a neat and minute hand of the '*Execration*' against 'Vulcan' and the '*Epigrams to Severall Noble Personages*'¹ taken from the Duodecimo, pages 29-40, 93-138. It copies mistakes of the printed text but has occasional variants, of which the most interesting is in the '*Elegy to Lady Pawlet*', 1. 7, 'to give your shade a lasting name'; 'lasting' makes the line an alexandrine and is not found in any other text of this poem.

The chief later editions of Jonson's *Poems* were in Robert Anderson's *A Complete Edition of the Poets of Great Britain*, 1792-5, in volume iv, pages 521-618; Alexander Chalmers's *The Works of the English Poets from Chaucer to Cowper*, 1810, volume v, pages 459-549 ; and Robert Bell's *The Poetical Works of Ben Jonson*, 1856. In 1936 the Facsimile Text Society of New York reproduced the

Epigrams, *The Forest*, and *The Underwood* in facsimile from the Folios of 1616 and 1640, with a bibliographical note by Hoyt H. Hudson : the text of the *Epigrams* and *The Forest* was taken from a copy of the 1616 Folio in the New York Public Library ; the text of *The Underwood* from the copy of the 1640 Folio in the Columbia University Library. Two readings which we have not found elsewhere are—in *Epigram* xxiv. 2 the correction ' ne're ' for ' nere ' ; in *The Underwood*, lxxxiv. 4. 12 the omission of ' a ' in ' to expresse a Mind '. In 1936 Mr. B. H. Newdigate edited the *Poems of Ben Jonson* for the Shakespeare Head Press, Oxford. He issued a slightly corrected text of the authoritative poems in the two Folios; he collected under the heading ' Driftwood ' all other poems in manuscript or print which did not find a place in the Folios ; he anthologized the songs in the plays and the masques ; in a section headed ¹ Farrago ' he printed odds and ends attributed to Jonson, and in ' Frondes Latinae ' Jonson's Latin poems. It is the most complete edition of the poems which has appeared.

For a number of the poems there are important copies in manuscript. Six holographs stand out above the others. The Cecil Papers at Hatfield have the original copies of *Epigrams* xliii and lxiii which Jonson sent to the first Earl of Salisbury. The British Museum has the autograph of *Epigram* xci addressed to Sir Horace Vere, and Christ Church, Oxford, the Ode to the Earl of Desmond (*Und.* xxv). All Jonson's patrons and friends must have received from him copies of the tributes which he paid them, but these are all that we know to have survived. Two other poems in autograph are the translation of Martial's epigram on the happy life (x. 47) preserved at Dulwich College (*Und.* xc), and *An Expostulation with Inigo Jones* (*U.V.* xxxiv) in the library of the Earl of Ellesmere.

Second only in importance to the holographs are the manuscripts containing first drafts of poems which Jonson carefully revised before they appeared in print. Of the

Epigrams we have nothing except the slightly retouched poems to Lord Salisbury, but there are six first copies of poems in *The Forest*. Every poem in that collection must have been sent originally to the friends and patrons commemorated in it. For instance, we learn from Drummond¹ that Lord and Lady Pembroke, disputing whether women were men's shadows, appealed to Jonson, who decided in the Earl's favour: Lady Pembroke imposed on Jonson the penance of proving it in verse; 'hence his Epigramme' (vii). Jonson must have sent a copy to Lady Pembroke, but, as far as we know, no early transcript of this poem survives. Similarly we have not found a manuscript of the Penshurst poem (ii); there is none at Penshurst. But of the poem to Sir Robert Wroth at Durance there are first drafts in Harley MS. 4064 and Rawlinson poetry MS. 31. In lines 41-4

The ripened eares, yet humble in their height,
And furrowes laden with their weight;
The apple-haruest, that doth longer last;
The hogs return'd home fat from mast.—

Jonson wrote originally

The ripened eares, cut doune in their most height,
And furrowes laden with their weight;
The apple-haruest, and plow'd land vpcast;
The hogs return'd home fat with mast.

And after line 60 he cancelled a couplet suggested, rather hyperbolically, by the Biblical 'a land flowing with milk and honey' (Exodus iii. 8) and 'a land of oil olive and honey' (Deuteronomy viii. 8)—

The milk, nor oyle did euer flow soe free,
Nor yellow honie from the tree.

First drafts of the famous lines 'To Celia' (ix) are found in two British Museum MSS., Sloane 1446 and Additional MS. 25707, and in Trinity College Dublin MS. G. 2. 21.

¹ *Conversations*, II. 364-7.

Drinke to me, onely, with thine eyes,
And I will pledge with mine ;
Or leaue a kisse but in the cup,
And He not looke for wine. . . .
I sent thee, late, a rosie wreath,
Not so much honoring thee,
As giuing it a hope, that there
It could not withered bee.

So the final form. But originally the lines ran

Drinke to me, Coelia, with thine eyes,
And He pledge thee with mine,
Leaue but a kisse within the cup,
And He expect no wine. . . .
I sent to thee a rosie wreath,
Not so to honor thee,
As being well assur'd that there
It could not withered bee.

And in the final couplet

Since when it growes, and smells, I sweare,
Not of it selfe, but thee.—

' growes ' was originally ' Hues '. The poem is a cento of five separate passages in the *Epistles* of Philostratus ; after combining them, Jonson transformed the poem. ' Onely ' for ' Celia ' and discarding the rather prosaic 'As being well assur'd ' attest the truth and fineness of his poetic touch.

The two poems reprinted from Robert Chester's *Love Martyr*, 1601, ' Proludium ' (x) and ' Epode ' (xi), do nothing to solve the enigma of that difficult poem ; it has won immortality from Shakespeare's contributions. The ' Proludium '¹ was completely rewritten for Chester's book. The first version, much more suited to the poems it accompanied, is the copy originally sent to Sir John Salisbury of Llewenni, to whom Chester dedicated his book. Why Jonson rewrote it in so incongruous a form, why he reprinted this ribald

¹ ' Proludium ', not ' Praeludium ', which is found only in late and medieval Latin. ' Proludium ' is also late Latin and means ' preliminary training '. We might translate it here ' preliminary canter '.

version in *The Forest* without even the clue of a heading, and why he left the only clue he did give to the concluding triplet of the poem, we are puzzled to explain : it clashes with the whole tone of *The Forest*. We have included the first draft in the text. There are minute changes in the revised text of the ' Epode ', but they chiefly affect punctuation : the early form is preserved, along with the ' Proludium ', in the National Library of Wales. ' Crowne-worthy^f for ' praise worthye ' is an improvement in line 88.

First drafts of the ' Epistle to the Countess of Rutland ' (xii) survive in Harley MS. 4064 and Rawlinson poetry MS. 31 ; they are valuable for giving the concluding lines 93-100, which were not printed in the Folio text. The Folio version breaks off at line 93, with a note ' *The rest is lost* '.^x It was not lost, but tactfully cancelled. The poem was written in the first year of the marriage, 1599, and ended with the hope that, before the year was out, the Countess would bear a son. The Earl was impotent, if not at the time of the marriage, at any rate shortly after it.² The impotence was current gossip long before the Folio appeared, and the original conclusion would have excited derision in Court circles, apart from the pain it would have given the Countess.

For *The Underwood* we have in manuscript or in the Duodecimo and Quarto texts of 1640 first drafts of the poem on the anniversary of King Charles's accession (Ixiv), on the birth of Prince Charles, afterwards Charles II, 1630 (Ixxv), on the Queen's birthday celebration, 1630 (Ixxvii), and on the King's, 1632 (Ixxii), and on the petition to the King to increase the poet's pension, 1630 (Ixxvi) : there are some tactful alterations in this last, for instance, the change of⁴ ' this so accepted summe ' for ' this so thrifty sum ' to describe King James's grant of one hundred marks a year,

¹ First printed by W. D. Briggs from the Harley MS. in *Modern Language Notes*, 1914, xxix, pp. 156-7. His explanation that Jonson ' tore off ' the conclusion because of Lord Rutland's implication in the Essex rising of 1602 misses the point.

² Explained in the *Drummond Conversations*, 11. 220-2.

and ' Or dispenc'd in bookes, or bread ' for ' Well dispenc'd ', a less complacent account of the poet's use of it. Jonson also retouched the *Epistle to Selden* (xiv), the prefatory lines to Raleigh's *History of the World* (xxiv), the generous and sympathetic *Ode to James, Earl of Desmond* (xxv), complimentary tributes to his patrons, Lady Covell (Ivi), Lord Treasurer Weston (Ixxvii), and Lady Digby (Ixxviii), and the elegy on Lady Pawlet (Ixxxiii). 'The Musical Strife' (iii) was completely recast: originally it had six stanzas and was a musical duet between two women, named in one manuscript Phyllis and Corinna. Phyllis sang stanzas 1 and 2 'Come, with our Voyces', 'Mixe wee our notes'; Corinna replied with the third stanza, 'What need of mee?'; Phyllis again with the fourth and fifth stanzas 'They say the Angells marke each Deed', 'Sing you no more then', and the final stanza is given to both as ¹ Chorus'. Even for a 'pastoral dialogue' the note was high-pitched when one woman advised another to discontinue her singing for fear that 'the best of Angels', overhearing her, should fall like Lucifer, 'Mistaking earth for heaven'. Jonson transformed the poem by making it a singing-match between a shepherdess and a shepherd, inserting a second stanza and giving it to the shepherd:

At such a Call, what beast or fowle
Of reason emptie is ?
What Tree or stone doth want a soule ?
What man but must lose his ?

In this way the reference to the angel falling was effectively introduced. Similarly the nine stanzas of the Queen's birthday *Ode* (Ixxvii) gained by being distributed among the nine Muses.

In two passages manuscripts supply a word omitted in the Folio text. In Jonson's 'Ode to Himself' (xxiii. 6) the faulty sixth line 'That eats on wits, and Arts, and destroyes them both' is restored from three manuscripts, Harley 4064 and Egerton MS. 923 in the British Museum and MS.

Rawlinson poetry 31 in the Bodleian,' and oft destroyes them both'. Four conjectures, all of them wrong, have been made to fill this gap. More important is a correction in the poem to Sir William Borlase, 'The Poet to the Painter' (Hi): 'You were not tied', says Jonson, 'to square my circle, . . . but draw my superficies.'

Which if in compasse of no Art it came
To be described in a *Monogram*,
With one great blot, yo'had form'd me as I am.

What do the first two lines, so printed in all the editions, mean? The Rawlinson poetry MS. 142 restores the sense by reading 'To be describ'd but in a *Monogram* V

Jonson bestowed unusual care upon the 'Execration on Vulcan' (*Und.* xliii), rewriting a number of lines in it. The early state of the text is preserved in no less than five manuscripts. Three of these closely correspond: Additional MSS. 21433 and 25303, and Harley MS. 3910 in the British Museum. So do Sloane MS. 1792 in the British Museum and English Poetry MS. e. 14 in the Bodleian: these are bad texts. A slightly later state of the text, intermediate between the preceding and the printed versions, is in the important Newcastle MS. Harley 4955.

Disregarding minor changes, we note the following variations of the Additional MSS. and Harley MS. 3910.

Lines 33-4	Or spent my wretched paper or my time In weaving riddles in more wretched rhyme.—
altered to	Or spun out riddles and weav'd fifty tomes Of Logogriphs and curious Palindromes.
Line 48	Or if thou wouldst enforce the power from her—
altered to	Or if thou needs wouldst trench upon her power.
Line 53	Cloth spices or guard sweetmeats from the flies—
altered to	Singe capons or poor pigs dropping their eyes.
Line 58	To make <i>propter viam</i> * ever where thou goest—

¹ This reading is also found in Tonson's *The Sixth Part of Miscellany Poems*, purporting to be 'Publish'd by Mr. Dryden' in 1716, p. 382.

² See Plautus. *Rudens*, L 150 'Propter viam illi sunt vocati ad prandium'. with E. A. Sonnenschein's note.

where the pedantic ' make *propier viam* ' becomes ' make consumption '. In line 119 ' the Pageant day ' was originally ' the next Maior's day ', and in line 120 ' a *Vulcanale* ' was ' a pagan prayer '.

Line 180 The dyers, glasshouse, and the furnaces
became The glasshouse, dyefats, anc} their fornaces.

Lines 183-6 Condemn him to the brick-kills or a forge
 Some four miles hence, and have him there
 disgorge,
 Or else in penny faggots blaze about
 Vile taverns—

were altered to
 Condemn him to the brick-kills, or some hill-
 foot out in Sussex, to an iron mill,
 Or in small faggots have him blaze about
 Vile taverns.

Lines 191-6 were shorter in the original version :
 Pox on your fireworks, Vulcan, if they be
 To all as chargeful as th'have been to me,
 And to Paul's steeple, which, though a divine
 Loss, remains yet as much despair'd as mine.

This became
 Pox on your flameship, Vulcan, if it be
 To all as fatal as 't hath been to me,
 And to Paul's steeple, which was unto us
 'Bove all your fireworks had at Ephesus
 Or Alexandria ; which, though a divine
 Loss, remains yet as unrepair'd as mine.

Besides these readings of the Additional MSS. and the Harley MS., the Newcastle, Sloane, and English Poetry MSS. record other changes. In line 45 they read

Adulterate maskings, such as might not go-

where ' maskings ' was altered to ' moneys ' ; and in lines 49, 50

Thou might'st have yet enjoy'd thy cruelty
With some more change and taste of tyranny—

the second line became

With some more thrift, and more variety.

In line no 'Cause thou canst do these halting tricks in
fire-

became 'Cause thou canst halt with us in arts and fire.

Line 139 There were that straight did nose (*v.l.* noise)
it out for news—

was made more explicit as the context clearly referred to
the Puritans :

The Brethren, they straight noised it out for
news.

Lines 205-8 were originally in these manuscripts :

Blow up and ruin, and enjoy the praise
Of murdering of mankind many ways.

This was expanded to

Blow up and ruin, mine and countermines,
Make your petards and granats, all your fine
Engines of murder, and receive the praise
Of massacring mankind so many ways.

In two passages the Sloane MS. has readings not found
elsewhere

Line 56 Not snatch'd them hence in one poor minute's
- rage

for Not ravish¹d all hence in a minute's rage.

In lines 59-63 Jonson says, had he foreknown of Vulcan's
wish to have a feast of fire

Especially in paper; many a ream
Had filled your large nostrils with the steam.

The Folio has

Especially in paper; that that steam
Had tickled your large nostril, many a ream
... I had sent in.

All five manuscripts have, with slight variation, the
reference to the lost translation of Barclay's *Argenis*
(11- 95-7) :

Three books not amiss
Reveal¹d (if some can judge) of *Argenis*
For our own ladies.

For this Jonson substituted a vaguer reference :

Three books not afraid
To speak the fate of the Sicilian Maid
To our own ladies.

The scene of *Argenis* is laid in Sicily. Kingsmille Long's translation of Barclay appeared in 1625 : its publication, or the knowledge that Long was at work upon it, may account for the alteration here.¹

Two awkward lines (99, 100), in reference to the *History of Henry the Fifth*,

Wherein, besides the noble aids were lent
By Carew, Cotton, Selden, oil was spent—

were not much improved in the later form :

Wherein was oil, beside the succour spent,
Which noble Carew, Cotton, Selden lent.

But on the whole Jonson's changes strengthened the poem.

To penetrate into Jonson's workshop, to stand behind him, as it were, and peep over his shoulder, throws a flood of light on his working methods. ' For a man to write well,¹ he said in the *Discoveries*, 1698-1709, three things were needed—' to reade the best Authors, observe the best Speakers, and much exercise of his owne style. . . . He must first thinke, and excogitate his matter; then choose his words, and examine the weight of either. . . . No matter how slow the style be at first, so it be labour'd, and accurate; seeke the best, and be not glad of the forward conceipts, or first words, that offer themselves to us, but judge of what wee invent; and order what wee approve.¹ The poems show theory shaping itself in practice.

¹ In vol. i, p. 73, and vol. ii, p. 339. we followed Gifford in assuming that the reference was to an epic modelled on Claudian's ' Rape of Proserpine'. We owe the correction to W. D. Briggs (*Anglia*, xxxvii, pp. 484-9).

THE EPIGRAMS AND THE FOREST

The *Epigrams* were entered on the Stationers' Register by John Stepneth in 1612 : the entry is as follows—

!5^{to} Maij

John Stepneth. Entred for his Copy under th'andes of master
 Nydd and Thwardens, A Booke called, Ben
 Johnson his Epigrams. vj^d
 Arber, *Transcript*, HI. 485.

This is Stepneth's last entry on the Register, and he died in the course of the year. He is not known to have reached the stage of publication, but there is a tantalizing reference in a manuscript note by William Drummond of 'bookes red be me anno 1612', which includes 'Ben Jhonsons epigrams'. This suggests that he had a printed copy. But, so far as we know, the 'EPIGRAMMES. I. BOOKE' first appeared in the Folio of 1616, printed after the plays and before the masques and entertainments in quires of six, signatures Sss 5-Zzz i, pages 765-818, and followed by *The Forest*, signatures Zzz 2-Aaaa 6, pages 819-40.

¹ The ripest of my studies', as Jonson fondly called the *Epigrams*, were carefully revised before they were sent to press. There are no variants in the Folio text. One trivial misprint in *Epigram* xxiii. 5, 'with' for 'wits', was at once corrected by the printer. *The Forest* is also well printed.

The Folio of 1640 reprinted these collections with one insertion : after *Epigram* cxxviii to William Roe it foisted in as *Epigram* cxxix the lines 'TO EDWARD FILMER, on his Musically Work, dedicated to the Queen. Anno 1619.' Perhaps a piece of snobbery because of the royal dedication, for all similar tributes of Jonson—to Shakespeare, Chapman, Fletcher, and Drayton, for instance—were ignored.

The 1640 text of *The Forest* is a reprint of the 1616 Folio.

THE UNDERWOOD

This collection was first printed in the Folio of 1640-1 as part of 'The Third Volume' made up from Jonson's papers and appended to *The Masques*, which ended on signature Y 2 recto, page 159. *The Underwood* followed in quires of four on signature Z I recto, page 161, and ended on signature Nn 4 recto, page 271 : Bb 2 was misprinted B 2. It is probable that Jonson contemplated an edition about the year 1631 when he issued the three plays which open the second volume of the 1640 Folio. Sir Kenelm Digby acquired the manuscript after Jonson's death and sold it to Thomas Walkley. In Harley MS. 4153, a collection of Sir Kenelm's papers, there is on folio 21 a letter to Doctor Duppa congratulating him on preparing *Jonsonus Virbius* for publication ; 'these compositions deliuered to the world by your hand, will be more gratcfull obsequies to his great ghost, then any other that could hauc bin p^rformed att his tomb'. Digby adds 'I will as soone as I can do the like to the world, by making it share with me in those excellent pieces (alas that many of the are but pieces!) w^{ch} he hath left behind him and that I keepe religiously by me to y^t end '. *Jonsonus Virbius* was published in 1638, the year after Jonson's death. In 1659 *The Last Remains of S John Suckling* were published by Humphrey Moseley. On sig. a 3 Moseley says no apology is needed for printing the unfinished play of *The Sad One*. 'Nor are we without a sufficient President in Works of this nature, and relating to an Author who confessedly is reputed the Glory of the English Stage (whereby you'll know I mean *Ben: Johnson*) and in a Play also of somewhat a resembling name, *The Sad Shepherd*, extant in his Third Volume; which though it wants two entire Acts, was nevertheless judg'd a Piece of too much worth to be laid aside, by the Learned and Honorable *Sir Kenelme Digby*, who published that Volume.¹ Digby probably added the set of poems which conclude *The Underwood*, 'Eupheme' to his wife's memory, from the

copy in his own possession : it is very imperfect. Lady Digby died in 1633, probably after Jonson had arranged the collection, or it would have included a complete set of the elaborate tributes to her.

The title in the Folio was *Under-woods*. *Consisting of divers Poems* with a motto from Martial, I. xxv. 8, '*Cineri, gloria sera venit*\ and the laconic imprint' London. Printed M.DC.XL.'. The headline was at first '*Vnderwoods*' or '¹*Vnder-woods*' but in the course of printing this was changed to '*The Vnder-wood*'. That this is the more correct form of the title has been shown by Mr. B. H. Newdigate, who was the first to adopt it in an edition of the *Poems*. Jonson himself explains in the prefatory note 'To the Reader' that he has '*entitled these lesser Poems, of later growth*,' by the name '*of Vnder-wood, out of the Analogie they hold to the Forrest, in my former booke*', and the bibliographical evidence set forth by Dr. Greg¹ supports Mr. Newdigate. We find *Vnderwoods* on pp. 164-8, 172-3, *Vnder-woods* on pp. 169-71, 174-208, *The Vnder-wood* on pp. 209-85 ; some copies have *The Vnder-wood* as a press-correction on pp. 201 and 208. Dr. Greg explains : 'Pages 172-3 are 2 A 2^v—3', the inner forme of the inner sheet of quire 2 A. That these pages carry on the headline of quire Z proves that they were imposed before the outer forme and before either forme of the outer sheet. This would be the normal procedure if the printer wanted to get on with the press work as quickly as possible. Again, pp. 201 and 208 are the outer forme of the outer sheet of quire 2 E. This would, on the same procedure, be the last forme of the gathering to be put on the press, and it was during the printing of this forme that the final version of the headline was adopted. That it was thought worth while to stop the press in order to make the alteration as early as possible (instead of waiting till the next quire) shows that the correction was regarded

¹ In a review of volume vii of the Oxford *Jonson* contributed to the *Review of English Studies*, xviii, p. 160n. We had worked out this evidence independently.

as important, and confirms the view that *The Underwood* is really the proper form of the title.' Indeed, the printer had become so obsessed with the correction that he carried it on as a headline to *The Entertainment at Welbeck* and *Love's Welcome at Bolsover*, which concluded this section of the Folio.

The traditional title appealed to a modern poet. R. L. Stevenson entitled his collected poems *Underwoods*, saying in a prefatory quatrain, 'That title from a better man I stole.'

The text is carelessly printed, especially in the matter of punctuation. More attention has therefore been paid to the third Folio of 1692, where it corrects this fault. We have numbered the poems, and we have adjusted one feature of the printing. The 1640 Folio, quite at haphazard, prints a number of the poems in italic type. Following the precedent of the *Epigrams* in the 1616 Folio, we have printed them uniformly in roman. The gain in appearance is obvious.

An edition of *The Underwood* printed in a type modelled on Jensen's was published by the Cambridge University Press in 1905. Except for printing capital J and U consistently and correcting lower-case letters at the beginning of a line, the edition aimed at following the Folio exactly, retaining its misprints and faulty punctuation. These blemishes stand out as specially ugly in a book designed to be artistic. In six passages the printer has mistaken 'f' for 'ff'; for instance, 'thy foster bed^f' on page 147, with 'mollis thor^f' to correct it on the opposite page.

EPIGRAMS

EPIGRAMMES.

I.

BOOKE.

The Author B. I.

L O N D O N ,

M. DC. XVI.

The title-page in the 1616 Folio.



EPIGRAMMES.

I.

BOOK E.

The Author B.f.



LONDON.
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M.DC.XL.

TO THE GREAT
EXAMPLE OF
HONOR AND
VERTVE,
THE MOST NOBLE
WILLIAM
EARLE OF PEMBROKE,
L. CHAMBERLAYNE, & C.

MY LORD. While you cannot change your merit,
I dare not change your title : It was that made
it, and not I. Vnder which name, J here offer to your
Lo: the ripest of my studies, my Epigrammes;
which, though they carry danger in the sound, doe not 5
therefore seeke your shelter : For, when J made them,
J had nothing in my conscience, to expressing of
which I did need a cypher. But, if I be false into
those times, wherein, for the likenesse of vice, and
facts, euery one thinks anothers ill deeds objected to 10
him ; and that in their ignorant and guiltie mouthes,
the common voyce is (for their securitie) Beware the
Poet, confessing, therein, so much loue to their
diseases, as they would rather make a partie for them,
then be either rid, or told of them : J must expect, at 15
your Lo: hand, the protection of truth, and libertie,
while you are constant to your owne goodnesse. In
thanks whereof, I returne you the honor of leading
forth so many good, and great names (as my verses
mention on the better part) to their remembrance with 20

posteritie. Amongst whom, if I have prayed, vnfor-
tunately, any one, that doth not deserue ; or, if all
answere not, in all numbers, the pictures I haue made
of them : I hope it will be forgiuen me, that they are
23 no ill pieces, though they be not like the persons. But
Iforesee a neererfate to my booke, then this : that the
vices therein will be ownd before the vertues (though,
there, J haue auoyded all particulars, as I haue done
names) and that some will be so readie to discredit me,
30 as they will haue the impudence to belye themselues.
For, if I meant them not, it is so. Nor, can I hope
otherwise. For, why should they remit any thing
of their riot, their pride, their selfe-loue, and other
inherent graces, to consider truth or vertue ; but, with
35 the trade of the world, lend their long eares against
men they loue not: and hold their deare Mounte-
banke, or Tester, in farre better condition, then all
the studie, or studiers of humanitie ? For such, J
would rather know them by their visards, still, then
40 they should publish their faces, at their perill, in
my Theater, where CATO, if he liud, might enter
without scandall.

Your Lo: most faithfull honorer,
BEN. IONSON.

E P I G R A M M E S.

I.

To THE READER.

PRay thee, take care, that tak'st my booke in hand,
To reade it well: that is, to vnderstand.

II.

To MY BOOKE.

It will be look'd for, booke, when some but see
Thy title, *Epigramines*, and nam'd of mee,
Thou should'st be bold, licentious, full of gall,
Wormewood, and sulphure, sharpe, and tooth'd withall ;
Become a petulant thing, hurle inke, and wit, 5
As mad-men stones : not caring whom they hit.
Deceiue their malice, who could wish it so.
And by thy wiser temper, let men know
Thou are not couetous of least scilfe-fame,
Made from the hazard of anothers shame : 10
Much lesse with lewd, prophane, and beastly phrase,
To catch the worlds loose laughter, or vaine gaze.
He that departs with his owne honesty
For vulgar praise, doth it too dearely buy.

III.

To MY BOOKE-SELLER.

THou, that mak'st gaine thy end, and wisely well,
Call'st a booke good, or bad, as it doth sell,
Vse mine so, too : I giue thee leaue. But craue
For the lucks sake, it thus much fauour haue,
Epigram, ii. 9 selfe-fame] selfe fame Fi; selfe-Fame Fz
iii. 4 haue,] haue. Fr: have. F 2

- 5 To lye vpon thy stall, till it be sought;
 Not offer'd, as it made sute to be bought;
 Nor haue my title-leafe on posts, or walls,
 Or in cleft-sticks, aduanced to make calls
 For termers, or some clarke-like seruing-man,
 10 Who scarce can spell th'hard names : whose knight lesse
 can.
 If, without these vile arts, it will not sell,
 Send it to *Bucklers-bury*, there 'twill, well.

III.

To KING IAMES.

- H**OW, best of Kings, do'st thou a scepter beare !
 How, best of *Poets*, do'st thou laurell weare !
 But two things, rare, the FATES had in their store,
 And gaue thee both, to shew they could no more.
 5 For such a *Poet*, while thy dayes were greene,
 Thou wert, as chiefe of them are said t'haue beene.
 And such a Prince thou art, wee daily see,
 As chiefe of those still promise they will bee.
 Whom should my *Muse* then flie to, but the best
 10 Of Kings for grace ; of *Poets* for my test ?

V.

ON THE VNION.

- W**Hen was there contract better driuen by *Fate* ?
 Or celebrated with more truth of state ?
 The world the temple was, the priest a king,
 The spoused paire two realmes, the sea the ring.

v. In *Add* 5, / . 8 b, ' In Vnionem Angliz & Scotiz ' attributed to *T. Walkington* : *Ash* 3, f. 45, ' On y Vmon betwixt Scotland and England ' : *RP* 6, f. 164 b, ' Ben Johnson vpon kinge James his vnion of England and Scotland ' and *RP* 9, / . 34 b, ' Vpon the vnion of England and Scotland ' : in *TCD* p. 464 attributed to ' James Stuart K: of England '.

i When was there] Was euer *Add*, *RP* 9 : Never was *RP* 6 con-
 tract] manage *RP* 6 better . . . by] driven by better *RP* 9
 2 Or] Nor *RP* 6 celebrated] solemnized *RP* 9 truth of] Royall
RP 9 3 was] is *Add*, *RP* 9 a] the *Add*. *Ash* 3. *RP* 6 and 9
 4 spoused] married *Add*, *RP* 9 realmes] Nations *Add*

VI.

To ALCHYMISTS.

IF all you boast of your great art be true ;
Sure, willing pouertie Hues most in you.

VII.

ON THE NEW HOT-HOVSE.

WHere lately harbour'd many a famous whore,
A purging bill, now fix'd vpon the dore,
Tells you it is a hot-house : So it ma',
And still be a whore-house. Th'are *Synonima*.

VIII.

ON A ROBBERY.

RIDwAY rob'd DVNCOTE of three hundred pound,
RIDWAY was tanc, arraign'd, condemn'd to dye ;
But, for this money was a courtier found,
Beg'd RIDWAYES pardon: DVNCOTE, now, doth
crye,
Rob'd both of money, and the lawcs reliefe, 5
The courtier is become the greater thiefe.

IX.

To ALL, TO WHOM I WRITE.

MAy none, whose scattcr'd names honor my booke,
For strict degrees of ranke, or title looke :
Tis 'gainst the manners of an *Epigram* :
And, I a *Poet* here, no *Herald* am.

X.

To MY LORD IGNORANT.

THou call'st me *Poet*, as a terme of shame :
But I haue my reuenge made, in thy name.

XI.

ON SOME-THING, THAT WALKES
SOME-WHERE.

AT court I met it, in clothes braue enough,
 To be a courtier ; and lookes graue enough,
 To seeme a statesman : as I neere it came,
 It made me a great face, I ask'd the name.
 5 A lord, it cryed, buried in flesh, and blood,
 And such from whom let no man hope least good,
 For I will doe none : and as little ill,
 For I will dare none. Good Lord, walke dead still.

XII.

ON LIEVTENANT SHIFT.

SHIFT, here, in towne, not meanest among squires,
 That haunt *Pickt-hatch*, *Mersh-Lambeth*, and *White-*
fryers,
 Keeps himselfe, with halfe a man, and defrayes
 The charge of that state, with this charme, god payes.
 5 By that one spell he Hues, eates, drinckes, arrayes
 Himselfe : his whole reuennue is, god payes.
 The quarter day is come ; the hostesse sayes,
 Shee must haue money : he returnes, god payes.
 The taylor brings a suite home ; he it 'ssayes,
 10 Lookes o're the bill, likes it: and say's, god payes.
 He steales to ordinaries ; there he plays
 At dice his borrow'd money : which, god payes.
 Then takes vp fresh commoditie, for dayes ;
 Signes to new bond, forfeits : and cryes, god payes.
 15 That lost, he keeps his chamber, reades *Essayes*,
 Takes physick, teares the papers : still god payes.
 Or else by water goes, and so to playes ;
 Calls for his stoole, adornes the stage : god payes.

xi. *In Ash j, /. 45 6*4 me *not in Ash* the] it *Ash*xii. 6 reuennue] revenue *F2*13 commoditie] commodities *F2*14 bond] bonds *F2*

To euery cause he meets, this voyce he brayes :

His onely answer is to all, god payes.

20

Not his poore cocatrice but he betrayses

Thus : and for his letcherie, scores, god payes.

But see ! th'old baud hath seru'd him in his trim,

Lent him a pockie whore. Shee hath paid him.

XII I.

To DOCTOR EMPIRICK.

WHen men a dangerous disease did scape,

Of old, they gaue a cock to [^]s c v L A P E ;

Let me giue two : that doubly am got free,

From my diseases danger, and from thee.

XIII I.

To WILLIAM CAMDEN.

CAMDEN, most reuerend head, to whom I owe

All that I am in arts, all that I know,

(How nothing's that ?) to whom my countrey owes

The great renowne, and name wherewith shee goes.

Then thee the age sees not that thing more graue,

5

More high, more holy, that shee more would craue.

What name, what skill, what faith hast thou in things !

What sight in searching the most antique springs !

What weight, and what authoritie in thy speech !

Man scarce can make that doubt, but thou canst teach. 10

Pardon free truth, and let thy modestie,

Which conquers all, be once ouer-come by thee.

Many of thine this better could, then I,

But for their powers, accept my pietie.

xv.

ON COVRT-WORME.

ALL men are wormes : But this no man. In silke

Twas brought to court first wrapt, and white as milke;

Where, afterwards, it grew a butter-flye :

Which was a cater-piller. So't will dye.

xiv. 2 know,] know *Ff*

xv. 4 'twill] *fwiU Fi*

XVI.

To BRAYNE-HARDIE.

HA R D I E, thy braine is valiant, 'tis confest,
 Thou more ; that with it euery day, dar'st iest
 Thy selfe into fresh braules : when, call'd vpon,
 Scarse thy weekes swearing brings thee of, of one.
 5 So, in short time, th'art in arrerage growne
 Some hundred quarrells, yet dost thou fight none;
 Nor need'st thou : for those few, by oath releast,
 Make good what thou dar'st doe in all the rest.
 Keepe thy selfe there, and thinke thy valure right,
 10 He that dares damne himselfe, dares more then fight.

XVII.

To THE LEARNED CRITICK.

MAy others feare, flie, and traduce thy name,
 As guiltie men doe magistrates : glad I,
 That wish my poemes a legitimate fame,
 Charge them, for crowne, to thy sole censure hye.
 5 And, but a sprigge of bayes, giuen by thee,
 Shall out-liue gyrlands, stolne from the chast tree.

XVIII.

To MY MEERE ENGLISH CENSVRER.

TO thee, my way in *Epigrammes* seemes new,
 When both it is the old way, and the true.
 Thou saist, that cannot be : for thou hast seene
 DAVIS, and WEEVER, and the best haue beene,
 5 And mine come nothing like. I hope so. Yet,
 As theirs did with thee, mine might credit get:
 If thou'ldst but vse thy faith, as thou didst then,
 When thou wert wont t(o)'admire, not censure men.
 Pr'y thee beleeeue still, and not iudge so fast,
 10 Thy faith is all the knowledge that thou hast,
 xvi. i confest,] coifest; F2 9 right,] right; F2

XIX.

ON SIR COD THE PERFORMED.

THat COD can get no widdow, yet a knight,
I sent the cause : Hee wooes with an ill sprite.

XX.

To THE SAME SIR CoD.

TH'expençe in odours is a most vaine sinne,
Except thou could'st, Sir COD, weare them within.

XXI.

ON REFORMED GAM*STER.

LOrd, how is GAM'STER chang'd ! his haire close cut !
His neck fenc'd round with ruffe ! his eyes halfe shut !
His clothes two fashions of, and poore ! his sword
Forbidd' his side ! and nothing, but the word
Quick in his lips ! Who hath this wonder wrought ? 5
The late tane bastinado. So I thought.
What seuerall wayes men to their calling haue !
The bodies stripes, I see, the soule may saue.

XXII.

ON MY FIRST DAV-GHTER.

Here lyes to each her parents ruth,
MARY, the daughter of their youth :
Yet, all heauens gifts, being heauens due,
It makes the father, lesse, to rue.
At sixe moneths end, shee parted hence 5
With safetie of her innocence ;
Whose soule heauens Queene, (whose name shee beares)
In comfort of her mothers teares,

Hath plac'd amongst her virgin-traine :
 TO Where, while that seuer'd doth remaine,
 This graue partakes the fleshly birth.
 Which couer lightly, gentle earth.

XXIII.

To IOHN DONNE.

DONNE, the delight of PHCEBvs, and each *Muse*,
 Who, to thy one, all other braines refuse ;
 Whose euery worke, of thy most earely wit,
 Came forth example, and remaines so, yet:
 5 Longer a knowing, then most wits doe hue.
 And which no[?] affection praise enough can giue !
 To it, thy language, letters, arts, best life,
 Which might with halfe mankind maintayne a strife.
 All which I meant to praise, and, yet, I would ;
 10 But leaue, because I cannot as I should !

XXIIII.

To THE PARLIAMENT.

THere's reason good, that you good lawes should make :
 Mens manners ne're were viler, for your sake.

XXV.

ON SIR VOLVPTVOVS BEAST.

WHile BEAST instructs his faire, and innocent wife,
 In the past pleasures of his sensuall life,
 Telling the motions of each petticoate,
 And how his GANIMEDE mou'd, and how his goate,
 5 And now, her (hourely) her owne cucqueane makes,
 In varied shapes, which for his lust shee takes :
 What doth he else, but say, leaue to be chaste,
 lust wife, and, to change me, make womans hast ?

xxiii. In *Ash* 3, f. 45 b Printed in *Donne's Poems* 1650, 1654, ¹⁶^9
 2 one] owne *Ash* 5 wits] with'Jvr originally 6 no' F2 : no *Fi*:
 noe *Ash*: no'n *Donne* text 8 strife.] strife; F2 g meant] means F2
 xxiv. In *Ash* i, f. 159 b, 'Ben: Johnson on y' Parliament:' 2 ne're]
 nere *Fi* originally
 xxv. 8 hast ?] hast. F1: haste. F2

XXVI.

ON THE SAME BEAST.

Then his chast wife, though BEAST now know no more,
He'adulterers still: his thoughts lye with a whore.

XXVII.

ON SIR IOHN ROE.

IN place of scutcheons, that should decke thy herse,
Take better ornaments, my teares, and verse.
If any sword could saue from *Fates*, ROE'S could ;
If any *Muse* out-lieue their spight, his can ;
If any friends teares could restore, his would ; 5
If any pious life ere lifted man
To heauen ; his hath : O happy state ! wherein
Wee, sad for him, may glorie, and not sinne.

XXVIII.

ON DON SVRLY.

DON SVRLY, to aspire the glorious name
Of a great man, and to be thought the same,
Makes serious vse of all great trade he knows.
He speakes to men with a *Rhino cerates* nose,
Which hee thinkes great; and so reades verses, too : 5
And, that is done, as he saw great men doe.
H'has tympanies of businesse, in his face,
And, can forget mens names, with a great grace.
He will both argue, and discourse in oathes,
Both which are great. And laugh at ill-made clothes ; 10
That's greater, yet: to crie his owne vp neate.
He doth, at meales, alone, his pheasant eate,
Which is maine greatnesse. And, at his still boord,
He drinckes to no man : that's, too, like a lord.

- 15 He keeps anothers wife, which is a spice
 Of solemne greatnesse. And he dares, at dice,
 Blaspheme god, greatly. Or some poore hinde beat,
 That breathes in his dogs way : and this is great.
 Nay more, for greatnesse sake, he will be one
 20 May heare my *Epigrammes*, but like of none.
 SVRLY, vse other arts, these only can
 Stile thee a most great foole, but no great man.

XXIX.

To SIR ANNVAL TILTER.

- T**ILTER, the most may'admire thec, though not I :
 And thou, right guiltlesse, may'st plead to it, why ?
 For thy late sharpe deuce. I say 'tis fit
 All braines, at times of triumph, should runne wit.
 5 For then, our water-conduits doe runne wine ;
 But that's put in, thou'lt say. Why, so is thine.

XXX.

To PERSON GVILTIE.

- G**VILTIE, be wise; and though thou know'st the
 crimes
 Be thine, I taxe, yet doe not owne my rimes :
 Twere madnesse in thee, to betray thy fame,
 And person to the world ; ere I thy name.

XXXI.

ON BANCK THE VSVRER.

- B**ANCK feeles no lamenesse of his knottie gout,
 His monyes trauaile for him, in and out:
 And though the soundest legs goe euery day,
 He toyles to be at hell, as soone as they.

XXXII.

ON SIR IOHN ROE.

WHat two braue perills of the priuate sword
 Could not effect, not all the furies doe,
 That selfe-diuided *Belgia* did afford ;
 What not the enuie of the seas reach'd too, 5
 The cold of *Mosco*, and fat *Irish* ayre,
 His often change of clime (though not of mind)
 What could not worke ; at home in his repaire
 Was his blest fate, but our hard lot to find.
 Which shewes, where euer death doth please t(o)'appeare, 10
 Seas, serenes, swords, shot, sicknesse, all are there.

XXXIII.

To THE SAME.

ILle not offend thee with a vaine teare more,
 Glad-mention'd ROE : thou art but gone before,
 Whither the world must follow. And I, now,
 Breathe to expect my when, and make my how. 5
 Which if most gracious heauen grant like thine,
 Who wets my graue, can be no friend of mine.

XXXIII.

OF DEATH.

HE that feares death, or mournes it, in the iust,
 Shewes of the resurrection little trust.

XXXV.

To KING IAMES.

WHo would not be thy subiect, IAMES, t(o)'obay
 A Prince, that rules by'example, more than sway ?
 Whose manners draw, more than thy powers constraine.
 And in this short time of thy happiest raigne,

- 5 Hast purg'd thy realmes, as we haue now no cause
 Left vs of feare, but first our crimes, then lawes.
 Like aydes 'gainst treasons who hath found before ?
 And than in them, how could we know god more ?
 First thou preserued wert, our king to bee,
 10 And since, the whole land was preseru'd for thee.

XXXVI.

To THE GHOST OF MARTIAL.

MARTIAL, thou gau'st farre nobler *Epigrammes*
 To thy DOMITIAN, than I can my IAMES :
 But in my royall subiect I passe thee,
 Thou flattered'st thine, mine cannot flatter¹ d bee.

XXXVII.

ON CHEV'RILL THE LAWYER.

N'o cause, nor client fat, will CHEV'RILL leese,
 But as they come, on both sides he takes fees,
 And pleaseth both. For while he melts his greace
 For this : that winnes, for whom he holds his peace.

XXXVIII.

To PERSON GVILTIE.

GVILTIE, because I bad you late be wise,
 And to conceale your vlcers, did aduise,
 You laugh when you are touch'd, and long before
 Any man else, you clap your hands, and rore,
 5 And crie good ! good ! This quite peruersts my sense,
 And lyes so farre from wit, 'tis impudence.
 Beleeue it, GVILTIE, if you loose your shame,
 Fie loose my modestie, and tell your name.

XXXIX.

ON OLD COLT.

FOr all night-sinnes, with others wiues, vnknowne,
COLT, now, doth daily penance in his owne.

XL.

ON MARGARET RATCLIFFE.

MArble, weepe, for thou dost couer
A dead beautie vnder-neath thee,
R ich, as nature could bequeath thee :
G rant then, no rude hand remoue her.
All the gazers on the skies 5
R ead not in faire heauens storie,
Expresser truth, or truer glorie,
T hen they might in her bright eyes.
R are, as wonder, was her wit;
A nd like *Nectar* eucr flowing : 10
T ill time, strong by her bestowing,
c onquer'd hath both life and it.
L ife, whose grieve was out of fashion,
i n these times. Few so haue ru'de
F ate, in a brother. To conclude, 15
F or wit, feature, and true passion,
E arth, thou hast not such another.

XLI.

ON GYPSEE.

GYPSEE, new baud, is turn'd physitian,
And get more gold, then all the colledge can :
Such her quaint practise is, so it allures,
For what shee gaue, a whore ; a baud, shee cures.

xl. In Ash 3. f. 45 b. 7 Expresser . . . truer] Expresse her . . .
her Ash After I 8 space of one line in F2 13 fashion,]
fashion ; F2 14 times. Few] times few Fz. Ash

XLII.

ON GILES AND IONE.

WHo says that GILES and IONE at discord be ?
 Th'obseruing neighbours no such mood can see.
 Indeed, poore GILES repents he married euer.
 But that his IONE doth too. And GILES would neuer,
 5 By his free will, be in TONES company.
 No more would IONE he should. GILES riseth early,
 And hauing got him out of doores is glad.
 The like is IONE. But turning home, is sad.
 And so is IONE. Oft-times, when GILES doth find
 xo Harsh sights at home, GILES wisheth he were blind.
 All this doth IONE. Or that his long-yeaⁿd life
 Were quite out-spun. The like wish hath his wife.
 The children, that he keeps, GILES sweares are none
 Of his begetting. And so sweares his IONE.
 15 In all affections shee concurreth still.
 If, now, with man and wife, to will, and nill
 The selfe-same things, a note of concord be :
 I know no couple better can agree !

XLIII.

TO ROBERT EARLE OF SALISBVRIE.

WHat need hast thou of me ? or of my *Muse* ?
 Whose actions so themsclues doe celebrate ;
 Which should thy countries loue to speake refuse,
 Her foes enough would fame thce, in their hate.
 5 'Tofore, great men were glad of *Poets* : Now,
 I, not the worst, am couetous of thee.

xlii. In SI 3, f. 35 b, Ash 3, f. 46 i sayes] saye Ash 2 neigh-
 bours am. Ash mood can] matter SI 5 By ... free] Wth... good SI
 6 he should ... nseth] his, should Giles nseAsh // long-yeaⁿd F2 :
 long yearn'd Fi : lonp-yarn'd G 12 -spun] -spanne Ash
 xlii. Holograph at Hatfield, Cecil MS. 144, / 266. headed 'To the
 most Worthy of his Honors. Robert, Earle of Salisbury. Epigramme.'
 2 celebrate ; MS: celebrate ?F 4 enough] mough MS thee,
 Af5 : thee Ff 5 Tofore] Of old MS Poets :] Poets ; MS
 6 I. not ... worst,] I (not . . . worst) MS thee.] thee. MS

Yet dare not, to my thought, lest hope allow
 Of adding to thy fame ; thine may to me,
 When, in my booke, men rcade but C E c I L L ' s name,
 And what I write thereof find farre, and free 10
 From seruile flatterie (common Poets shame)
 As thou stand'st cleere of the necessitie.

XLII II.

ON CHVFFE, BANCKS THE VSVRER'S
 KINSMAN.

C H v F F E, lately rich in name, in chattels, goods,
 And rich in issue to inherit all,
 Ere blacks were bought for his owne funerall,
 Saw all his race approach the blacker floods :
 He meant they thither should make swift repaire, 5
 When he made him executor, might be heire.

XLV.

ON MY FIRST SONNE.

F Arewell, thou child of my right hand, and ioy ;
 My sinne was too much hope of thee, lou'd boy,
 Seuē yccres tho'wert lent to me, and I thec pay,
 Exacted by thy fate, on the iust day.
 0, could I loose all father, now. For why 5
 Will man lament the state he should enuie ?
 To haue so soone scap'd worlds, and flesh's rage,
 And, if no other miserie, yet age ?
 Rest in soft peace, and, ask'd, say here doth lye
 BEN. IONSON his best piece of *poetrie*. 10
 For whose sake, hence-forth, all his vowes be such,
 As what he loues may neucr like too much.

xlili 7 Yet] Yet, MS not,... thought,] not ..thought A/5 lest]
 least MS 8 fame] prayse A/5 me,] mee : A/5 Q When,
 Af5 : When Ff booke] Verse A/5 CECILL/SJ SARVM'S A/5
 11 flattene] flatt'ry A/5 Poets] Poets A/5 12 necessitie] Necessitie
 A/5
 xlv 5 loose] lose F2

XLVI.

To SIR LVCKLESSE WOO-ALL.

IS this the *Sir*_t who, some wast wife to winne,
 A knight-hood bought, to goe a wooing in ?
 'Tis LVCKLESSE he, that tooke vp one on band
 To pay at's day of marriage. By my hand
 5 The knight-wright's cheated then : Hee'll neuer pay.
 Yes, now he weares his knight-hood every day.

XLVII.

To THE SAME.

Sir LVCKLESSE, troth, for lucks sake passe by one :
 Hee that wooes every widdow, will get none.

XLVIII.

ON MVNCRIL ESQUIRE.

His bought armes MVNG¹ not lik'd ; for his first day
 Of bearing them in field, he threw ^fhem away :
 And hath no honor lost, our Due'llists say.

XLIX.

To PLAY-WRIGHT.

PLAY-WRIGHTmerades, and still my verses damnes,
 He sayes, I want the tongue of *Epigrammes* ;
 I haue no salt: no bawdrie he doth meane.
 For wittie, in his language, is obscene.
 SPLAY-WRIGHT, I loath to hauethymanners knowne
 In my chast booke : professe them in thine owne.

L.

To SIR Co D.

LEaue COD, *tabacco-like*, burnt gummes to take,
 Or fumie clysters, thy moist lungs to bake :
Arsenike would thee fit for societie make.

LI.

To KING IAMES.

*Vpon the happy false rumour of his death^ the two
and twentieth day of March,
1607.*

THat we thy losse might know, and thou our louc,
Great heau'n did well, to giue ill fame free wing;
Which though it did but *panick* terror proue,
And farre beneath least pause of such a king,
Yet giue thy iealous subiects leaue to doubt: 5
Who this thy scape from rumour gratulate,
No lesse than if from pcrill; and deuout,
Doe beg thy care vnto thy after-state.
For we, that haue our eyes still in our eares,
Looke not vpon thy dangers, but our feares. 10

LII.

To CENSORIOVS COVRTLING.

COVRTLING, I rather thou should'st vtterly
Dispraise my worke, then praise it frostily :
When I am read, thou fain'st a weake applause,
As if thou wert my friend, but lack'dst a cause.
This but thy iudgement fooles : the other way 5
Would both thy folly, and thy spite betray.

LI 11.

To OLD-END GATHERER.

Long-gathering OLD-END, I did feare thee wise,
When hauing pill'd a booke, which no man buyes,
Thou wert content the authors name to loose :
But when (in place) thou didst the patrons choose,
It was as if thou printed had'st an oath, 5
To giue the world assurance thou wert both ;

And that, as *puritanes* at baptisme doo,
 Thou art the father, and the witsesse too.
 For, but thy selfe, where, out of motly, 's hee
 10 Could saue that line to dedicate to thee ?

LIIII.

ON CHEV'RIL.

CHEV'RIL cries out, my verses libells are ;
 And threatens the *starre-chamber*, and the barre :
 What are thy petulant pleadings, CHEV'RIL, then,
 That quit'st the cause so oft, and rayl'st at men ?

LV.

TO FRANCIS BEAUMONT.

HOW I doe loue thee BEAUMONT, and thy *Muse*,
 That vnto me dost such religion vse !
 How I doe fcare my selfe, that am not worth
 The least indulgent thought thy pen drops forth !
 5 At once thou mak'st me happie, and vnmak'st;
 And giuing largely to me, more thou tak'st.
 What fate is mine, that so it selfe bereaues ?
 What art is thine, that so thy friend deceiues ?
 When euen there, where most thou praysest mee,
 10 For writing better, I must enuie thee.

LVI.

ON PoET-APE.

POORe PoET-APE, that would be thought our chiefe,
 Whose workes are eene the fripperie of wit,
 From brocage is become so bold a thiefc,
 As we, the rob'd, leaue rage, and pittie it.

lv. Printed in the first Folio of Beaumont and Fletcher's Works, 1647, sig. E, with the heading 'To M*. FRANCIS BEAUMONT (then living.)'; in the second Folio, 1679, sig. A2

At first he made low shifts, would picke and gleane, 5
Buy the reuersion of old playes ; now growne
To'a little wealth, and credit in the *scene*,
He takes vp all, makes each mans wit his owne.
And, told of this, he slights it. Tut, such crimes
The sluggish gaping auditor deuoures ; 10
He markes not whose 'twas first: and after-times
May iudge it to be his, as well as ours.
Foole, as if halfe eyes will not know a fleece
From locks of wooll, or shreds from the whole peece ?

LVII.

ON BAVDES, AND VSVRERS.

IF, as their ends, their fruits were so, the same,
Baudrie', and vsurie were one kind of game.

LVIII.

To GROOME IDEOT.

IDEOT, last night, I pray'd thee but forbear
To reade my verses ; now I must to heare :
For offring, with thy smiles, my wit to grace,
Thy ignorance still laughs in the wrong place.
And so my sharpnesse thou no lesse dis-ioynts, 5
Then thou did'st late my sense, loosing my points.
So haue I seene at CHRisT-masse sports one lost,
And, hood-wink'd, for a man, embrace a post.

LIX.

ON SPIES.

SPiES, you are lights in state, but of base stuffe,
Who, when you'haue burnt your selues downc to the
snuffe,
Sjtinke, and are throwne away. End faire enough.

Ivii AND] AND *Ff* i same. *Fz*: same *Fi*

LX.

To WILLIAM LORD MOVNTEAGLE.

LOe, what my countrey should haue done (haue rais'd
 An obeliske, or columnne to thy name,
 Or, if shee would but modestly haue prais'd
 Thy fact, in brasse or marble writ the same)
 5 I, that am glad of thy great chance, here doo !
 And proud, my worke shall out-last common deeds,
 Durst thinke it great, and worthy wonder too,
 But thine, for which I doo't, so much exceeds !
 My countries parents I haue many knowne ;
 xo But sauer of my countrey thee alone.

LXI.

To FOOLE, OR KNAVE.

THy praise, or dispraise is to me alike,
 One doth not stroke me, nor the other strike.

LXII.

To FINE LADY WOVL D-BEE.

Fine MADAME WOVL D-BEE, wherefore should you
 feare,
 That loue to make so well, a child to beare ?
 The world reputes you barren : but I know
 Your 'pothecarie, and his drug sayes no.
 5 Is it the paine affrights ? that's soone forgot.
 Or your complexions losse ? you haue a pot,
 That can restore that. Will it hurt your feature ?
 To make amends, yo'are thought a wholesome creature.
 What should the cause be ? Oh, you liue at court:
 10 And there's both losse of time, and losse of sport
 In a great belly. Write, then on thy wombe,
 Of the not borne, yet buried, here's the tombe.

Ixii. 8-12 *A separate epigram in RP 2, f. ib* 9 What . . . be ?]
 Why are you barren ? RP 10 And there's] Where is RP iz
 thy] your RP

LXIII.

TO ROBERT EARLE OF SALISBVRIE.

WHo can consider thy right courses run,
 With what thy vertue on the times hath won,
 And not thy fortune ; who can cleerely see
 The judgement of the king so shine in thee ;
 And that thou seek'st reward of thy each act, 5
 Not from the publike voyce, but priuate fact;
 Who can behold all enuie so declin'd
 By constant suffring of thy equall mind ;
 And can to these be silent, *Salisburie*,
 Without his, thine, and all times iniurie ? 10
 Curst be his *Muse*, that could lye dumbe, or hid
 To so true worth, though thou thy selfe forbid.

LXIII I.

TO THE SAME.

Epon the accession of the Treasurer-ship to him.

Not glad, like those that haue new hopes, or sutes,
 With thy new place, bring I these early fruits
 Of loue, and what the golden age did hold
 A treasure, art: contemn'd in th'age'of gold.
 Nor glad as those, that old dependents bee, 5
 To see thy fathers rites new laid on thee.
 Nor glad for fashion. Nor to shew a fit
 Of flatterie to thy titles. Nor of wit.
 But I am glad to see that time suruiue,
 Where merit is not sepulcher'd alieue. 10
 Where good mens vertues them to honors bring,
 And not to dangers. When so wise a king

Ixiii. *Holograph at Hatfield, Cecil MS. 144, f. 266, headed ' Another ' (i.e. following Epigram xlni) and subscribed ' yo' Ho: vnprofitable Louer Ben: lonson.'*
 2 vertue on . . . times] vertue. on . . .
 time, MS 8 equall] xquall MS 9 can to these] can, to
 these. MS n his *Muse*] my voyce MS that could] if it MS 12
 so] such MS

Ixiv. ii honors] honours F2 (so Ixvi. 3, bcvu. 8)

Contends t'haue worth enioy, from his regard,
 As her owne conscience, still, the same reward.
 15 These (noblest CECIL) labour'd in my thought,
 Wherein what wonder see thy name hath wrought ?
 That whil'st I meant but thine to gratulate,
 I'haue sung the greater fortunes of our state.

LXV.

To MY MUSE.

AWay, and leaue me, thou thing most abhord,
 That hast betray'd me to a worthlesse lord ;
 Made me commit most fierce idolatrie
 To a great image through thy luxuric.
 5 Be thy next masters more vnluckie *Muse*,
 And, as thou'hast mine, his hourcs, and youth abuse.
 Get him the times long grudge, the courts ill will;
 And, reconcil'd, keepe him suspected still.
 Make him loose all his friends ; and, which is worse,
 10 Almost all wayes, to any better course.
 With me thou leau'st an happier *Muse* then thee,
 And which thou brought'st me, welcome pouertie.
 Shee shall instruct my after-thoughts to write
 Things manly, and not smelling parasite.
 15 But I repent me : Stay. Who e're is rais'd,
 For worth he has not, He is tax'd, not prais'd.

LXVI.

To SIR HENRIE GARY.

That neither fame, nor loue might wanting be
 To greatnesse, GARY, I sing that, and thee.
 Whose house, if it no other honor had,
 In onely thee, might be both great, and glad.
 5 Who, to vpbraid the sloth of this our time,
 Durst valour make, almost, but not a crime.
 Ixv. i abhord,] abhord *Ff* *g* loose] lose *Fz*

Which deed I know not, whether were more high,
 Or thou more happie, it to iustifie
 Against thy fortune : when no foe, that day,
 Could conquer thee, but chance, who did betray. 10
 Loue thy great losse, which a renowne hath wonne,
 *To Hue when *Broeck* not stands, nor *ROOT* doth runne. * *The*
 Loue honors, which of best example bee, *and Riucr*
 When they cost dearest, and are done most free, neere
 Though euery fortitude deserues applause, 15 he was
 It may be much, or little, in the cause. taken
 Hee's valiant'st, that dares fight, and not for pay;
 That vertuous is, when the reward 's away.

LXVII.

TO THOMAS EARLE OF SVFFOLKE.

Since men haue left to doe praise-worthy things,
 Most thinke all praises flatteries. But truth brings
 That sound, and that authentic with her name,
 As, to be rais'd by her, is onely fame.
 Stand high, then, H O W A R D , high m eyes of men, 5
 High in thy blood, thy place, but highest then,
 When, in mens wishes, so thy vrtucs wrought,
 As all thy honors were by them first sought:
 And thou design'd to be the same thou art,
 Before thou wert it, in each good mans heart. 10
 Which, by no lesse confirm'd, then thy kings choice,
 Proues, that is gods, which was the peoples voice.

LXVIII.

ON PLAY-WRIGHT.

PLAY - WRIGHT conuict of publike wrongs to men,
 Takes priuate beatings, and begins againe.
 Two kinds of valour he 'doth shew, at ones ;
 Actiue in's brame, and passiue in his bones.

Ixvii. 12 gods] Gods F2

LXIX.

To PERTINAX COB.

COB, thou nor souldier, thiefe, nor fencer art,
 Yet by thy weapon liu'st! Th'hast one good part.

LXX.

To WILLIAM ROE.

When *Nature* bids vs leaue to liue, 'tis late
 Then to begin, my ROE: He makes a state
 In life, that can employ it; and takes hold
 On the true causes, ere they grow too old.
 5 Delay is bad, doubt worse, depending worst;
 Each best day of our life escapes vs, first.
 Then, since we (more then many) these truths know :
 Though life be short, let vs not make it so.

LXXI.

ON COVRT-PARRAT.

TO plucke downe mine, POLL sets vp new wits still,
 Still, 'tis his lucke to praise me 'gainst his will.

LXXII.

To COVRT-LING.

IGrieue not, COVRTLING, thou are started vp
 A chamber-critick, and dost dine, and sup
 At MADAMES table, where thou mak'st all wit
 Goe high, or low, as thou wilt value it.
 5 'Tis not thy iudgement breeds the preiudice,
 Thy person only, COVRTLING, is the vice.

LXXIII.

To Fi NE GRAND.

WHat is't, Jine GRAND, makes thee my friendship flye,
 Or take an *Epigramme* so fearefully :
 As't were a challenge, or a borrowes letter ?
 The world must know your greatnessc is my debter.
In-primis, GRAND, you owe me for a icst, 5
 I lent you, on meere acquaintance, at a feast.
Item, a tale or two, some fortnight after;
 That yet maintaynes you, and your house in laughter.
Item, the *babylonian* song you sing ;
Item, a faire *greeke* poesie for a ring : 10
 With which a learned *Madame* you belye.
Item, a charme surrounding fearefully
 Your *partie-per-pale* picture, one halfe drawne
 In solemne cypres, the other cob-web-lawne.
Item, a gulling *imprese* for you, at tilt. 15
Item, your mistris *anagram*, i¹ your hilt.
Item, your owne, sew'd in your mistris smock.
Item, an *epitaph* on my lords cock,
 In most vile verses, and cost me more paine,
 Then had I made 'hem good, to fit your vaine. 20
 Fortie things more, deare GRAND, which you know true,
 For which, or pay me quickly', or He pay you.

LXXIIII.

To THOMAS LORD CHANCELOR <EGERTON>.

Whil'st thy weigh'd iudgements, EGERTON, I heare,
 And know thee, then, a iudge, not of one yeare ;
 Whil'st I behold thee liue with purest hands ;
 That no affection in thy voyce commands ;

Ixxiii. 5 iest,] iest; *Fi*: jest; *F2* 6 you, on : *query* you¹, on
 (cf. I. 22) 12 fearefully] fearefully, *Ff*
 Ixxiv. EGERTON G

- 5 That still th'art present to the better cause ;
 And no lesse wise, then skilfull in the lawes ;
 WhiFst thou art certaine to thy words, once gone,
 As is thy conscience, which is alwayes one:
 The *Virgin*, long-since fled from earth, I see,
 10 T(o)'our times return'd, hath made her heauen in thee.

LXXV.

ON LIPPE, THE TEACHER.

I Cannot thinke there's that antipathy
 Twixt *puritanes*, and *players*, as some cry ;
 Though LIPPE, at PAVLS, ranne from his text away,
 T(o)^ginueigh 'gainst playes : what did he then but play ?

LXXVI.

ON LVCY COVNTESSE OF BEDFORD.

- THIS morning, timely rapt with holy fire,
 I thought to forme vnto my zealous *Muse*,
 What kinde of creature I could most desire,
 To honor, serue, and loue ; as *Poets* vse.
 5 I meant to make her faire, and free, and wise,
 Of greatest bloud, and yet more good then great;
 I meant the dāy-starre should not brighter rise,
 Nor lend like influence from his lucent seat.
 I meant shee should be curteous, facile, sweet,
 10 Hating that solemne vice of greatnesse, pride ;
 I meant each softest vertue, there should meet,
 Fit in that* softer bosome to reside.
 Onely a learned, and a manly soule
 I purpos'd her ; that should, with euen powers,
 15 The rock, the spindle, and the sheeres controule
 Of destinie, and spin her owne free houres.
 Such when I meant to faine, and wish'd to see,
 My *Muse* bad, *Bedford* write, and that was shee.

LXXVII.

TO ONE THAT DESIRED ME NOT TO
NAME HIM.

BE safe, nor feare thy selfe so good a fame,
That, any way, my booke should speake thy name :
For, if thou shame, ranck'd with my friends, to goe,
Tarn more asham'd to haue thee thought my foe.

LXXVIII.

TO HORNET.

HORNET, thou hast thy wife drest, for the stall,
To draw thee custome : but her selfe gets all.

LXXIX.

TO ELIZABETH COVNTESSE OF RVTLAND.

That *Poets* are far rarer births then kings,
Your noblest father prou'd : like whom, before,
Or then, or since, about our *Muses* springs,
Came not that soule exhausted so their store.
Hence was it, that the *destinies* decreed 5
(Saue that most masculine issue of his braine)
No male vnto him : who could so exceed
Nature, they thought, in all, that he would faine.
At which, shee happily displeas'd, made you :
On whom, if he were liuing now, to looke, 10
He should those rare, and absolute numbers view,
As he would burne, or better farre his booke.

LXXX.

OF LIFE, AND DEATH.

THe ports of death are sinnes ; of life, good deeds :
Through which, our merit leads vs to our meeds.
How wilfull blind is he then, that would stray,
And hath it, in his powers, to make his way !

Ixxx. 3 would] should *Fa*

- 5 This world deaths region is, the other lifes :
 And here, it should be one of our first strifes,
 So to front death, as men might iudge vs past it.
 For good men but see death, the wicked tast it.

LXXXI.

TO PROVLE THE PLAGIARY.

- F**Orbeare to tempt me, PROVLE, I will not show
 A line vnto thee, till the world it know;
 Or that I'haue by, two good sufficient men,
 To be the wealthy witnesse of my pen :
 5 For all thou hear'st, thou swear'st thy selfe didst doo.
 Thy wit liues by it, PROVLE, and belly too.
 Which, if thou leaue not soone (though I am loth)
 I must a libell make, and cosen both.

LXXXII.

ON CASHIERD CAPT. SVRLY.

- S**VRLY's old whore in her new silkes doth swim :
 He cast, yet keeps her well! No, shee keeps him.

LXXXIII.

TO A FRIEND.

- T**O put out the word, whore, thou do'st me woo,
 Throughout my booke. 'Troth put out woman too.

LXXXIIII.

TO LVCY COVNTESSE OF BEDFORD.

- M**ADAME, I told you late how I repented,
 I ask'd a lord a buck, and he denyed me;
 And, ere I could aske you, I was preuented :
 For your most noble offer had supply'd me.

*Ixxx. 5-8 A separate poem in Add. 14, f. 74 b. 'Death', with 'may' for 'might'. /. 7.
 lxxx. 3 by.] by Ff*

Straight went I home ; and there most like a *Poet*, 5
 I fancied to my selfe, what wine, what wit
 I would haue spent: how euery *Muse* should know it,
 And P H (£ B v s-selfe should be at eating it.
 O *Madame*, if your grant did thus transferre mee,
 Make it your gift. See whither that will beare mee. 10

LXXXV.

TO SIR HENRY GOODYERE.

GOODYERE, Tarn glad, and gratefull to report,
 My selfe a witnesse of thy few dayes sport:
 Where I both learn'd, why wise-men hawking follow,
 And why that bird was sacred to A P o L L o,
 Shee doth instruct men by her gallant flight, 5
 That they to knowledge so should toure vpriight,
 And neuer stoupe, but to strike ignorance :
 Which if they misse, they yet should re-advance
 To former height, and there in circle tarrie,
 Till they be sure to make the foole their quarrie. 10
 Now, in whose pleasures I haue this discerned,
 What would his serious actions me haue learned ?

LXXXVI.

TO THE SAME.

W HEN I would know thee GOODYERE, my thought
 looks
 Vpon thy wel-made choise of friends, and bookes ;
 Then doe I loue thee, and behold thy ends
 In making thy friends bookes, and thy bookes friends :
 Now, I must giue thy life, and deed, the voice 5
 Attending such a studie, such a choice.
 Where, though 't be loue, that to thy praise doth moue,
 It was a knowledge, that begat that loue.

Ixxxv. 8 they yet] yet they F3
 lxxxvi, 7 moue,] moue Fi: move. Fa

LXXXVII.

ON CAPTAIN HAZARD THE CHEATER.

Touch'd with the sinne of false play, in his punque,
 H A Z A R D a month forswore his ; and grew drunke,
 Each night, to drowne his cares : But when the gaine
 Of what shee had wrought came in, and wak'd his braine,
 5 Vpon th'accompt, hers grew the quicker trade.
 Since when, hee's sober againe, and all play's made.

LXXXVIII.

ON ENGLISH MOVNSIEVR

Would you beleeeue, when you this M O V N S I E V R see,
 That his whole body should speake french, not he ?
 That so much skarfe of *France*, and hat, and fether,
 And shooe, and tye, and garter should come hether,
 5 And land on one, whose face durst neuer bee
 Toward the sea, farther then halfe-way tree ?
 That he, vntrauell'd, should be *french* so much,
 As *french-men* in his companie, should seeme *dutch* ?
 Or had his father, when he did him get,
 10 The *french* disease, with which he labours yet ?
 Or hung some M O V N S I E V R S picture on the wall,
 By which his damme concern'd him, clothes and all ?
 Or is it *some french* statue ? No : T doth moue,
 And stoupe, and cringe. O then, it needs must proue
 15 The new french-taylors motion, monthly made,
 Daily to turne in P A V L S, and helpe the trade.

LXXXIX.

To EDWARD ALLEN.

IF *Rome* so great, and in her wisest age,
 Fear'd not to boast the glories of her stage,
 As skilfull Roscivs, and graue ÆSOPE, men,
 Yet crown'd with honors, as with riches, then ;
 lxxxvii. 2 forswore] forswore F2 lxxxviii. 12 him,] him Ff

Who had no lesse a trumpet of their name, 5
 Then C I C E R O, whose euery breath was fame :
 How can so great example dye in mee,
 That, A L L E N, I should pause to publish thee ?
 Who both their graces in thy selfe hast more
 Out-stript, then they did all that went before : 10
 And present worth in all dost so contract,
 As others speake, but onely thou dost act.
 Weare this renowne. 'Tis iust, that who did giue
 So many *Poets* life, by one should Hue.

xc.

ON MILL MY LADIES WOMAN.

WHen MILL first came to court, the vnprofiting foole,
 Vnworthy such a mistris, such a schoole,
 Was dull, and long, ere shee would goe to man :
 At last, ease, appetite, and example wan
 The nicer thing to tast her ladies page ; 5
 And, finding good securitie in his age,
 Went on : and prouing him still, day by day,
 Discern¹d no difference of his yeeres, or play,
 Not though that haire grew browne, which once was amber,
 And he growne youth, was call'd to his ladies chamber. 10
 Still MILL continu'd : Nay, his face growing worse,
 And he remou'd to gent'man of the horse,
 MILL was the same. Since, both his body and face
 Blowne vp ; and he (too'vnwieldie for that place)
 Hath got the stewards chaire ; he will not tarry 15
 Longer a day, but with his MILL will marry.
 And it is hop'd, that shee, like MILO, wull,
 First bearing him a calfe, beare him a bull.

xc. MILL.] MILL. Ff 8 play.] play. Ff 10 chamber.]
 chamber. Ff 17 wull.] wull Fl: will f2

XCI.

To SIR HORACE VERE.

- W**hich of thy names I take, not onely beares
 A *romane* sound, but *romane* vertue weares,
 Illustrious VERE, or H o R A c E ; fit to be
 Sung by a H o R A c E, or a *Muse* as free ;
 5 Which thou art to thy selfe : whose fame was wonne
 In th'eye of *Europe*, where thy deeds were done,
 When on thy trumpet shee did sound a blast,
 Whose relish to eternitie shall last.
 I leaue thy acts, which should I prosecute
 10 Throughout, might flatt'rie seeme ; and to be mute
 To any one, were enuie : which would liue
 Against my graue, and time could not forgiue.
 I speake thy other graces, not lesse showne,
 Nor lesse in practice ; but lesse mark'd, lesse knowne :
 15 Humanitie, and pietie, which are
 As noble in great chiefes, as they are rare.
 And best become the valiant man to weare,
 Who more should seeke mens reuerence, then feare.

XCII.

THE NEW CRIE.

- E**Re cherries ripe, and straw-berries be gone,
 Vnto the cryes of *London* He adde one ;
 Ripe statesmen, ripe : They grow in euery street.
 At sixe and twentie, ripe. You shall 'hem meet,
 5 And haue'hem yeeld no sauour, but of state.
 Ripe are their ruffes, their cuffes, their beards, their gate,

xci. *Holograph in Add. II, f. 87 from the Conway Papers, headed ' To the worthy S^r Horace Vere'.*

3 *Illustrious*] *Illustrious* F3
 4 free ;] free. MS 5 selfe : whose] selfe. Whose MS 6 done.]
 done: MS 7 blast, MS. F2 : blast. FI 8 eternitie shall]
 sternitye will MS 9 leaue thy acts,] leaue, then, acts; MS
 10 seeme;] seeme : MS || enuie : which] Envy, W^h MS
 13 graces,] graces ; MS 14 practice ;] practise : MS knowne :]
 knowne. MS 16 chiefes] *Cheifes* MS

And graue as ripe, like mellow as their faces.

They know the states of *Christendome*, not the places :

Yet haue they seene the maps, and bought 'hem too,

And vnderstand 'hem, as most chapmen doe. 10

The counsels, protects, practises they know,

And what each prince doth for intelligence owe,

And vnto whom : They are the almanacks

For twelue yeeres yet to come, what each state lacks.

They carry in their pockets T A c i T v s, 15

And the GAZETTI, or GALLO-BELGICVS:

And talke reseru'd, lock'd vp, and full of feare,

Nay, aske you, how the day goes, in your eare.

Keepe a starry-chamber sentence close, twelue dayes :

And whisper what a Proclamation sayes. 20

They meet in sixes, and at euery mart,

Are sure to con the catalogue by hart;

Or, euery day, some one at RIME E 's looks,

Or Bi L s, and there he buyes the names of books.

They all get *Porta*, for the sundrie wayes 25

To write in cypher, and the seuerall keyes,

To ope¹ the character. They'haue found the sleight

With iuyce of limons, onions, pisse, to write,

To breake vp scales, and close 'hem. And they know,

If the *States* make peace, how it will goe 30

With *England*. All forbidden bookes they get.

And of the poulder-plot, they will talke yet.

At naming the *French* King, their heads they shake,

And at the *Pope*, and *Spaine* slight faces make.

Or 'gainst the Bishops, for the Brethren, raile, 35

Much like those Brethren ; thinking to preuaile

With ignorance on vs, as they haue done

On them : And therefore doe not onely shunne

Others more modest, but contemne vs too,

That know not so much state, wrong, as they doo. 40

xcii. 14 twelue] twelues Fi: twelves F2 ; Twelve F3 16
Gazetti. or] Query Gazetti,' or 17 lock'd Fa : look'd FI
22 con] con' Ff 28 write,] write. Ff 30 make] make not G

XCIII.

To SIR IOHN RADCLIFFE.

HOW like a colunne, RADCLIFFE, left alone
 For the great marke of vertue, those being gone
 Who did, alike with thee, thy house vp-beare,
 Stand'st thou, to shew the times what you all were ?
 5 Two brauely in the battaile fell, and dy'd,
Ireland Vpbraiding rebells armes, and barbarous pride :
 And two, that would haue falne as great, as they,
 The *Belgick* feuier rauished away.
 Thou, that art all their valour, all their spirit,
 10 And thine owne goodnesse to encrease thy merit,
 Then whose I doe not know a whiter soule,
 Nor could I, had I seene all *Natures* roule,
 Thou yet remayn'st, vn-hurt in peace, or warre,
 Though not vnprou'd : which shewes, thy fortunes are
 15 Willing to expiate the fault in thee,
 Wherewith, against thy bloud, they'offenders bee.

XCIIII.

To LVCY, COVNTESSE OF BEDFORD,
 WITH M^r. BONNES SATYRES.

LVCY, you brightnesse of our spheare, who are
 Life of the *Muses* day, their morning-starre !
 If workes (not th'authors) their owne grace should looke,
 Whose poemes would not wish to be your booke ?
 5 But these, desir'd by you, the makers ends
 Crowne with their owne. Rare poemes aske rare friends.
 Yet, *Satyres*, since the most of mankind bee
 Their vn-auoided subiect, fewest see :
 For none ere tooke that pleasure in sinnes sense,
 10 But, when they heard it tax'd, tooke more offence.
 They, then, that liuing where the matter is bred,
 Dare for these poemes, yet, both aske, and read,
 xciv and xcvi Printed in *Donne's Poems*. 1650.1654,1669.



Lucy, Countess of Bedford

From the -portrait at Woburn Abbey, in the collection of the Duke of Bedford

And like them too; must needfully, though few,
 Be of the best: and 'mongst those, best are you.
 LVCY, you brightnesse of our spheare, who are 15
 The *Muses* euening, as their morning-starre.

xcv.

TO SIR HENRIE SAVILE.

IF, my religion safe, I durst embrace
 That stranger doctrine of PYTHAGORAS,
 I should beleeeue, the soule of TACITVS
 In thee, most weighty SAVILE, liu'd to vs :
 So hast thou rendred him in all his bounds, 5
 And all his numbers, both of sense, and sounds.
 But when I read that speciall piece, restor'd,
 Where NERO falls, and GALBA is ador'd,
 To thine owne proper I ascribe then more ;
 And gratulate the breach, I grieu'd before : 10
 Which *Fate* (it seemes) caus'd in the historic,
 Onely to boast thy merit in supply.
 O, would'st thou adde like hand, to all the rest!
 Or, better worke ! were thy glad countrey blest,
 To haue her storie wouen in thy thred ; 15
 MINE R V A E Sloome was neuerricherspred.
 For who can master those great parts like thee,
 That liu'st from hope, from feare, from faction free ;
 That hast thy brest so cleere of present crimes,
 Thou need'st not shrinke at voyce of after-times ; 20
 Whose knowledge claymeth at the helme to stand ;
 But, wisely, thrusts not forth a forward hand,
 No more then SALVST in the *Romane* state !
 As, then, his cause, his glorie emulate.
 Although to write be lesser then to doo, 25
 It is the next deed, and a great one too.
 We need a man that knowes the seuerall graces
 Of historic, and how to apt their places ;
 xciv. 14 those,] those *F2, Donne*

Where breuitie, where splendor, and where height,
 30 Where sweetnesse is requir'd, and where weight;
 We need a man, can speake of the intents,
 The counsell, actions, orders, and euent
 Of state, and censure them : we need his pen
 Can write the things, the causes, and the men.
 35 But most we need his faith (and all haue you)
 That dares nor write things false, nor hide things true.

xcvi.

TO JOHN DONNE.

WHo shall doubt, DONNE, where I a *Poet* bee,
 When I dare send my *Epigrammes* to thee ?
 That so alone canst iudgc, so'along dost make :
 And, in thy censures, eucnly, dost take
 5 As free simplicitie, to dis-auow,
 As thou hast best authoritie, t(o)'allow.
 Reade all I send : and, if I find but one
 Mark'd by thy hand, and with the better stone,
 My title's seal'd. Those that for claps doe write,
 10 Let pui'nees, porters, players praise delight,
 And, till they burst, their backs, like asses load :
 A man should seeke great gloric, and not broad.

xcvii.

ON THE NEW MOTION.

SEe you yond' Motion ? Not the old *Fa-ding*,
 Nor Captayne POD, nor yet the *Eltham*-thing ;
 But one more rare, and in the case so new :
 His cloke with orient veluet quite Hn'd through,
 5 His rosie tyes and garters so ore-blowne,
 By his each glorious parccll to be knowne !
 He wont was to encounter me, aloud,
 Where ere he met me ; now hee's dumbe, or proud.

Know you the cause ? H'has neither land, nor lease,
 Nor baudie stock, that trauells for encrease, TO
 Nor office in the towne, nor place in court,
 Nor 'bout the beares, nor noyse to make lords sport.
 He is no fauourites fauourite, no deare trust
 Of any *Madames*, hath neadd squires, and must.
 Nor did the king of *Denmarke* him salute, 15
 When he was here. Nor hath he got a sute,
 Since he was gone, more then the one he weares.
 Nor are the Queenes most honor'd maides by th'eares
 About his forme. What then so swells each lim ?
 Onely his clothes haue ouer-leauen'd him. 20

xcvni.

To SIR THOMAS ROE.

THou hast begun well, ROE, which stand well too,
 And I know nothing more thou hast to doo.
 He that is round within himselfe, and streight,
 Need seeke no other strength, no other height ;
 Fortune vpon him breakes her selfe, if ill, 5
 And what would hurt his vertue makes it still.
 That thou at once, then, nobly maist defend
 With thine owne course the iudgement of thy friend,
 Be alwayes to thy gather¹d selfe the same :
 And studie conscience, more then thou would'st fame. 10
 Though both be good, the latter yet is worst,
 And euer is ill got without the first.

XCIX.

To THE SAME.

THat thou hast kept thy loue, encreast thy will,
 Better'd thy trust to letters ; that thy skill;
 Hast taught thy selfe worthy thy pen to tread,
 And that to write things worthy to be read :
 xcvii. 14 hath neadd squires] hath need o' squires W¹ Query, neadd' (cf.
 Forbidd' xxi. 4)
 xcvi. 6 vertue] vertue, Fa

- 5 How much of great example wert thou, ROE,
 If time to facts, as vnto men would owe ?
 But much it now auailles, what's done, of whom :
 The selfe-same deeds, as diuersly they come,
 From place, or fortune, are made high, or low,
 10 And euen the praisers Judgement suffers so.
 Well, though thy name lesse then our great ones bee,
 Thy fact is more : let truth encourage thee.

C.

ON PLAY-WRIGHT.

PLAY-WRIGHT, by chance, hearing some toyes I had
 writ,
 Cry'd to my face, they were *ttielixir* of wit:
 And I must now beleeeue him : for, to day,
 Fiue of my iests, then stolne, past him a play.

CI.

INVITING A FRIEND TO SVPPER.

T0 night, graue sir, both my poore house, and I
 Doe equally desire your companie :
 Not that we thinke vs worthy such a ghest,
 But that your worth will dignifie our feast,
 5 With those that come ; whose grace may make that seeme
 Something, which, else, could hope for no esteeme.
 It is the faire acceptance, Sir, creates
 The entertaynment perfect: not the cates.
 Yet shall you haue, to rectifie your palate,
 20 An oliue, capers, or some better sallade
 Vshring the mutton ; with a short-leg'd hen,
 If we can get her, full of eggs, and then,

Limons, and wine for sauce : to these, a coney
 Is not to be despair'd of, for our money;
 And, though fowle, now, be scarce, yet there are cJarkes, 15
 The skie not falling, thinke we may haue larkes.
 He tell you of more, and lye, so you will come :
 Of partrich, pheasant, wood-cock, of which some
 May yet be there ; and godwit, if we can :
 Knat, raile, and ruffe too. How so ere, my man 20
 Shall reade a piece of ViRGiL, TAciTvS,
 Li ViE, or of some better booke to vs,
 Of which wee'll speake our minds, amidst our meate ;
 And He professe no verses to repeate :
 To this, if ought appeare, which I not know of, 25
 That will the pastrie, not my paper, show of.
 Digestiue cheese, and fruit there sure will bee ;
 But that, which most doth take my *Muse*, and mee,
 Is a pure cup of rich Canary-wine,
 Which is the *Mermaids*, now, but shall be mine : 30
 Of which had HORACE, OFANACREON tasted,
 Their Hues, as doe their lines, till now had lasted.
Tobacco, *Nectar*, or the *Thespian* spring,
 Are all but LVThERS beere, to this I sing.
 Of this we will sup free, but moderately, 35
 And we will haue no *Pooly*\ or *Parrot* by ;
 Nor shall our cups make any guiltie men :
 But, at our parting, we will be, as when
 We innocently met. No simple word,
 That shall be vtter'd at our mirthfull boord, 40
 Shall make vs sad next morning : or affright
 The libertie, that wec'll enioy to night.

16 think] say H 17 lye] buy H 19. 20 and . . . too] and
 perhaps if we can A ducke and Mallard H 22 of om. H 25 not
 know H: know not Ff 26 will] may H 27 and . . . bee] will
 sure bee there, and fruites H 28 my . . . mee] me and my muse H
 31 Of which had] which had old H 32 as . . . had] had like their
 lines for euer H 33 or] and H 36 *Pooly*'. or *Parrot*] foole,
 or parott H 42 that] which H

CII.

TO WILLIAM EARLE OF PEMBROKE.

- I** Doe but name thee PEMBROKE, and I find
 It is an *Epigramme*, on all man-kind ;
 Against the bad, but of, and to the good :
 Both which are ask'd, to haue thee vnderstood.
 5 Nor could the age haue mist thee, in this strife
 Of vice, and vertue ; wherein all great life
 Almost, is exercis'd : and scarce one knowes,
 To which, yet, of the sides himselfe he owes.
 They follow vertue, for reward, to day ;
 10 To morrow vice, if shee giue better pay :
 And are so good, and bad, iust at a price,
 As nothing else discernes the vertue' or vice.
 But thou, whose noblgssse keeps one stature still,
 And one true posture, though besieg'd with ill
 15 Of what ambition, faction, pride can raise ;
 Whose life, eu'n they, that enuie it, must praise ;
 That art so reuerenc'd, as thy comming in,
 But in the view, doth interrupt their sinne ;
 Thou must draw more : and they, that hope to see
 20 - The common-wealth still safe, must studie thee.

CHI.

TO MARY LADY WROTH.

- H**OW well, faire crowne of your faire sexe, might hee,
 That but the twi-light of your sprite did see,
 And noted for what flesh such soules were fram'd,
 Know you to be a SYDNEY, though vn-nam'd ?
 5 And, being nam'd, how little doth that name
 Need any *Muses* praise to giue it fame ?
 Which is, it selfe, the *imprese* of the great,
 And glorie of them all, but to repeate !

Forgiue me then, if mine but say you are
 A SYDNEY : but in that extend as farre 10
 As lowdest praisers, who perhaps would find
 For euery part a character assign'd.
 My praise is plaine, and where so ere profest,
 Becomes none more then you, who need it least.

cm i.

TO SVSAN COVNTESSE OF MONTGOMERY.

Were they that nam'd you, prophets ? Did they see,
 Euen in the dew of grace, what you would bee ?
 Or did our times require it, to behold
 A new SVSANNA, equail to that old ?
 Or, because some scarce thinke that storie true, 5
 To make those faithfull, did the *Fates* send you ?
 And to your *Scene* lent no lesse dignitie
 Of birth, of match, of forme, of chastitie ?
 Or, more then borne for the comparison
 Of former age, or glorie of our one, 10
 Were you aduanced, past those times, to be
 The light, and marke vnto posteritie ?
 ludge they, that can : Here I haue rais'd to show
 A picture, which the world for yours must know,
 And like it too ; if they looke equally : *5
 If not, 'tis fit for you, some should enuy.

cv.

TO MARY LADY WROTH.

MADAME, had all antiquitie beene lost,
 All historic seal'd vp, and fables crost ;
 That we had left vs, nor by time, nor place,
 Least mention of a *Nymph*, a *Muse*, a *Grace*,
 But euen their names were to be made a-new, j
 Who could not but create them all, from you ?

- He, that but saw you weare the wheaten hat,
 Would call you more then CERES, if not that:
 And, drest in shepherds tyre, who would not say :
 10 You were the bright O E N o N E, FLORA, or *May* ?
 If dancing, all would cry *th'Idalian* Queene,
 Were leading forth the *Graces* on the greene :
 And, armed to the chase, so bare her bow
 D i A N A; 'alone, so hit, and hunted so.
 15 There's none so dull, that for your stile would aske,
 That saw you put on PALLAS plumed caske :
 Or, keeping your due state, that would not cry,
 There I V N O sate, and yet no Peacock by.
 So are you *Natures Index*, and restore,
 20 I' your selfe, _all treasure lost of th'age before.

cvi.

To SIR EDWARD HERBERT.

- I**F men get name, for some one vertue : Then,
 What man art thou, that art so many men,
 All-vertuous H E R B E R T ! on whose euery part
Truth might spend all her voyce, *Fame* all her art.
 5 Whether thy learning they would take, or wit,
 Or valour, or thy iudgement seasoning it,
 Thy standing vp-right to thy selfe, thy ends
 Like straight, thy pietie to God, and friends :
 Their latter praise would still the greatest bee,
 10 And yet, they, all together, lesse then thee.

CVII.

To CAPTAYNE HVNCRY.

- D**Oe what you come for, Captayne, with your newes ;
 That's, sit, and eate : doe not my eares abuse.
 I oft looke on false coyne, to know't from true :
 Not that I loue it, more, then I will you.
 5 Tell the grosse *Dutch* those grosser tales of yours,
 How great you were with their two Emperours ;

And yet are with their Princes : Fill them full
 Of your *Morauian* horse, *Venetian* bull.
 Tell them, what parts yo'haue tane, whence run away,
 What States yo'haue gull'd, and which yet keepees yo'in 10
 pay.
 Giue them your seruices, and embassies
 In *Ireland*, *Holland*, *Sweden*, pompous lies,
 In *Hungary*, and *Poland*, *Turkie* too ;
 What at *Ligorne*, *Rome*, *Florence* you did doe :
 And, in some yeere, all these together heap'd, '5
 For which there must more sea, and land be leap'd,
 If but to be beleeu'd you haue the hap,
 Then can a flea at twise skip i'the Map.
 Giue your yong States-men, (that first make you drunkc,
 And then lye with you, closer, then a punque, 20
 For newes) your *Ville-royes*, and *Silleries*,
lanin's, your *Nuncio's*, and your *Tuilleries*,
 Your *Arch-Dukes* Agents, and your *Beringhams*,
 That are your wordes of credit. Keepe your Names
 Of *Hannow*, *Shieter-huissen*, *Popenheim*, 25
Hans-spiegle, *Rotteinberg*, and *Boutersheim*,
 For your next meale : this you are sure of. Why
 Will you part with them, here, vnthnftely ?
 Nay, now you puffe, tuske, and draw vp your chin,
 Twirle the poore chaine you run a feasting in. 3°
 Come, be not angrie, you are H v N G R Y ; eate ;
 Doe what you come for, Captayne, There's your meate.

cv III.

TO TRVE SOVLDIERS.

STrength of my Countrey, whilst I bring to view
 Such as are misse-call'd Captaynes, and wrong you ;
 And your high names : I doe desire, that thence
 Be nor put on you, nor you take offence.

cviii. Quoted in *Poetaster, Apologetical Dialogue*, 131-40 2 you;]
 you Poet,

- 5 I sweare by your true friend, my *Muse*, I loue
 Your great profession ; which I once, did proue :
 And did not shame it with my actions, then,
 No more, then I dare now doe, with my pen.
 He that not trusts me, hauing vow'd thus much,
 10 But's angry for the Captayne, still: is such.

cIx.

TO SIR HENRY NEVIL.

- W**Ho now calls on thee, NEvIL, is a *Muse*,
 That serues nor fame, nor titles ; but doth chuse
 Where vertue makes them both, and that's in thee :
 Where all is faire, beside thy pedigree.
 5 Thou are not one, seek'st miseries with hope,
 Wrestlest with dignities, or fain'st a scope
 Of seruice to the publique, when the end
 Is priuate gaine, which hath long guilt to friend.
 Thou rather striu'st the matter to possesse,
 10 And elements of honor, then the dresse ;
 To make thy lent life, good against the *Fates*:
 And first to know thine owne state, then the States.
 To be the same in roote, thou art in height;
 And that thy soule should giue thy flesh her weight.
 15 Goe on, and doubt not, what posteritie,
 Now I haue sung thee thus, shall iudge of thee.
 Thy deedes, vnto thy name, will proue new wombes,
 Whil'st others toyle for titles to their tombes.

cviii. 6 profession ; ... once,... proue :] profession,... once ... proue ;
 Poet. 8 dare now doe,] dare, now, doe Poet. pen. Poet., F2 : pen FI

CX.

TO CLEMENT EDMONDS, ON HIS
CÆSARS *Commentaries observed, and translated.*

NOT CÆSARS deeds, nor all his honors wonne,
In these west-parts, nor when that warre was done,
The name of POMPEY for anemie,
CATO's to boote, *Rome*, and her libertie,
All yeelding to his fortune, nor, the while, 5
To haue engrau'd these acts, with his owne stile,
And that so strong and deepe, as 't might be thought,
He wrote, with the same spirit that he fought,
Nor that his worke liu'd in the hands of foes,
Vn-argued then, and yet hath fame from those ; 10
Not all these, EDMONDS, or what else put too,
Can so speake CAESAR, as thy labours doe.
For, where his person liu'd scarce one iust age,
And that, midst enuy' and parts ; then fell by rage :
His deedes too dying, but in bookes (whose good 15
How few haue read I how fewer vnderstood !)
Thy learned hand, and true *Promethean* art
(As by a new creation) part by part,
In euery counsell, stratageme, design^
Action, or engine, worth a note of thine, 20
T(o)'all future time, not onely doth restore
His life, but makes, that he can dye no more.

ex. First printed in 1609 in Clement Edmonds's ' *Obseruations* ' on
Caesar's *Commentaries on the Civil War* and in the collected edition of his
' *Obseruations* ' on the complete *Commentaries*, on sig. Aiii verso, headed
' *Epigramme.* ' and signed Ben. Ionsen. ' (— E) 2 west-parts, nor]
West-parts ; Nor, E 3 enemie] Enemie ; E 4 CATO's to
boote,] Goto to boote ; E libertie,] libertie ; E 5 fortune,
nor] fortune : Nor E 6 engrau'd] ingrau'd E acts,] Acts E
stile,] stile ; E 7 strong] strong. E as 't] as E thought,
thought E 8 wrote,] wrote E fought,] fought ; E 9 liu'd]
liv'd. E 10 yet] (yet) E // else] else, E too,]
to E 13 scarce . . . age, E, Fa : scarce, . . . age FI 14 that,]
that E enuy' and E : enuy, and Fi then, E 15 but]
saue E bookes] bookes: E 16 vnderstood I E : vnderstood ?) Fi
18 (As . . . creation)] As . . . creation. E 19 counsell] counsell E
22 life.] Life; E

CXI.

TO THE SAME; ON THE SAME.

WHO EDMONDS, reades thy booke, and doth not see
 What th'antique souldiers were, the moderne bee ?
 Wherein thou shew'st, how much the latter are
 Beholding, to this master of the warre ;
 5 And that, in action, there is nothing new,
 More, then to varie what our elders knew :
 Which all, but ignorant Captaynes, will confesse :
 Nor to giue C A E S A R this, makes ours the lesse.
 Yet thou, perhaps, shalt meet some tongues will grutch,
zo That to the world thou should'st reueale so much,
 And thence, deprauē thee, and thy worke. To those
 C A E S A R stands vp, as from his vrne late rose,
 By thy great helpe : and doth proclaime by mee,
 They murder him againe, that enuie thee.

CXII.

TO A WEAKE GAMSTER IN POETRY.

WITH thy small stocke, why art thou ventring still,
 At this so subtile sport: and play'st so ill P
 Think'st thou it is meere fortune, that can win ?
 Or thy ranke setting ? that thou dar'st put in
 5 Thy all, at all : and what so ere I doe,
 Art still at that, and think'st to blow me'vp too ?
 I cannot for the stage a *Drama* lay,
Tragick, or *Comick* ; but thou writ'st the play.
 I leaue thee there, and giuing way, entend
 10 An *Epick* poeme ; thou hast the same end.
 I modestly quit that, and thinke to write,
 Next morne, an *Ode* : Thou mak'st a song ere night.

cxi. Printed with ex in the 'Observations', 1609, headed 'Another of
 the same.' and signed 'Ben. I on son.'

6 More,] More E knew :] knew. E 4 Beholding] Beholden E
 E, Fa : Captaynes Fi 9 tongues] tongues. E 7 Captaynes,] Capitaines,
 E ii And] And, E worke.] Worke: E 10 much,] mutch ;
 13 helpe] Art E proclaime] proclaime, E

I passe to *Elegies* ; Thou meet'st me there :
 To *Satyres* ; and thou dost pursue me. Where,
 Where shall I scape thee ? in an *Epigramme* ? 15
 O, (thou cry'st out) that is thy proper game.
 Troth, if it be, I pittie thy ill lucke ;
 That both for wit, and sense, so oft dost plucke,
 And neuer art encounter^d, I confesse :
 Nor scarce dost colour for it, which is lesse. 20
 Pr'y thee, yet saue thy rest; giue ore in time :
 There's no vexation, that can make thee prime.

CXIII.

TO SIR THOMAS OVERBURY.

SO PHOEBVS makes me worthy of his bayes,
 As but to speake thee, O V E R B U R Y , is praise :
 So, where thou liu'st, thou mak'st life vnderstood I
 Where, what makes others great, doth keepe thee good !
 I thinke, the *Fate* of court thy comming crau'd, 5
 That the wit there, and manners might be sau'd :
 For since, what ignorance, what pride is fled !
 And letters, and humanitie in the stead !
 Repent thee not of thy faire precedent,
 Could make such men, and such a place repent: 10
 Nor may'any feare, to loose of their degree,
 Who'in such ambition can but follow thee.

CXIIII.

TO M^{rs} PHILIP SYDNEY.

I Must belceue some miracles still bee,
 When SYDNEY's name I heare, or face I see :
 For CVPID, who (at first) tooke vaine delight,
 In meere out-formes, vntill he lost his sight,

- 5 Hath chang'd his soule, and made his object you :
 Where finding so much beautie met with vertue,
 He hath not onely gain'd himselfe his eyes,
 But, in your loue, made all his seruants wise.

CXV.

ON THE TOWNES HONEST MAN.

- Y**OU wonder, who this is I and, why I name
 Him not, aloud, that boasts so good a fame :
 Naming so many, too I But, this is one,
 Suffers no name, but a description :
 5 Being no vitious person, but the vice
 About the towne ; and knowne too, at that price.
 A subtle thing, that doth affections win
 By speaking well o' the company¹ it 's in.
 Talkes loud, and bawdy, has a gather*d deale
 20 Of newes, and noyse, to s(tr)ow out a long meale.
 Can come from *Tripoly*, leape stooles, and winke,
 Doe all, that longs to the *anarchy* of drinke,
 Except the *duett*. Can sing songs, and catches ;
 Giue euery one his dose of mirth : and watches
 15 Whose name's vn-welcome to the present eare,
 And-him it layes on ; if he be not there.
 Tell's of him, all the tales, it selfe then makes ;
 But, if it shall be question'd, vnder-takes,
 It will deny all; and forswear it too :
 20 Not that it feares, but will not haue to doo
 With such a one. And therein keepes it's word.
 Twill see it's sister naked, ere a sword.
 At euery meale, where it doth dine, or sup,
 The cloth's no sooner gone, but it gets vp
 25 And, shifting of it's faces, doth play more
 Parts, then th¹*Italian* could doe, with his dore.
 Acts old *Iniquitie*, and in the fit
 Of miming, gets th'opinion of a wit.

Executes men in picture. By defect,
 From friendship, is it's owne fames architect. 30
 An inginer, in slanders, of all fashions,
 That seeming prayses, are, yet accusations.
 Describ'd, it 's thus : Defin'd would you it haue ?
 Then, *The townes honest Man's* her errant'st knaue.

CXVI.

To SIR WILLIAM IEPHSON.

I EPHSON, thou man of men, to whose lou'd name
 All gentrie, yet, owe part of their best flame !
 So did thy vertue'enforme, thy wit sustaine
 That age, when thou stood'st vp the master-braine :
 Thou wert the first, mad'st merit know her strength, j
 And those that lack'd it, to suspect at length,
 'Twas not entayl'd on title. That some word
 Might be found out as good, and not *my Lord*.
 That *Nature* no such difference had imprest
 In men, but euery brauest was the best: 10
 That bloud not mindes, but mindes did bloud adorne :
 And to liue great, was better, then great borne.
 These were thy knowing arts : which who doth now
 Vertuously practise must at least allow
 Them in, if not, from thee ; or must commit 15
 A desperate soloecisme in truth and wit.

CXVII.

ON GROYNE.

G ROYNE, come of age, his state sold out of hand
 For'his whore : GROYNE doth still occupy his land,
 cxv. 34 *Man's*] **Man's** FI : *man's* F2

CXVIII.

ON GVT.

GVT eats all day, and lechers all the night,
 So all his meate he tasteth ouer, twice :
 And, striuing so to double his delight,
 He makes himselfe a thorough-fare of vice.
 5 Thus, in his belly, can he change a sin,
 Lust it comes out, that gluttony went in.

CXIX.

To SIR RAPH SHELTON

NOt he that flies the court for want of clothes,
 At hunting railes, hauing no guift in othes,
 Cryes out 'gainst cocking, since he cannot bet,
 Shuns prease, for two maine causes, poxe, and debt,
 5 With me can merit more, then that good man,
 Whose dice not doing well, to'a pulpit ran.
 No, SHELTON, giue me thee, canst want all these,
 But dost it out of iudgement, not disease ;
 Dar'st breath in any ayre ; and with safe skill,
 10 Till thou canst finde the best, choose the least ill.
 That to the vulgar canst thy selfe apply,
 Treading a better path, not contrary ;
 And, in their errors maze, thine owne way know :
 Which is to liue to conscience, not to show.
 15 He, that, but liuing halfe his age, dyes such ;
 Makes, the whole longer, then 'twas giuen him, much.

CXX.

EPITAPH ON S(ALOMON) P(AVY) A CHILD
OF Q. EL(IZABETHS) CHAPPEL.

WEepe with me all you that read
This little storie :
And know, for whom a teare you shed,
 Death's selfe is sorry.
'Twas a child, that so did thriue 5
 In grace, and feature,
As *Heauen* and *Nature* seem'd to striue
 Which own'd the creature.
Yeeres he numbred scarce thirteene
 When *Fates* turn'd cruell, 10
Yet three fill'd *Zodiackes* had he beene
 The stages iewell ;
And did act (what now we mone)
 Old men so duely,
As, sooth, the *Parca* thought him one, 15
 He plai'd so truely.
So, by error, to his fate
 They all consented ;
But viewing him since (alas, too late)
 They haue repented. 20
And haue sought (to giue new birth)
 In bathes to steepe him ;
But, being so much too good for earth,
 Heauen vowes to keepe him.

cxx. In *Ash* 2. p. 171, headed 'Vppon Sal: Pauye a boy of 13 years of age and on of the Companye of the Reuells to Queene Elizabeth', and subscribed 'finis : Ben: Iohnson.' 3 a teare you] thes teares are
Ash 7 seem'd to] both did *Ash* // three fill'd] thrice past
Ash had he] now had *Ash* 12 The] Our *Ash* 13-15
And . . . one,] And what wee now doe Moane | hee playd Old men so
Dulye | The Destinies thought hime to be one *Ash* 16 plai'd]
faind *Ash* 17, 18 So . . . consented] And in that Error they
Consented | To his fatall Death *Ash* 20-22 They . . . him] since
haue repented | and would haue giuen new breath. | Nay they desire
(not able) to giue birth | In Charmes to sleep him. *Ash*.

CXXI.

To BENJAMIN RVDYERD.

RV DYERD, as lesser dames, to great ones vse,
 My lighter comes, to kisse thy learned *Muse* ;
 Whose better studies while shee emulates,
 Shee learnes to know long difference of their states.
 5 Yet is the office not to be despis'd,
 If onely loue should make the action pris'd :
 Nor he, for friendship, to be thought vnfit,
 That striues, his manners should precede his wit.

CXXII.

To THE SAME.

IF I would wish, for truth, and not for show,
 The aged S A T V R N E ' S age, and rites to know;
 If I would striue to bring backe times, and trie
 The world's pure gold, and wise simplicitie ;
 5 If I would vertue set, as shee was yong,
 And heare her speake with one, and her first tongue ;
 If holiest friend-ship, naked to the touch,
 I would restore, and keepe it euer such ;
 I need no other arts, but studie thee :
 10 Who prou'st, all these were, and againe may bee.

CXXIN.

To THE SAME.

WRiting thy selfe, or iudging others writ,
 I know not which th'hast most, candor, or wit:
 But both th'hast so, as who affects the state
 Of the best writer, and iudge, should emulate.

CXXIII.

EPITAPH ON ELIZABETH, L. H.

Would'st thou heare, what man can say
 In a little ? Reader, stay.
 Vnder-neath this stone doth lye
 As much beautie, as could dye :
 Which in life did harbour giue 5
 To more vertue, then doth Hue.
 If, at all, shee had a fault,
 Leauē it buried in this vault.
 One name was ELIZABETH,
 Th'other let it sleepe with death : 10
 Fitter, wheic iL dyed, to tell,
 Then that it liu'd at all. Farewell.

CXXV.

TO SIR WILLIAM VVEDALE.

V'DALE, thou piece of the firsj; times, a man
 Made for what *Nature* could, or *Vertue* can ;
 Both whose dimensions, lost, the world might finde
 Restored in thy body, and thy minde !
 Who sees a soule, in such a body set, 5
 Might loue the treasure for the cabinet.
 But I, no child, no foole, respect the kinde,
 The full, the flowing graces there enshrin'd ;
 Which (would the world not mis-call't flatterie)
 I could adore, almost t(o)'idolatrie. 10

cxxiv. In *HS. f. 30* ('on M^{rs}. Boulstred', subscribed 'Ben Johnson');
Add. 5, l. 97 b ('On a Gentlewom: Tomb', //, 1-8) : *Ash 2. p. 168*
 ('An Epitaph on a Gentelwoman whose name was Elizabeth') : *Ra.*
f. 267 b ('An Epitaph on Queene Elizabeth'. subscribed 'B: Jonson') :
RP6. f. 269 a (//, 3-6) : *RPg. f. 25 b* ('An other' epitaph on 'Mistress
 Boulstead') : *J2, f. 86*, 'An Epitaph', subscribed 'Ben Johnston':
TCD p. 494 ('On the death of a most fayre and vertuous Lady', *U. I-8*,
 subscribed 'Sir Edw: Hastings'). i Wouldst] Wilt *H. Add.. RP 9*
 2 In] heere *H* : Heare *RP 9* : Looke *Add.* 6 To] Vnto *Add.*
 vertue. then] beautye than *RP 9* : beautie that *H* doth] can *R2* :
 did *RP 6* 7 all] moste *H* : most *RP 9* 10 with] tyll /
 ii Fitter, where] Fitter 'twere *Ra. J* where] when *H*

CXXVI.

To HIS LADY, THEN M^r- GARY.

Retyr'd, with purpose your faire worth to praise,
'Mongst *Hampton* shades, and PHOZBVS groue of
bayes,

I pluck'd a branch ; the iealous god did frowne,
And bad me lay th'vsurped laurell downe :
5 Said I wrong'd him, and (which was more) his loue.

I answer'd, DAPHNE now no paine can proue.

PHOZBVS replied. Bold head, it is not shee :

GARY my loue is, DAPHNE but my tree.

CXXVII.

To ESME, LORD 'AVBIGNY.

IS there a hope, that Man would thankefull bee,
If I should faile, in gratitude, to thee,
To whom I am so bound, lou'd AVBIGNY ?

No, I doe, therefore, call *Posteritie*

5 Into the debt; and reckon on her head,
How full of want, how swallow'd vp, how dead
I, and this *Muse* had beene, if thou hadst not
Lent timely succours, and new life begot:

So, all rewa'd, or name, that growes to mee

10 By her attempt, shall still be owing thee.

And, than this same, I know no abler way
To thanke thy benefits : which is, to pay.

CXXVIII.

To WILLIAM ROE.

ROE (and my ioy to name) th'art now, to goe
Countries, and climes, manners, and men to know,
T(o)^lextract, and choose the best of all these knowne,
And those to turne to bloud, and make thine owne:

cxxvii. 'AVBIGNY] AUBIGNY Fz 2 thee,] thee Ff

After cxxviii Fa inserts the lines ' To EDWARD FILMER ' 1629: see
U.V.xx xiii.

May winde as soft as breath of kissing friends, 5
 Attend thee hence ; and there, may all thy ends,
 As the beginnings here, proue purely sweet,
 And perfect in a circle alwayes meet.
 So, when we, blest with thy returne, shall see
 Thy selfe, with thy first thoughts, brought home by thee, 10
 We each to other may this voyce enspire ;
 This is that good ÆNEAS, past through fire,
 Through seas, stormes, tempests : and imbarqu'd for hell,
 Came backe vntouch'd. This man hath traueil'd well.

CXXIX.

To MIME.

THat, not a pairc of friends each other see,
 But the first question is, when one saw thee ?
 That there's no iourney set, or thought vpon,
 To *Braynford, Hackney, Bow*, but thou mak'st one ;
 That scarce the Towne designeth any feast 5
 To which thou'rt not a weeke, bespoke a guest;
 That still th'art made the suppers flagge, the drum,
 The very call, to make all others come :
 Think'st thou, MIME, this is great ? or, that they striue
 Whose noyse shall keepe thy miming most aliue, 10
 Whil'st thou dost rayse some Player, from the graue,
 Out-dance the *Babion*, or out-boast the Braue ;
 Or (mounted on a stoole) thy face doth hit
 On some new gesture, that 's imputed wit ?
 0, runne not proud of this. Yet, take thy due. 15
 Thou dost out-zany CORELY, POD ; nay, GvE :
 And thine owne CORIAT too. But (would'st thou see)
 Men loue thee not for this : They laugh at thee.

cxxix 16 GVE] Cue *Fi* : CUE *Fa*

CXXX.

To ALPHONSO FERRABOSCO, *on his Booke.*

TO vrge, my lou'd ALPHONSO, that bold fame
 Of building townes, and making wilde beasts tame,
 Which *Musick* had ; or speake her knowne effects,
 That shee remoueth cares, sadnesse elects,
 5 Declineth anger, perswades clemencie,
 Doth sweeten mirth, and heighten pietie,
 And is t(o)'a body, often, ill inclin'd,
 No lesse a sou'raigne cure, then to the mind ;
 T(o)'¹alledge, that greatest men were not asham'd,
 10 Of old, euen by her practise, to be fam'd ;
 To say, indeed, shee were the soule of heauen,
 That the eight spheare, no lesse, then planets seauen,
 Mou'd by her order, and the ninth more high,
 Including all, were thence call'd harmonic :
 15 I, yet, had vtter'd nothing on thy part,
 When these were but the praises of the Art.
 But when I haue said, The proofes of all these bee
 Shed in thy Songs; 'tis true : but short of thee.

CXXXI.

To THE SAME.

WHen we doe giue, ALPHONSO, to the light,
 A worke of ours, we part with our owne right;
 For, then, all mouthes will iudge, and their owne way :
 The learn'd haue no more priuiledge, then the lay.

cxxx. First printed in 'Ayres : by Alfonso Ferrabosco. London : Printed by T. Snodham, for John Browne', 1609. headed 'TO MY EXCELLENT FRIEND ALFONSO FERRABOSCO' and signed 'Ben: Ionson'. i ALPHONSO] Alfonso Ferr fame Ferr: fame, F 7 to'a Ferr: t'a F 9 To'alledge Ferr: T'alledge F 10 practise, Ferr : practise F 17 The Ferr : the F

cxix. First printed in 'Lessons for I. a. and j. By Alfonso Ferrabosco. London : Printed by Thomas Snodham, for Iohn Browne', 1609 (= Ferr). headed 'TO MY EXCELLENT FRIEND, ALFONSO FERRABOSCO'. and signed 'Ben: Ionson'. i ALPHONSO] Alfonso Ferr 3 iudge,] iudge ; Ferr

And though we could all men, all censures heare, 5
 We ought not glue them taste, we had an eare.
 For, if the hum'rous world will talke at large,
 They should be fooles, for me, at their owne charge.
 Say, this, or that man they to thee preferre ;
 Euen those for whom they doe this, know they erre : 10
 And would (being ask'd the truth) ashamed say,
 They were not to be nam'd on the same day.
 Then stand vnto thy selfe, not seeke without
 For fame, with breath soone kindled, soone blowne out.

CXXXII.

To M^r. IOSVAH SYLVESTER.

IF to admire were to commend, my praise
 Might then both thee, thy worke and merit raise :
 But, as it is (the Child of Ignorance,
 And vtter stranger to all ayre of *France*)
 How can I speake of thy great paines, but crre ? 5
 Since they can only iudge, that can confcrre.
 Behold ! the reuerend shade of BARTAS stands
 Before my thought, and (in thy right) commands
 That to the world I publish, for him, this ;
 BARTAS *doth wish thy English now were his.* 10
 So well in that are his inuentions wrought,
 As his will now be the *translation* thought,
 Thine the *originall*; and *France* shall boast,
 No more, those mayden glories shee hath lost.

cxxxi. 5 And] And, *Ferr* 7 hum'rous] numerous *Ferr* talke]
 talke, *Ferr* 12 nam'd] nam'd. *Ferr* 13 not- nnr *Ferr*. F2
 cxxxii. First printed in *Josuah Sylvester's ' Bart as his Deitine Weekes*
 6- *Works Translated'*. 1605, sig. A 6* (= 65'), headed 'EPIGRAM.
 To M. Josuah Syluester' (= B). 2 worke] worke. U 5 erre ?]
 erre: B 6 conferre.] conferre > B 9 this] This H 10 his]
 His B 12 his] His B 14 more.] more U : more ; F2

CXXXIII.

ON THE FAMOUS VOYAGE.

NO more let *Greece* her bolder fables tell
 Of HERCVLES, or THESEVS going to *hell*,
 ORPHEVS, VLYSSES: or the *Latine Muse*,
 With tales of *Troyes* iust knight, our faiths abuse :
 5 We haue a SnelTON, and a HEYDEN got,
 Had power to act, what they to faine had not.
 All, that they boast of STYx, of ACHERON,
 COCYTVS, PHLEGETON, our haue prou'd in one ;
 The filth, stench, noyse : saue only what was there
 10 Subtly distinguish'd, was confused here.
 Their wherry had no saile, too ; ours had none :
 And in it, two more horride knaues, then CHARON.
 Arses were heard to croake, in stead of frogs ;
 And for one CERBERVS, the whole coast was dogs.
 15 *Furies* there wanted not: each scold was ten.
 And, for the cryes of *Ghosts*, women, and men,
 Laden with plague-sores, and their sinnes, were heard,
 Lash'd by their consciences, to die, affeard.
 Then let the former age, with this content her,
 20 Shee brought the *Poets* forth, but ours th'aduenturer.

THE VOYAGE IT SELFE.

ISing the braue aduenture of two wights,
 And pittie 'tis, I cannot call 'hem knights :
 One was ; and he, for brawne, and braine, right able
 To haue beene stiled of King ARTHVRS table.
 25 The other was a squire, of faire degree ;
 But, in the action, greater man then hee :
 Who gaue, to take at his returne from *Hell*,
 His three for one. Now, lordings, listen well.
 It was the day, what time the powerfull *Moone*
 30 Makes the poore *Banck-side* creature wet it¹ shoone,

In it' owne hall; when these (in worthy scorne
Of those, that put out moneyes, on returne
From *Venice*, *Paris*, or some in-land passage
Of sixe times to, and fro, without embassage,
Or him that backward went to *Berwicke*, or which 35
Did dance the famous *Morrisse*, vnto *Norwich*)
At *Bread-streets* Mermaid, hauing din'd, and merry,
Propos'd to goe to *HoVborne* in a wherry :

A harder tasque, then either his to *Bristo'*,
Or his to *Antwerpe*. Therefore, once more, list ho¹. 40

A *Docke* there is, that called is AVERNVS,
Of some *Bride-well*, and may, in time, concerne vs
All, that are readers : but, me thinkcs 'tis od,
That all this while I haue forgot some *god*,
Or *goddesse* to inuoke, to stuffe my verse ; 45

And with both bombard-stile, and phrase, rehearse
The many perills of this *Port*, and how
Sans helpe of S Y B i L, or a golden bough,
Or magick sacrifice, they past along !
A L C I D E S, be thou succouring to my song. 50

Thou hast seene *hell* (some say) and know'st all nookes there,
Canst tell me best, how euery *Furie* lookes there,
And art a *god*, if *Fame* thee not abuses,
Always at hand, to aide the merry *Muses*.

Great *Club-fist*, though thy backe, and bones be sore, 55
Still, with thy former labours ; yet, once more,
Act a braue worke, call it thy last aducntry :
But hold my torch, while I describe the entry
To this dire passage. Say, thou stop thy nose :
Tis'but light paines : Indeede this *Dock's* no rose. 60

In the first iawes appear'd that vgly monster,
Ycleped *Mud*, which, when their oares did once stirre,
Belch'd forth an ayrc, as hot, as at the muster
Of all your night-tubs, when the carts doe cluster,
Who shall discharge first his mcrd-vrinous load : 65
Thorough her wombe they make their famous road,

- Betweene two walls ; where, on one side, to scar men,
 Were seene your vgly *Centaures*, yee call Car-men,
Gorgonian scolds, and *Harpyes* : on the other
 70 Hung stench, diseases, and old filth, their mother,
 With famine, wants, and sorrowes many a dosen,
 The least of which was to the plague a cosen.
 But they vnfrighted passe, though many a priuie
 Spake to 'hem louder, then the oxe in LIVIE ;
 75 And many a sinke pour'd out her rage anenst 'hem ;
 But still their valour, and their vertue fenc't 'hem,
 And, on they went, like CASTOR braue, and POLLvx :
 Ploughing the mayne. When, see (the worst of all lucks)
 They met the second Prodigic, would feare a
 80 Man, that had neuer heard of a *Chimcera*.
 One said, it was bold BRIAREVS, or the beadle,
 (Who hath the hundred hands when he doth meddle)
 The other thought it HYDRA, or the rock
 Made of the trull, that cut her fathers lock :
 85 But, comming neere, they found it but a liter,
 So huge, it seem'd, they could by no meanes quite her.
 Backe, cry'd their brace of CARONS : they cry'd, no,
 No going backe ; on still you rogues, and row.
 How hight the place ? a voyce was heard, COCYTVS.
 90 Row close then, slaues. Alas, they will beshite vs.
 No matter, stinkards, row. What croaking sound
 Is this we heare ? of frogs ? No, guts wind-bound,
 Ouer your heads : Well, row. At this a loud
 Crack did report it selfe, as if a cloud
 95 Had burst with storme, and downe fell, *ab excelsis*,
 Poore MERCURY, crying out on PARACELSVS,
 And all his followers, that had so abus'd him :
 And, in so shitten sort, so long had vs'd him :
 For (where he was the god of eloquence,
 100 And subiltie of mettalls) they dispense
 His spirits, now, in pills, and eeke in potions,
 Suppositories, cataplasmes, and lotions.

But many Moones there shall not wane (quoth hee)
 (In the meane time, let 'hem imprison mee)
 But I will speake (and know I shall be heard) 105
 Touching this cause, where they will be affeard
 To answere me. And sure, it was th'intent
 Of the graue fart, late let in parliament,
 Had it beene seconded, and not in fume
 Vanish'd away : as you must all presume no
 Their M E R c v R Y did now. By this, the stemme
 Of the hulke touch'd, and, a s b y P o L Y P H E M E
 The slie V L Y S S E S stole in a sheepes-skin,
 The well-greas'd wherry now had got betweene,
 And bad *her fare-well sough*, vnto the lurden : 115
 Neuer did bottome more betray her burden ;
 The meate-boate of Beares colledge, *Paris-garden*,
 Stunke not so ill; nor, when shee kist, K A T E A R D E N .
 Yet, one day in the yeere, for sweet 'tis voyc't,
 And that is when it is the Lord *Maiors* foist. 120
 By this time had they reach¹d the *Stygian* poole,
 By which the *Masters* sweare, when, on the stoole
 Of worship, they their nodding chinnes doe hit
 Against their breasts. Here, seu'rall ghosts did flit
 About the shore, of farts, but late departed, 125
 White, black, blew, greene, and in more formes out-started,
 Then all those *Atomi* ridiculous,
 Whereof old DEMOCRITE, and HILL NICHOLAS,
 One said, the other swore, the world consists.
 These be the cause of those thicke frequent mists 130
 Airising in that place, through which, who goes,
 Must trie the^fvn-used valour of a nose :
 And that ours did. For, yet, no nare was tainted,
 Nor thumb, nor finger to the stop acquainted,
 But-open, and vn-arm'd encountered all: 135
 Whether it languishing stucke vpon the wall,
 Or were precipitated downe the jakes,
 And, after, sworn abroad in ample flakes,

- Or, that it lay, heap'd like an surers masse,
 140 All was to them the same, they were to passe,
 And so they did, from STYX, to ACHERON:
 The euer-boyling floud. Whose bankes vpon
 Your FMane *Furies*; and hot cookes doe dwell,
 That, with still-scalding steemes, make the place *hell*.
 145 The sinkes ran grease, and haire of meazled hogs,
 The heads, houghs, entrailes, and the hides of dogs :
 For, to say truth, what scullion is so nastie,
 To put the skins, and off all in a pastie ?
 Cats there lay diuers had beene flead, and rosted,
 150 And, after mouldie growne, againe were tosted,
 Then, selling not, a dish was tanc to mince 'hem,
 But still, it seem'd, the ranknesse did conuince 'hem.
 For, here they were throwne in wi'the melted pewter,
 Yet drown'd they not. They had fiue Hues in future.
 155 But 'mong'st these *Tiberts*, who do'you thinke there was ?
 Old BANKES the iuggler, our PYTHAGORAS,
 Graue tutor to the learned horse. Both which,
 Being, beyond sea, burned for one witch :
 Their spirits transmigrated to a cat:
 160 And, now, aboue the poole, a face right fat
 With great gray eyes, are lifted vp, and mew'd ;
 Thrise did it spit: thrise diu'd. At last, it view'd
 Our braue *Heroes* with a milder glare,
 And, in a pittious tune, began. How dare
 165 Your daintie nostrills (in so hot a season,
 When euery clerke eates artichokes, and peason,
 Laxatiue lettuce, and such windie mcate)
 Tempt such a passage ? when each priuies seate
 Is fill'd with buttock ? And the walls doc sweate
 17° Vrine, and plaisters ? when the noise doth beate
 Vpon your eares, of discords so vn-sweet ?
 And out-cryes of the damned in the *Fleet* ?
 Cannot the *Plagtie-bil* keepe you backe ? nor bells

Of loud S E P V L C H R E S with their houely knells,
 But you will visit grisly P L v T o' s hall ? 175
 Behold where C E R B E R V S , rear'd on the wall
 Of *HoVborne* ((the) three sergeants heads) lookes ore,
 And stayes but till you come vnto the dore !
 Tempt not his furie, P L V T O is away :
 And M A D A M E C A E S A R , great I¹ K o s E R r i N A , i80
 Is now from home. You lose your labours quite,
 Were you I o v E ' s sonnes, or had A L C i n E s might.
 They cry'd out P V S S E. He told them he was H A N K i s ,
 That had, so often, shew'd 'hem merry prankcs.
 They laugh't, at his laugh-worthy fate. And past 5
 The tripple head without a sop. At last,
 Calling for R A D A M A N T H V S , that dwelt by,
 A sope-boyler ; and E A C vs him nigh,
 Who kept an ale-house ; with my little M I N O S ,
 An ancient pur-blinde fletcher, with a high nose ; 190
 They tooke 'hem all to witnesse of their action :
 And so went brauely backe, without protraction.

In memorie of which most liquid deed,
 The citie since hath rais'd a Pyramide.
 And I could wish for their eterniz'd sakes, 195
 My *Muse* had plough'd with his, that sung A • i A x.

177 *HoVborne* (the *Editor*: Hoiborn-height G : Holborn bridge *Cunningham*

THE FOREST

THE FORREST.

I.

WHY! WRITE NOT OF LOVE.

Some act of *Loue's* bound to rehearse,
 I thought to binde him, in my verse :
 Which when he felt, Away (quoth hee)
 Can Poets hope to fetter mee ?
 It is enough, they once did get 5
 MARS, and my *Mother*, in their net:
 I weare not these my wings in vaine.
 With which he fled me : and againe,
 Into my ri'mes could ne're be got
 By any arte. Then wonder not, 10
 That since, my numbers are so cold,
 When *Loue* is fled, and I grow old.

II.

To PENS HV RST.

THou art not, PENS HV RST, built to enuious show,
 Of touch, or marble ; nor canst boast a row
 Of polish^d pillars, or a roofof gold :
 Thou hast no lantherne, whereof tales are told ;
 Or stayre, or courts ; but stand'st an ancient pile, 5
 And these grudg'd at, art reuerenc'd the while.
 Thou ioy'st in better markes, of soyle, of ayre,
 Of wood, of water : therein thou art faire.
 Thou hast thy walkes for health, as well as sport :
 Thy *Mount*, to which the *Dryads* doe resort, 10
 Where PAN, and BACCHVS their high feasts haue made,
 Beneath the broad beech, and the chest-nut shade;

- That taller tree, which of a nut was set,
 At his great birth, where all the *Muses* met.
 15 There, in the writhed barke, arc cut the names
 Of many a S v L V A N E, taken with his flames.
 And thence, the ruddy *Satyres* oft prouoke
 The lighter *Faunes*, to reach thy *Ladies oke*.
 Thy copp's, too, nam'd of G A M A G E, thou hast there,
 20 That neuer failes to serue thce season¹d deere,
 When thou would'st feast, or exercise thy friends.
 The lower land, that to the riuier bends,
 Thy sheepe, thy bullocks, kine, and calucs doe feed :
 The middle grounds thy mares, and horses breed.
 25 Each banke doth yeeld thee coneyes ; and the topps
 Fertile of wood, A S H O R E, and S Y D N E Y ' S copp's,
 To crowne thy open table, doth prouide
 The purpled pheasant, with the speckled side :
 The painted partrich lyes in eucry field,
 30 And, for thy messe, is willing to be kill'd.
 And if the high-swolne *Medway* faile thy dish,
 Thou hast thy ponds, that pay thee tribute fish,
 Fat, aged carps, that runne into thy net.
 And pikes, now weary their owne kinde to eat,
 35 As loth, the second draught, or cast to stay,
 Officiously, at first, themselues betray.
 Bright eeles, that emulate them, and leapc on land,
 Before the fisher, or into his hand.
 Then hath thy orchard fruit, thy garden flowers,
 40 Fresh as the ayre, and new as are the houres.
 The earely cherry, with the later plum,
 Fig, grape, and quince, each in his time doth come :
 The blushing apricot, and woolly peach
 Hang on thy walls, that euery child may reach.
 45 And though thy walls be of the countrey stone,
 They're rear'd with no mans ruine, no mans grone,
 There's none, that dwell about them, wish them downe;
 But all come in, the farmer, and the clowne :

And no one empty-handed, to salute
 Thy lord, and lady, though they haue no sute. 50
 Some bring a capon, some a rurall cake,
 Some nuts, some apples ; some that thinke they make
 The better cheeses, bring 'hem ; or else send
 By their ripe daughters, whom they would commend
 This way to husbands ; and whose baskets beare 55
 An embleme of themselues, in plum, or peare.
 But what can this (more then expresse their loue)
 Adde to thy free prouisions, farre aboue
 The neede of such ? whose liberall boord doth flow,
 With all, that hospitalitie doth know ! 60
 Where comes no guest, but is allow'd to eate,
 Without his feare, and of thy lords owne meate :
 Where the same beere, and bread, and selfe-same wine,
 That is his Lordships, shall be also mine.
 And I not faine to sit (as some, this day, 65
 At great mens tables) and yet dine away.
 Here no man tells my cups ; nor, standing by,
 A waiter, doth my gluttony enuy :
 But giues me what I call, and lets me eate,
 He knowes, below, he shall finde plentie of meate, 70
 Thy tables hoord not vp for the next day,
 Nor, when I take my lodging, need I pray
 For fire, or lights, or liuorie : all is there ;
 As if thou, then, wert mine, or I raig'n'd here :
 There's nothing I can wish, for which I stay. 75
 That found King I A M E s, when hunting late, this way,
 With his braue sonne, the Prince, they saw thy fires
 Shine bright on euery harth as the desires
 Of thy *Penates* had beene set on flame,
 To entertayne them ; or the countrey came, 80
 With all their zeale, to warme their welcome here.
 What (great, I will not say, but) sodayne cheare
 Did'st thou, then, make 'hem ! and what praise was heap'd
 On thy good lady, then ! who, therein, reap'd

- 85 The iust reward of her high husifery ;
 To haue her linnen, plate, and all things nigh,
 When shee was farre : and not a roome, but drest,
 As if it had expected such a guest 1
 Thece, P E N S H V R S T, are thy prais, «md yet not all,
 90 Thy lady's noble, fruitfull, chaste withall.
 His children thy great lord may call his owne :
 A fortune, in this age, but rarely knowne.
 They are, and haue beene taught religion : Thence
 Their gentler spirits haue suck'd innocence.
 95 Each morne, and euen, they are taught to pray,
 With the whole houshold, and may, euery day,
 Reade, in their vertuous parents noble parts,
 The mysteries of manners, armes, and arts.
 Now, P E N S H V R S T, they that will proportion thee
 100 With other edifices, when they see
 Those proud, ambitious heaps, and nothing else,
 May say, their lords haue built, but thy lord dwells.

in.

To SIR ROBERT WROTH.

- H**ow blest art thou, canst louc the countrey, W R o T H,
 Whether by choice, or fate, or both ;
 And, though so neere the citie, and the court,
 Art tane with neithers vice, nor sport:
 5 That at great times, art no ambitious guest
 Of Sheriffes dinner, or Maiors feast.
 Nor com'st to view the better cloth of st.iLc ;
 The richer hangings, or crowne-plate ;
 Nor throng'st (when masquing is) to haue a sight
 10 Of the short brauerie of the night;

iii. A First draft is in *H f f*. 257-9, and JZPj, ff. 34-6, headed ' To Sir Robert Wroth in praise of a Country life'. *RP* adds ' Epode'. ' *MSS*' —both manuscripts 2 both ;] both ! *F2* 4 nor] or *H*
 6 Sheriffes . . . Maiors] Sergeants . . . sheriff *MSS* 9 when]
 where *RP*

To view the iewells, stuffes, the paines, the wit
 There wasted, some not paid for yet I
 But canst, at home, in thy securer rest,
 Liue, with vn-bought prouision blest;
 Free from proud porches, or their guilded roofes, 15
 'Mongst Joughing heards, and solide hoofes :
 Along'st the curled woods, and painted meades,
 Through which a serpent riuier leades
 To some coole, courteous shade, which he calls his,
 And makes sleepe softer then it is I 20
 Or, if thou list the night in watch to breake,
 A-bed canst heare the loud stag speake,
 In spring, oft roused for thy masters sport,
 Who, for it, makes thy house his court ;
 Or with thy friends, the heart of all the yeere, 25
 Diuid'st, vpon the lesser Deere ;
 In autumnne, at the Partrich makes a flight,
 And giu'st thy gladder guests the sight;
 And, in the winter, hunt'st the flying hare,
 More for thy exercise, then fare ; 30
 While all, that follow, their glad eares apply
 To the full greatnesse of the cry :
 Or hauking at the riuier, or the bush,
 Or shooting at the greedie thrush,
 Thou dost with some delight the day out-weare, 35
 Although the coldest of the yeere !
 The whil'st, the seuerall seasons thou hast seene
 Of flowrie fields, of cop'ces greene,
 The mowed meddowes, with the fleeced sheepe,
 And feasts, that either shearers keepe ; 40

ii stuffes] stufte H 15 their] the W 16 hoofes] houghes
 M55 17 Along'st] Along W 21 list] list{ RP 23 spring,
 oft] spring tyme MSS thy] their F2 24 noose] lodge M55
 25 friends,] friends; Ff heart] heate M55 26 Diuid'st]
 Dispend'st M55 27 Partrich] partridge Af 55 makes] mak'st
 F, RP : makest H 28 gladder] welcome M55 sight] right H
 29 And,] Or RP 30 thy] the M55 fare] ffeare RP 34
 greedie] hungrye MSS 35 dost] canst MSS 37 whil'st]
 while MSS 38 of cop'ces] or Copces M55 40 that] wth
 MSS

- The ripened eares, yet humble in their height,
 And fun-owes laden with their weight;
 The apple-haruest, that doth longer last;
 The hogs return'd home fat from mast;
 43 The trees cut out in log ; and those boughes made
 A fire now, that lent a shade !
 Thus P A N , and S Y L V A N E , hauing had their rites,
 C o M v s puts in, for new delights ;
 And fills thy open hall with mirth, and cheere,
 50 As if in S A T v R N E s raigne it were ;
 A P O L L O ' S harpe, and H E R M E S lyre resound,
 Nor are the *Muses* strangers found :
 The rout of rurall folke come thronging in,
 (Their rudenesse then is thought no sinne)
 55 Thy noblest'spouse affords them welcome grace ;
 And the great *Heroes*, of her race,
 Sit mixt with losse of state, or reuerence.
 Freedome doth with degree dispense.
 The iolly wassail walkes the often round,
 60 And in their cups, their cares are drown'd :
 They thinke not, then, which side the cause shall leese,
 Nor how to get the lawyer fees.
 Such, and no other was that age, of old,
 Which boasts t'haue had the head of gold.
 65 And such since thou canst make thine owne content,
 Striue, W R O T H , to Hue long innocent.
 Let others watch in guiltie armes, and stand
 The furie of a rash command,
 Goe enter breaches, meet the cannons rage,
 70 That they may sleepe with scarres in age.
 And shew their feathers shot, and cullors torne,

41 eares, . . . height] eares cut downe in their most height MSS
 43 that . . . last] and plowed land vp cast H: and plough'd landes vp
 cast RP 44 from] w MSS 45 log] loggs MSS 46 lent
 MSS : lend F 47 Thus] When RP .SYLVANE] Siluans RP
 55 grace] place MS5 56 Heroes,] Heroes H After 60 The
 milke nor oyle, did ever flowe soe free | nor yellow honie from the tree H:
 The milke or Oyle did ever flowe soe free | Nor yellowe Honye ffrom the
 Tree RP 62 lawyer] lawyers MSS 66 liue] be MSS 68 a]
 some MSS

And brag, that they were therefore borne.
 Let this man sweat, and wrangle at the barre,
 For euery price, in euery iarre,
 And change possessions, oftner with his breath, 75
 Then either money, warre, or death :
 Let him, then hardest sires, more disinherit,
 And each where boast it as his merit,
 To blow vp orphanes, widdowes, and their states ;
 And thinke his power doth equall *Fates*. 80
 Let that goe heape a masse of wretched wealth,
 Purchas'd by rapine, worse then stealth,
 And brooding o're it sit, with broadest eyes,
 Not doing good, scarce when he dyes.
 Let thousands more goe flatter vice, and winne, 85
 By being organes to great sinne,
 Get place, and honor, and be glad to keepe
 The secrets, that shall breake their sleepe :
 And, so they ride in purple, eate in plate,
 Though poyson, thinke it a great fate. 90
 But thou, my WROTH, if I can truth apply,
 Shalt neither that, nor this enuy :
 Thy peace is made ; and, when man's state is well,
 'Tis better, if he there can dwell.
 God wisheth, none should wracke on a strange shelve . 95
 To him, man's dearer, then t(o)'himselke.
 And, howsoeuer we may thinke things sweet,
 He alwayes giues what he knowes meet ;
 Which who can vse is happy : Such be thou.
 Thy morning's, and thy euening's vow 100
 Be thanks to him, and earnest prayer, to finde
 A body sound, with sounder minde ;

77 Let . . . disinherit] Then hardest let him more disherit H : Then
 Hardest, lett him more disheritt RP ('sires' omitted in both MSS)
 79 orphanes, widdowes] widowes, orphans MSS 87 honor] honoⁿ
 MSS glad] proud MSS 91 can] may MSS 94 he there]
 hee, then RP 96 to'himselke] to himselke MSS 98 knowes]
 thinks H 99 be thou.] art thou MSS 100 Thy . . . thy]
 Whose . . . whose MSS morning's . . . euening's] morning . . .
 euening H 101 Be] Is MSS and] an H

To doe thy countrey seruice, thy selfe right;
 That neither want doe thee affright,
 105 Nor death ; but when thy latest sand is spent,
 Thou maist thinke life, a thing but lent.

III.

TO THE WORLD.

*Afarewellfor a Gentle-woman vertuous
 and noble.*

FAlse world, good-night: since thou hast brought
 That houre vpon my morne of age,
 Hence-forth I quit thee from my thought,
 My part is ended on thy stage.
 5 Doe not once hope, that thou canst tempt
 A spirit so resolu'd to tread
 Vpon thy throate, and liue exempt
 From all the nets that thou canst spread.
 I know thy formes are studied arts,
 10 Thy subtle wayes, be narrow straits ;
 Thy curtesie but sodaine starts,
 And what thou call'st thy gifts are baits.
 I know too, though thou strut, and paint,
 Yet art thou both shrunke vp, and old,
 15 That onely fooles make thee a saint,
 And all thy good is to be sold.
 I know thou whole art but a shop
 Of toyes, and trifles, traps, and snares,
 To take the weake, or make them stop :
 20 Yet art thou falsen then thy wares.
 And, knowing this, should I yet stay,
 Like such as blow away their Hues,
 And neuer will redeeme a day,
 Enamor'd of their golden gyues ?

iii. 104 doe thee] should the MSS

iv. G prints in four-line stanzas

14 old,] old ; F2

Or, hauing scap'd, shall I returne, 25
And thrust my necke into the noose,
From whence, so lately, I did burne,
With all my powers, my selfe to loose ?
What bird, or beast, is knowne so dull,
That fled his cage, or broke his chaine, 30
And tasting ayre, and freedome, wull
Render his head in there againe ?
If these, who haue but sense, can shun
The engines, that haue them annoy'd ;
Little, for me, had reason done, 35
If I could not thy ginnes auoyd.
Yes, threaten, doe. Alas I feare
As little, as I hope from thee :
I know thou canst nor shew, nor beare
More hatred, then thou hast to mee. 40
My tender, first, and simple yeeres
Thou did'st abuse, and then betray ;
Since stird'st vp ielousies and feares,
When all the causes were away.
Then, in a soile hast planted me, 45
Where breathe the basest of thy fooles ;
Where enuious arts professed be,
And pride, and ignorance the schooles,
Where nothing is examin'd, weigh¹d,
But, as 'tis rumor'd, so beleeu'd : 50
Where euery freedome is betray'd,
And euery goodnesse tax'd, or grieu'd.
But, what we¹ are borne for, we must beare :
Our fraile condition it is such,
That, what to all may happen here, 55
If t chance to me, I must not grutch.
Else, I my state should much mistake,
To harbour a diuided thought
From all my kindē : that, for my sake,
There should a miracle be wrought. 60
No, I doe know, that I was borne

- To age, misfortune, sicknesse, griefe :
 But I will beare these, with that scorne,
 As shall not need thy false reliefe.
 65 Nor for my peace will I goe farre,
 As wandrers doe, that still doe rome,
 But make my strengths, such as they are,
 Here in my bosome, and at home.

v.

Song.

To CELIA.

- Come my CELIA, let vs proue,
 While we may, the sports of loue ;
 Time will not be ours, for euer :
 He, at length, our good will seuer.
 5 Spend not then his guifts in vaine.
 Sunnes, that set, may rise againe :
 But if once we loose this light,
 Tis, with vs, perpetuall night.
 Why should we deferre our ioyes ?
 10 Fame, and rumor are but toyes.
 Cannot we delude the eyes
 Of a few poore houshold spyes ?
 Or his easier eares beguile,
 So remoued by our wile ?
 15 Tis no sinne, louses fruit to steale,
 But the sweet theft to reueale :
 To be taken, to be scene,
 These haue crimes accounted beene.

v. In *Add* 3, f. 117, *RPj*, f. 7. *RPio*, f. 2, and in ' *Volpone* ' *HI*. vii.
 166-83 (= V) i my] sweet *Add. RPj* 2 may] can V : cann
RPj 4 good] blisse *Add* 5 guifts] gifts, V 7 if once we]
 if, once, we V: if we once *Add*: when once wee *RPj* loose] lose, V, *Fz*
 this] the *RP3* 8 Tis. with vs,] Tis with vs V n we] wee. *RPj*
 13 his] hir *RPj* eares] eyes *RPio* 14 So . . . wile] Soe remou'd
 by many a mile *Add, RPj* So remoued] Thus remoued. V 15 fruit]
 fruits V. *Add, RP3* 16 theft] thefts V

VI.

To THE SAME.

Kisse me, sweet: The warie louer
 Can your fauours keepe, and couer,
 When the common courting iay
 All your bounties will betray. 5
 Kisse againe : no creature comes.
 Kisse, and score vp wealthy summes
 On my lips, thus hardly sundred,
 While you breath. First giue a hundred,
 Then a thousand, then another
 Hundred, then vnto the tother 10
 Adde a thousand, and so more :
 Till you equall with the store,
 All the grasse that *Rumney* yeelds,
 Or the sands in *Chelsey* fields,
 Or the drops in siluer *Thames*, 15
 Or the starres, that guild his streames,
 In the silent sommer-nights,
 When youths ply their stolne delights.
 That the curious may not know
 How to tell¹ hem, as th(e)y flow, 20
 And the enuious, when they find
 What their number is, be pin'd.

vi. In *Add* j, . 117, *RPj*, f. 7, *Firth*, f. 71. *LI* 19-22 in ' *Volpone* '
 III. vii. 236-9 (= 1) 4 bounties] Bountye *RP* betray] bewray
Add 5 creature] body *Firth* 8 First not in *Firth* a] an
RP 10 tother] other *Firth* 14 Or] All *Add*. *RP* sands]
 sand *RP* *Chelsey*] *Childsey* *Firth* 15 *Thames*] streames *Add*
 16 his streames] her streames *Firth* : the *Thames* *Add* 17, 18
 nights . . . delights] night. . . delight *Firth* 19 may] shall *V*, *Add*
 20 'hem] them r. *RP*, *Firth* they *V*, *MSS*

VII.

Song.

THAT WOMEN ARE BVT MENS
SHADDOWES.

Follow a shaddow, it still flies you ;
 Seeme to flye it, it will pursue :
 So court a mistris, shee denyes you ;
 Let her alone, shee will court you.
 5 Say, are not women truely, then,
 Stil'd but the shaddowes of vs men ?
 At morne, and euen, shades are longest;
 At noone, they are or short, or none :
 So men at weakest, they are strongest,
 10 But grant vs perfect, they're not knowne.
 Say, are not women truely, then,
 Stil'd but the shaddowes of vs men ?

VIII.

To SICKNESSE.

WHy, Disease[^] dost thou molest
 Ladies ? and of them the best ?
 Doe not men, ynow of rites
 To thy altars, by their nights
 5 Spent in surfets : and their dayes,
 And nights too, in worser wayes ?
 Take heed, Sicknesse, what you doe,
 I shall feare, you'll surfet too.
 Liue not we, as, all thy stalls,
 10 Spittles, pest-house, hospitails,

vii. In H₂, f. 60 b ' Women ', and a bad copy in EP, f. 75 b. G prints in two stanzas. 8 or short] short Add, Fz

viii. An earlier draft in H₄, f. 240 b, 1.740, f. 127 b, RPj, f. 12 b
 1 To Sicknesse. Ode Anacreon : ' H, RP 6 in om. MSS 7
 Take . . . doe om. RP 8 shall] doe MSS 10 Spittles]
 spittle RP

Scarce will take our present store ?
 And this age will build no more :
 Tray thee, feed contented, then,
Sickness ; onely on vs men.
 Or if needs thy lust will tast 15
 Woman-kinde ; deuoure the wast
 Liuers, round about the towne.
 But, forgiue me, with thy crowne
 They maintayne the truest trade,
 And haue more diseases made. 20
 What should, yet, thy pallat please ?
 Daintinesse, and softer ease,
 Sleeked limmes, and finest blood ?
 If thy leanenesse loue such food,
 There are those, that, for thy sake, 25
 Doe enough ; and who would take
 Any paines ; yea, thinke it price,
 To become thy sacrifice.
 That distill their husbands land
 In decoctions ; and are mann'd 30
 With ten Emp'ricks, in their chamber,
 Lying for the spirit of amber.
 That for th'oyale of *Talke*, dare spend
 More then citizens dare lend
 Them, and all their officers. 35
 That, to make all pleasure theirs,
 Will by coach, and water goe,
 Euery stew in towne to know ;
 Dare entayle their loues on any,
 Bald, or blinde, or nere so many : 40
 And, for thee, at common game,
 Play away, health, wealth, and fame.

ii store] score *RP* 16 Woman-] woemen *RP* 21 thy] the
H, RP 23 Sleeked] Slied *L* finest] fyned *H* : fynyed *RP* :
 fined *L* 27 yea.] and *MSS* pnce] prize *H, L* 28 sacrifice]
 sacrifice *H, L* 32 for the] on the *H* : o' the *L* 33 *Talke*]
Talck F2 36 pleasure] pleasures *H* 36-48 missing
 in *L* 38 stew] Cranck *H* : Chranche *RP* 39 on] to *H, RP*
 41 thee] that *RP*

- These, *disease*, will thee deserue :
 And will, Ions ere thou should'st starue,
 45 On their beds, most prostitute,
 Moue it, as their humblest sute,
 In thy lustice to molest
 None but them, and leaue the rest.

IX.

Song.

To CELIA.

- D**Rinke to me, onely, with thine eyes,
 And I will pledge with mine ;
 Or leaue a kisse but in the cup,
 And He not looke for wine.
 5 The thirst, that from the soulc doth rise,
 Doth aske a drinke diuine :
 But might I of I o v E 's *Nectar* sup,
 I would not change for thine.
 I sent thee, late, a rosie wreath,
 10 Not so much honoring thee,
 As giuing it a hope, that there
 It could not withered bee.
 But thou thereon did'st onely breath,
 And sent'st it backe to mee :
 15 Since when it growes, and smells, I sweare,
 Not of it selfe, but thee.

viii. 43 thee] they *H* 44 stanie, starue *Fi* 45 beds] bed
F2 46 humblest] humble *H*, *RP* 48 rest] best *H*, *RP*
 ix. A first draft in *SI* 2, f. 54 b, headed ' To his M^{rs} ' and the signature
 ' B.J ' crossed out; in *Add.* 13, f. 69 b, without heading, and in *TCD*,
 p. 550. The later text in *H4*, f. 61 b (= *H*), and *Add* 9,7 26, headed ' To
 Ccclia ' : bad copies in *Firth*, p. 25, *EP*, l. 21. Two stanzas in *Add* 9.
 i onely] Cccha *SI*, *TCD* 2 I will pledge] ile pledge thee *SI*, *Add* 9,
 13, *TCD* 3 Or . . . in] Leaue but a kisse w^h in *SI*, *Add* 13, *TCD*
 4 not looke for] expect no *SI*, *Add* 13, *TCD* 5 doth rise] pro-
 ceedes *SI*, *Add* 13, *TCD* 7 IOVE'S] loues *SI* sup] sipp *Add* 9
 9 thee, late,] to thee *SI*, *Add* 13, *TCD* 10 much honoring] to
 honor *SI*, *Add* 13, *TCD* // As . . . there] but berge well assured
 that there *SI*: As being well assur'd that there *Add* 13, *TCD* 12
 could] would *SI* 13 But] And *SI*, *Add* 13 14 sent'st]
 send'st *H* : sents *Add* 13 15 growes] liues *SI*, *Add* 13, *TCD*
 16 of] like *H*

X.

And must I sing ? what subiect shall I chuse ?
Or whose great name in *Poets* heauen vse,
For the more countenance to my actiue *Muse* ?

H E R C V L E S ? alas his bones are yet sore,
With his old earthly labours. T(o)¹ exact more, 5
Of his dull god-head, were sinne. He implore

P H C E B vs. No ? tend thy cart still. Enuious day
Shall not giue out, that I haue made thee stay,
And foundred thy hot teame, to tune my lay.

Nor will I beg of thee, *Lord of the vine*, 10
To raise my spirits with thy coniuring wine,
In the greene circle of thy luy twine.

P A L L A S, nor thee I call on, mankinde maid,
That, at thy birth, mad'st the poore Smith affraid,
Who, with his axe, thy fathers mid-wife plaid. 15

Goe, crampe dull **M A R S**, light **V E N** vs, when he snorts,
Or, with thy *Tribade* trine, inuent new sports,
Thou, nor thy loosenesse with my making sorts.

Let the *old boy*, your sonne, ply his old taske,
Turne the stale prologue to some painted maske, 20
His absence in my verse, is all I aske.

H E R M E S, the cheater, shall not mixe with vs,
Though he would steale his sisters **P E G A s** vs,
And ruffle him : or pawne his **P E T A s** vs.

x. First printed in the 'Dmerse Poetical Essaiies' on the subject of *The Phoenix and Turtle* 'appended to Robert Chester's *Love's Martyr*', 1601, pp. 177-8, headed 'Præludium' (= C) 1 And . . . sing.] WV must sing too? C 1 I chuse] we chuse C 2 vse,] vse? C, Ff 3 my] our C 6 He] Lets C 7 PHCEBVS. No ?] Phoebus ? No: C : PHCEBUS ? No. F2 8 If we C (so 10, 13, 28. 30) 9 my] our C (so n. 18, 21, 28-9) 18 thy] their C 22 shall not] cannot C 23 PECASVS] Pegasus C : PEGASUS 2 : PAGASVS F1 24 ruffle] rife C

25 Nor all the ladies of the *Thespian lake*,
 (Though they were crusht into one forme) could make^r
 A beautie of that merit, that should take

My *Muse* vp by *commission* : No, I bring
 My owne true fire. Now my thought takes wing,
 30 And now an *Epode* to deepe eares I sing.

The above is the final form of this poem, slightly retouched from the version in Robert Chester's 'Love's Martyr', 1601. The copy originally sent to Sir John Salisbury of Llewenni is preserved in the National Library of Wales, MS. 5390 D, f. 20, and in a Thorn-Drury MS. now in the Folger Library at Washington. The text is as follows :

Proludium.

An elegie P no, muse ; yt askes a straine
 to loose, and Cap¹ ring, for thy stricter veyne.
 Thy thought did neuer melt in amorous fire,
 like glasse, blowne vp, and fashion¹d by desire.
 3 The skilfull mischife of a rovinge Eye
 Could ne'er make prize of thy white Chastetye.
 Then, leaue these lighter numbers, to light braines
 in whom the flame of euery beauty raignes,
 Such, as in lustes wilde forrest louc to rainge,
 10 only pursewinge Constancy, in Chainge ;
 Let these in wanton feete daunce out thei^r soules.
 A farther fury my ray'sd spirit Controules,
 w^{ch} rap's mee vp to the true heau'en of loue ;
 and Coniures all my faculties t(o)'approue
 15 the glories of yt. Now o^r muse takes winge,
 and now an *Epode*, to deepe Eares, wee singe.

Proludium. First printed by G Thorn-Drury in 'A Little Arh' 1921. p. i, from his MS. now in the Folger Library (= Fr). In the National Library of Wales MS. 5390 D (= W)

1	I elegie ? no,] elagie ? no
W :	Elegie, no Fr
3	fire,] fire W, Fr
4	glasse. . . vp,] glasse
5	vp Fr fashion'd] fash'ond Fr desire W. FT
6	Chastetye.] Chastetye W
7	Then] then W numbers] Nombres Fr
8	raignes,] raignes
9	Such,] Such Fr rainge,] rainge W
10	Constancy.] Soules Fr
11	ll soules.]
12	Controules,] Controules W : controles Fr
13	loue;] loue Fr
15	yt.] yt, W winge,] winge W, Fr

XI.

EPODE.

Not to know vice at all, and keepe true state,
 Is vertue, and not *Fate* :
 Next, to that vertue, is to know vice well,
 And her blacke spight expell.
 Which to effect (since no brest is so sure, 5
 Or safe, but shee'll procure
 Some way of entrance) we must plant a guard
 Of thoughts to watch, and ward
 At th'eye and eare (the ports vnto the minde)
 That no strange, or vnkinde 10
 Object arriue there, but the heart (our spie)
 Giue knowledge instantly,
 To wakefull reason, our affections king :
 Who (in th'examing)
 Will quickly taste the treason, and commit 15
 Close, the close cause of it.
 Tis the securest policie we haue,
 To make our sense our slaue.
 But this true course is not embrac'd by many :
 By many ? scarce by any. 20
 For either our affections doe rebell,
 Or else the sentinell
 (That should ring larum to the heart) doth sleepe,
 Or some great thought doth keepe
 Backe the intelligence, and falsely swears, 25
 Th'are base, and idle feares

xi. An earlier draft in the *National Library of Wales MS. 5390 D*
 (— W), and in *G. Thom-Drury's MS. now in the Folger Library (= Fr)*.
 MSS' = W and Fr combined. First printed in the 'Diuerse Poeticall
 Essaies' appended to Chester's 'Loues Martyr'. 1601, pp. 178-82 (= C).

EPODE] Epos MSS. C 1-4 Gnostic pointing in W, C, "Not . . .
 "Is . . . "Next . . . "And . . . i all,] all; W 3 is] is.
 MSS, C 6 safe,] safe; W 8 thoughts] thought?, W:
 Thoughts, C 10 or] nor Fr II heart (our] heartf our W 15
 treason] reason F2 17, 18 Gnostic pointing in W, C, "Tis . . .
 "To . . . 17 Tis] Tis Fi 19 true] faire W, C 20 scarce] no
 scarce Fr 21 rebell.] rebell W 23 should] shal C 26 Th'are]
 they're W: They'r C: their Fr

Whereof the loyall conscience so complaines.

Thus, by these subtle traines,

Doe seuerall passions (still) inuade the minde,

30 And strike our reason blinde.

Of which vsurping rancke, some haue thought loue

The first; as prone to moue

Most frequent tumults, horrors, and vnrests,

In our enflamed breasts :

35 But this doth from the(ir) cloud of error grow,

Which thus we ouer-blow.

The thing, they here call Loue, is blinde Desire,

Arm'd with bow, shafts, and fire ;

Inconstant, like the sea, of whence 'tis borne,

40 Rough, swelling, like a storme :

With whom who sailes, rides on the surge of feare,

And boyles, as if he were

In a continuall tempest. Now, true Loue

No such effects doth proue ;

45 That is an essence, farre more gentle, fine,

Pure, perfect, nay diuine ;

It is a golden chaine let downe from heauen,

Whose linkes are bright, and euen,

That falls like sleepe on louers, and combines

50 The soft, and sweetest mindes

In equall knots : This beares no brands, nor darts,

To murder different hearts,

But, in a calme, and god-like vnitie,

Preserues communitie.

55 O, who is he, that (in this peace) enioyes

The'Elixir of all ioyes ?

28 subtle] subtili W_t C : subtile Fr 29 still MSS. C : *not in Ff*
30 strike] stricke MSS 34 enflamed] inflamed W 35 their
Clow'd W : their cloud C : the cloud Ff: the Clowd Fr 39 like]
as MSS 'tis] hee 's MSS 44 effects] affect W 45 That]
that, W farre more gentle] most gentle, and W, C: most gentiell
and Fr 46 perfect,] perfect; C 47 golden chaine] goulden
Chaine, W 48 Whose . . . euen,] (whose . . . euen) MSS euen,]
euen C : euen, Fi 49 louers,] louers ; W : Louers ; C 52
murther] murder W. C 55 (in ... peace)] in ... peace MSS
56 the'Eiir] Elixir W : the Elixar Fr ioyes ?] ioyes W

A forme more fresh, then are the *Eden* bowers,
 And lasting, as her flowers :
 Richer then *Time*, and as *Time's* vertue, rare.
 Sober, as saddest care : 60
 A fixed thought, an eye vn-taught to glance ;
 Who (blest with such high chance)
 Would, at suggestion of a steepe desire,
 Cast himselfe from the spire
 Of all his happinesse ? But soft: I heare 65
 Some vicious foole draw neare,
 That cryes, we dreame, and sweares, there's no such thing,
 As this chaste loue we sing.
 Peace, Luxurie, thou art like one of those
 Who, being at sea, suppose, 70
 Because they moue, the continent doth so :
 No, vice, we let thee know,
 Though thy wild thoughts with sparowes wings doe flye,
 Turtles can chastly dye ;
 And yet (in this t(o)'expresse our selues more cleare) 75
 We do not number, here,
 Such spirits as are onely continent,
 Because lust's meanes are spent:
 Or those, who doubt the common mouth of fame,
 And for their place, and name, 80
 Cannot so safely sinne. Their chastitie
 Is meere necessitie.
 Nor meane we those, whom vowes and conscience
 Haue fill'd with abstinence :

57, 61 A forme . . . glance ;] (A forme . . . glaunce) MSS : (A
 Forme . . . glance ;] C 58 bowers, C, F2 : bowers Af55, Fi 64
 himselfe] himself. W spire] spier W 65 happinesse ?]
 happines ; W 67 we] I MSS 68 we] I W 69 Peace,] Peace
 MSS, C, Fi 70 Who, being at sea,] that (beinge at sea) W: that (being
 atSea)Fr: Who (being at sea) C 71 Because] Bycause Fr 72 No,
 vice, we] No (vice) I W: No vice I Fr : No (Vice) we C know,]
 know Fi 73 Though . . . flye.] (Though. . . flie) W 74 Turtles]
 " Turtles C can] will W 75 yet (in . . . cleare)] yet in . . . Cleare W
 to'expresae] to'xpresse W our selues] myself W : my self Fr : our
 selfe C 76 We] I MSS 79 who] which Fr So and
 name] or name MSS, C 83 we] I MSS whom] whose W 84 fill'd]
 grac'd W : grac'd Fr

- 85 Though we acknowledge, who can so abstayne,
 Makes a most blessed gayne.
 He that for loue of goodnesse hateth ill,
 Is more crowne-worthy still,
 Then he, which for sinnes penaltie forbears.
 90 His heart sinnes, though he feares.
 But we propose a person like our Doue,
 Grac'd with a Phoenix loue ;
 A beautie of that cleere, and sparkling light,
 Would make a day of night,
 95 And turne the blackest sorrowes to bright ioyes :
 Whose od'rous breath destroyes
 All taste of bitternesse, and makes the ayre
 As sweet, as shee is fayre.
 A body so harmoniously compos'd,
 100 As if *Nature* disclos'd
 All her best symmetric in that one feature I
 O, so diuine a creature
 Who could be false to ? chiefly, when he knowes
 How onely shee bestowes
 105 The wealthy treasure of her loue on him ;
 Making his fortunes swim
 In the full floud of her admir'd perfection ?
 What sauage, brute affection,
 Would not be fearefull to offend a dame
 110 Of this excelling frame ?
 Much more a noble, and right generous mind
 (To vertuous moods inclin'd)
 That knowes the waight of guilt: He will refraine
 From thoughts of such a straine.
- 85, 90 Though . . . feares.] (Though . . . feares.) C 85 we-
 acknowledge.] I acknowledg; W: I acknowledge Fr abstayne]
 refrain MSS 87, 88 *Gnomic pointing in* W, C, " He ... "Is...
 87 goodnesse] goodnes, W 88 crowne-worthy] praise worthy MSS
 89, 90 *Gnomic pointing in* C. "Then... "His... 89 which]
 that Fr forbears.] forbears; F2 91 we propose] I Conceiue MSS
 our] my MSS 93 light] sight Fr 95 sorrowes] sorrowes, W
 103 could] would Fr to] too W, C 105 on] in C 107 floud]
 floud, Fr in and right] or a W: or right Fr 112 inclin'd]
 enclin'd C 114 thoughts] thought W

And to his sense object this sentence euer, 115
Man may securely sinne, but safely neuer.

XII.

Epistle

TO ELIZABETH COVNTESSE OF RUTLAND.

MADAME,

Whil'st that, for which, all vertue now is sold,
 And almost euerie vice, almightie gold,
 That which, to boote with hell, is thought worth heauen,
 And, for it, life, conscience, yea, soules are giuen,
 Toyles, by graue custome, vp and downe the court, 5
 To euerie squire, or groome, that will report
 Well, or ill, onely, all the following yeere,
 lust to the waight their this dayes-presents beare ;
 While it makes huishers seruiceable men,
 And some one apteth to be trusted, then, 10
 Though neuer after ; whiles it gaynes the voyce
 Of some grand peere, whose ayre doth make reioyce
 The foole that gaue it ; who will want, and weepe,
 When his proud patrons fauours are asleepe ;
 While thus it buyes great grace, and hunts poore fame ; 15
 Runs betweene man, and man ; 'tweene dame, and dame ;
 Solders crackt friendship ; makes loue last a day ;
 Or perhaps lesse : whil'st gold beares all this sway,
 I, that haue none (to send you) send you verse.
 A present, which (if elder writs reherse 20

xi. 116 Gnomie pointing in C, " *Man . . . A man may safely sinne, securely neuer* Fr After 116 ' *Ben: Johnsonius fvcis non neruis Careo.* W : *Ben: Iohnson. C*

arii. A first draft in Hj, ff. 243 6-245 b, headed ' To the Count ease of Rutland An Elegie ', and in RPj, ff. 18 6-20 b, headed ' To the Countesae Off Rutland : An Elegie '. ' MSS ' = both manuscripts. 3 which, to . . . hell.] w (to . . . hell) MSS 6 will] can MSS 7 onely.] onely; H: onely: RP 8 to not in MSS their om. MSS 9 While] Whil'st MSS makes] make MSS n voyce] will RP 12 grand] grave RP originally peere] prence H originally 13 it; whol] it. that MSS 15 buyes great] gets MSS 16 betweene . . . 'tweene] betwixt. . . twixt MSS 17 Solders] Souldeirs H 18 this] the H

- The truth of times) was once of more estceme,
 Then this, our guilt, nor golden age can deeme,
 When gold was made no weapon to cut throtes,
 Or put to flight A S T R E A, when her ingots
 25 Were yet vnfound, and better plac'd in earth,
 Then, here, to giuc pride fame, and peasants birth.
 But let this drosse carry what price it will
 With noble ignorants, and let them still,
 Turne, vpon scorned verse, their quarter-face :
 30 With you, I know, my offering will find grace.
 For what a sinne 'gainst your great fathers spirit,
 Were it to thinke, that you should not inherit
 His loue vnto the *Muses*, when his skill
 Almost you haue, or may haue, when you will ?
 35 Wherein wise *Nature* you a dowrie gaue,
 Worth an estate, treble to that you haue.
 Beautie, I know, is good, and bloud is more ;
 Riches thought most: But, *Madame*, thinke what store
 The world hath secne, which all these had in trust,
 40 And now lye lost in their forgotten dust.
 It is the *Muse*, alone, can raise to heaucn,
 And, at her strong armes end, hold vp, and euen,
 The soules, shee loues. Those other glorious notes,
 Inscrib'd in touch or marble, or the cotes
 45 Painted, or caru'd vpon our great-mens tombs.
 Or in their windowes ; doe but prouc the wombs,
 That bred them, graues : when they were borne, they di'd,
 That had no *Muse* to make their fame abide.
 How many equall with the *Argiue* Queene,
 50 Haue beautie knowne, yet none so famous seene ?
 A C H I L L E S was not first, that valiant was,
 Or, in an armies head, that, lockt in brasse,
 Gaue killing strokes. There were braue men, before
 A i A x, or I D o M E N, or all the store,

22 nor] not MSS 25 in] on RP 26 here, to] now MSB
 and] or MSS 30 you. I know.] yo" (I know) MSS 36 treble]
 triple IV 38 what] w H 42 hold vp. and] there hold vp MSS

That HOMER brought to Troy ; yet none so liue : 55
 Because they lack'd the sacred pen, could giue
 Like life vnto 'hem. Who heau'd HERCVLES
 Vnto the starres ? or the Tyndarides ?
 Whoplac'd IASONS ARGo in theskie?
 Or set bright ARiADNEs crowne so high ? 60
 Who made a lampe of BERE NICE Shayre ?
 Or lifted CASSIOPEA in her chayre ?
 But onely Poets, rapt with rage diuine ?
 And such, or my hopes faile, shaU make you shine.
 You, and that other starrc, that purest light, 65
 Of all LvcINA s traine ; LvcY the bright,
 Then which, a nobler heauen it selfe knowes not.
 Who, though shee haue a better verser got,
 (Or Poet, in the court account) then I,
 And, who doth me (though I not him) enuy, 70
 Yet, for the timely fauours shec hath doiu,
 To my lesse sanguine Muse, wherein she'hath wonne
 My grateful! soule, the subisct of her powers,
 I haue already vid some happy houres,
 To her remembrance ; which when time shall bring 75
 To curious light, the notes, I then shall sing,
 Will proue old ORPHEvs act no tale to be :
 For I shall moue stocks, stones, no lesse then he.
 Then all, that haue but done my Muse least grace,
 Shall thronging come, and boast the happy place 80
 They hold in my strange poems, which, as yet,
 Had not their forme touch'd by an English wit.
 There like a rich, and golden pywmede,
 Borne vp by statues, shall I rrare your head,
 About your vnder-carued ornaments, 85
 And show, how, to the life, my soule presents

56 lack'd] lack MSS 57 'hem] them MSS 61 lampe]
 Campe H 63 onely] hohe MSS 64 auch.
 or . . . faile.] such (or . . . fayle) MSS 66 bright.] bright. Fi
 71 fauours] favor H 72 she'hath] she hath MSS 76 the
 notes RP : to notes H, Fi 77 act] Arts RP 79 Muse] verse
 MSS least] lesse RP 81 poems] poeme H 84 Borne
 vp by] besett w MSS

Your forme imprest there : not with tickling rimes,
 Or common places, filch'd, that take these times,
 But high, and noble matter, such as flics
 90 From braines entranc'd, and fill'd with extasies ;
 Moodes, which the god-like SYDNEY oft did proue,
 And your braue friend, and mine so well did loue.
 Who wheresoere he be

The rest is lost.

The Manuscripts give this conclusion, cancelled by Jonson in the Folio because the marriage was not consummated : we print a corrected text.

Who, wheresoere he be, on what dear coast,
 Now thincking on you, though to England lost,
 95 For that firme grace he holdes in your regard,
 I, that am gratefull for him, haue prepar'd
 This hasty sacrifice, wherein I reare
 A vow as new, and ominous as the yeare,
 Before his swift and circled race be run,
 100 My best of wishes, may you beare a sonne.

XIII.

Epistle.

TO KATHERINE, LADY AVBICNY.

TIs growne almost a danger to speake true
 Of any good minde, now : There are so few.
 The bad, by number, are so fortified,
 As what th'haue lost t(o)¹expect, they dare deride.
 5 So both the prais'd, and praisers suffer : Yet,
 For others ill, ought none their good forget.
 I, therefore, who professe my selfe in loue
 With euery vertue, wheresoere it moue,
 And howsoeuer ; as I am at fewd
 10 With sinne and vice, though with a throne endew'd ;

xii. 87 tickling] tinckling *RP* : so *H* originally
 96 haue] hath *RP*

99 circled *RP* : fethe<r>d *H*

92 so] to *RP*

And, in this name, am giuen out dangerous
 By arts, and practise of the vicious,
 Such as suspect them-selues, and thinke it fit
 For their owne cap¹tall crimes, t(o)'indite my wit;
 I, that haue suffer¹d this ; and, though forsooke 15
 Of *Fortune*, haue not alter'd yet my looke,
 Or so my selfe abandon'd, as because
 Men are not iust, or keepe no holy lawes
 Of nature, and societie, I should faint;
 Or feare to draw true lines, 'cause others paint: 20
 I, *Madame* am become your praiser. Where,
 If it may stand with your soft blush to heare
 Your selfe but told vnto your selfe, and see
 In my character, what your features bee,
 You will not from the paper slightly passe : 25
 No lady, but, at some time, loues her glasse.
 And this shall be no false one, but as much
 Remou'd, as you from need to haue it such.
 Looke then, and see your selfe. I will not say
 Your beautie ; for you see that euery day : 30
 And so doe many more. All which can call
 It perfect, proper, pure, and natural!,
 Not taken vp o'th'doctors, but as well
 As I, can say, and see it doth excell.
 That askes but to be censur'd by the eyes : 35
 And, in those outward formes, all fooles are wise.
 Nor that your beautie wanted not a dower,
 Doe I reflect. Some alderman has power,
 Or cos'ning farmer of the customes so,
 T(o)'aduanee his doubtfull issue, and ore-flow 40
 A Princes fortune : These are gifts of chance,
 And raise not vertue ; they may vice enhance.
 My mirror is more subtile, cleere, refin'd,
 And takes, and giues the beauties of the mind.
 Though it reiect not those o f F o R T V N E : such 45
 As bloud, and match. Wherein, how more then much
 22 heare] heare. *Ff*

Are you engaged to your happy fate,
For such a lot I that mixt you with a state
Of so great title, birth, but vertue most,
50 Without which, all the rest were sounds, or lost.
Tis onely that can time, and chance defeat:
For he, that once is good, is euer great.
Wherewith, then, *Madame* can you better pay
This blessing of your starres, then by that way
55 Of vertue, which you tread? what if alone P
Without companions? 'Tis safe to haue none.
In single paths, dangers with ease are watch¹d :
Contagion in the prease is soonest catch'd.
This makes, that wisely you decline your life,
60 Farre from the maze of custome, error, strife,
And keepe an euen, and vnalter'd gaite ;
Not looking by, or backe (like those, that waite
Times, and occasions, to sturt forth, and seeme)
Which though the turning world may dis-esteeme,
65 Because that studies spectacles, and showes,
And after varied, as fresh obiects goes,
Giddie with change, and therefore cannot see
Right, the right way : yet must your comfort bee
Your conscience, and not wonder, if none askes
70 For trutheS complexion, where they all weare masks.
Let who will follow fashions, and attyres,
Maintayne their liedgers forth, for forraine wyres,
Melt downe their husbands land, to poure away
On the close groome, and page, on new-yeeres day,
75 And almost, all dayes after, while they liue ;
(They finde it both so wittie, and safe to giue.)
Let 'hem on poulders, oyles, and paintings, spend,
Till that no vsurer, nor his bawds dare lend
Them, or their officers : and no man know,
80 Whether it be a face they weare, or no.
Let 'hem waste body, and state ; and after all,
When their owne Parasites laugh at their fall,
May they haue nothing left, whereof they can

Boast, but how oft they haue gone wrong to man :
 And call it their braue sinne. For such there be 85
 That doc sinne onely for the infamie :
 And neuer thinke, how vice doth euery houre,
 Eate on her clients, and some one deuoure.
 You, *Madame*, yong haue learn^d to shunne these shelues,
 Whereon the most of mankindc wracke themselues, 90
 And, keeping a iust course, haue earely put
 Into your harbor, and all passage shut
 'Gainst stormes, or pyrats, that might charge your peace ;
 For which you worthy are the glad encrease
 Of your blest wombe, made fruitfull from aboue, 95
 To pay your lord the pledges of chast loue :
 And raise a noble stemme, to giue the fame,
 To CLIFTON'S bloud, that is deny'd their name.
 Grow, grow, faire tree, and as thy branches shoote,
 Heare, what the *Muses* sing about thy roote, 100
 By me, their priest (if they can ought diuine)
 Before the moones haue fill'd their tripple trine,
 To crowne the burthen which you goe withall,
 It shall a ripe and timely issue fall,
 T(o)¹expect the honors of great A v B i G N Y : 105
 And greater rites, yet writ in mysterie,
 But which the *Fates* forbid me to reueale.
 Onely, thus much, out of a rauish'd zeale,
 Vnto your name, and goodnesse of your life,
 They speake ; since you are truly that rare wife, 110
 Other great wiues may blush at: when they see
 What your try'd manners are, what theirs should bee.
 How you loue one, and him you should ; how still
 You are depending on his word, and will;
 Not fashion'd for the court, or strangers eyes ; 115
 But to please him, who is the dearer prise
 Vnto himselfe, by being so deare to you.
 This makes, that your affections still be new,
 And that your soules conspire, as they were gone

- 120 Each into other, and had now made one.
 Liue that one, still; and as long yeeres doe passe,
Madame, be bold to vse this truest glasse:
 Wherein, your forme, you still the same shall finde ;
 Because nor it can change, nor such a minde.

XIIII.

Ode.

TO SIR WILLIAM SYDNEY, ON HIS
 BIRTH-DAY.

- N**OW that the harth is crown^d with smiling fire,
 And some doe drinke, and some doe dance,
 Some ring,
 Some sing,
 5 And all doe striue t(o)'aduanche
 The gladnesse higher:
 Wherefore should I
 Stand silent by,
 Who not the least,
 10 Both loue the cause, and authors of the feast ?
 Giue me my cup, but from the *Thespian* well,
 That I may tell to SYDNEY, what
 . This day
 Doth say,
 15 And he may thinke on that
 Which I doe tell:
 When all the noyse
 Of these forc'd ioyes,
 Are fled and gone,
 20 And he, -with his best *Genius* left alone.
 This day sayes, then, the number of glad yeeres
 Are iustly summ'd, that make you man ;
 Your vow
 Must now

xiii. 123 finde; Fa : finde ? *Fi*

xiv. Stanzas of 10 lines in *G*

8 by.] by. *Ff*

2 dance, *Fz* : dance. *FI*

Striue all right wayes it can, 25
T(o)'out-strip your peeres :
 Since he doth lacke
 Of going backe
 Little, whose will
 Doth vrge him to runne wrong, or to stand still. 30
Nor can a little of the common store,
 Of nobles vertue, shew in you ;
 Your blood
 So good
And great, must seeke for new, 35
And studie more :
 Not weary, rest
 On what's deceast.
 For they, that swell
 With dust of ancestors, in graues but dwell. 40
T will be exacted of your name, whose sonne,
 Whose nephew, whose grand-child you are ;
 And men
 Will, then,
Say you haue follow'd farre, 45
When well begunne :
 Which must be now,
 They teach you, how.
 And he that stayes
 To Hue vntill to morrow¹ hath lost two dayes. 50
So may you Hue in honor, as in name,
 If with this truth you be inspir'd,
 So may
 This day
Be more, and long desir'd : 55
And with the flame
 - Of loue be bright,
 As with the light
 Of bone-fires. Then
 The Birth-day shines, when logs not burnc, hut 60
[men.]

xv.

To HEAVEN.

- G**ood, and great GOD, can I not thinke of thee,
But it must, straight, my melancholy bee ?
Is it interpreted in me disease,
That, laden with my sinnes, I seeke for ease ?
5 O, be thou witnesse, that the reynes dost know,
And hearts of all, if I be sad for show,
And iudge me after : if I dare pretend
To ought but grace, or ayme at other end.
As thou art all, so be thou all to mee,
10 First, midst, and last, conuerted one, and three ;
My faith, my hope, my loue : and in this state,
My iudge, my witnesse, and my aduocate.
Where haue I beene this while exil'd from thee ?
And whither rap'd, now thou but stoup'st to mee ?
15 Dwell, dwell here still: O, being euery-where,
How can I doubt to finde thee euer, here ?
I know my state, both full of shame, and scorne,
Conceiu'd in sinne, and vnto labour borne,
Standing with feare, and must with horror fall,
20 And destin'd vnto Judgement, after all.
I feele my griefes too, and there scarce is ground,
Vpon my flesh t(o)'inflict another wound.
Yet dare I not complaine, or wish for death
With holy PAVL, lest it be thought the breath
25 Of discontent; or that these prayers bee
For wearinesse of life, not loue of thee.

THE END.

THE UNDERWOOD

CONSISTING OF
DIVERS
POEMS.

BY
BEN. IOHN SON.

~~Printed~~ *Printed for sale,*

LOMOND
Printed M.DC.XD

To the Reader.

With the same leave, the Ancients call'd that kind
of body Sylva, or Ynn in which there were
workes of divers nature, and matter congested; as the
multitude call Timber-trees, promiscuously growing, a
5 Wood, or Forrest : so am I bold to entitle these lesser
Poems, of later growth, by this of Vnder-wood, out of the
Analogic they hold to the Forrest, in my former booke, and
no otherwise.

BEN. IO[H] NSON.

VNDER-VVOOD.

I.

POEMS

OF DEVOTION.

I.

The Sinners Sacrifice.

To the Holy Trinitie.

1. **O** Holy, blessed, glorious *Trinitie*
Of persons, still one God, in *Unitie*,
The faithfull mans beleev'd Mystcrie,
Helpe, helpe to lift
2. My selfe up to thce, harrow'd, torne, and bruis'd 5
By sinne, and Sathan ; and my flesh misus'd,
As my heart lies in peeces, all confus'd,
O take my gift.
3. All-gracious God, the *Sinners sacrifice*,
A broken heart thou wert not wont despise, 10
But 'bovc the fat of rammes, or bulls, to prize
An offering meet
4. For thy acceptance. O, behold me right,
And take compassion on my grievous plight.
What odour can be, then a heart contrite, 15
To thee more sweet ?
5. *Eternall Father*, God, who did'st create
This All of nothing, gavest it forme, and fate,
And breath'st into it, life, and light, with state
To worship thee.
- 20

Headline VNDER-WOOD] VNDER-WOODS F. *The headlines on pp. 164-207 of F have been similarly corrected; on pp. 201, 208 the correction has been made in some copies of F. F3 prints 'Vnder-woods' throughout.*

6. *Eternall God the Sonne*, who not denyd'st
 To take our nature ; becam'st man, and dyd'st,
 To pay our debts, upon thy Crosse, and cryd'st,
 All's done in me.
- 25 7. *Eternall Spirit*, God from both proceeding,
 Father and Sonne ; the Comforter, in breeding
 Pure thoughts in man : with fiery zeale them feeding
 For acts of grace.
8. Increase those acts, 6 glorious *Trinitie*
 30 Of persons, still one God in *Unitie* ;
 Till I attaine the long¹d-for mysterie
 Of seeing your face,
9. Beholding one in three, and three in one,
 A *Trinitie*, to shine in *Union* ;
- 35 The gladdest light, darke man can thinke upon ;
 O grant it me I
10. Father, and Sonne, and Holy Ghost, you three
 All coeternall in your Majestic,
 Distinct in persons, yet in *Unitie*
- 40 One God to see,
11. My Maker, Saviour, and my Sanctifier :
 To heare, to mediate, sweeten my desire,
 With grace, with love, with cherishing intire :
 O, then how blest,
- 45 12. Among thy Saints elected to abide,
 And with thy Angels, placed side, by side,
 But in thy presence, truly glorified,
 ' Shall I there rest!

23 cryd'st,] cryd'st F 32 Of] of F face,] face. F 34 *Union*/
 Union G : *Unitie* F 40 see,] see. F 41 Sanctifier : Fj :
 Sanctifier. F 42 mediate G : meditate F 43 intire : Fj :
 intire, F 44 blest.] blest; F : blest I Fj 47 glorified.]
 glorified F 48 rest I Fj : rest ? F

2.

A Hymne to God the Father.

HEare mee, O God I
 A broken heart,
 Is my best part:
 Use still thy rod,
 That I may prove 5
 Therein, thy Love.

If thou hadst not
 Beene sterne to mee,
 But left me free,
 I had forgot 10
 My selfe and thee.

For, sin's so sweet,
 As minds ill bent
 Rarely repent,
 Untill they meet 15
 Their punishment.

Who more can crave
 Then thou hast done ?
 That gav'st a Sonne,
 To free a slave, 20
 First made of nought;
 With all since bought.

Sinne, Death, and Hell,
 His glorious Name
 Quite overcame, 25
 Yet I rebell,
 And slight the same.

i(2) 7n *Eg* 2,1.57 b. and *RPi*_t p. 158. *Italic type in F.* 12 sweet,
Fj : sweet. *F* 14 Rarely] cannot *RP* 18 done ? *Fj*.
 done : *F* 19 a Sonne] thy sonne *Eg* 20 To free] to be *Eg*
 slave.] slave ? *F* : Slave : *F*₃ 22 With all since] Withall since *F* :
 with all sinne *Eg* : with all sins *RP*

30 But, I'll come in,
 Before my losse
 Me farther tosse,
 As sure to win
 Under his Crosse.

3-

A Hymn

On the Nativitie of my Saviour.

I Sing the birth, was borne to night,
 The Author both of Life, and light;
 The Angels so did sound it,
 And like the ravish'd Sheep'erds said,
 5 Who saw the light, and were afraid,
 Yet search'd, and true they found it.
 The Sonne of God, th'Eternal! King,
 That did us all salvation bring,
 And freed the soule from danger ;
 10 Hee whom the whole world could not take,
 The Word, which heaven, and earth did make ;
 Was now laid in a Manger.
 The Fathers wisdom will'd it so,
 The Sonnes obedience knew no No,
 15 Both wills were in one stature ;
 And'as that wisdom had decreed,
 The Word was now made Flesh indeed,
 And tooke-on him our Nature.
 What comfort by him doe wee winne,
 20 Who made himselfe the price of sinne,
 To make us heires of glory I
 To see this Babe, all innocence ;
 A Martyr borne in our defence ;
 Can man forget this Storie ?.

i (2) 29 losse] losse, F 30 Me... tosse] And now begin Eg. RP
 32 Under his] Beneath Thy RP
 i (3) *Italic type in -F.* 19 winne,] winne ? F 21 glory I]
 glory? F

II.

A Celebration of C H A R i s in
ten Lyrick Peeces.

i.

His Excuse for loving.

LEt it not your wonder move,
 Lesse your laughter ; that I love.
 Though I now write fiftie yeares,
 I have had, and have my Peeres ;
 Poets, though divine, are men : 5
 Some have lov'd as old agen.
 And it is not alwayes face,
 Clothes, or Fortune gives the grace;
 Or the feature, or the youth:
 But the Language, and the Truth, 10
 With the Ardor, and the Passion,
 Gives the Lover weight, and fashion.
 If you then will read the Storie,
 First, prepare you to be sorie,
 That you never knew till now, 15
 Either whom to love, or how :
 But be glad, as soone with me,
 When you know, that this is she,
 Of whose Beautie it was sung,
 She shall make the old man young, 20
 Keepe the middle age at stay,
 And let nothing high decay,
 Till she be the reason why,
 All the world for love may die.

ii (i) 2 laughter;] laughter, Fj 5 divine, Fj : device F 20
 young.] young. F 22 decay, F3 : decay. F

2.

How he saw her.

I Beheld her, on a day,
 When her looke out-flourisht May:
 And her dressing did out-brave
 All the Pride the fields than have :
 5 Farre I was from being stupid,
 For I ran and call'd on *Cupid* ;
 Love, if thou wilt ever see
 Marke of glorie, come with me ;
 Where's thy Quiver ? bend thy Bow :
 10 Here's a shaft, thou art to slow !
 And (withall) I did untie
 Every Cloud about his eye ;
 But, he had not gain'd his sight
 Sooner, then he lost his might,
 15 Or his courage ; for away
 Strait hee ran, and durst not stay,
 Letting Bow and Arrow fall,
 Nor for any threat, or call,
 Could be brought once back to looke.
 20 I foole-hardie, there up-tooke
 Both-the Arrow he had quit,
 And the Bow : with thought to hit
 This my object. But she threw
 Such a Lightning (as I drew)
 25 At my face, that tooke my sight,
 And my motion from me quite ;
 So that, there, I stood a stone,
 Mock'd of all: and call'd of one
 (Which with grieve and wrath I heard)
 30 *Cupids* Statue with a Beard,
 Or else one that plaid his Ape,
 In a *Hercules*-his shape.

ii (2) i day] Day F 4 than] then F3 7 Love, F3 :
 Love F 18 call] Call F 19 looke.] looke, F 20 up-
 tooke] up tooke F 22 with G : which F 27 that,] that F

3.

What hee suffered.

After many scornes like these,
Which the prouder Beauties please,
She content was to restore
Eyes and limbes ; to hurt me more.
And would on Conditions, be 5
Reconcil'd to Love, and me.
First, that I must kneeling yeeld
Both the Bow, and shaft I held,
Unto her ; which Love might take
At her hand, with oath, to make 10
Mee, the scope of his next draught,
Aymed with that selfe-same shaft.
He no sooner heard the Law,
But the Arrow home did draw
And (to gaine her by his Art) 15
Left it sticking in my heart:
Which when she beheld to bleed,
She repented of the deed,
And would faine have chang'd the fate,
But the Pittie comes too late. 20
Looser-like, now, all my wreake
Is, that I have leave to speake,
And in either Prose, or Song,
To revenge me with my Tongue,
Which how Dexterously I doe, 25
Heare and make Example too.

ii (3) 4 limbes ;] Limbs F3 more.] more F : more, Fj 6
me. F3 : me F 8 held,] held F g Love F3 : love F
11 draught,] draught F 12 Aymed] Aymed, -F shaft.] shaft
F 25 doe,] doe F

4.

Her Triumph.

SEE the Chariot at hand here of Love,
 Wherein my Lady rideth I
 Each that drawes, is a Swan, or a Dove,
 And well the Carre Love guideth.
 5 As she goes, all hearts doe duty
 Unto her beauty;
 And enamour'd, doe wish, so they might
 But enjoy such a sight,
 That they still were to run by her side,
 10 Th(o)rough Swords, th(o)rough Seas, whether she would ride.

 Doe but looke on her eyes, they doe light
 All that Loves world compriseth !
 Doe but looke on her Haire, it is bright
 As Loves starre when it riseth !
 15 Doe but marke, her forehead's smother
 Then words that sooth her I
 And from her arched browes, such a grace
 Sheds it selfe through the face,
 As alone there triumphs to the life
 20 All the Gaine, all the Good, of the Elements strife.

 Have you seene but a bright Lillie grow,
 Before rude hands have touch'd it ?
 Have you mark'd but the fall o'the Snow
 Before the soyle hath smutch¹d it ?

ii (4) *In* Add 5 . 89, 'In Dominant amatorium'. *LI.* 11-30 in
 HJ . 4 b ; and in 'The Devil is an Ass', 11. vi. 94-113. *LI.* 21-30 a
 separate poem in RP 5 E. 50 b and Dobell MS. i Love,] Love F
 3 Dove.] Dove F 4 Carre] coach Add guideth. Fj : guideth F
 g still not in Add wereFj : were, F 10 Thorough . . . thorough
 Editor ii looke... eyes,] looke.... eies I D is A light] delight H
 13 Haire,] hayre D is A 14 starre] starre. D is A 15 marke,
 her forehead's] marke, her fore-head's D is A : marke her forehead's F :
 marke her, her foreheads H 17 browes] brow Add 18 Sheds]
 sheeds H ig alone there] alone, there D is A : there alone Add
 21 bright] white Add 23 Have] Have D is A : Ha' F (cf. 21) : Or
 haue Add o'] of D is A : of Add

Haue you seems y^e Palme-trees state,
 Or Saturnias gate ?
 Haue you tasted virginitye ?
 O so yong, o so straight, O so chaste, so chaste is shee !

5.

His discourse with Cupid.

Noblest *Charts*, you that are
 Both my fortune, and my Starre I
 And doe governe more my blood,
 Then the various Moone the flood !
 5 Heare, what late Discourse of you,
 Love, and I have had ; and true.
 'Mongst my Muses finding me,
 Where he chanc't your name to see
 Set, and to this softer straine ;
 10 Sure, said he, if I have Braine,
 This, here sung, can be no other
 By description, but my Mother !
 So hath *Homer* prais'd her haire ;
 So, *Anacreon* drawne the Ayre
 15 Of her face, and made to rise,
 Just ab'ove her sparkling eyes,
 Both her Browes, bent like my Bow.
 By her looks I doe her know,
 Which you call my Shafts. And see 1
 20 Such my Mothers blushes be,
 As the Bath your verse discloses
 In her cheekes, of Milke, and Roses ;
 Such as oft I wanton in !
 And, above her even chin,
 25 Have you plac'd the banke of kisses,
 Where, you say, men gather blisses,

ii (5) ii This,] This -F 15 rise,] rise F 16 above *Editor* :
 about F ('aboue' in *Jonson's spelling*) 23 in I] in ? F 26
 Where,] Where F

Rip'ned with a breath more sweet,
 Then when flowers, and West-winds meet.
 Nay, her white and polish'd neck,
 With the Lace that doth it deck, 30
 Is my Mothers ! Hearts of slaine
 Lovers, made into a Chaine !
 And betweene each rising breast,
 Lyes the Valley, cal'd my nest,
 Where I sit and proyne my wings 35
 After flight; and put new stings
 To my shafts ! Her very Name,
 With my Mothers is the same.
 I confesse all, I replide,
 And the Glasse hangs by her side, 40
 And the Girdle 'bout her waste,
 All is *Venus*: save unchaste.
 But alas, thou seest the least
 Of her good, who is the best
 Of her Sex; But could'st thou, *Love*, 45
 Call to mind the formes, that strove
 For the Apple, and those three
 Make in one, the same were shee.
 For this Beauty yet doth hide
 Something more then thou hast spi'd. 50
 Outward Grace weake love beguiles :
 Shee is *Venus*, when she smiles,
 But shee's *Juno*, when she walkes,
 And *Minerva*, when she talkes.

6.

Clayming a second kisse by Desert.

C*Haris*, guesse, and doe not misse,
 Since I drew a Morning kisse
 From your lips, and suck'd an ayre
 Thence, as sweet, as you are faire,

ii (3) 45 thou, F3 : thou F 49 hide] hide, F 50 spi'd. F3: spi'd F
 ii (6) I Caans. F3 : Caaris F 4 faire.] faire. F

- 5 What my Muse and I have done :
Whether we have lost, or wonne,
If by us, the oddes were laid,
That the Bride (allow¹d a Maid)
Look'd not halfe so fresh, and faire,
10 With th'advantage of her haire,
And her Jewels, to the view
Of th¹ Assembly, as did you !
Or, that did you sit, or walke,
You were more the eye, and talke
15 Of the Court, to day, then all
Else that glister¹d in *White-hall* ;
So, as those that had your sight,
Wisht the Bride were chang'd to night,
And did thinke, such Rites were due
20 To no other Grace but you !
Or, if you did move to night
In the Daunces, with what spight
Of your Peeres, you were beheld,
That at every motion sweld
25 So to see a Lady tread,
As might all the Graces lead,
And was worthy (being so scene)
, To be ehvi'd of the Queene.
Or if you would yet have stay^fd,
30 Whether any would up-braid
To himselfe his losse of Time ;
Or have charg'd his sight of Crime,
To have left all sight for you :
Guesse of these, which is the true ;
35 And, if such a verse as this,
May not claime another kisse.

7.

*Begging another, on colour of mending
the former.*

FOr Lflues-sake, kisse me once againe,
I long, and should not beg in vaine,
Here's none to spie, or see ;
Why doe you doubt, or stay ?
Tie taste as lightly as the Bee, 5
That doth but touch his flower, and flies away.
Once more, and (faith) I will be gone,
Can he that loves, aske lesse then one ?
Nay, you may erre in this,
And all your bountie wrong: 10
This could be call'd but halfe a kisse.
What w^fare but once to doe, we should doe long.
I will but mend the last, and tell
Where, how it would have relish d well;
Joyne lip to lip, and try: 15
Each suck (the) others breath.
And whilst our tongues perplexed lie,
Let who will thinke us dead, or wish our death.

8.

Urging her of a promise.

CHaris one day in discourse
Had of Love, and of his force,
Lightly prompts'd, she would tell
What a man she could love well:
And that promise set on fire 5
All that heard her, with desire.

ii (7) *In Add 13 f. 63 : in Ash 2. p. 84, 'On Begging A kiss of his Mis.' G prints in six-line stanzas. 2 long| begg Ash beg| aske Add, Ash 3 Here's . . . see. om. Add 6 touch| sucke Add, Ash flies away| and goes his way Add', Ash 7 gone, Fj : gone F 8 and (faith)] and then In faith Ash 9-14 Nay . . . well not in Add, Ash 12 w^fare| we're Fj long.] long, Ff 16 suck the G : suckes out Add, Ash 17 whilst. .. tongues] while we thus Add. Ash perplexed lie| perplexedly Ash*

With the rest, I long expected,
 When the worke would be effected :
 But we find that cold delay,
 xo And excuse spun every day,
 As, untill she tell her one,
 We all feare, she loveth none.
 Therefore, *Charts*, you must do't,
 For I will so urge you to't,
 15 You shall neither eat, nor sleepe,
 No, nor forth your window peepe,
 With your emissarie eye,
 To fetch in the Formes goe by :
 And pronounce, which band, or lace,
 20 Better fits him, then his face ;
 Nay, I will not let you sit
 'Fore your Idoll Glasse a whit,
 To say over every purle
 There; or to reforme a curie ;
 25 Or with Secretarie *Sis*
 To consult, if *Fucus* this
 Be as good, as was the last:
 All your sweet of life is past,
 Make accompt, unlesse you can,
 30 (And that quickly) speake your Man.

9

Her man described by her owne Dictamen.

O F your Trouble, *Ben*, to ease me,
 I will tell what Man would please me.
 I would have him, if I could,
 Noble; or of greater Blood :
 5 Titles, I confesse, doe take me ;
 And a woman God did make me :

ii (8) 14 to't. Fj : to't *F* 19 band,] band *F* 21 Nay. Fj :
 Nay *F* 29 accompt. Fj : accompt *F*
 ii (9) *In N i.* 34 ft, with title 'The Man'. 3 him. *N.* Fj : him *F*
 4 greater] greatest *N* 6 me :] Mee : *N* : me. *F*

French to boote, at least in fashion,
And his Manners of that Nation.

Young rid have him to(o), and faire,
Yet a man ; with crisped haire 10
Cast in thousand snares, and rings
For *Loves* fingers, and his wings :
Chestnut colour, or more slack
Gold, upon a ground of black.

Venus, and *Minerva's* eyes, 15
For he must looke wanton-wise.

Eye-brows bent like *Cupids* bow,
Front, an ample field of snow;
Even nose, and cheeke (withall) 20
Smooth as is the Billiard Ball:
Chin, as woolly as the Peach ;
And his lip should kissing teach,
Till he cherish¹d too much beard,
And make *Love* or me afeard.

He would have a hand as soft 25
As the Downe, and shew it oft;
Skin as smooth as any rush,
And so thin, to see a blush
Rising through it e're it came;
All his blood should be a flame 30
Quickly fir'd, as in beginners
In loves schoole, and yet no sinners.

Twere to(o) long, to speake of all:
What we harmonic doe call 35
In a body, should be there.
Well he should his clothes to(o weare ;
Yet no Taylor help to make him ;
Drest, you still for man should take him ;

9 I'd] I'd F too N, F3 : to F 15 eyes, N : eyes F 18
Front... of] forehead large, and white as AT 24 make] made G
or] and N 25 would] should N 27 Skin] Skin. N 28
thin, N : thin F 29 it] it. N 31 fir'd, N : fir'd F 32
schoole] art N 33 too long, N, F3 : to long F all: N : all. F
35 body,] body F : Bodie. N 36 too G : not in N 37 him;
N: himF

- And not thinke h'had eat a stake,
 40 Or were set up in a Brake.
 Valiant he should be as fire,
 Shewing danger more then ire.
 Bounteous as the clouds to earth ;
 And as honest as his Birth.
 45 All his actions to be such,
 As to doe no thing too much.
 Nor o're-praise, nor yet condemne ;
 Nor out-valew, nor contemne ;
 Nor doe wrongs, nor wrongs receave ;
 50 Nor tie knots, nor knots unweave ;
 And from basenesse to be free,
 As he durst love Truth and me.
 Such a man, with every part,
 I could give my very heart;
 55 But of one, if short he came,
 I can rest me where I am.

10.

Another Ladyes exception present at the hearing.

- F**Or his Mind, I doe not care,
 That's a Toy, that I could spare :
 Let his Title be but great,
 His Clothes rich, and band sit neat,
 ; Himselfe young, and face be good,
 All I wish is uvnderstood.
 What you please, you parts may call,
 Tis one good part I'd lie withall.

ii (9) 40 set] pent N 46 no thing W: nothing F 47 o're-praise]
 out-praise N 52 Truth and me] truth, and Mee N
 ii(10) In Add 14 . no, 'A Lady's Choyce'. 5 and] &'s Add
 6 uvnderstood. F3 - uvnderstood F

III.

The Muscall strife ; In a Pastorall Dialogue.

SHEE.

Come, with our Voyces, let us warre,
 And challenge all the Spheares,
 Till each of us be made a Starre,
 And all the world turne Eares.

HEE.

At such a Call, what beast or fowle, 5
 Of reason emptie is ?
 What Tree or stone doth want a soule ?
 What man but must lose his ?

SHEE.

Mixe then your Notes, that we may prove 10
 To stay the running floods,
 To make the Mountaine Quarries move,
 And call the walking woods.

HEE.

What need of mee ? doe you but sing,
 Sleepe, and the Grave will wake.
 No tunes are sweet, nor words have sting, 15
 But what those lips doe make.

iii, *An earlier draft in Add 3 f. 88 b, 'Cantilena' : Add 13 ff. 4 b, 5 a without heading: Add 17 f. 37 b, 'Two Ladies ioyning each other to sing, namely Phyllis and Corinna : SI 2 f. 55. without heading : Jif. 53, 'A Dialog betweene two Ladies. B.I.¹ numbered 'i' and '2'. The later text in Ch. i 'A Dialogue in Song betweene A Nimph, and a Shephard'. the stanxas headed 'Nimph (Nymph)' and 'Shep'ard' : TCD p. 349. i Phyllis prefixed in Add 17, i in J Come,] Come ; Ch : Come F : Come, come TCD 2 Spheares] sphsres Add 13 3 each] one TCD be] is Adds 4 turne] turn'd Add 5, TCD 5-8 not in Add 5. Add 17, SI. J 6 is ? Ch : is f F 8 but must lose] doth not want TCD g then] we Add 17, J your] our Add 5, Add 17, Ch, J, TCD 10 floods,] floods f F zi move,] move ? F 12 woods.] woods f F 13 Corinna : prefixed in Add 17: 2 J mee] myne TCD doe] did Add 13, SI sing,] sing F 14 will] shall Add 17, J : would 51 wake.] wake, F : wake F₃ 15 No tunes are sweet] No voice so sweet Add 5: no voice is sweet Add 13, SI: no eare hath sound Add 17, J. nor words have sting] no words have sting Add 5. Add 13. Ch : no voice bath sting J : no voyce hath sunnge Add 17 16 those] your Add 5. SI, J*

SHEE.

They say the Angells marke each Deed,
 And exercise below,
 And out of inward pleasure feed
 20 On what they viewing know.

HEE.

O sing not you then, lest the best
 Of Angels should be driven
 To fall againe ; at such a feast,
 Mistaking earth for heaven.

SHEE.

23 Nay, rather both our soules bee strayn'd
 To meet their high desire ;
 So they in state of Grace retain'd,
 May wish us of their Quire.

IV.

A SONG.

O^H doe not wanton with those eyes,
 Lest I be sick with seeing ;
 Nor cast them downe, but let them rise,
 Lest shame destroy their being.
 5 O, be not angry with those fires,
 For then their threats will kill me ;
 Nor looke too kind on my desires,
 For then my hopes will spill me.

iii. 17 Ph: *prefixed in Add 17 : i in J* They] Some Add 13, SI
 marke] vieue Add 13. SI. J 18 And] Wee Add 5, Add 13. SI, J :
 who Add 17 19 pleasure] passion Add 5, Add 13, Add 17. SI, J
 20 On ... know] on what they see or know Add 23, SI, J : On which
 they see or know Add 5: on that they see or know Add 17: Themselves
 wth what they know TCD 21 O ... then] Sing you no more then
 Add j, Add 13, SI: Sing wee no more then Add 17, J 23 againe;]
 again, Ch 24 earth] hell SI 25 Cor: *prefixed in Add 17 : Co.*
in J Nay,] Lett SI, Ch, TCD soules] notes Add 13. SI. J 26
 To] And Ch, TCD 27 state] seat TCD 28 May] Shall
 Add 17,

iv. *Italic type in F : G prints in four-line stanzas.* 4 being, Pj :
 being : F 8 me. F3 : me; F

O, doe not steepe them in thy Teares,
 For so will sorrow slay me ; 10
 Nor spread them as distract with feares,
 Mine owne enough betray me.

v

In the person of Woman-kind.

A Song Apologetique.

MEn, if you love us_f play no more
 The fooles, or Tyrants with your friends,
 To make us still sing o're, and o're,
 Our owne false praises, for your ends :
 Wee have both wits, and fancies too, 5
 And if wee must, let's sing of you.

Nor doe we doubt, but that we can,
 If wee would search with care, and paine,
 Find some one good, in some one man;
 So going thorow all your straine, »
 Wee shall, at last, of parcells make
 One good enough for a songs sake.

And as a cunning Painter takes
 In any curious peece you see
 More pleasure while the thing he makes 15
 Then when 'tis made, why so will wee.
 And having pleas'd our art, wee'll try
 To make a new, and hang that by.

iv. 9 Teares] Tares *F* originally

v. *Italic type in F*

Title] Woman-kind F3 : Woman kind *F* i

Men.] Men, F3 : Men *F*

10 straine,] straine : *F* : Strain, F3

II shall,] *shattF*

VI

*Another.**In defence of their Inconstancie.**A Song.*

HAng up those dull, and envious fooles,
 That talke abroad of Womans change,
 We were not bred to sit on stooles,

Our proper vertue is to range :
 5 Take that away, you take our lives,
 We are no women then, but wives.

Such as in valour would excell,
 Doe change, though man, and often fight,
 Which we in love must doe aswell,
 10 If ever we will love aright.
 The frequent varying of the deed,
 Is that which doth perfection breed.

Nor is't inconstancie to change
 For what is better, or to make
 15 (By searching) what before was strange,
 Familiar, for the uses sake ;
 The good, from bad, is not descride,
 But as 'tis often vext and tri'd.

And this profession of a store
 20 In love, doth not alone help forth
 Our pleasure ; but preserves us more
 From being forsaken, then doth worth :
 For were the worthiest woman curst
 To love one man, hee'd leave her first.

vi. *Italic type in F* i *fooles.] fooles F* 7 *excell.] excell F :*
excel. Fa 8 *fight,] fight. F3 : fight F* 22 *worth :] worth : FS :*
worth, F

VII.

A Nymphs Passion.

I Love, and he loves me againe,
 Yet dare I not tell who ;
 For if the Nymphs should know my Swaine,
 I feare they'd love him too ;
 Yet if it be not knowne, 5
 The pleasure is as good as none,
 For that's a narrow joy is but our owne.

Tie tell, that if they be not glad,
 They yet may envie me :
 But then if I grow jealous madde, 10
 And of them pittied be,
 It were a plague 'bove scorne,
 And yet it cannot be forborne,
 Unlesse my heart would as my thought be torne.

He is, if they can find him, faire, 15
 And fresh and fragrant too,
 As Summers sky, or purged Ayre,
 And lookes as Lillies doe,
 That were this morning blowne ;
 Yet, yet I doubt he is not knowne, 20
 And feare much more, that more of him be showne.

But he hath eyes so round, and bright,
 As make away my doubt,
 Where Love may all his Torches light,
 Though hate had put them out;

vii. In *Eg* j. 67 b, 'A Nymphes Passion, in a Pastorall'. Reprinted by
 S. T. Coleridge vnder the title 'Mutual Passion, altered and modernized
 from an old poet' in '*The Courier*', 21 September 1811, and in '*Sibylline
 Leaves*', 1817. 12 scorne,] scorne F : Scorn, F3 13 forborne,]
 forborne F: forborn, F3 15 is, *Eg*, F3 : is F 19 were
Eg (cf. G.M., 1422) : are F blowne,] blowne. F : blown; F3 24
 light. F3 : light F

But then t(o)'increase my feares,
 What Nymph so e're his voyce but heares,
 Will be my Rivall, though she have but cares.

Tie tell no more, and yet I love,
 30 And he loves me ; yet no
 One un-becomming thought doth move
 From either heart, I know ;
 But so exempt from blame,
 As it would be to each a fame :
 35 If Love, or feare, would let me tell his name.

VIII.

The Houre-glasse.

DOe but consider this small dust,
 Here running in the Glasse,
 By Atomes mov'd ;
 Could you beleeeve, that this,
 The body (ever) was
 5 Of one that lov'd ?

vii. 26 to'increase] to encrease *Eg* 27 heares,] heares .F : hears,
Fj 32 either] cithers *Eg*

viii. A MS. copy sent to Drummond, 'on a lovers dust, made sand for ane Houre Glasse', in the 'Conversations'. // 650-9. afterwards printed in Drummond's 'Works'. 1711, p. 155. with a complimentary inscription (see vol. i, pp. 177-8). In D, Q, Ed 'On a Gentlewoman, working by an Houre-Glasse'. In Add 4 /. 31. 'Of the sand running In an hower glasse'; Add 5/. 96 b. 'Of Sand in an houre-glasse'; Add 7/. 4 b, 'On an houre-glasse'; Add 10 f 49, 'On an houre-glasse'; St f. 69 b, 'The Houre-Glasse'; Ash I f. 257, with the original Latin; RP 10 f. 74 b, 'Of the Ashes of a dead Lover put in an hower glasse'; *Jaf.jb*; Digby MS. \ Dobell MS. A slightly different version in Add 18 f. 14. 'On y* Sand in an houre-glasse', and Firth />. 51. i, 2 One line in Drummond. Add 10, Add 18, Ash. Firth, J, Digby, Dobell i Doe but not in Add 18. Firth but] thou Add 7 this small] the Firth 2 running] moouing Firth : not in Add 18 the] this Add 4, Add 5, Add 7, Add 18, St, Ash, Digby 4, 5 One line in Drummond, Add 4, Add 10, Add 18, St. Firth. Dobell. D.Q 4 Could you beleeeve] Would you beleeeve Add 4, Add 5, D, Q : Can you beleeeve Firth : Canst thou beleeeve Add 7 : Canst thou conceive, /, Dobell: Thou mayst conceive Add 18 you] thou Drummond this] it Add 4. D. Q ever Drummond, Add 4. Add 5, Add 10, Ash, RP, Digby

And in his M^B- flame, playing like a flye,
 Turn'd to civnders by her eye ?
 Yes ; and in death, as life, unblest,
 To have't exprest,
 Even ashes of lovers find no rest.

10

IX.

My Picture left in Scotland.

I Now thinke, Love is rather deafe, then blind,
 For else it could not be,

That she,
 Whom I adore so much, should so slight me,
 And cast my love behind :

5

I'm sure my language to her, was as sweet,
 And every close did meet
 In sentence, of as subtile feet,
 As hath the youngest Hee,
 That sits in shadow of *Apollo's* tree.

10

Oh, but my conscious feares,
 That flie my thoughts betweene,
 Tell me that she hath seene

viii. 7 And] Who *Firth* M»-] *Mistris D, Q, Add 18, RP, Firth, Dobell, Digby* flame] *fames Add 18, Ash. J. D. Q : flaming Drummond like not in Add 18. Ash a] the Drummond. Add 10. RP, St, Dobell, Firth* 8 Turn'd] *Burn'd Add 4, Add 10, Ash : Burnt Digby* was turned into *D, Q: Was straightway turu'd Firth, D, Q: to not in Add 18 g Yes; . . . unblest,] Yes; as in life, so in their deaths unblest: D, Q: Yes; and as in life, so in death, unblest Firth: Whereby (m death, as life, unblest I) Add 18 life,] life F 10 To . . . exprest, not in D, Q To have't] to haue it Drummond, Add 4, RP. Firth : T'haue it Add 5. Digby: Have yt . Dobell: he hath Add 18 11 Even . . . rest] that Lovers Ashes find no rest Add 18 : The ashes of Louers find no rest Firth : That lovers ashes take noe rest , Dobell: A Lovers ashes never can find rest D. Q find] take Add 7 : haue Digby*

ix. A MS. copy sent to Drummond, in the 'Conversations', II. 661-78, afterwards printed in Drummond's Works, 1711, p. 155. In N 47 6, 'Verses on his Picture' : in D, Q, Ed 'Upon my Picture left in Scotland'. x now thinke] doubt that Drummond 2 For] or N 5 love] sute Drummond : suite N : suit D, Q 6 I'm] Tarn Drummond was] is Drummond 7 every close did] all my closes Drummond, N 8 sentence] numbers Drummond, N 9 hath] makes. Drummond, N youngest] -wisest D, Q // F prints continuously, not in stanzas 13 Tell] prompt Drummond

- My hundred of gray haire,
 15 Told seven and fortie years,
 Read so much wast, as she cannot imbrace
 My mountaine belly, and my rockie face,
 And all these through her eyes, have stopt her eares.

X.

Against lealousie.

- W**retched and foolish Jealousie,
 How cam'st thou thus to enter me ?
 I n(e)'re was of thy kind ;
 Nor have I yet the narrow mind
 To vent that poore desire,
 ; That others should not warme them at my fire,
 I wish the Sun should shine
 On all mens Fruit, and flowers, as well as mine.
 But uvnder the Disguise of love,
 10 Thou sai'st, thou only cam'st to prove
 What my Affections were.
 Think'st thou that love is help'd by feare ?
 Goe, get thee quickly forth,
 Loves sicknesse, and his noted want of worth,
 15 Seeke doubting Men to please,
 I ne're will owe my health to a disease.

XI.

The Dreame.

OR Scorne, or pittie on me take,
 I must the true Relation make,
 I am undone to night;

ix. 14 hundred *Drummond MS*: hundreds *F, N, D, Q. Drummond Folio*
 15 seven] six *N*: sixe *D, Q* yeares, *Drummond, D, Q*: yeares. *F*
 16 cannot] could not *D, Q* 17 face.] face. *Drummond, D, Q*
 x. 3 ne're] n're *F*: ne'er *F3* 6 fire,] fire: *F3* 8 Fruit]
 Fruits *F3* 9 love.] love *F*: Love, *F3* 11 were. *F3*: were. *F*
 13 forth.] forth *F* 14 worth. *F3*: worth *F*
 xi. 3 night] Night *F*

Love in a subtile Dreame disguis'd,
 Hath both my heart and me surpriz'd, 5
 Whom never yet he durst attempt awake ;
 Nor will he tell me for whose sake
 He did me the Delight,
 Or Spight,
 But leaves me to inquire, 10
 In all my wild desire,
 Of sleepe againe, who was his Aid ;
 And sleepe so guiltie and afraid,
 As since he dares not come within my sight.

XII.

An Epitaph on Master

VINCENT CORBET.

I Have my Pietie too, which could
 It vent it selfe, but as it would,
 Would say as much, as both have done
 Before me here, the Friend and Sonne ;
 For I both lost a friend and Father, 5
 Of him whose bones this Grave doth gather :
 Deare *Vincent Corbet*, who so long
 Had wrestled with Diseases strong,
 That though they did possesse each limbe,
 Yet he broke them, e're they could him, 10
 With the just Canon of his life,
 A life that knew nor noise, nor strife :
 But was by sweetning so his will,
 All order, and Disposure, still.
 His Mind as pure, and neatly kept, 15
 As were his Nourceries ; and swept

xi. 6 awake W : t'awake F n desire,] desire F 12
 againe,] againe ; F : again, F3 Aid ;] Aid, F
 xii In SI 4 f. 6l and Dobell MS. i have] hope SI, Dobell 2
 vent] vexe Dobell 4 Before me here,] And joyne in one Dobell
 5 I not in Dobell Corbet. F3 : Corbet F 14 All] At sl,
 Dobell still. Dobell: still F

- So of uncleannesse, or offence,
 That never came ill odour thence :
 And adde his Actions unto these,
 20 They were as specious as his Trees.
 'Tis true, he could not reprehend ;
 His very Manners taught t(o)'amend,
 They were so even, grave, and holy ;
 No stubbornnesse so stiffe, nor folly
 25 To licence ever was so light,
 As twice to trespasse in his sight,
 His lookes would so correct it, when
 It chid the vice, yet not the Men.
 Much from him I professe I wonne,
 30 And more, and more, I should have done,
 But that I uvnderstood him scant.
 Now I conceive him by my want,
 And pray who shall my sorrowes read,
 That they for me their teares will shed ;
 35 For truly, since he left to be,
 I feele, I'm rather dead than he I

Reader, whose life, and name, did e're become

An *Epitaph*, deserv'd a *Tombe* :

Nor wants it here through penurie, or sloth,

- 40 Who makes the *one*, so't be first, makes *both*.

17 uncleannesse] maliciousnesse *Dobell* 20 specious] spacious *SI*,
Dobell 21 reprehend; *Dobell*: reprehend-F: reprehend—*G*
 22 Manners] Manners. *F*: manner *SI* to'amend] to mend *Dobell*
 26 twice] once *Dobell* 27 lookes] looke *Dobell* 30 And] I *SI*.
Dobell should] might *Dobell* 31 scant.] scant, *F* 34 for . . .
 will] these teares for mee would *SI* 36 feele, I'm] feele mee *SI* he!
FS : he ? *F* 37-40 Not in *SI*, *Dobell* 37 become] be come *F*
 40 first.] first *F*

XIII.

An Epistle to Sir EDWARD SACKVILLE,
now Earle of Dorset.

IF, Sackvile, all that have the power to doe
Great and geod turns, as wel could time them too,
And knew their how, and where : we should have, then,
Lesse list of proud, hard, or ingratefull Men.
For benefits are ow'd with the same mind 5
As they are done, and such returnes they find :
You then, whose will not only, but desire
To succour my necessities, tooke fire,
Not at my prayers, but your sense ; which laid
The way to meet, what others would upbraid ; 10
And in the Act did so my blush prevent,
As I did feele it done, as soone as meant :
You cannot doubt, but I, who freely know
This Good from you, as freely will it owe ;
And though my fortune humble me, to take 15
The smallest courtesies with thanks, I make
Yet choyce from whom I take them ; and would shame
To have such doe me good, I durst not name :
They are the Noblest benefits, and sinke
Deepest in Man, of which when he doth thinke, 20
The memorie delights him more, from whom
Then what he hath receiv'd. Gifts stinke from some,
They are so long a comming, and so hard ;
Where any Deed is forc't, the Grace is mard.
Can I owe thanks, for Curtesies receiv'd 25
Against his will that do's 'hem ? that hath weav'd
Excuses, or Delays ? or done 'hem scant,
That they have more opprest me, then my want ?

xiii. i If.] If F 3 then,] then F (so 7) 8 necessities.]
necessities F : Necessities. Fj 13 I.] I F 14 you. as] you.
'as F originally 23 hard ;] hard F : hard. Fj 24 mard]
marr'd Fj 26 do's] doe's F

Or if he did it not to succour me,

30 But by meere Chance ? for interest ? or to free

Himselfe of farther trouble, or the weight

Of pressure, like one taken in a straight ?

All this corrupts the thankses ; lesse hath he wonne,

That puts it in his Debt-booke e're't be done ;

35 Or that doth sound a Trumpet, and doth call

His Groomes to witnesse ; or else lets it fall

In that proud manner, as a good so gain'd,

Must make me sad for what I have obtained.

No ! Gifts and thankses should have one cheerefull face,

40 So each, that's done, and tane, becomes a Brace.

He neither gives, or do's, that doth delay

A Benefit; or that doth throw 't away :

No more then he doth thanke, that will receive

Nought but in corners ; and is loath to leave

45 Lest Ayre, or Print, but flies it: Such men would

Run from the Conscience of it, if they could.

As I have seene some Infants of the Sword,

Well knowne, and practiz'd borrowers on their word,

Give thankses by stealth, and whispering in the eare,

50 For what they streight would to the world forswear ;

And speaking worst of those, from whom they went

But then, fist-fill'd, to put me off the sent.

Now dam'mee, Sir, if you shall not command

My Sword ('tis but a poore Sword, uvnderstand)

55 As farre as any poore Sword i' the Land.

Then turning unto him is next at hand,

Dam's whom he damn'd to, as the veriest Gull,

Ha's Feathers, and will serve a man to pull.

Are they not worthy to be answer'd so,

60 That to such Natures let their full hands flow,

33 thankses;] thankses, F 37 manner,] manner: F 42
Benefit; . . . away :] Benefit: . . . away F 44 leave] leave. F
46 it,] it F 47 Sword,] Sword F 52 fist-fill'd, F3 :
fist fill'd F 54 poore Sword,] poore Sword F 55 Land.]
Land, F : Land ; F3 57 to, as Editor : too. is F 58 Ha's]
H'asF

And seeke not wants to succour : but enquire,
 Like Money-brokers, after Names, and hire
 Their bounties forth, to him that last was made,
 Or stands to be'(i)n Commission o' the blade ?
 Still, still, the hunters of false fame apply 65
 Their thoughts and meanes to making loude the cry ;
 But one is bitten by the Dog he fed,
 And hurt seeks Cure, the Surgeon bids take bread,
 And spunge-like with it dry up the blood quite :
 Then give it to the Hound that did him bite ; 70
 Pardon, sayes he, that were a way to sec
 All the Towne-curs take each their snatch at me.
 O, is it so ? knowes he so much ? and will
 Feed those, at whom the Table points at still ?
 I not deny it, but to helpe the need 75
 Of any, is a great and generous Deed :
 Yea, of th'ingrategfull: and he forth must tell
 Many a pound, and piece, will p(l)ace one well;
 But these men ever want: their very trade
 Is borrowing ; that but stopt, they doe invade 80
 All as their prize, turne Pyrats here at Land,
 Ha' their *Bermudas*, and their streights i'th¹ *Strand*:
 Man out their Boates to th' Temple, and not shift
 Now, but command ; make tribute, what was gift ;
 And it is paid 'hem with a trembling zeale, 85
 And superstition I dare scarce reveale,
 If it were cleare, but being so in cloud
 Carried and wrapt, I only am alow'd
 My wovnder, why the taking a Clownes purse,
 Or robbing the poore Market-folkes should nurse 90
 Such a religious horroure in the breasts
 Of our Towne Gallantry ! or why there rests
 Such worship due to kicking of a Punck !

61 enquire, F3 : enquire F 62 -brokers, F3 : -brokers ; F
 76 great] Great F 78 piece.] piece F place W : pace F 80
 borrowing ; . . . stopt. F3 : borrowing, . . . stopt F 83 out W: out
 of Ff 86 reveale.] reveale F : reveal. F3 88 alow'd F3 :
 aloud F 89 wovnder, why] wovnder ! why ? F

- Or swaggering with the Watch, or Drawer, drunke ;
 95 Or feats of darknesse acted in Mid-Sun,
 And told of with more Licence then th'were done I
 Sure there is Misterie in it, I not know,
 That men such reverence to such actions show I
 And almost deifie the Authors ! make
 100 Lowd sacrifice of drinke, for their health-sake I
 Reare-Suppers in their Names I and spend whole nights
 Unto their praise, in certaine swearing rites !
 Cannot a man be reck'ned in the State
 Of Valour, but at this Idolatrous rate ?
 105 I thought that Fortitude had bcene a meane
 Twixt feare and rashnesse : not a lust obscene,
 Or appetite of offending, but a skill,
 Or Science of discerning Good and 111.
 And you, Sir, know it well, to whom I write,
 no That with these mixtures we put out her light.
 Her ends are honestie, and publike good !
 And where they want, she is not uvnderstood.
 No more are these of us, let them then goe,
 I have the lyst of mine owne faults to know,
 115 Looke to and cure ; Hee's not a man hath none,
 But like to be, that every day mends one,
 And feeles it; Else he tarries by the Beast.
 Can I discerne how shadowes are decreast,
 Or growne ; by height or lownesse of the Sunne ?
 120 And can I lesse of substance ? When I runne,
 Ride, saile, am coach'd, know I how farre I have gone,
 And my minds motion not ? or have I none ?
 No ! he must feele and know, that will advance.
 Men have beene great, but never good by chance,
 125 Or on the sudden. It were strange that he

94 Drawer,] Drawer *F* 97 know,] know *F* 100 health-
 sake I] health-sake *F* : Healths-sake : *FS* 101 Reare-Suppers]
 Reare Suppers *F* 102 rites I] rites ; *F* : Rites : *F3* 108 of
 W : of a *Ff* 109 you. Sir. *F3* : you Sir -*F* well. *Fy* : well *F*
 no light.] light *F* : Light. *F3* 115 to] too *Ff* 117 Beast.]
 Beast, *F* : Beast: *F3* 120 When] when *F* 122 none ?]
 none : *Ff* 123 that W : that I *Ff* advance. *F3* : advance *F*

Who was this Morning such a one, should be
Sydney e're night I or that did goe to bed
Coriat, should rise the most sufficient head
 Of Christendome ! And neither of these know,
 Were the Rack offer'd them, how they came so ; 130
 Tis by degrees that men arrive at glad
 Profit in ought; each day some little adde,
 In time 'twill be a heape ; This is not true
 Alone in money, but in manners too.
 Yet we must more then move still, or goe on, 135
 We must accomplish ; Tis the last Key-stone
 That makes the Arch. The rest that there were put
 Are nothing till that comes to bind and shut.
 Then stands it a triumphal! marke ! then Men
 Observe the strength, the height, the why, and when, 140
 It was erected ; and still walking uvnder
 Meet some new matter to looke up and wovnder !
 Such Notes are vertuous men ! they live as fast
 As they are high ; are rooted, and will last.
 They need no stilts, nor rise upon their toes, 145
 As if they would belie their stature ; those
 Are Dwarfes of Honour, and have neither weight
 Nor fashion ; if they chance aspire to height,
 Tis like light Canes, that first rise big and brave,
 Shoot forth in smooth and comely spaces ; have 150
 But few and faire Divisions : but being got
 Aloft, grow lesse and streightned, full of knot;
 And last, goe out in nothing : You that see
 Their difference, cannot choose which you will be.
 You know (without my flatt'ring you) too much 155
 For me to be your Indice. Keep you such,
 That I may love your Person (as I doe)
 Without your gift, though I can rate that too,

127 night I] night ? *F* 129 Christendome !] Christendome ? *F*
 know, *F3* : know *F* 130 them, *F3* : them *F* 132 ought;
 ought *F* 137 Arch.] Arch, *F* : Arch ; *F3* 144 rooted, *F3*:
 rooted *F* 146 stature ; *F3*: stature, *F* 148 fashion ;]
 fashion, *F* 151 Divisions *F3*: Devisions *F* 152 streightned
 .. . knot;] streightned; ... knot *F*

- 160 By thanking thus the curtesie to life,
Which you will bury ; but therein, the strife
May grow so great to be example, when
(As their true rule or lesson) either men,
Donnor's or *Donnee's*, to their practise shall
Find you to reckon nothing, me owe all.

XIV.

An Epistle to Master

I O H N S E L D E N .

- I Know to whom I write. Here, I am sure,
Though I am short, I cannot be obscure :
Lesse shall I for the Art or dressing care,
Truth, and the Graces best, when naked are.
5 Your Booke, my *Selden*, I have read, and much
Was trusted, that you thought my judgement such
To aske it: though in most of workes it be
A pennance, where a man may not be free,
Rather then Office, when it doth or may
10 Chance that the Friends affection proves Allay
Unto the Censure. Yours all need doth flie
Of this so vitious Humanitie.
Then which there is not unto Studie'a more
Pernitious enemie ; we see, before

xiii. 160 bury ;] bury, F 162 men,] men F 163 *Donnee's*,]
Donnee's F

xiv First printed in John Seldens '*Titles of Honor*'. 1614, sig. b, and
headed 'BEN: IONSON TO HIS HONORD FRIEND M^r IOHN SELDKN
HEALTH.' (= S) : in *Ri f.* 42 b, 'Ben. Johnson to M^r Selden : on y^e
following Tract.' (quotations from the booh follow) I write. Here]
write : Here 5 : write here F3 (Ptrace of colon in F) 2 am]
be S, R 3-18 not in R 3 Art] art, 5 care,] care ; S
4 Truth . . . naked] Since, naked, best *Truth*, and the Graces 5 are.
5 : are F 5 read,] read ; 5 7 though .. workes] though,
... Workes, 5 8 free, 5 : free. F g Office, when] office.
When S doth] doth, 5 10 Chance] Chance, 5 12 Humanitie.]
Humanitie : 5 13 which] which, 5 Studie'a] Studie'a S :
Studie, a F 14 enemie ; we see.] enemie. Wee see, 5 : enemie,
we see F

A many'of bookes, even good judgements wound 15
 Themselves through favouring what is there not found :
 But I on yours farre otherwise shall doe,
 Not flie the Crime, but the Suspition too :
 Though I confesse (as every Muse hath err'd,
 And mine not least) I have too oft preferr'd 20
 Men past their termes, and prais'd some names too much,
 But 'twas with purpose to have made them such.
 Since, being deceiv'd, I turne a sharper eye
 Upon my selfe, and aske to whom ? and why ?
 And what I write ? .and vexe it many dayes 25
 Before men get a verse : much lesse a Praise ;
 So that my Reader is assur'd, I now
 Meane what I speake : and still will keepe that Vow.
 Stand forth my Object, then, you that have beene
 Ever at home ; yet, have all Countries scene : 30
 And like a Compasse keeping one foot still
 Upon your Center, doe your Circle fill
 Of generall knowledge ; watch'd men, manners too,
 Heard what times past have said, seene what ours doe :
 Which Grace shall I make love to first ? your skill, 35
 Or faith in things ? or is't your wealth and will
 T(o)'instruct and teach ? or your unweary'd paine
 Of Gathering ? Bountie' in pouring out againe ?
 What fables have you vext ! what truth redeem'd !

15 many'of 5 : many of *F* 16 Themselves] Theselues. *S*
 favouring what] fauormg that, 5 17 on yours] to yours, 5 farre
 otherwise] farre from this fault. 5 doe,] doo ; 5 18 too :] too. 5
 21 Men *S*, *R* : Men, *F* termes,] termes ; 5 much : *S* 22
 'twas . . . purpose] 'twas, . . . purpose. 5 such. 5, *R* : such. *F* 23
 Since, 5: since. *R* : Since *F* 24 aske to whom ? and why ?] aske,
 to whome. and why, *S* 25 write ?] write : *S* it] it' *S* (*a misprint*
 for it,) dayes] dayes. 5 26 verse : . . . Praise ;] verse, . . .
 prayse. 5 27 So] So, 5 28 and still] and, still, 5 Vow.]
 vow. *S*, *R* : Vow. *F* 29 then, you] then You 5, *R* : then you *F*
 30 home :] home, 5 seene •] seene, 5 31 And . . . Compasse]
 And. . . Compasse, 5 33 men,] men ; 5 too,] too ; 5 34
 Heard] Heard, 5 said, seene] said ; seen. 5 doe :] do ; 5 35
 Which] w' *R* to *S* : too *F* skill.] skill *S* 36, 37 or]
 Or, 5 36 wealth] wealth, *S* 37 To'instruct] To informe. *S*, *R*
 or] Or, 5 38 Gathering] gath'nng 5 Bountie'in 5 : Bountie
 in *F* 39-52 not in *R*

- 40 Antiquities search'd ! Opinions dis-esteem'd I
 Impostures branded ! and Authorities urg'd 1
 What blots and errors, have you watch'd and purg'd
 Records, and Authors of ! how rectified
 Times, manners, customes ! Innovations spide !
- 45 Sought out the Fountaines, Sources, Creekes, paths, wayes,
 And noted the beginnings and decayes !
 Where is that nominall marke, or reall rite,
 Forme, Art or Ensigne, that hath scap'd your sight ?
 How are Traditions there examined : how
- 50 Conjectures retri'd ! And a Storie now
 And then of times (besides the bare Conduct
 Of what it tells us) weav'd in to instruct!
 I wovnder¹ d at the richnesse, but am lost,
 To see the workmanship so(e)xceed the cost!
- 55 To marke the excellent seas'ning of your Stile !
 And manly elocution, not one while
 With horreur rough, then rioting with wit!
 But to the Subject, still the Colours fit
 In sharpnesse of all Search, wisdom of Choise,
- 60 Newnesse of Sense, Antiquitie of voyce !
 I yeeld, I yeeld, the matter of your praise
 Flowes in upon me, and I cannot raise
 A banke against jt. Nothing but the round
 Large claspe of Nature, such a wit can bound.
- 65 Monarch in Letters ! 'Mongst thy Titles showne
 Of others honours, thus, enjoy thine owne.

40 Antiquities] Antiq'uities 5 41 branded I] branded, 5
 urg'd 1] vrg'd I 5 : urg'd. F 42 errors, . . . watch'd] Errors . . .
 watch'd. 5 43 rectified S : rectified, F 45 wayes,] Wayes I S
 48 Forme, 5 : Forme F Art. 5: Act F sight ? 5 : sight. F
 49 examin'd :] examin'd ! 5 50 Storie] Storie, 5 51 then]
 then, 5 besides] beside 5 52 in] in, 5 instruct 1 5: instruct. F
 53 richnesse, but] richnesse: but, 5 54 so'exceed] so exceed S. R :
 so'xceed F cost I] cost. 5 55-60 not in R 55 seas'ning]
 seas'nings 5 Stile !] stile, 5 56 manly elocution,] masculine
 elocution ; S 57 horreur] horror 5 wit 1] wit; S 58 But]
 But, S fit] fit: 5 60 voyce I] voice. 5 61 yeeld, the]
 yeeld. The 5 62 me.] mee ; 5 63 it. Nothing] it: Nothing. 5
 64 bound. 5 : bound F 65 showne] showne, 5 66 honours,]
 Honors ; S thine S, R : their F owne. 5 : owne, F

I first salute thee so ; and gratulate,
 With that thy Stile, thy keeping of thy State,
 In offering this thy worke to no great Name,
 That would, perhaps, have prais'd, and thank¹d the same, 70
 But nought beyond. He thou hast given it to,
 Thy learned Chamber-fellow, knows to doe
 It true respects. He will not only love,
 Embrace, and cherish ; but he can approve
 And estimate thy Paines ; as having wrought 75
 In the same Mines of knowledge ; and thence brought
 Humanitie enough to be a friend,
 And strength to be a Champion, and defend
 Thy gift 'gainst envie. O how I doe count
 Among my commings in, and see it mount, 80
 The Gaine of your two friendships ! *Hayward* and
Selden ! two Names that so much uvnderstand !
 On whom I could take up, and ne're abuse
 The Credit, what would furnish a tenth Muse !
 But here's no time, nor place, my wealth to tell, 85
 You both are modest. So am I. Farewell.

67 I first] I, first, S so ;] so : S gratulate, S : gratulate F
 68 State, S : State ; F 69 Name,] Name; S 70 would,
 perhaps,] would perhaps 5 71 He] He. S 73 will . . . only]
 will, . . . only, S love,] loue, S : love F 74 but] but. 5 75
 Fames ;] paines : 5 76 same] nch 5 knowledge,] knouledge, 5
 77 enough] inough, 5 78 strength] strength, 5 79 O] O. 5
 80 in, and . . . mount,] in (and . . . mount) S, R Si Game] game
 5, R : Graine F your two friendships ! *Hayward*] two such Friend-
 ships ; *Heyward*, S 82 *Selden*] *Selden*. S Names] Names, 5 uvnder-
 stand ']' vnderstand: 5 83 whom] whome. 5 83-4 up, and
 ... Credit,] vp (and . . . credit) S 84 Muse !] *Muse* S 85 no] nor
 5 : not R tell.] tell; 5 86 modest. So] modest: so 5

xv.

*An Epistle to a friend to perswade
him to the Warres.*

- W**Ake, friend, from forth thy Lethargic : the Drum
Beates brave, and loude in *Europe*, and bids come
All that dare rowse : or are not loth to quit
Their vitious ease, and be o'rewhelm'd with it.
- 5 It is a call to keepe the spirits alive
That gaspe for action, and would yet revive
Mans buried honour, in his sleepe life :
Quickning dead Nature, to her noblest strife.
All other Acts of Worldlings, are but toyle
- 10 In dreames, begun in hope, and end in spoile.
Looke on th ambitious man, and see him nurse
His unjust hopes, with praises begg'd, or (worse)
Bought Flatteries, the issue of his purse,
Till he become both their, and his owne curse !
- 15 Looke on the false, and cunning man, that loves
No person, nor is lov'd : what wayes he proves
To gaine upon his belly ; and at last
Crush'd in the snakie brakes, that he had past!
See the grave, sower, and supercilious Sir
- 20 In outward face, but inward, light as Furre,
Or Feathers : lay his fortune out to show,
Till envie wound, or maime it at a blow !
See him, that's call'd, and thought the happiest man,
Honour'd at once, and envi'd (if it can
- 25 Be honour is so mixt) by such as would,
For all their spight, be like him if they could :

xv. 7n, N ff. 31-4, headed 'To a Freind¹. i friend,] friend F:
freind. A^r from . . . Lethargic .] and hndc thy self ; awake, N 6
action,] action ; N 7 honour,] linnor N 9 but] meere N n
nurbe .V, F3 : nurse, F 18 had] hath A⁷ 19 See N, F3:
See, F 20 inward,] inward A 21 show, F3 : show F 23
him,] him N, F3 4 Honour'd] honor'd, N 25 honour]
honor N such] such, A^r would,] would F 26 spight. F3:
spight F could :] could. A

No part or corner man can looke upon,
 But there are objects, bid him to be gone
 As farre as he can flie, or follow day,
 Rather then here so bogg'd in vices stay. 30
 The whole world here leaven¹d with madnesse swells ;
 And being a thing, blowne out of nought, rebels
 Against his Maker ; high alone with weeds,
 And impious ranknesse of all Sects and seeds :
 Not to be checkt, or frighted now with fate, 35
 But more licentious made, and desperate !
 Our Delicacies are growne capitall,
 And even our sports are dangers ! what we call
 Friendship is now mask'd Hatred ! Justice fled,
 And shamefastnesse together ! All lawes dead, 40
 That kept man living ! Pleasures only sought 1
 Honour and honestie, as poore things thought
 As they are made ! Pride, and stiffe Clownage mixt
 To make up Greatnesse ! and mans whole good fix'd
 In bravery, or gluttony, or coyne, 45
 All which he makes the servants of the Groine,
 Thither it flowes. How much did *Stallion* spend
 To have his Court-bred-fillie there commend
 His Lace and Starch ; And fall upon her back
 In admiration, stretch'd upon the rack 5°
 Of lust, to his rich Suit and Title, Lord ?
 I, that's a Charme and halfe ! She must afford
 That all respect; She must lie downe : Nay more,
 'Tis there civilitie to be a whore;

28 objects,] objects N gone] gone, N 29 flie] flee N day,]
 Day, F : day ; N 30 here] here, N stay. N : stay F 31
 here] here, N swells J swells ' F 34 Sects] sects, N
 38-9 dangers ! . . . Hatred I] dangers ; . . . hatred ; N 40 shame-
 fastnesse] shamfac'dnesse N dead,] deade, N: dead F 41 sought 1}
 sought; N 42 Honour] honor. N thought] thought, N 43
 made I] made ; N 44 Greatnesse 1] Greatnesse, N 45 coyne,]
 coyne ; N 47 flowes. How N : flowes. how F 48 -fillie
 there] ffully, there, N 49 Lace] lace, N 50 admiration.]
 admiration : N 51 Suit] suits, N 52 Charme . . .
 halfe I] charme, . . . halfe ; N 53 That] that, N more. N:
 more F

- 55 Hee's one of blood, and fashion ! and with these
 The bravery makes, she can no honour leese :
 To do't with Cloth, or Stuffles, lusts name might merit;
 With Velvet, Plush, and Tissues, it is spirit.
 O, these so ignorant Monsters ! light, as proud,
 60 Who can behold their Manners, and not clowd-
 Like upon them lighten ? If nature could
 Not make a verse ; Anger ; or laughter would,
 To see 'hem aye discoursing with their Glasse,
 How they may make some one that day an Asse ;
 65 Planting their Purles, and Curies spread forth like Net,
 And every Dressing for a Pitfall set
 To catch the flesh in, and to pound a Prick.
 Be at their Visits, see 'hem squemish, sick,
 Ready to cast, at one, whose band sits ill,
 7° And then, leape mad on a neat Pickardill,
 As if a Brize were gotten i' their tayle ;
 And firke, and jerke, and for the Coach-man raile,
 And jealous each of other, yet thinke long
 To be abroad chanting some baudie song,
 75 And laugh, and measure thighes, then squeake, spring, itch,
 Doe all the tricks of a saut Lady Bitch ;
 For t'other pound of sweet-meats, he shall feele
 That payes, or what he will: The Dame is steele.
 For these with her young Companie shee'll enter,
 80 Where *Pities*, or *Wright*, or *Model* would not venter,
 And comes by these Degrees, the Stile t(o)'inherit
 Of woman of fashion, and a Lady of spirit:
 Nor is the title question'd with our proud,
 Great, brave, and fashion'd folke, these are allow'd

55 fashion ! . . . these] fashion ; . . . these, N 56 leese :] leese F :
 leese. N 57 merit; N : merit F 59 Monsters 1 . . . proud,]
 Monsters ;. . . proude : N 62 Anger ;] anger. N would,] would
 F : would. N 63 'hem] 'hem. N 64 Asse :] Asse F : Asse, N
 66 set] sett, N 67 Prick.] Prick F : pnck N 68 sick. N :
 sick F 69 ill,] ill; N 70 Pickardill,] Pickardill; F :
 pickardill. N 71 tayle :] tayle. N 72 raile,]
 rayle : N 74 abroad . . . song,] abroad, . . . song. N 78 will:
 N : will. F steele. N : steele, F

Adulteries, now, are not so hid, or strange, 85
 They're growne Commoditie upon Exchange ;
 He that will follow but anothers wife,
 Is lov'd, though he let out his owne for life :
 The Husband now's call'd churlish, or a poore
 Nature, that will not let his Wife be a whore ; 90
 Or use all arts, or haunt all Companies
 That may corrupt her, even in his eyes.
 The brother trades a sister ; and the friend
 Lives to the Lord, but to the Ladies end.
 Lesse must not be thought on then Mistresse : or, 95
 If it be thought, kild like her Embrions ; for,
 Whom no great Mistresse hath as yet infam'd,
 A fellow of course Letcherie, is nam'd,
 The Servant of the Serving-woman, in scorne,
 Ne're came to taste the plenteous Mariagc-horne. i00
 Thus they doe talke. And are these objects fit
 For man to spend his money on ? his wit ?
 His time ? health ? soule ? will he for these goe throw
 Those thousands on his back, shall after blow
 His body to the Counters, or the Fleete ? i05
 Is it for these that Fine-man meets the street
 Coach'd, or on foot-cloth, thrice chang'd every day,
 To teach each suit he has, the ready way
 From *Hide-Parke* to the Stage, where at the last
 His deare and borrow'd Bravery he must cast ? i10
 When not his Combes, his Curling-irons, his Glasse,
 Sweet bags, sweet Powders, nor sweet words will passe
 For lesse Securitie ? O for these
 Is it that man pulls on himselfe Disease ?

85 Adulteries, now,] Adulteries now, F : Adul'tries now N 86
 Commoditie] commoditie, A 87 He] He, A 88 life :] life. N
 94 to] for N 95 or, N : or F 96 thought, N : thought F
 97 Mistresse] Mistresse, F infam'd,] infam'd F, N 98 nam'd,]
 name'd N 99 of] wth N -woman,] -woman F : women N
 105 Counters] compters N 106 Fine-man G : fine man F, N
 108 suit N : suit, F has,] has F, N 109 last] last, N no
 deare] deare, N 113 O] o flreind, N : O heavens I G these]
 theis.JV 114 it]it.JV

- 115 Surfet ? and Quarrel ? drinkes the tother health ?
 Or by Damnation voids it ? or by stealth ?
 What furie of late is crept into our Feasts ?
 What honour given to the drunkennest Guests ?
 What reputation to beare one Glasse more ?
- 120 When oft the Bearer, is borne out of dore ?
 This hath our ill-us'd freedome, and soft peace
 Brought on us, and will every houre increase.
 Our vices doe not tarry in a place,
 But being in Motion still (or rather in race)
- 125 Tilt one upon another, and now beare
 This way, now that, as if their number were
 More then themselves, or then our lives could take,
 But both fell prest vnder the load they make.
 I'le bid thee looke no more, but flee, flee friend,
- 130 This *Pr&cipice*, and Rocks that have no end,
 Or side, but threatens Ruine. The whole Day
 Is not enough now, but the Nights to play:
 And whilst our states, strength, body, and mind we waste,
 Goe make our selves the Usurers at a cast.
- ^x35 He that no more for Age, Cramps, Palsies, can
 Now use the bones, we see doth hire a man
 To take the box up for him ; and pursues
 The Dice with glassen eyes, to the glad viewes
 Of what he throwes : Like letchers growne content
- 140 To be beholders, when their powers are spent.
 Can we not leave this worme ? or will we not ?
 Is that the truer excuse ? or have we got
 In this, and like, an itch of Vanitie,
 That scratching now's our best Felicitie ?
- 145 Well, let it goe. Yet this is better, then
 To lose the formes, and dignities of men,

118 drunkennest] drunken'st *N* 122 increase.] increase *F*
 encrease. *N* 123 vices *N* : vices, *F* 125 Tilt] till *N*
 126 now] and *N* 127 take,] take : *N* 128 prest. . . load]
 prest, . . . lode, *N* 132 to] we AT 133 waste,] waste ; *F*
 134 Usurers] vsurers, 136 bones] bales *N* 138 viewes *N* :
 viewers *F* 146 lose] loose A men,] men *F* : Men. *N*

To flatter my good Lord, and cry his Bowie
 Runs sweetly, as it had his Lordships Soule ;
 Although, perhaps it has, what's that to me,
 That may stand by, and hold my peace ? will he, 150
 When I am hoarse, with praising his each cast,
 Give me but that againe, that I must wast
 In Sugar Candide, or in butter'd beere,
 For the recovery of my voyce ? No, there
 Pardon his Lordship. Flattry's growne so cheape 155
 With him, for he is follow'd with that heape
 That watch, and catch, at what they may applaud,
 As a poore single flatterer, without Baud,
 Is nothing, such scarce meat and drinke he'll give,
 But he that's both, and slave to boote, shall live, 160
 And be belov'd, while the Whores last. O times,
 Friend, flie from hence ; and let these kindled rimes
 Light thee from hell on earth : where flatterers, spies,
 Informers, Masters both of Arts and lies ;
 Lewd slavnderers, soft whisperers that let blood 165
 The life, and fame-vayncs (yet not uvnderstood
 Of the poorc sufferers) where the envious, proud,
 Ambitious, factious, superstitious, lowd
 Boasters, and perjur'd, with the infinite more
 Pra'vancators swarme. Of which the store, 170
 (Because th'art- every where amongst Man-kind
 Spread through the World) is easier farre to find,
 Then once to number, or bring forth to hand,
 Though thou wert Muster-master of the Land.
 Goe, quit 'hem all. And take along with thee, 175
 Thy true friends wishes, *Colby*, which shall be,
 That thine be just, and honest; that thy Deeds

M7 cry] try N 148 Soule ;] Soule, F : soule. N 150 he,]
 he F 152 that I] which I N 153 Sugar Candide] sugar-
 candi'd N 155 Flattry's] flatfry is N 156 follow'd N :
 followed F 157 applaud,] applaud F : applaud : N 158
 Baud, N : Baud F 160 boote N : both F 162 Friend, 1
 Friend F : freind, N nmes N : rimes : F 164 Arts] Arts, N
 K5 slavnderers] slavnders N 175 Goe,] Goe F 176 *Colby*,... be,]
 which shall ever be N *Colby*,] *Colby* F 177 honest; N: honest, F

Not wound thy conscience, when thy body bleeds ;
 That thou dost all things more for truth, then glory,
 180 And never but for doing wrong be sory ;
 That by commanding first thy selfe, thou mak'st
 Thy person fit for any charge thou tak'st;
 That fortune never make thee to complaine,
 But what she gives, thou dar'st give her againe ;
 185 That whatsoever face thy fate puts on,
 Thou shrinke or start not, but be alwayes one;
 That thou thinke nothing great, but what is good,
 And from that thought strive to be uvnderstood.
 So, 'live or dead, thou wilt preserve a fame
 190 Still pretious, with the odour of thy name.
 And last, blaspheme not, we did never heare
 Man thought the valianter, 'cause he durst sweare,
 No more, then we should thinke a Lord had had
 More honour in him, 'cause we'(h)ave knowne him mad :
 195 These take, and now goe seeke thy peace in Warre,
 Who falls for love of God, shall rise a Starre.

XVI.

An "Epitaph on Master
PHILIP GRAY.

Reader, stay,
 And if I had no more to say,
 But here doth lie, till the last Day,
 All that is left of PHILIP GRAY,
 5 It might thy patience richly pay :
 For, if such men as he could die,
 What suretie of life have thou, and I ?

xv. 180 And never... wrong] And. neuer ... wrong. N 182 fit] fitt, N
 tak'st; N : tak'st F 186 not. ... one ;] not; ... one. F 190
 odour] odor N 192 sweare.] sweare F : sweare } N 194
 we'have] we have N 195-6 Inset in N 195 Warre,] warre ; N
 xvi. i Reader,] Reader F 3 lie.] lie F 4 GRAY,] GRAY. F
 7 I ?] I- F

XVII.

Epistle

To a Friend.

They are not, Sir, worst Owers, that doe pay
 Debts when they can : good men may breake their day,
 And yet the noble Nature never grudge ;
 'Tis then a crime, when the Usurer is Judge. 5
 And he is not in friendship.. Nothing there
 Is done for gaine : If t be, 'tis not sincere.
 Nor should I at this time protested be,
 But that some greater names have broke with me,
 And their words too ; where I but breake my Band.
 I adde that (but) because I uvnderstand 10
 That as the lesser breach : for he that takes
 Simply my Band, his trust in me forsakes,
 And lookes unto the forfeit. If you be
 Now so much friend, as you would trust in me,
 Venter a longer time, and willingly : 15
 All is not barren land, doth fallow lie.
 Some grounds are made the richer, for the Rest;
 And I will bring a Crop, if not the best.

XVIII.

An Eegie.

Can Beautie that did prompt me first to write,
 Now threaten, with those meanes she did invite ?
 Did her perfections call me on to gaze,
 Then like, then love ; and now would they amaze ?
 Or was she gracious a-farre off ? but neere 5
 A terror ? or is all this but my feare ?

xvii. 2 day,] day; F 3 grudge ;] grudge, F 4 Judge.]
 Judge. F3 6 be, F3 : be F 9 Band.] Band, F
 xviii. 2 invite ?] invite : F 3 gaze,] gaze I F 4 amaze ?]
 amaze I F

- That as the water makes things, put in't streight,
 Crooked appeare ; so that doth my conceipt:
 I can helpe that with boldnesse ; And Love sware,
 10 And Fortune once, t(o)'assist the spirits that dare.
 But which shall lead me on ? both these are blind :
 Such Guides men use not, who their way would find,
 Except the way be errour to those ends :
 And then the best are, still, the blindest friends !
 15 Oh how a Lover may mistake ! to thinke,
 Or Love, or Fortune blind, when they but winke
 To see men feare : or else for truth, and State,
 Because they would free Justice imitate,
 Vaile their owne eyes, and would impartially
 20 Be brought by us to meet our Destinie.
 If it be thus ; Come Love, and Fortune goe,
 Tie lead you on ; or if my fate will so,
 That I must send one first, my Choyce assigns,
 Love to my heart, and Fortune to my lines.

XIX.

An Elegie.

- B**Y those bright Eyes, at whose immortall fires
 Love lights his torches to inflame desires ;
 By that faire Stand, your forehead, whence he bends
 His double Bow, and round his Arrowes sends ;
 5 By that tall Grove, your haire ; whose globy rings
 He flying curies, and crispeth, with his wings ;
 By those pure bathes your either cheeke discloses,
 Where he doth steepe himselfe in Milke and Roses ;
 And lastly by your lips, the bankc of kisses,
 20 Where men at once may plant, and gather blisses :
 Tell me (my lov'd Friend) doe you love, or no,
 So well as I may tell in verse, 'tis so ?

xviii. 7 in't] in't, F 9 Love] love F (so 16, 21) 10 Fortune]
 fortune F (so 16, 21, 24) n blind : Fj : blind F 12 find,]
 find. F 14 are,] are -F
 xix. 6 wings ;] wings. F n love, or no,] love or no ? F

You blush, but doe not: friends are either none,
 (Though they may number bodyes) or but one.
 Tie therefore aske no more, but bid you love ; 15
 And so that either may example prove
 Unto the other ; and live patternes, how
 Others, in time may love, as we doe now.
 Slip no occasion ; As time stands not still,
 I know no beautie, nor no youth that will. 20
 To use the present, then, is not abuse,
 You have a Husband is the just excuse
 Of all that can be done him ; Such a one
 As would make shift, to make himscle alone,
 That which we can, who both in you, his Wife, 5
 His Issue, and all Circumstance of life,
 As in his place, because he would not vane,
 Is constant to be extraordinarie.

XX.

A Satyricall Shrub.

A Womans friendship ! God whom I trust in,
 Forgive me this one foolish deadly sin,
 Amongst my many other, that I may
 No more, I am sorry for so fond cause, say,
 At fifty yeares, almost, to value it, 5
 That ne're was knownc to last above a fit!
 Or have the least of Good, but hat it must
 Put on for fashion, and take up on trust:
 Knew I all this afore ? had I pcrceiv'd,
 That theii whole life was wickednesse, though weav'd xo
 Of many Colours ; outward, fresh from spots,
 But their whole inside full of ends, and knots ?

x i. 26 life, F3 : life F

xx LI. 17-24 a separate poem in Ash 2 f. 155 b 2 sin,] sin ; F
 4 say,] say F 6 fit! j : fit ? F n outward, fresh] out-
 ward fresh, F

Knew I, that all their Dialogues, and discourse,
 Were such as I will now relate, or worse ?
 Here, something is wanting.

■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ *
 ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ * ■ *

- 15 Knew I this Woman ? yes ; And you doe see,
 How penitent I am, or I should be!
 Doe not you aske to know her, she is worse
 Then all Ingredients made into one curse,
 And that pour'd out upon Man-kind can be !
 20 Thinke but the Sin of all her sex, 'tis she !
 I could forgive her being proud ! a whore !
 Perjur'd ! and painted ! if she were no more—,
 But she is such, as she might, yet, forestall
 The Divell; and be the damning of us all.

XXI.

A little Shrub growing by.

- A**Ske not to know this Man. If fame should speake
 His name in any mettall, it would breake.
 Two letters were enough the plague to teare
 Out of his Grave, and poyson every eare.
 5 A parcell of Court-durt, a heape, and masse
 Of all vice hurld together, there he was,
 Proud, false, and trecherous, vindictive, all
 That thought can adde, unthankful!, the lay-stall
 Of putrid Sesh alive ! of blood, the sinke !
 10 And so I leave to stirre him, lest he stinke.

xx. 14 Were] were *F* worse ?] worse. *F* 16 bel] be ? *F*
 17 Doe ... her,] Aske not to knowe this woman ; *Ash* 18 one]
a Ash 19 that] what *Ask* 20 Sin] 111 *Ash* 23 as she
 might] that shee may *Ash* yet,] yet -*F*

XXII.

An Eegie.

THough Beautie be the Marke of praise,
 And yours of whom I sing be such
 As not the World can praise too much,
 Yet is't your vertue now I raise.

A vertue, like Allay, so gone 5
 Throughout your forme ; as though that move,
 And draw, and conquer all mens love,
 This subjects you to love of one.

Wherein you triumph yet: because 10
 Tis of your selfe, and that you use
 The noblest freedome, not to chuse
 Against or Faith, or honours lawes.

But who should lesse expect from you,
 In whom alone Love lives agen ?
 By whom he is restor'd to men : 15
 And kept, and bred, and brought up true.

His falling Temples you have rear'd,
 The withered Garlands tane away ;
 His Altars kept from the Decay,
 That envie wish'd, and Nature fear'd. 20

And on them burne so chaste a flame,
 With so much Loyalties expence,
 As Love, t(o)'aquit such excellence,
 Is gone himselfe into your Name.

And you are he : the Dietie 25
 To whom all Lovers are design'd,
 That would their better objects find :
 Among which faithful troope am I.

xxii. 14 Love] love *F* 16 true.] true ? *F* 17 rear'd,]
 rear'd *F* 21 And . . . them]An . . . them, *F* originally 22 ex-
 pence,] expence *F* 23 Love,] Love *F* 25 Dietie] Deity *F* \$
 26 design'd,] design'd ; *F*

- Who as an offering at your shrine,
 30 Have sung this Hymne, and here intreat
 One sparke of your Diviner heat
 To light upon a Love of mine.
 Which if it kindle not, but scant
 Appeare, and that to shortest view,
 35 Yet give me leave t(o)'adore in you
 What I, in her, am griev'd to want.

XXIII.

An Ode. To himselfe.

- W**Here do'st thou carelesse lie,
 Buried in ease and sloth ?
 Knowledge, that sleeps, doth die ;
 And this Securitie,
 5 It is the common Moath,
 That eats on wits, and Arts, and (oft) destroyes them both.
 Are all *th'Aonian* springs
 Dri'd up ? lyes *Thespia* wast ?
 Doth *Clarius* Harp want strings,
 10 That not a Nymph now sings ?
 Or droop they as disgrac't,
 To see their Seats and Bowers by chattring Pies defac't ?
 If hence thy silence be,
 As 'tis too just a cause ;
 15 Let this thought quicken thee,
 Minds that are great and free,
 Should not on fortune pause,
 'Tis crowne enough to vertue still, her owne applause.

xxii. 29 off'ring] offering W : off-spring F 36 griev'd] grievd
 F originally

xxiii InH 4f. 236. 'Ode', Eg if. 19. 'Ode'¹, RP sff.j.b.&b. i
 lie,] lie F 3 die] ly Eg 4 Securitie] obscuritie Eg 5, 6
 Gnostic pointing in H, "It. . . " that... 6 on] or Eg oft H, Eg.
 RP : quite W : so G : that A. W. Ward : soon T. Bayne destroyes
 them] destroyeth Eg 10 sings ? H : sings 1 F 12 defac't]
 displac't Eg 13 thy silence] thy scilence Eg: they silent RP
 14 As . . . cause ;] (as . . . cause) H. Eg, RP 16-18 Gnostic pointing
 in H., mynds. . . should . . . , 'Tis . . . 16 great] quick Eg

What though the greedie Frie
 Be taken with false Baytes 20
 Of worded Balladrie,
 And thinke it Poesie ?
 They die with their conceits,
 And only pitious scorne, upon their folly waites.

Then take in hand thy Lyre, 25
 Strike in thy proper straine,
 With *Japhets* lyne, aspire
 Sols Chariot for new fire,
 To give the world againe :
 Who aided him, will thee, the issue of *Joves* braine. 30

And since our Daintie age,
 Cannot indure reproofe,
 Make not thy selfe a Page,
 To that strumpet the Stage,
 But sing high and aloofe, 35
 Safe from the wolves black jaw, and the dull Asses hoofe.

XXIV.

The mind of the Frontispice to a Booke.

FROM Death, and darke oblivion, neere the same,
 The Mistresse of Mans life, grave Historic,
 Raising the World to good or evill fame,
 Doth vindicate it to eternitie.

xxm 23 die] dnncke RP 26 Strike] stryke him RP 27 Jap he is]
 lapets H: lapettf Eg, RP 29 give] guide Eg 30 him] them
 Eg, RP will... the] w* y« Eg 32 reproofe,] reproofe. F
 36 dull oifi. Eg After 36 Eg adds Virtus vera nobilita* | fims¹
 xxiv. First printed opposite the engraved frontispiece in Sir Walter
 Raleigh's 'The History of the World'. 1614, headed 'The Afinde oj the
 Front' (= R) i neere] (neere R : ne're F same.] same) R 2
 Historic,] Historic, R : Historic F 3 Raising Fj : Raising R :
 Razing F or] or R : and F tame, R. fame F 4 eternitie]
 Eternitie R

- 5 Wise Providence would so ; that nor the good
 Might be defrauded, nor the great secur'd,
 But both might know their wayes were understood,
 When Vice alike in time with vertue dur'd.
 Which makes that (lighted by the beamie hand
 10 Of Truth that searcheth the most (hidden) Springs,
 And guided by Experience, whose strait wand
 Doth mete, whose lyne doth sound the depth of things :)
 Shee chearfully supporteth what she reares,
 Assisted by no strengths, but are her owne,
 15 Some note of which each varied Pillar beares,
 By which as proper titles, she is knowne
 Times witnesse, herald of Antiquitie,
 The light of Truth, and life of Memorie.

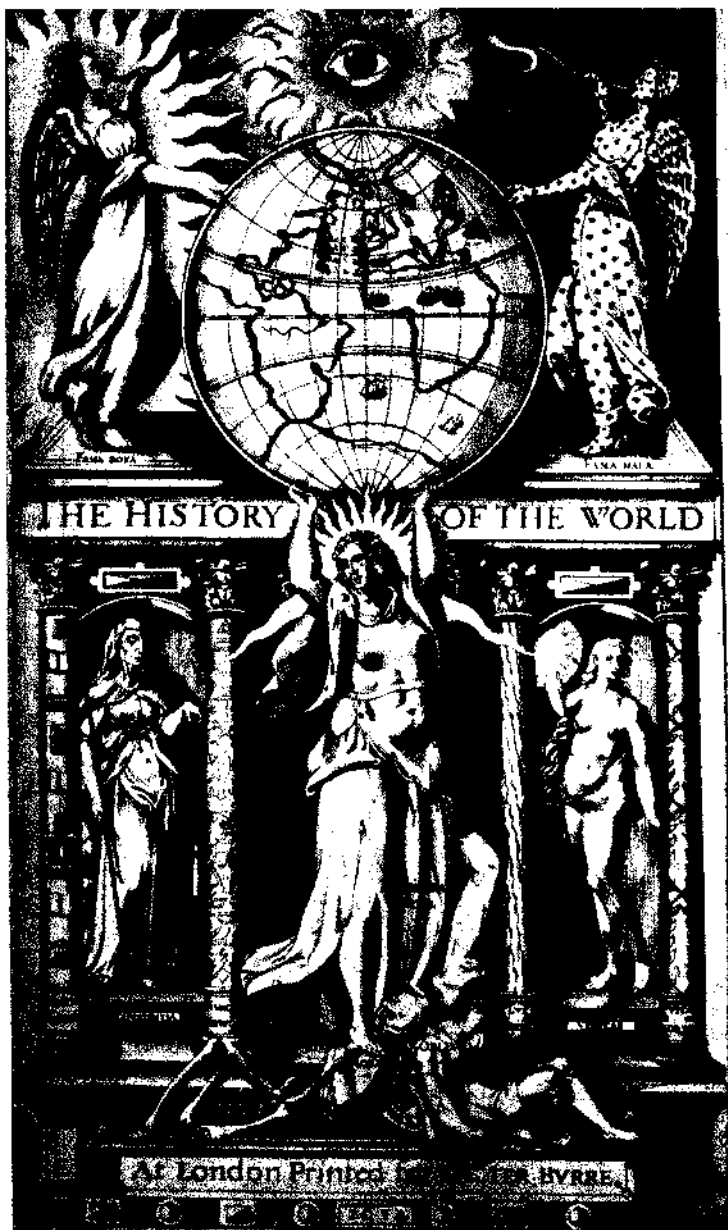
XXV.

*An Ode to I A M E s Earle of Desmond,
 writ in Queene E L I Z A B E T H S time[^]
 since lost, and recovered.*

- W**Here art thou, *Genius* ? I should use
 Thy present Aide : Arise Invention,
 Wake, and put on the wings of *Pindar* s Muse,
 To towre with my intention
 5 High, as his mind, that doth advance
 Her upright head, above the reach of Chance,
 Or the times envie :
Cynthius, I applie

xxiv. 5 Wise] *High* R 7 were] *are* R 8 When . . . dur'd] *And the reward, and punishment assur'd* R dur'd.] *Period faint or missing in F*
 9 Which makes that (lighted] *This makes, that lighted* R 10 Truth that] *Truth, which* R hidden] *hidden* R Springs,] *Springs* F:
 springs, R 11 Experience] *Experience* R: experience F 12 mete] *mete* R: meet F things:] *F: things* : R 16 knowne] *knowne*, R

xxv. *Holograph in MS 184 of Christ Church, Oxford, fol. 40. No heading in MS.* i. Where . . . *Genius* ?] *Genius, where art thou ?*
 MS thou.] *thou* F 2 Arise] *Spirit*, MS 5 High.] *high* MS
 6 head, . . . Chance,] *head . . . Chance* MS 8 *Cynthius,*] *Pythius* ; MS



The engraved title-page of Raleigh's 'History of the World', 1614

My bolder numbers to thy golden *Lyre* :
 O, then inspire 10
 Thy Priest in this strange rapture ; heat my braine
 With *Delphick* fire :
 That I may sing my thoughts, in some unvulgar straine,
 Rich beame of honour, shed your light
 On these darke rymes ; that my affection 15
 May shine (through every chincke) to every sight
 Graced by your Reflection !
 Then shall my Verses, like strong Charmes,
 Breake the knit Circle of her Stonie Armes,
 That hold(s) your spirit: 20
 And keepes your merit
 Lock't in her cold embraces, from the view
 Of eyes more true,
 Who would with judgement search, searching conclude
 (As prov'd in you) 25
 True noblesse. Palme growes straight, though handled ne're
 so rude.
 Nor thinke your selfe unfortunate,
 If subject to the jealous errors
 Of politique pretext, that wryes a State,
 Sinke not beneath these terrors : 30
 But whisper ; O glad Innocence,
 Where only a mans birth is his offence,
 Or the dis-favour
 Of such as savour

9 bolder] flowing MS 10 then] thou MS n Priest]
 Preist MS 12 fire :] fier MS 14 honour] honor MS
 15 my] o' MS 16 (through . . . chincke)] through . . . Chinke, MS
 sight corr. F : fight F originally 17 Graced] graced F Reflec-
 tion !] Reflection. MS 18" my] o' MS Verses, like . . . Charmes,]
 verses (like . . . Charmes) MS Charmes,] Charmes F 19 Armes,]
 Armes MS 20 holds W : curbes MS spirit:] spirit, MS 24
 searching] searching. MS conclude MS : conclude, F 25 prov'd]
 prou'd MS 26 True noblesse.] Trew Noblisse MS rude.] Rude.
 MS: rude ? F 27 unfortunate,] vnfortunate MS 29 pre-
 text,] pretext MS wryes] swayes MS State,] state; MS 31
 Innocence,] Innocence MS, F 32 Where] When MS offence,]
 offence ; MS 33 dis-favour] disfauor MS : dis-favour. F 34
 such] such, MS savour] saur MS

GENIUS, where dost thou? I stand 'till
 thy perfect eye, Spirit, Inspiration
 Wake; I put on the tunic of Pindar's Muse
 to tears 'till my Inspiration
 high as his mood, what doth advance
 her bright beam above the reach of Honour
 or the times Envy
 Pythius; I sing
 my flowing numbers to the golden Lyre;
 thy Priest in the fringe of golden Bays
 O then I suffer
 to Delphic fire
 to sing for my thought in thy Delphic fragrance.

Rich Dams of Love sed ye to Light
 On those dark'd Rivers: that's Affection
 may flow through every Shade to every Light
 guided by ye's Inspiration.
 Then that's ye's (like young Charms)
 Breaks the dark Gills of the young Dams
 that catch ye's spirit.
 A deep of ye's spirit
 built in her red Embark, from the blue
 of eyes more true.
 Ode and the Judgment of ye's, soaring, reaching
 felt around in you.
 These Noblest of Dams ground ye's, thought and love
 (Rude)

Ode to the Earl of Desmond.

Lines 1-23 from the autograph MS. at Christ Church, Oxford.

Nothing, but practise upon honours thrall. 35
 O vertues fall,
 When her dead essence (like the Anatomic
 In Surgeons hall)
 Is but a Statists theame, to read Phlcbotomie.
 Let *Brontes*, and black *Sterofes*, 40
 Sweat at the forge, their hammers beating ;
Pyracmon's houre will come to give them ease,
 Though but while mcttal's heating :
 And, after all the *ALLnean* Ire,
 Gold, that is perfect, will out-live the fire. 45
 For fury wasteth,
 As patience lasteth.
 No Armour to the mind ! he is shot-free
 From injurie,
 That is not hurt; not he, that is not hit; 50
 So fooles, we see,
 Oft scape an Imputation, more through luck, then wit.
 But to your sclfe, most loyal Lord,
 (Whose heart in that bright Sphere flames
 clearest,
 Though many Gems be in your bosome stor'd, 55
 Unknowne which is the Dearest)
 If I auspiciously divine,
 (As my hope tells) that our faire *Phcrbe's* shine,
 Shall light those places
 With lustrous Graces, 60

35 Nothing,] nothing MS honours thrall] *Honors* thrall; MS
 37 her dead] thy white MS 38 In] in F Surgeons] Surgeans MS
 40 black *Steropes*.] Blacke *Steropes* MS 42 *Pyracmon's* . . . ease,]
 An hower will come they must affect they¹ Ease MS 44 And, . . .
 Ire,] And (after all they' *JEmttan* Ire) MS 45 Gold_____perfect,]
 Gold . . . pfect MS 47 lasteth] lasieth ; MS 48 Armour . . .
 mind] Armor . . . Mind, MS shot-free] shot free F . shott-frec A5
 50 he,] he MS hit;] hit MS 51 fooles,] fuoles F, MS see,] see MS
 52 an Imputation,] theyr Imputation MS 53 selfe,] selfe A5, F
 54 (Whose] Whose MS Sphere] Spha-er MS clearest, MS : clearest. F
 55 Though] (though A5 stor'd.] stor] MS 56 Dearest)]
 dearest) A5 : Dearest.) F 57 divine] diume MS : devme F
 58 iaire *Phcbe's*] drad *Cynthia's* MS shine.] shine F 59 places
 MS: places. F

Where darknesse with her gloomie-sceptred hand,
 Doth now command ;
 O then (my best-best lov'd) let me importune,
 That you will stand
 65 As farre from all revolt, as you are now from Fortune.

XXVI.

An Ode.

High-spirited friend,
 I send nor Balmes, nor Cor'sives to your wound,
 Your fate hath found
 A gentler, and more agile hand, to tend
 5 The Cure of that, which is but corporall,
 And doubtfull Dayes (which were nam'd *Criticall*,)
 Have made their fairest flight,
 And now are out of sight.
 Yet doth some wholsome Physick for the mind,
 10 Wrapt in this paper lie,
 Which in the taking if you mis-apply,
 You are unkind.

Your covetous hand,
 Happy in that faire honour it hath gain'd,
 15 Must now be rayn'd.
 True valour doth her owne renowne command
 In one full Action ; nor have you now more
 To doe, then be a husband of that store.
 Thinke but how deare you bought
 2° This same which you have caught,

xxv. 61 gloomie-sceptred hand,] gloomy-sceptred hand MS : glomie
 Sceptred hand, F 62 command; M5: command. F 63 my]
 of MS best-best lov'd] best-best-lou'd MS importune,] impor-
 tune MS 64 stand MS : stand, F After 65 B. Jo. | Nee te
 qussiueris extra. MS
 xxvi. i High-spirited] High spirited F 3 found] found, F
 19 bought] bought, F

Such thoughts will make you more in love with truth.
 Tis wisdom, and that high,
 For men to use their fortune reverently,
 Even in youth.

XXVII.

An Ode.

H*Elen*, did *Homer* never see
Thy beauties, yet could write of thee ?
Did *Sappho* on her seven-tongu'd Lute,
So speake (as yet it is not mute)
Of *Phao(ri)s* forme ? or doth the Boy 5
In whom *Anacreon* once did joy,
Lie drawne to life, in his soft Verse,
As he whom *Maro* did rehearse ?
Was *Lesbia* sung by learn'd *Catullus* ?
Or *Delia's* Graces, by *Tibullus* ? 10
Doth *Cynthia*, in *Propertius* song
Shine more, then she, the Stars among ?
Is *Horace* his each love so high
Rap't from the Earth, as not to die ?
With bright *Lycoris*, *Callus* choice, 15
Whose fame hath an eternall voice ?
Or hath *Corynna*, by the name
Her *Ovid* gave her, dimn'd the fame
Of *Ccesars* Daughter, and the line
Which all the world then styl'd divine ? 20
Hath *Petrarch* since his *Laura* rais'd
Equall with her ? or *Ronsart* prais'd
His new *Cassandra*, 'bove the old ;
Which all the Fate of *Troy* foretold ?
Hath our great *Sydney*, *Stella* set, 25
Where never Star shone brighter yet ?

Or *Constables* Ambrosiack Muse
 Made *Dian*, not his notes refuse ?
 Have all these done (and yet I misse
 30 The Swan [that] so relish¹d *Pancharis*]
 And shall not I my *Celia* bring,
 Where men may see whom I doe sing ?
 Though I, in working of my song,
 Come short of all this learned throng,
 35 Yet sure my tunes will be the best,
 So much my Subject drownes the rest.

XXVIII.

*A Sonnet,**To the noble Lady the Lady*

MARY WORTH.

I That have beene a lover, and could shew it,
 Though not in these, in rithmes not wholly dumbe,
 Since I exscribe your Sonnets, am become
 A better lover, and much better Poet.
 5 Nor is my Muse, or I asham'd to owe it
 To those true numerous Graces ; whereof some,
 But charme the Senses, others over-come
 Both braines and hearts ; and mine now best doe know it :
 For in your verse all *Cupids* Armorie,
 10 His flames, his shafts, his Quiver, and his Bow,
 His very eyes are yours to overthrow.
 But then his Mothers sweets you so apply,
 Her joyes, her smiles, her loves, as readers take
 For *Venus Ceston*, every line you make.

xxvii. 27 Muse] Muse, F 30 that om. W 32 sing ?] sing, F
 33 song.] song F
 xxviii. *Italic type in F* WORTH] Wroth W 2 rithmes] rhimes W
 5 it] itFy. 11. F

XXIX.

A Fit of Rime against Rime.

Rime, the rack of finest wits,
That expresseth but by fits,
 True Concept,
Spoyling Senses of their Treasure,
Cosening Judgement with a measure, 5
 But false weight.
Wresting words, from their true calling ;
Propping Verse, for feare of falling
 To the ground.
Joynting Syllabes, drowning Letters, 10
Fastning Vowells, as with fetters
 They were bound!
Soone as lazie thou wert knowne, .
All good Poetrie hence was flowne,
 And Art banish¹d. 15
For a thousand yeares together,
AH *Parnassus* Greene did wither,
 And wit vanish'd.
Pegasus did flie away,
At the Well[s] no Muse did stay, 20
 But bewail(e)d
So to see the Fountaine drie,
And *Apollo's* Musique die,
 All light failed 1
Starveling rimes did fill the Stage, 25
Not a Poet in an Age,
 Worth (a) crowning.
Not a worke deserving Bales,
Nor a lyne deserving praise,
 Pallas frowning. 30

xxix. In 'Recreation for Ingenious Head-peeeces', 1645, Aa i^v-2^v (— R)
i Rime.] Rime F 3 Concept,] Concept F 10 Syllabes] Syl-
lables R. F3 (so 52) 15 Art] art R, G : are F. F3 17 Parnas-
sus R: Parnassus Fi, F3 20 Well Editor 21 bewailed] bewail'd. F
27 Worth a Editor : Worthy W 30 frowning.] frowning; F

Greeke was free from Rimes infection,
Happy Greeke, by this protection,
Was not spoyled.

35 Whilst the Latin, Queene of Tongues,
 Is not yet free from Rimes wrongs,
 But rests foiled.

Scarce the Hill againe doth flourish,
Scarce the world a Wit doth nourish,
To restore

Phcebus to his Crowne againe ;
And the Muses to their braine ;
As before.

Vulgar Languages that want
Words, and sweetnesse, and be scant
Of true measure,

Tyran Rime hath so abused,
That they long since have refused
Other ceasure.

He that first invented thee,
May his joynts tormented bee,
Cramp^d for ever ;

Still may Syllabes jarre with time,
 Stil may reason warre with rime,
 Resting never.

55 May his Sense, when it would meet
 The cold tumor in his feet,
 Grow unsouyvnder.

And his Title be long foole,
That in rearing such a Schoole,
6° Was the foyvnder.

32 Greeke. . . protection,] Greeke . . . protection! *F* 37 Hill]
hill *F* 39 restore] restore, *F* 47 refused] refused. *F* 48
ceasure.] ceasure ; *F* 55 Sense. . . meet] Sense . . . meet, *F*

XXX.

*An Epigram

On WILL (i) AM Lord Burl(eigh,)

Lo: high Treasurer of England.

IF thou wouldst know the vcrtnes of Man-kind,
Read here in one, what thou in all canst find,
And goe no farther : let this Circle be
Thy Universe, though his *Epitome*.

Cecill, the grave, the wise, the great, the good,

What is there more that can ennoble blood ?

The *Orphans* Pillar, the true Subjects shield,

The poores full Store-house, and just servants field.

The only faithfull Watchman for the Realme,

That in all tempests, never quit the helme,

But stood unshaken in his Deeds, and Name,

And labour'd in the worke ; not with the fame :

That still was good for goodnesse sake, nor thought

Upon reward, till the reward him sought.

Whose Offices, and honours did surprize,

Rather than meet him : And, before his eyes

Clos'd to their peace, he saw his branches shoot,

And in the noblest Families tooke root

Of all the Land. Who now at such a Rate,

Of divine blessing, would not serve a State ?

•Pre-
sented
upon a
plate of
Gold to
his son
Rob. E. of
Salisbury.
when he
was also
Tresurer.

5

10

15

20

XXXI.

*An Epigram.

To TH o M A s Lo: E L s M E R E,

the last Terme he sate Chancellor.

SO, justest Lord, may all your Judgements be
Lawes, and no change e're come to one decree:
So, may the King proclaime your Conscience is
Law, to his Law; and thinke your enemies his:

•For a
poore
Man.

xxx. Burleigh,] Burl- F
Epitome. F3. *Epitome* F
xxx. i So. F3 : So F

I Man-kind, F3 : Man-kind F
19 Land. Who] Land, who F
2 Lawes] Lawes; F

- 5 So, from all sicknesse, may you rise to health,
 The Care, and wish still of the publike wealth :
 So may the gentler Muses, and good fame
 Still flie about the Odour of your Name ;
 As with the safetie, and honour of the Lawes,
 10 You favour Truth, and me, in this mans Cause.

XXXII.

• For the
 same.

**Another to him.*

- T**He Judge his favour timely then extends,
 When a good Cause is destitute of friends,
 Without the pompe of Counsell; or more Aide,
 Then to make falshood blush, and fraud afraid :
 3 When those good few, that her Defenders be,
 Are there for Charitie, and not for fee.
 Such shall you heare to day, and find great foes,
 Both arm'd with wealth, and slander to oppose,
 Who thus long safe, would gaine upon the times
 10 A right by the prosperitie of their Crimes;
 Who, though their guilt, and perjurie they know,
 Thinke, yea and boast, that they have done it so
 As though the Court pursues them on the sent,
 They will come of, and scape the Punishment.
 15 When this appeares, just Lord, to your sharp sight,
 He do's you wrong, that craves you to doe right.

XXXIII.

*An Epigram to the Councellour that
 pleaded, and carried the Cause.*

THat I, hereafter, doe not thinke the Barre,
 The Seat made of a more then civill warre ;
 Or the great Hall at *Westminster*, the field
 Where mutual! frauds are fought, and no side yeild ;

xxxi. 6 wealth :] wealth, F: Wealth : F3

xxxii. 7 day . . . foes.] Day . . . foes F 13 sent] scent F3 14
 Punishment.] Punishment, F : Punishment; F3

xxxiii. Epigram to] Epigram. To F3 i I, I F

That, henceforth, I beleewe nor bookes, nor men, 5
 Who 'gainst the Law, weave Calumnies, my (BENN:)
 But when I read or heare the names so rife
 Of hirelings, wranglers, stitchers-to of strife,
 Hook-handed *Harpies*, gowned Vultures, put
 Upon the reverend Pleaders ; doe now shut 10
 All mouthes, that dare entitle them (from hence)
 To the Wolves studie, or Dogs eloquence ;
 Thou art my Cause : whose manners since I knew,
 Have made me to conceive a Lawyer new.
 So dost thou studie matter, men, and times, 15
 Mak'st it religion to grow rich by Crimes !
 Dar'st not abuse thy wisdome, in the Lawes,
 Or skill, to carry out an evill cause !
 But first dost vexe, and search it! If not sound,
 Thou prov'st the gentler waves, to dense the wound, 20
 And make the Scarre faire ; If that will not be,
 Thou hast the brave scorne, to put back the fee I
 But in a businesse, that will bide the Touch,
 What use, what strength of reason ! and how' much
 Of Bookes, of Presidents, hast thou at hand ! 25
 As if the generall store thou didst command
 Of Argument, still drawing forth the best,
 And not being borrow'd by thee, but possest.
 So comm'st thou like a Chiefe into the Court,
 Arm'd at all peeces, as to keepe a Fort 30
 Against a multitude ; and (with thy Stile
 So brightly brandish'd) wound'st, defend'st! the while
 Thy Adversaries fall, as not a word
 They had, but were a Reed unto thy Sword.
 Then com'st thou off with Victorie and Palme, 35
 Thy Hearers Nectar, and thy Clients Balme,
 The Courts just honour, and thy Judges love.
 And (which doth all Achievements get above)
 Thy sincere practise, breeds not thee a fame
 Alone, but all thy ranke a reverend Name. 40

5 That.] That F 6 Calumnies.] Calumnies F my BENN:]
 my—F : my Benn. W conj. 18 skill.] skill F 25 hand I]
 hand ? F 28 borrow'd] borrowed F 29 Court.] Court -F

XXXIV.

An 'Epigram.

To the small *Poxe*.

ENvious and foule Disease, could there not be
 One beautie in an Age, and free from thee ?
 What did she worth thy spight ? were there not store
 Of those that set by their false faces more
 5 Then this did by her true ? She never sought
 Quarrell with Nature, or in ballance brought
 Art, her false servant; Nor, for Sir *Hugh Plat*,
 Was drawne to practise other hue, then that
 Her owne bloud gave her : Shee ne're had, nor hath
 10 Any beliefe, in Madam Baud-bees bath,
 Or Turners oyle of Talck. Nor ever got
 Spanish receipt, to make her teeth to rot.
 What was the cause then ? Thought'st thou in disgrace
 Of Beautie, so to nullifie a face,
 15 That heaven should make no more ; or should amisse,
 Make all hereafter, had'st thou ruin'd this ?
 I, that thy Ayme was ; but her fate prevail'd :
 And scorn'd, thou'(h)ast showne thy malice, but hast
 fail'd.

XXXV.

An *Epitaph*.

(On ELIZABETH CHVTE.)

WHat Beautie would have lovely stilde,
 What manners prettie, Nature milde,
 What wonder perfect, all were fil'd,
 Upon record, in this blest child.
 5 And, till the comming of the Soule

To fetch the flesh, we keepe the Rowle.

xxxiv. 5 She] she F 7 Art,] Art F Plait G: Plot F₁ F3 16
 this? F3: this.F

xxxv. On ELIZABETH CHVTE. *Editor, from the tablet in Sonning Church.*
 Berkshire, 'HERE LYETH ELIZABETH CHVTE DAVGHTER OF S^c GEORGE
 CHVTE KNIGHTE AND DAME ANNA His WYFB WHOB LIVED 3 YEARES AND
 6 MONTHS AND DYED THE 18th of MAYE ANNO 1627.' I Stilde] Stil'd
 F3 2 prettie,] Sweete what Epitaph 3 fil'd] fild Epitaph :
 fill'd. F 4 record,] Record, Epitaph : record F blest] one
 Epitaph 6 fetch] call Epitaph

XXXVI.

A Song.

LOVER.

Come, let us here enjoy the shade,
 For Love in shadow best is made.
 Though Envie oft his shadow be,
 None brookes the Sun-light worse then he.

MISTRES.

Where Love doth shine, there needs no Sunne, 5
 All light[s] into his one doth run;
 Without which all the world were darke ;
 Yet he himselfe is but a sparke.

ARBITER.

A Sparke to set whole world(s) a-fire,
 Who more they burne, they more desire, 10
 And have their being, their waste to see ;
 And waste still, that they still might bee.

CHORVS.

Such are his powers, whom time hath stil'd,
 Now swift, now slow, now tame, now wild ;
 Now hot, now cold, now fierce, now mild. 15
 The eldest God, yet still a Child.

XXXVII.

An "Epistle to ajriend.

Sir, I am thankfull, first, to heaven, for you ;
 Next to your selfe, for making your love true :
 Then to your love, and gift. And all's but due.

You have unto my Store added a booke,
 On which with profit, I shall never looke, 5
 But must confesse from whom what gift I tooke.

xxxvi. *Italic type in F* 2 Love] love ; F : Love Fa 5 Love]
 love F : Love ¥3 6 doth] do G 13 stil'd] still'd F originally
 zxxvii. 6 what] that G

Not like your Countrie-neighbours, that commit
Their vice of loving for a Christmasse fit;
Which is indeed but friendship of the spit:

- 10 But, as a friend, which name your selfe receive,
And which you (being the worthier) gave me leave
In letters, that mixe spirits, thus to weave.

- Which, how most sacred I will ever keepe,
So may the fruitfull Vine my temples steepe,
15 And Fame wake for me, when I yeeld to sleepe.

Though you sometimes proclaime me too severe,
Rigid, and harsh, which is a Drug austere
In friendship, I confesse : But, deare friend, heare.

- Little know they, that professe Amitie,
20 And seeke to scant her comelie libertie,
How much they lame her in her propertie.

And lesse they know, who being free to use
That friendship which no chance but love did chuse,
Will unto Licence that faire leave abuse.

- 25 It is an Act of tyrannic, not love,
In practiz'd friendship wholly to reprove,
As flat fry with friends humours still to move.

- From each of which I labour to be free,
Yet if with cithers vice I teynted be,
30 Forgive it, as my frailtie, and not me.

For no man lives so out of passions sway,
But shall sometimes be tempted to obey
Her furie, yet no friendship to betray.

XXXVIII.

An Elegie.

TIs true, I'm broke ! Vowes, Oathes, and all I had
 Of Credit lost. And I am now run madde :
 Or doe upon my selfe some desperate ill ;
 This sadnesse makes no approaches, but to kill.
 It is a Darkncssc hath blockt up my sense, 5
 And drives it in to eat on my offence,
 Or there to sterve it. Helpe, O you that may
 Alone lend succours, and this furie stay,
 Offended Mistris, you are yet so faire,
 As light breakes from you, that affrights despaire, 10
 And fills my powers with pcrswading joy,
 That you should be too noble to destroy.
 There may some face or menace of a storme
 Looke forth, but cannot last in such (a) forme.
 If there be nothing worthy you can see 15
 Of Graces, or your mercie here in me,
 Spare your owne goodnesse yet; and be not great
 In will and power, only to defeat.
 God, and the good, know to forgive, and save.
 The ignorant, and fooles, no pittie have. 20
 I will not stand to Justine my fault,
 Or lay the excuse upon the Vintners vault;
 Or in confessing of the Crime be nice,
 Or goe about to countenance the vice,
 By naming in what companie 'twas in, 25
 As I would urge Authoritie for sinne.
 No, I will stand arraign'd, and cast, to be
 The Subject of your Grace in pardoning me,
 And (stil'd your mercies Creature) will live more
 Your honour now, then your disgrace before. 30

xxxviii. i I'm] I'am. F3 Oathes, om. F3 7 it. Helpe,] it.
 helpe F : it. Help F3 8 stay,] stay. F3 14 a F3 16
 me, F3: me F 29 stil'd] Stil'd F 30 before.] before, F

- Thinke it was frailtie, Mistris, thinke me man,
 Thinke that your selfe like heaven forgive me can :
 Where weaknesse doth offend, and vertue grieve,
 There greatnesse takes a glorie to relieve.
 35 Thinke that I once was yours, or may be now;
 Nothing is vile, that is a part of you :
 Errour and folly in me may have crost
 Your just commands ; yet those, not I, be lost.
 I am regenerate now, become the child
 40 Of your compassion ; Parents should be mild :
 There is no Father that for one demerit,
 Or two, or three, a Sonne will dis-inherit,
 That as the last of punishments is meant;
 No man inflicts that paine, till hope be spent :
 45 An ill-affected limbe (what e're it aile)
 We cut not off, till all Cures else doe faile :
 And then with pause ; for sever'd once, that's gone,
 Would live his glory that could keepe it on ;
 Doe not despaire my mending; to distrust
 50 Before you prove a medicine, is unjust.
 You may so place me, and in such an ayre,
 As not alone the Cure, but scarre be faire.
 That is, if still your Favours you apply,
 And not the bounties you ha¹ done, deny.
 55 Could you demand the gifts you gave, againe ?
 Why was't ? did e're the Cloudes aske back their raine ?
 The Sunne his heat, and light, the ayre his dew ?
 Or winds the Spirit, by which the flower so grew ?
 That were to wither all, and make a Grave
 60 Of that wise Nature would a Cradle have.
 Her order is to cherish, and preserve,
 Consumptions nature to destroy, and sterve.
 But to exact againe what once is given,
 Is natures meere obliquitie I as Heaven
 65 Should aske the blood, and spirits he hath infus'd
 In man, because man hath the flesh abus'd.

32 can :] can, F 35 now; F3 : now, F 38 I,] I F
 43 as F. *Cunningham* : is F 50 unjust.] unjust, F 51 ayre,]
 ayre F 55 againe ?] againe I F 60 have. F3 : have ? F

O may your wisdom take example hence,
 God lightens not at mans each fraile offence,
 He pardons slips, goes by a world of ills,
 And then his thuvnder frights more, then it kills. 70
 He cannot angrie be, but all must quake,
 It shakes even him, that all things else doth shake.
 And how more faire, and lovely lookes the world
 In a calme skie, then when the heaven is norl'd
 About in Cloudes, and wrapt in raging weather, 75
 As all with storme and tempest ran together.
 O imitate that sweet Serenitie
 That makes us live, not that which calls to die.
 In darke, and sullen mornes, doe we not say,
 This looketh like an Execution day ? 80
 And with the vulgar doth it not obtaine
 The name of Cruell weather, storme, and raine ?
 Be not affected with these markes too much
 Of crueltie, lest they doe make you such.
 But view the mildnesse of your Makers state, 85
 As I the penitents here emulate :
 He when he sees a sorrow such as this,
 Streight puts off all his Anger, and doth kisse
 The contrite Soule, who hath no thought to win
 Upon the hope to have another sin 90
 Forgiven him ; And in that lyne stand I,
 Rather then once displease you more, to die,
 To suffer tortures, scorne, and Infamie,
 What Fooles, and all their Parasites can apply;
 The wit of Ale, and *Genius* of the Malt 95
 Can pumpe for ; or a Libell without salt
 Produce ; though threatning with a coale, or chalke
 On every wall, and sung where e're I walke.
 I number these as being of the Chore
 Of Contumelie, and urge a good man more 100
 Then sword, or fire, or what is of the race

69 pardons *F3* : pardons, *F* 74 skie,] skie ; *F* 75 weather,]
 weather *F* originally 78 die.] die *F* 79 monies,] monies ; *F*
 say. *F3* : say *F* 88 Streight] Steight *F* originally 91 I, *Fy* :
IF 92 die, *F3* : die *F* 94 apply ;] apply *F* originally

To carry noble danger in the face :
 There is not any punishment, or paine,
 A man should flie from, as he would disdaine.
 105 Then Mistris, here, here let your rigour end,
 And let your mercie make me asham'd t(o)'offend.
 I will no more abuse my vowes to you,
 Then I will studie falshood, to be true.
 O, that you could but by dissection see
 no How much you are the better part of me ;
 How all my Fibres by your Spirit doe move,
 And that there is no life in me, but love.
 You would be then most confident, that tho
 Publike affaires command me now to goe
 115 Out of your eyes, and be'awhile away ;
 Absence, or Distance, shall not breed decay.
 Your forme shines here, here fixed in my heart:
 I may dilate my selfe, but not depart.
 Others by common Stars their courses run,
 120 When I see you, then I doe see my Sun,
 Till then 'tis all but darknesse, that I have ;
 Rather then want your light, I wish a grave.

[xxxix.

An Eegie.

To make the Doubt cleare that no Woman's true,
 Was it my fate to prove it full in you ?
 Thought I, but one had breath'd the purer Ayre,
 And must she needs be false, because she's faire ?

xxxviii. 105 Mistris,] Masters F.F3: mistress W ziz Fibres ...
 doe] Fiuers ... doth *F originally* 115 away ;] away *F originally*
 • 117 heart:] heart *F* : Heart: F3 121 have; F3 : have, F
 xxxix. By JOHN DONNE, printed first in the 'Poems' of 1633 as an
 'Elegie'. pp. 300-2, 'The Expostulation.' and in the later editions. 1635-
 54. Sir M. Grierson in his edition of Donne gives collations of eleven
 Af55, to which may be added MS. Nor. 4506 in Harvard Library. TCD.
 which he cites, does not contain the poem. We correct the inferior text
 of 'The Uvnderwood' and collate it only with the text of Donne (*Dn*). 2
 full] strong *Dn* you ? *Dn* : you. f 3 I, *Dn* : I *F* breath'd the
 purer] breathed purest *Dn*

Is it your beauties Marke, or of your youth, 5
 Or your perfection, not to studie truth ;
 Or thinke you heaven is deafe ? or hath no eyes ?
 Or those it has, winke at your perjuries ?
 Are vowes so cheape with women ? or the matter
 Whereof they are made, that they are writ in water ; 10
 And blowne away with wind ? or doth their breath,
 Both hot and cold at once, threat life and death ?
 Who could have thought so many accents sweet
 Tun'd to our words, so many sighes should meet
 Blowne from our hearts, so many oathes and teares 15
 Sprinkled among, all sweeter by our feares,
 And the Divine Impression of stolne kisses,
 That seal'd the rest, could now prove emptie blisses ?
 Did you draw bonds to forfeit ? Signe, to breake ?
 Or must we read you quite from what you speake, 20
 And find the truth out the wrong way ? or must
 He first desire you false, would wish you just ?
 O, I prophane 1 though most of women be
 The common Monster, Love shall except thee,
 My dearest Love, how ever jealousie, 25
 With Circumstance, might urge the contrarie.
 Sooner Tie thinke the Sunne would cease to cheare
 The teeming Earth, and that forget to beare;
 Sooner that Rivers would run back, or Thames
 With ribs of Ice in June would bind his streames : 30
 Or Nature, by whose strength the world indures,
 Would change her course, before you alter yours :
 But, O, that trecherous breast, to whom, weake you

5 IB it Dn : It is F 6 perfection, Dn : perfection F 8 has,
 winke| hath, smile Dn perjuries ? Dn: perjuries -,F iz breath,|
 breath F 12 Both . . . once.] (Both hot and cold) at once Dn
 threat| make F 14 Tun'd to our| Form'd into Dn xj Blowne|
 As Dn oathes| othes F originally 16 among, all| among ? All F:
 among, (all Dn 17 Divine| Devine F : divine Dn, F3 18 rest,
 could| rest) should Dn 19 breake ? Dn : breake, -F 23 be Dn:
 be, F 24 The... Love| This kinde of beast, my thought Dn thee.
 F3 : thee F : thee ; Dn 25 how ever| though toward Dn 26
 Circumstance,| Circumstance F the contrarie| thy'inconstancie Dn
 27 would| will Dn (so 29) 29 back,| back F originally 30
 streames :| streames F originally

- Did trust our counsell, and we both may rue,
 35 Having his falshood found too late ! 'twas he
 That made me cast you Guiltie, and you me.
 Whilst he, black wretch, betray'd each simple word
 We spake,- unto the cunning of a third !
 Curst may he be, that so our love hath slaine,
 40 And wavnder wretched on the earth, as *Cain*,
 Wretched as he, and not deserve least pittie ;
 In plaguing him let miserie be wittie.
 Let all eyes shun him, and he shun each eye,
 Till he be noysome as his infamie ;
 45 May he without remorse deny God thrice,
 And not be trusted more on his soules price;
 And after all selfe-torment, when he dyes,
 May Wolves teare out his heart, Vultures his eyes,
 Swyne eat his Bowels, and his fals^r Tongue,
 50 That utterd all, be to some Raven flung,
 And let his carrion corse be a longer feast
 To the Kings Dogs, then any other beast.
 Now I have curst, let us our love revive ;
 In me the flame was never more alive.
 55 I could begin againe to court and praise,
 And in that pleasure lengthen the short dayes
 Of my lifes lease ; like Painters that doe take
 Delight, not in made workes, but whilst they make.
 I could renew those times, when first I saw
 60 Love in your eyes, that gave my tongue the Law
 To like what you lik^fd, and at Masques, or Playes,
 Commend the selfe-same Actors, the same wayes ;
 Aske how you did ? and often with intent
 Of being officious, grow impertinent;

37 he, F3: he F: hee, Dn 38 spake, Dn: spake Ff cunning Dn:
 comming F : coming F3 39 be, Dn : be Ff 40 wretched . . .
 as] on the earth, wretched as Dn *Cain*, Dn : *Cain*. F : *Cain*: F3 41
 pittie ;] pittie F : pity : F3 : pittie ; Dn 44 infamie ;] infamie F
 originally 45 he Dn, F3 : be F 47 dyes, Dn : dyes F: dies, F3
 51 corse] coarse Dn : Coarse F3 53 I have] have I Dn revive
 Dn: receive F, F3 58 workes] worke Dn whilst] whiles Dn make.
 F3 : make F : make ; Dn 61 or] and Dn 62 wayes ; Dn:
 wayes F : Ways, F3 63 did ?] did, Dn, F3 64 grow] be Dn

All which were such soft pastimes, as in these 65
 Love was as subtly catch¹d as a Disease.
 But, being got, it is a treasure, sweet,
 Which to defend, is harder then to get ;
 And ought not be prophan'd on either part,
 For though 'tis got by chance, 'tis kept by art.] 70

XL.

An Elegie.

That Love's a bitter sweet, I ne're conceive
 Till the sower Minute comes of taking leave,
 And then I taste it. But as men drinke up
 In hast the bottome of a med'cin'd Cup,
 And take some sirrup after; so doe I, 5
 To put all relish from my memorie
 Of parting, drowne it in the hope to meet
 Shortly againe : and make our absence sweet.
 This makes me, M"- that sometime by stealth,
 Uvnder another Name, I take your health ; 10
 And turne the Ceremonies of those Nights
 I give, or owe my friends, into your Rites,
 But ever without bla10n, or least shade
 Of vowes so sacred, and in silence made ;
 For though Love thrive, and may grow up with cheare, 15
 And free societie, hee's borne else-where,
 And must be bred, so to conceale his birth,
 As neither wine doe rack it out, or mirth.
 Yet should the Lover still be ayrie and light,
 In all his Actions rarified to spright; 20
 Not, like a *Midas*, shut up in himselfe,
 And turning all he toucheth into pelfe,

xxxix. 65 soft Dn : lost F, F3 66 Disease.] disease ; Dn 67
 treasure,] treasure Dn
 xl. 5 I, F3 : I F 9 me, F3 : me F sometime] sometimes F3
 stealth, F3 : stealth F 14 made; corr. F: made, F originally
 19 light,] light F 20 Actions] Actions, F3 rarified F3 : ratified
 F spright;] spright F : Sprite ; F3 21 Not, . . . *Midas*, F3 :
 Not... *Midas* F

- Keepe in reserv'd in his Dark-lanterne face,
 As if that ex'lent Dulnesse were Loves grace ;
 25 No, Mistris, no, the open merrie Man
 Moves like a sprightly River, and yet can
 Keepe secret in his Channels what he breeds,
 'Bove all your standing waters, choak'd with weedes.
 They looke at best like Creame-bowles, and you soone
 30 Shall find their depth : they're sounded with a spoone.
 They may say Grace, and for Loves Chaplaines passe ;
 But the grave Lover ever was an Asse ;
 Is fix'd upon one leg, and dares not come
 Out with the other, for hee's still at home ;
 35 Like the dull wearied Crane that (come on land)
 Doth, while he keepes his watch, betray his stand.
 Where he that knowes will, like a Lapwing, flie
 Farre from the Nest, and so himselfe belie
 To others, as he will deserve the Trust
 40 Due to that one, that doth believe him just.
 And such your Servant is, who vowes to keepe
 The Jewell of your name, as close as sleepe
 Can lock the Sense up, or the heart a thought,
 And never be by time, or folly brought,
 45 Weaknesse of braine, or any charme of Wine,
 The sinne of Boast, or other countermine
 (Made to blow up loves secrets) to discover
 That Article, may not become (y)our lover :
 Which in assurance to your brest I tell,
 5° If I had writ no word, but Deare, farewell.

25 No, F3 : No F Mistris,] Masters F : Masters, F3 27
 breeds,] breeds F : breeds. F3 36 Doth,] Doth F 37
 will, . . . Lapwing,] will... Lapwing F 38 belie F3 : belie. F
 39 others, F3 : others F 48 not F3 : nor F your G

XLI.

An E/egie.

Since you must goe, and I must bid farewell,
 Heare, Mistris, your departing servant tell
 What it is like : And doe not thinke they can
 Be idle words, though of a parting Man ;
 It is as if a night should shade noone-day, 5
 Or that the Sun was here, but forc't away ;
 And we were left under that Hemisphere,
 Where we must feele it Darke for halfe a yeare.
 What fate is this, to change mens dayes and houres,
 To shift their seasons, and destroy their powers I 10
 Alas I ha¹ lost my heat, my blood, my prime,
 Winter is come a Quarter e're his Time,
 My health will leave me ; and when you depart,
 How shall I doe, sweet Mistris, for my heart ?
 You would restore it ? No, that's worth a feare, 15
 As if it were not worthy to be there :
 O, keepe it still; for it had rather be
 Your sacrifice, then here remaine with me.
 And so I spare it. Come what can become
 Of me, Tie softly tread unto my Tombe ; 20
 Or like a Ghost walke silent amongst men,
 Till I may see both it and you agen.

XLII.

An E/egie.

LEt me be what I am, as *Virgil* cold ;
 As *Horace* fat; or as *Anacreon* old ;
 No Poets verses yet did ever move,
 Whose Readers did not thinke he was in love.

xli. In H4 f. 238 b, St f. 50 i you] she S/ 2 Heare,
 Heare F \ Hear. F₃ Mirths] Masters F_t Fj 9 this, Fj : this F
 14 doe, ... Mistris,] doe ... Mistris F 19 it.] it. F 22 see]
 See F
 xlii. i cold; Fj : cold F

- 5 Who shall forbid me then in Rithme to bee
 As light, and active as the youngest hee
 That from the Muses fountaines doth indorse
 His lynes, and houely sits the Poets horse ?
 Put on my Ivy Garland, let me see
- 10 Who frownes, who jealous is, who taxeth me.
 Fathers, and Husbands, I doe claime a right
 In all that is call'd lovely : take my sight
 Sooner then my affection from the faire.
 No face, no hand, proportion, line, or Ayre
- 15 Of beautie ; but the Muse hath interest in :
 There is not worne that lace, purle, knot or pin,
 But is the Poets matter : And he must,
 When he is furious, love, although not lust.
 But then consent, your Daughters and your Wives,
- 20 (If they be faire and worth it) have their lives
 Made longer by our praises. Or, if not,
 Wish, you had fowle ones, and deformed got;
 Curst in their Cradles, or there chang'd by Elves,
 So to be sure you doe injoy your selves.
- 25 Yet keepe those up in sackcloth too, or lether,
 For Silke will draw some sneaking Songster thither.
 It is a ryming Age, and Verses swarme
 At every stall; The Cittie Cap's a charme.
 But I who live, and have liv'd twentie yeare
- 3° Where I may handle Silke, as free, and neere,
 As any Mercer ; or the whale-bone man
 That quilts those bodies, I have leave to span :
 Have eaten with the Beauties, and the wits,
 And braveries of Court, and felt their fits
- 35 Of love, and hate : and came so nigh to know
 Whether their faces were their owne, or no :
 It is not likely I should now looke downe
 Upon a Velvet Petticote, or a Gowne,

5 Rithme] Rhyme F3 6 active] Active F 8 horse ?] horse F
 17 must,] must F 18 furious, F3 : furious F 19 But then
 consent Editor : But then content F : Be then content G 21 not,
 FS : not F 36 no :] no. F

Whose like I have knowne the Taylors Wife put on
 To doe her Husbands rites in, e're 'twere gone 40
 Home to the Customer : his Letcherie
 Being, the best clothes still to praeoccupie.
 Put a Coach-mare in Tissue, must I horse
 Her presently ? Or leape thy Wife of force,
 When by thy sordid bountie she hath on 45
 A Gowne of that, was the Caparison ?
 So I might dote upon thy Chaires, and Stooles,
 That are like cloath'd : must I be of those fooles
 Of race accompted, that no passion have
 But when thy Wife (as thou conceiv'st) is brave ? 50
 Then ope thy wardrobe, thinke me that poore Groome
 That from the Foot-man, when he was become
 An Officer there, did make most solemne love,
 To ev'ry Petticote he brush'd, and Glove
 He did lay up, and would adore the shooe, 55
 Or slipper was left off, and kisse it too,
 Court every hanging Gowne, and after that,
 Lift up some one, and doe, I tell not what.
 Thou didst tell me ; and wert o're-joy'd to peepe
 In at a hole, and see these Actions creepe 60
 From the poore wretch, which though he play'd in prose,
 He would have done in verse, with any of those
 Wrung on the Withers, by Lord Loves despight,
 Had he'had the facultie to reade, and write !
 Such Songsters there are store of ; witnesse he 65
 That chanc'd the lace, laid on a Smock, to see,
 And straight-way spent a Sonnet; with that other
 That (in pure Madrigall) unto his Mother
 Commended the French-hood, and Scarlet gowne
 The Lady Mayresse pass'd in through the Towne, 70
 Unto the Spittle Sermon. O, what strange

44 force, F3 : force, F 45 on F3 : on, F 47 Chaires, . . .
 Stooles,] Chaires ; ... Stooles F: Chairs . . . Stools, F3 48 cloath'd:
 F3 : cloath'd, F 52 That] that F 53 An Officer] An O fficer
 corr. F: And Officer F originally 62 any] any one F3 64 Had
 he 'had] Had he had F: Had he G 66 see, F3 : see F

- Varietie of Silkes were on th¹Exchange I
 Or in Moore-fields, this other night I sings one,
 Another answers, 'Lasse, those Silkes are none,
 75 In smiling *L'envoye*, as he would deride
 Any Comparison had with his Cheap-side.
 And vouches both the Pageant, and the Day,
 When not the Shops, but windowes doe display
 The Stuffles, the Velvets, Plushes, Fringes, Lace,
 80 And all the originall riots of the place :
 Let the poore fooles enjoy their follies, love
 A Goat in Velvet; or some block could move
 Uvnder that cover ; an old Mid-wives hat I
 Or a Close-stoole so cas'd ; or any fat
 8j Bawd, in a Velvet scabberd I I envy
 None of their pleasures I nor will aske thee, why
 Thou art jealous of thy Wifes, or Daughters Case :
 More then of cithers manners, wit, or face I

XLIII.

An Execration upon Vulcan.

- A**nd why to me this, thou lame Lord of fire,
 What had I done that might call on thine ire ?
 Or urge thy Greedie flame, thus to devoure
 So many my Yeares-labours in an houre ?
 3 I ne're attempted, *Vulcan*, 'gainst thy life ;

xl.ii. 73 -fields,... night 1] -fields I . . . night, *F* 74 'Lasse,] 'Lasse
F none,] none *F* 80 riots] roits *F* originally
 xliij. I Q. Q. 'Ben lonson's Execration against Vulcan¹; in *Add*
 8ff. 97-102, 'An Execration on Vulcan'; *Add zaff.* 94-8. 'An Execra-
 tion on Volcan'; *Hj* ff. 62-4, 'An Execration on Volcan'; *Nff.* 43-6, 'An
 Execration on vulcan'; *SI* 4 ff. 101-4, 'Ben: Jonson upon the burning
 of his study and bookes'; *EP* ff. 22-4, 'Ben Johnson upon the burning
 of his bookes'. I this, corr. *F*. F3 : this *F* originally : this *D*. Q
 this ? *N* thou . . . fire,] (thou . . . fire) *D*. Q Lord] god *D*, *Q*, *EP* :
 in *Add* *ia* corrected to Lord 2 had] have *D*, *Q*, *SI*, *EP* might]
mgbtQ (corrected in the errata) thioc] thin *D* : thy *Add* 8. *EP* 3
 urge] beg *Add* 8 flame] flames *D*, *Q*, *EP* thus to devoure] thus in
 an hour *EP* : so *SI* originally 4 in an houre] to deuoure *EP* : so
SI originally an] one *D*, *Q* 5 attempted, *Vulcan*, 'gainst]
 attempted *Vulcan* 'gainst *F*: attempted (*Volcan*) 'gainste *Add* *ia*, *H* :
 attempted ought against *D*, *Q*

Nor made least line of love to thy loose Wife ;
 Or in remembrance of thy afront, and scorne,
 With Clownes, and Tradesmen, kept thee clos'd in home.
 Twas *Jupiter* that hurl'd thee headlong downe,
 And *Mars*, that gave thee a *Lanthorne* for a Crowne. to
 Was it because thou wert of old denied
 By *Jove* to have *Minerva* for thy Bride,
 That since thou tak'st all envious care and paine,
 To ruine any issue of the braine ?
 Had I wrote treason there, or heresie, 15
 Imposture, witchcraft, charmes, or blasphemie,
 I had deserv'd, then, thy consuming lookes,
 Perhaps, to have beene burned with my bookes.
 But, on thy malice, tell me, didst thou spie
 Any, least loose, or s(c)urrile paper, lie 20
 Conceal'd, or kept there, that was fit to be,
 By thy owne vote, a sacrifice to thee ?
 Did I there wound the honour of the Crowne ?
 Or taxe the Glories of the Church, and Gowne ?
 Itch to defame the State ? or brand the Times ? 25
 And my selfe most, in some selfe-boasting Rimes ?
 If none of these, then why this fire ? Or find
 A cause before ; or leave me one behind.
 Had I compil'd from *Amadis de Gaule*,
 Th'*Esplandians*, *Arthurs*, *Palmer ins*, and all 30

6 Nor] Or EP: Or, N least] lesse Q (corrected in the errata) 7 Or]
 Or, N, Ed thy] the EP, Ed : th' H, SI scorne, D, Q : scorne F
 8 clos'd] close Q, Add 8. Add 12, SI, EP 9 hurl'd] hoorl'd N :
 cast SI 10 a om. SI, EP Lanthorne] lanterne N Crowne. D, Q:
 Crowne : F iz Was .. . old] was it of old because thou was't SI:
 Was not hee : thou wast of old EP it] it, AT 12 Bride, D :
 Bride. Q, F: bride? N 13 all] an EP care] care, AT 14 any...
 the] every... her D, Q 15 wrote] wrot D, Q heresie] haeresie N:
 Hresie Add 8 16 Imposture] Impostures D, Q, SI blasphemie,
 blasphemie ? F : Blasphemy, D, Q 17 deserv'd,] deserv'd F
 20 Any.] Any D, Q, N scurrile] scurrill D, Q : so all MSS lie] by 51
 22 thy] thyne N, Add 8 : thine Add ia, H 23 honour D, Q, Add 8,
 EP : honours F : honors N, Add za, H 24 Glories] glory D, Q
 and] or D, Q. N 25 State ?] State, D : state, Q 26 in not in N
 some] lewd JD, SI, EP : leaud Q 27 then why] then, why. N : why
 then D, Q 28 before:] before, D, Q. N 30 Th'] The SI: the Add
 8. Addia. H Esplandians] Esplandions SI, EP Arthurs] Arthur's F

The learned Librarie of *Don Quixote* ;

And so some goodlier monster had begot:

Or spun out Riddles, and weav'd fiftie tomes

Of *Logogriphe*s, and curious *Palindromes*,

35 Or pomp'd for those hard trifles, *Anagrams*,

Or *Eteostichs*, or those finer flammes

Of Egges, and Halberds, Cradles, and a Herse,

A paire of Scisars, and a Combe in verse ;

Acrostichs, and *Telestichs*, on jumpe names,

4° Thou then hadst had some colour for thy flames,

On such my serious follies ; But, thou'lt say,

There were some pieces of as base allay,

And as false stampe there ; parcels of a Play,

Fitter to see the fire-light, then the day ;

45 Adulterate moneys, such as might not goe :

Thou should'st have stay'd, till publike fame said so.

Shee is the Judge, Thou Executioner :

Or if thou needs would'st trench upon her power,

Thou mightst have yet enjoy'd thy crueltie

31 *Quixote*,] *Quixol*, D, Q, N. EP 32 begot: D, Q : begot, F
 33 Or ... tomes] Or spun or weau'd in Kiddles 50 tomes SI: Or spun
 weau'd, and in ridles, fifty tomes N, EP (reading spun out) : or spent
 my wretched paper or my tyme Add 8 : so H, Add 12 (reading 'and my
 time') and] or D, Q, Add 12 fiftie] fittie F 34 Of ... *Palin-*
dromes] in weauing Riddles in more wretched ryme Add 8, Add 12, H
*Logogrtphe*s] *Logographes* D, Ed : *Logogriphos* EP and] or D, Q
 35 pomp'd] pump'd D, Q : pump Add 8, Add 12, H : pumed EP
 hard] fine EP trifles,] trifles F 36 Or] Or else SI, EP *Eteostichs*]
Ecrostichs D, Q, Ed : *Etrostichs* EP : *Acrostichs* SI: *Etheostichs* Add 8,
 Add 12 those] your D, Q finer] sinner EP flammes] flames
 D, Q, EP 37 Halberds, Cradles] Habberds cradles EP: Holbards
 Crudles Add 8, Add 12 38 Scisars] sizers D, Q 39 *Acrostichs*,]
Acrosticks, Q, D, EP : *Acrasticks*, Add 8, Add 12 : *Airostichs* ; N: A
 Crastich H and *Tele sticks*} and *Tellestichs* D, Q: *Thelestichs* EP:
 TAeteastcfcsAddS. Addi2: TeleastichesH on]oiD,Q,EP: zndAdd
 8, Add 12, H jumpe] fine Add 8, Add 12, H : Impt SI 40 Thou
 then hadst had] thou, then, hadst had N : Then thou hadst EP
 40 some colour] a colour Ed 41 On] Or N: and Add 8, Add 12, H
 thou'lt] thou wilt Add 8, Add 12, H 42 allay] a Lay D, Q 43
 there ;] theres Add 8: ther's Add 12 a om. N 44 then] than D, Q
 45 moneys] xnaskings N, SI, EP might] would D, Q 46 fame]
 fane N 47 Executioner : D, Q : Executioner, F 48 Or...
 power] or if thou wouldst enforce the power from her Add 8, Add 12, H
 would'st] wilt D : will Q

With some more thrift, and more varietie : 50
 Thou mightst have had me perish, piece, by piece,
 To light Tobacco, or save roasted Geese,
 Sindge Capons, or poore Pigges, dropping their eyes ;
 Condemn'd me to the Ovens with the pies ;
 And so, have kept me dying a whole age, 55
 Not ravish'd all hence in a minutes rage.
 But that's a marke, wherof thy Rites doe boast,
 To make consumption, ever, where thou go'st ;
 Had I fore-knowne of this thy least desire
 T'have held a Triumph, or a feast of fire, 60
 Especially in paper ; that, that steame
 Had tickled your large Nostrill: many a Reame
 To redeeme mine, I had sent in; Enough,
 Thou should'st have cry'd, and all beene proper stuffe.
 The *Talmud*, and the *Alcoran* had come, 65
 With pieces of the *Legend* ; The whole summe
 Of errant Knight-hood, with the(ir) Dames, and Dwarfes,
 The(ir) charmed Boates, and the(ir) enchanted Wharfes ;

50 more . . . varietie] more change, and tast of tyranny *N*, *SI*, *EP*
 more *om.* *H* thnft] thirst *D*, *Q* and more] and yet *Add8* ('yet'
 interlined as if an afterthought) : and *Add 12*, *H* 51 me] them
N, *EP*, *Add2* 52 snve] ha.ue *Add8*, *Add2*, *H* roasted] roasting *SI*,
EP Geese, *D*, *Q*: Geese *F*: geece, *N* 53 Sindge... eyes] Cloth
 Spices, or guard sweete meates from y^o flies *all MSS* Capons] Capon *Q*
 poore Pigges] crispe Pigges *D*: crispe Pigge *Q* 54 Condemn'd]
 condemne *H* me] them *D*, *Q*, *N*. *Add 8*, *Add 12*, *H*, *EP* the
 Ovens] the Ouen *SI* the pies] thy pyes *SI* 55 me] them *N*.
Add 8, *Add 12*, *H*, *SI*, *EP* 56 Not . . . rage] Not snatcht them
 hence in one poor minuits rage *SI* ('poor' interlined in a later hand)
 57 a] the *D*, *Q*, *N*, *Add 8*, *Add 12*, *H*, *SI*, *EP* Rites doe] right doth
D, *Q*: rites lde *Add8*, *Add 12* 58 make] sow *D*, *Q* consumption]
 propter *mam N*, *Add 8*, *Add 12*, *H*: Propter *Viam SI*: preater *mam EP*
 ever,] ever *F*: every *D*, *Q*, *Add5* 59 of this] but of *Add 8*, *Add 12*,
H 60 T'have] to haue *N* of fire] for fire *Ed* 61-2 that, . . .
 Reame] many a reame | Had filled your large nostrills with the steame :
SI (with 'Had' corrected to 'T'haue') 62 tickled] ticked *N* your . . .
 Nostrill] your . . . nostrills *EP*: thy . . . Nostrills *D*, *Q* 63 in;
 Enough] in; enough *D*, *Q*: in enough *F*: in Inough *N*: in. enough
Add 8, *Add 12*: in, Innough *EP* 64 should'st] should *EP* beene]
 bin *Q*: bn(= bin) *H*: in *EP*: fine *SI*: by *Add 8*, *Add 12* 65
Talmud] *Talmond I*, *Q* *Alcoran*] *Alcaron D*, *Q*, *N*, *SI*: *Alcoron H*:
Alicheron Add8: *Aichoran Add12* 67 errant] errand *N*, *EP* their
D, *Q* Dames] *Danes Add 8*, *Add 12* Dwarfes,] Dwarfes; *F*
 68 Their] their *N*: Ther *EP* Boates] beauty *SI*: Boars *Ed* their
D, *Q*: ther *EP*: th¹ *N*

- The *Tristrams*, *Lancelots*, *Turpins*, and the *Peers*,
 70 All the madde *Rolands*, and sweet *Oliveers* ;
 To *Merlins* *Marvailles*, and his *Caballs* losse,
 With the *Chimaera* of the *Rosie-Crosse*,
 Their *Scales*, their *Characters*, *Hermetique* rings,
 Their *Jemme* of *Riches*, and bright *Stone*, that brings
 75 *Invisibilitie*, and strength, and tongues :
 The art of kindling the true *Coale*, by *Lungs* :
 With *Nicholas Pasquill's*, *Meddle* with your match,
 And the strong lines, that so the time doe catch:
 Or *Captaine Pamp(k)lets* horse, and foot, that sallie
 80 Upon th'*Exchange*, still, out of *Popes-head-Alley* ;
 The weekly *Corrants*, with *Pauls* Seale ; and all
 Th'*admir'd* discourses of the *Prophet Ball*:
 These, had'st thou pleas'd either to dine, or sup,
 Had made a meale for *Vide an* to lick up.
 85 But in my *Deske*, what was there to accite
 So ravenous, and vast an appetite ?
 I dare not say a body, but some parts
 There were of search, and mastry in the Arts.

69 *Tristrams* D, N: *Tristram's* F: *Tristrums* Add 8, Add 12 : *Tristrams*
 Q (corrected in the Errata) *Peers*] *Peeres* D, Q, N : *Peer's* F 70
Olivers] *Oliver's* F: *Oiis* D, Q, Add 12, S1, EP 71 To] With D, 0, EP
Merlins *Marvailles*] *Martins* *Maruills* Add 8 : *Merlins* *Maruills* Add 12
 his] y N: the SI *Caballs*] *Cuballs* Add 8 : *Cubals* Add 12 : tables EP
 72 *Chimsera*] *Chimera* D, Q: *Chymera* Add 8, Add 12. H 73 *Scales*] *Charmes* D: *Charmes* Q 74 *Jemme*] *lems* Q: *gemmes* SI *bright*] *the* Add 8, Add xa there H 75 *tongues* :] *Tongues*, D, Q 76 *by*] *be* D: of EP *Lungs*:] *Lungs*, D, Q: *lungs* F 77 *Nicholas Pasquill's*, *Meddle*] *Nicholas Bretons meddle* Add 8: *Nycolas Bretons Medle* Add 12, H *Nicholas* om, SI EP 78 *that*] *which* SI so ... doe] *doe* the times *BoD.Q*: at times *do* EP *doe*] *doth* Add 8, Add xa *catch*: D, Q: *catch*, F 79 *Or*] *Our* D, N, Ed: *our* Add 8, Add ia: *Oure* H *Pamphlets* D, Q, ft MSS *Pamphlets* ... *sallie*] *Pamphletts*, horse and foote *doe* sally SI originally : *Pamphletts*, which on foote *doe* sally corr. SI *foot*,] *foot*; F: *foot* D: *Foot* Q 80 *th'*] *tht* D, Q, Add 8 still,] still F -Alley:] *Ally*; N: -Alley, D, Q: -Alley. F 81 *Corrants*] *Currants* D, Q: *currants* SI, EP *Pauls*] *Poules* Add 12, H: *Powles* Add 8 *Seale*] *stall* Add 8, Add ia 82 *Th'*] *The* D, Q: the N *Prophet*] *Profitt* Add ia : *Profit* H *Ball*:] *Baal*, D, Q: *ball* N 83 *These*, *hadst*.. sup,] *These* (*hadst*.., sup) D, Q *pleas'd*] *been* *pleas'd* EP 84 *made*] *bin* SI: *been* EP a] *fitt* SI *meale*] *meate* Q, SI. EP *Vulcan*] *Volcan* Add xa. H 85 in om. Add 8 *accite*] *excite* D, Q: *encite* SI originally : *envite* corr. SI 87 *say*] *say*, N 88 *were*] *was* SI *mastry*] *mystery* D: *mistry* Q in] of EP

All the old *Venusine*, in *Poetrie*,
 And lighted by the *Stagirite*, could spie, 90
 Was there mad(e) English : with a Grammar too,
 To teach some that, their Nurses could (not) doe,
 The puritie of Language ; and among
 The rest, my journey into *Scotland* song,
 With all th'adventures ; Three bookes not afraid 95
 To speake the fate of the *Sicilian* Maid
 To our owne Ladyes ; and in storie there
 Of our fift *Henry*, eight of his nine yeare ;
 Wherein was oyle, beside the succour spent,
 Which noble *Carew*, *Cotton*, *Selden* lent: 100
 And twice-twelve-yeares stor'd up humanitie,
 With humble Gleanings in Divinitie,
 After the Fathers, and those wiser Guides
 Whom Faction had not drawne to studie sides.
 How in these ruines, *Vulcan*, thou dost lurke, 105
 All soote, and embers I odious, as thy worke I
 I now begin to doubt, if ever Grace,
 Or Goddesse, could be patient of thy face.

89 All] And D, Q : With Add 8, Add 22: W H : what N, EP
 90 And] and F Stagirite N, H, SI: Stagerite F, Add 12: Stagyrte EP:
 Stageryte Add 8 : Stagarite D : Staggerite Q 91 made D, Q, 6
 all MSS a D, Q, and all MSS, except EP (which omits) : the F
 92 that] what SI not D, Q, and all MSS doe,] doe. F : doe ;
 A Q 93-4 among the rest,] (among the rest) D, Q 94 song]
 Sung D, Q : sung N 95 th'] the D, Q, Add 8, Add 12, H, SI
 95-7 not afraid . . . our owne] not amisse | Reveald (if some can
 iudge) of Argenis, | for our owne N : so Add 8, Add 12. H SI (reading
 if some do iudge), EP 96 Sicilian] Sycilian D, Q 97 To] For
 D, Q in storie] mistorye Add 8. Add 12 98 fift] fifth N, Ed
 eight] right Add 8, Add 12. H yeare] yeares SI 99, 100 Wherein
 . . . lent] Wherin (besides y noble aydes were lent, I By Carew, Cotton.
 Selden, oyle was spent N : so Add 8 and Add 12 (both reading 'Aydes
 were spent', 'Seldens oyle'), H (reading 'aydes were sent'), SI (reading
 'of Carew', 'oyles were spent'), EP (reading 'of Carew') 99 Wherein]
 In which D, Q beside] besides D, Q succour] succours D, Q 100
 Carew, Cotton . . . lent] Cotton, Carew . . . scnt D, Q 101 And] With
 N. SI twice- . . . humanitie] twice twelve years Stor'd-up-Humanity
 D, Q 102 With] And D, Q, N, Add 8, Add 22, H, SI. EP Divinitie,]
 Divinitie, D : Divinity, Q : Divinitie ; F 103 those] the SI
 originally 104 Faction] fashion EP drawne] taught N, Add
 8, H, SI, EP : tought Add 12 to om. Add 8 105 ruines, N ;
 mines F. D, Q Vulcan.] (Volean) Add 8, Add 12, H thou dost]
 dost thou D, Q N durst thou SI 106 embers I . . . worke I]
 Embers, . . . worke ? D, Q 108 of] at D, Q face.] face I N

Thou woo *Minerva* ! or to wit aspire I
 no 'Cause thou canst halt, with us, in Arts, and Fire !
 Sonne of the Wind ! for so thy mother gone
 With lust conceiv'd thee ; Father thou hadst none :
 When thou wert borne, and that thou look'st at best,
 She durst not kisse, but flung thee from her brest.
 115 And so did *Jove*, who ne're meant thee his Cup :
 No mar'le the Clownes of *Lemnos* tooke thee up,
 For none but Smiths would have made thee a God.
 Some Alchymist there may be yet, or odde
 Squire of the Squibs, against the Pageant day,
 120 May to thy name a *Vulcanale* say ;
 And for it lose his eyes with Gun-powder,
 As th¹ other may his braines with Quicksilver.
 Well fare the wise-men yet, on the *Banckside*,
 My friends, the Watermen ! They could provide
 125 Against thy furie, when to serve their needs,
 They made a *Vulcan* of a sheafe of Reedes,
 Whom they durst handle in their holy-day coates,
 And safely trust to dresse, not burne their Boates.
 But, O those Reeds ! thy meere disdaine of them,
 130 Made thee beget that cruell Stratagem,
 (Which, some are pleas'd to stile but thy madde pranck)
 Against the *Globe*, -the Glory of the *Banke*.

109 woo] woe *D, Q* : noe *Add 8* *Minerva* ! . . . , aspire !] *Minerva*, . . .
 aspire, *D, Q* : Minerua ? . . . aspire ? *N* no 'Cause... Fire !] Cause
 thou canst doe these halting tricks in fire ? *N* : so *SI, EP* us,] us -*F*
 Arts] Art *D, Q* 112 thou hadst] hadst thou *SI, EP* none *D, Q* :
 none *F* 113 that] when *EP* look'st] look'dst *G* 115 who]
 when *Q* (*corrected in the errata*) ne're] nere *N* : neare *Q* 116 *Lemnos*]
 lemn&s *H* up,] vp, *N* : up. *F, D, Q* 118 or odde] or odde : *Q* :
 or odd : *D, Ed* : or, odd *N* 119 of] oN against] vpon *N, SI, EP*
 the Pageant] the next Maiors *Add 8, Add 12, H* 120 *Vulcanale*] Pagan
 prayer *Add 8* : so *Add 12, H* 121 lose] loose *N* with] by *D, Q*
 122 th'other] the other *D, O, N, Add 8, Add 12, H* : other *EP*
 123 Well fare *D, Q, N, SI, EP* : Well-fare *F* : Well-faire *Add 8* :
 Wellfare *Add 12* : welfare *H* wise-men] wise men *D, Q, N, Add 12, H*
EP : Wisemen *Add 8, SI* : Wise man *F* yet om. *Add 8, Add 12, H*
Banckside] Banks side *D* : Banks-side *Q* 124 My] Our *D, Q, N, SI, EP*
 125 thei]tbem *Add 8, Add 12, H* 126 Fwcsn]Focan *Add 8, Add 12, H*
 of a] on a *D, Q* 127 holy-day] high day *SI, EP* 129 Reeds,] weedes ; *SI*
 thy] The *N, EP* 131, 133 Which,] Which *D, Q*
 131 stile] sile *EP* thy] the *EP* 132 *Banke*.} banke, *D, Q*

Which, though it were the Fort of the whole Parish,
 Flanck'd with a Ditch, and forc'd out of a Marish,
 I saw with two poore Chambers taken in, 135
 And raz'd, e're thought could urge, This might have bin!
 See the worlds Ruines ! nothing but the piles
 Left! and wit since to cover it with Tiles.
 The Brethren, they streight nois'd it out for Newes,
 Twas verily some Relique of the Stewes : 140
 And this a Sparkle of that fire let loose
 That was rak'd up in the *Winchestrian* Goose
 Bred on the *Banck*, in time of Poperie,
 When *Venus* there maintain'd the Misterie.
 But, others fell with that conceipt by the eares, 145
 And cry'd, it was a threatning to the beares ;
 And that accursed ground, the *Parish-Garden* :
 Nay, sigh'd a Sister, 'twas the Nun, *Kate Arden*,
 Kindled the fire ! But then, did one returne,
 No Foole would his owne harvest spoile, or burne ! 150
 If that were so, thou rather would'st advance
 The place, that was thy Wives inheritance.
 O no, cry'd all, *Fortune*, for being a whore,

133 were] was SI 134 Flanck'd] flacked Add 8: flack'd Add 12 :
 Fenc'd D, Q forc'd] forkt Q 135 m, D, Q : in F 136 raz'd,]
 razd, N, SI: raz'd ; F : rais'd D, Q : eas'd Add 8, Add 12, H : urge.]
 urge: D, Q This N : this D, Q, F bin D, Q, N, Add 8, Add 12, SI:
 beene F 139 The . . . Newes] There were, that streight did nose it
 out for newes N : so SI and EP (reading 'noyse it') : The brethren they
 streight ways nois'd out for newes Add 8, Add 22, H : nois'd] nos'd D
 140 Stewes : D, Q : Stewes, F : stewes, N 141 And this] and that
 5/: That this EP Sparkle . . . fire] sparke of the same fire EP:
 sparke of that same fire SI: a sparkle of a fire N 142 That] Which
 SI rak'd D, Q, N : raked Add 8, Add 12, H : rakt SI, EP : lock'd F
 144 the D, Q, and all MSS : in F 145 others] other EP fell Q:
 fell, F : fel N: fall D with] by EP that] the SI the eares]
 theares D, Q, SI 146 And cry'd, it was] and sayd twas sure N, SI,
 EP : 'T was verily D : Twas verily Q 147 accursed] prophaner
 N, SI, EP Parish-] parish N : Pans D, Q : pans EP 148 Nay
 . . . Sister,] Nay, sigh'd, ah Sister F : Nay, (sigh'd a sister) D, Q : Nay
 sigh'd a Sister Add 8, Add 12, H: Nay sayth a sister, SI: Nay sithd a
 sister EP : Nay sighe a sister ; N 'twas the Nun] venus Nun N :
 Venus Nunne SI: Venus nunne EP Arden, N : Arden F, D, Q
 149 But then, N : but then D, Q : But, then F 150 burne I]
 burne; D: burn; Q 151 that] it si, EP were] was EP 152 place]
 Plot N : 50 SI, EP thy] the Add 8 153 all. D. Q. N : all. F

- Scap'd not his Justice any jot the more :
 155 He burnt that Idoll of the *Revels* too :
 Nay, let *White-Hall* with *Revels* have to doe,
 Though but in daunces, it shall know his power ;
 There was a Judgement shew'n too in an houre.
 Hee is true *Vulcan* still! He did not spare
 160 *Troy*, though it were so much his *Venus* care.
 Foole, wilt thou let that in example come ?
 Did not she save from thence, to build a *Rome* ?
 And what hast thou done in these pettie spights,
 More then advane^d the houses, and their rites ?
 165 I will not argue thee, from those, of guilt,
 For they were burnt, but to be better built.
 'Tis true, that in thy wish they were destroy'd,
 Which thou hast only vented, not enjoy'd.
 So would'st th(ou)'have run upon the *Rolls* by stealth,
 170 And didst invade part of the Common-wealth,
 In those Records, which, were all Chronicle(r)s gone,
 Will be remembred by *Six Clerkes*, to one.
 But say, all sixe good men, what answer yee ?
 Lyes there no Writ, out of the *Chancerie*,
 175 Against this *Vulcan* ? No Injunction ?

154 Scap'd] Scape N' his] this Add 8. Add 12, H: thy SI, EP jot] whitt SI: white EP 156 Nay,] Scarce SI, EP 157 daunces] daunger SI shall] should Add 8, Add 12. H' his] thy D, Q, N, SI, EP: high H 158 shew'n too] too shew'd D. Q 159 Hee is] He was D. Q: Thou art all MSS true] right D, Q He did] Thou didst N. Add 12, H: thou durst Add 8: thou didd SI: thou dist EP 160 were] was SI so om. EP his] thy D, Q, and all MSS care] ioycare Add 12 162 not she] she not D. Q, H a] at Add 8, Add 12 Rome] Room Add 8, Add 12 163 done] done, N 164 advanc'd] advance AT houses] horses Q (corrected in the errata). rites] rights SI 165 from those,] from those F: from them D, Q, N EP: Iron. Them (originally 'Theme') SI 166 be om. Add 8 169 thou'have] thou haue N, Add 8, Add 12, SI upon] on EP 171 Records . . . gone] Records (which were our Chroniclers gone) D: Records (which were our Chroniclers gone) Q all Chroniclers] all Chroniclers N ('Chronicles' originally), SI: all chronoclers EP: all Chronicles F. Add 8. Add 12. H which,] which F 172 Will] Would D, Q 173 But say. all sixe good men N: But say all sixe good men D, Q: so Add 8, Add 12. SI, EP: But, say all sixe. Good Men F. H 174 Ckancerie,] Chancene F, Q: Chancery, N: Chancerie, D 175 Vulcan f Volcan ; Add 8. Add 12

No order ? no Decree ? Though we be gone
 At *Common-Law* : me thinkes in his despight
 A Court of *Equitie* should doe us right,
 But to confine him to the Brew-houses,
 The Glasse-house, Dye-fats, and their Fornaces ; 180
 To live in Sea-coale, and goe forth in smoake ;
 Or lest that vapour might the Citie choake,
 Condemne him to the Brick-kills, or some Hill-
 foot (out in *Sussex*) to an iron Mill ;
 Or in small Fagots have him blaze about 185
 Vile Tavernes, and the Drunkards pisse him out ;
 Or in the BiU-Mans Lanthorne, like a spie,
 Burne to a snuffe, and then stinke out, and die :
 I could invent a sentence, yet were worse ;
 But Tie conclude all in a civill curse. 190
 Pox on your flameship, *Vulcan* ; if it be
 To all as fatall as 't hath beene to me,
 And to *Pauls-Steeple* ; which was unto us
 'Bove all your Fire-workes, had at *Ephesus*,
 Or *Alexandria* ; and though a Divine 195
 Losse, remaines yet, as unrepair'd as mine.

176 order] Orders D: Orders Q 177 -Law :] Law, D. Q, N
 me] Me F his] this 51, EP 178 *Equitie*] aequitie N doe us] haue
 done EP right,] right. F, D, Q 180 The... Fornaces] the Dyers.
 Glasshouse and the furnaces Add 8. Add 12, H: The glasse-howses and
 their furnaces SI Furnaces] furnaces N, EP: Furnaces D, Q 181
 forth] out D. Q. SI 182 Or] Or, N that vapour might] the vapors
 should SI, EP 183 Condemne] Confine D, Q 183-5 Brick-kills...
 about] *Brckills* or a forge | some 4 myles hence and haue him there
 disgorge | or else in penny faggotts blaze aboute Add 8, Add 12, H
 183 the Brick-kills] the Brick-hills N: some Brickhills D. Q: the brick
 kills EP 184 (out in *sussex*)] out in . EP (the scribe being un-
 able to read the word) an] some SI 185 Or] Or, N 186
 the] haue H, Add 8, Add 12 187 Lanthorne, D. Q: Lanthorne F:
 Lanterne N 188 Burne] Waste D, Q: wast N, EP die:] die. N
 189 were] more D. Q. Add 8, Add 12, H 190 curse.] curse: D, Q, N
 191 your flameship . . . be] the fire workes. Volcan, if they be Add 8,
 Add 12 : so H (reading 'yor fire workes') 192 fatall] chargefull
 Add 8, Add 12, H 't hath] they haue Add 8, H : they'haue Add 12
 193-5 was unto us . . . *Alexandria*; and not in Add 8, Add 12, H
 193 was unto] had bin to D : had beene to Q 194 'Bove all] Beyond
 EP your] our N : the SI at] not Q 195 and] ant N : which D, Q
 though] (though D : through Add 8. Add 12 196 Losse, D, N:
 Losse F, Q remaines yet,] yet remaines Q : yet) remaines D
 unrepair'd] much despair'd Add 8, Add 12, H

Would you had kept your Forge, at *Ætna* still,
And there made Swords, Bills, Glaves, and Armes your
fill;

Maintain'd the trade at *Bilbo*, or else-where ;

200 Strooke in at *Millan* with the Cutlers there ;
Or stay'd but where the Fryar, and you first met,
Who from the Divels-Arse did Guns beget;
Or fixt in the *Low-Country's*, where you might
On both sides doe your mischiefes with delight;
205 Blow up, and ruine, myne, and countermyne,
Make your Petards, and Granats, all your fine
Engines of Murder, and receive the praise
Of massacring Man-kind so many wayes.

We aske your absence here, we all love peace,

210 And pray the fruites thereof, and the increase ;
So doth the *King*, and most of the *Kings men*
That have good places : therefore once agen,
Pox on thee, *Vulcan*, thy *Pandora's* pox,
And all the Evils that flew out of her box

215 Light on thee : Or if those plagues will not doo,
Thy Wives pox on thee, and *B(ess) B(roughton)s* too.

197 at] and H, Add 8 *Ætna*] *Atna* N : *Etna* SI 198 Glaves]
claves Add 8. Add 12 : glanes N fill; D, Q : fill F 199 at] of SI
Bilbo, D, Q : *Bilbo*. F, N : *Bilboa* Add 8, Add 12 200 Cutlers] villors
EP 201 Or stay'd] And staid D : Stay'd SI but om. Q 202 Who
.. . beget] who with the Diuell did *Ordinance* begett Add 8, Add 12, H
Who] That D. Q : that, N. EP beget; N : beget: Q, D : beget, E
203-4 might . . . sides] might, . . . sides, N 204 mischiefes]
mischiefe N : mischeif Add 8, Add 12, H 205-8 Blow . . . wayes]
Blow up and ruine and enioy the prayse | Of murdering of mankind
many ways SI ('of interlined in a later hand') : Blow vp and ruine, and
enioy with praise | of masacnng mankinde soe many ways EP 206
Make] Vse£, Q Petards] *Petzrs*Add8, Add 12. Q Granats] Granads
D, N : garnetts Add '8. Add 12, H 207 receive the] enioy the D, N :
inioy the Q 208 Man-kind] Mankinde, N 209 aske] craue SI, EP
210 truites] fruit SI 212 places] fortunes N therefore] where-
fore SI 213 thee,] thee F *Vulcan,*] (*Volcan*) Add 8, Add 12 :
(volcan)H 214 the Evils] the evils, N : the ills D, Q : those ills
EP 215 on] vpon N Or] and SI, EP 216 Wives] wives H :
wiSesAddS Addia.H on] take D, Q Bess (*Bes, Besse*) Brcushions
D, Q and all MSS : B. Bs. F

XLIV.

A speach according to Horace.

WHy yet, my noble hearts, they cannot say,
 But we have Powder still for the Kings Day,
 And Ord¹nance too : so much as from the Tower
 T'have wak'd, if sleeping, *Spaines* Ambassadour,
 Old *jEsopo Gundomar* : the French can tell, 5
 For they did see it the last tilting well,
 That we have Trumpets, Armour, and great Horse,
 Launces, and men, and some a breaking force.
 They saw too store of feathers, and more may,
 If they stay here, but till Saint *Georges* Day. 10
 All Ensignes of a Warre, are not yet dead,
 Nor markes of wealth so from our Nation fled,
 But they may see Gold-Chaines, and Pcarle worne then,
 Lent by the *London* Dames, to the Lords men ;
 Withall, the dirtie paines those Citizens take, 15
 To see the Pride at Court, their Wives doe make :
 And the returne those thankful! Courtiers yeeld,
 To have their Husbands drawne forth to the field,
 And comming home, to tell what acts were done
 Under the Auspice of young *Swynnerton*. 20
 What a strong Fort old *Pimblicoe* had bin !
 How it held out! how (last) 'twas taken in !
 Well, I say, thrive, thrive brave Artillerie yard,
 Thou Seed-plot of the warre, that hast not spar'd
 Powder, or paper, to bring up the youth 25
 Of *London*, in the Militarie truth,
 These ten yeares day ; As all may sweare that looke
 But on thy practise, and the Posture booke :
 He that but saw thy curious Captaines drill,
 Would thinke no more of *Vlushing*, or the *Brill*: 30

xlv. i yet, . . . hearts,] yet . . . hearts *F* 4 Ambassadour, *Fj* :
 Ambassadour *F* 15 Withall.] *Query* With all 17 yeeld,]
 yeeld *F* : yield, *Fj* 21 bin] beene *F* 23 say,] say *F*-

- But give them over to the common eare
 For that unnecessarie Charge they were.
 Well did thy craftie Clerke, and Knight, Sir *Hugh*,
 Supplant bold *Pant on*; and brought there to view
 35 Translated *Mlians*) tactickes to be read,
 And the Greeke Discipline (with the moderne) shed
 So, in that ground, as soone it grew to be
 The Cittie-Question, whether *Tilly*, or he,
 Were now the greater Captaine ? for they saw
 40 The *Berghen* siege, and taking in *Breda*,
 So acted to the life, as *Maurice* might,
 And *Spinola* have blushed at the sight.
 O happie Art! and wise Epitome
 Of bearing Armes I most civill Soldierie I
 45 Thou canst draw forth thy forces, and fight drie
 The Battells of thy Aldermanitie ;
 Without the hazard of a drop of blood,
 More then the surfets, in thee, that day stood.
 Goe on, increase in vertue ; and in fame :
 50 And keepe the Glorie of the English name,
 Up among Nations. In the stead of bold
Beauchamps, and *Nevills*, *Cliffords*, *Audleys* old ;
 Waller Insert thy *Hodges*, and those newer men,
 As *Stiles*, *Dike*, *Ditchfield*, *Millar*, *Crips*, and *Fen* :
 55 That keepe the warre, though now't be growne more tame,
 Alive yet, in the noise ; and still the same ;
 And could (if our great men would let their Sonnes
 Come to their Schooles,) show 'hem the use of Guns ;
 And there instruct the noble English heires
 60 In Politique, and Militar Affaires.
 But he that should perswade, to have this done
 For education of our Lordings ; soone
 Should he (not) heare of billow, wind, and storme,

32 were. F3 : were F 33 *Hugh*, FS : *Hugh* F 35 *Elia*n's/ *Elia*n's G
 40 *Breda*] *Bredau* W 47 blood,] blood : F
 52 *Audleys*] *Audley's* F 53 men,] men. F: Men. F3 55
 tame,] tame F 56 same,] same F 58 Guns,] Guns. F
 60 Affaires,] Affaires; F 62 soone] Soone F 63 not G

From the Tempestuous Grandlings, Who'll informe
 Us, in our bearing, that are thus, and thus, 65
 Borne,, bred, allied ? what's he dare tutor us ?
 Are we by Booke-wormes to be awde ? must we
 Live by their Scale, that dare doe nothing free ?
 Why are we rich, or great, except to show
 All licence in our lives ? What need we know, 70
 More then to praise a Dog ? or Horse ? or speake
 The Hawking language ? or our Day to breake
 With Citizens ? let Clownes, and Tradesmen breed
 Their Sonnes to studie Arts, the Lawes, the Creed :
 We will beleeve, like men of our owne Ranke, 75
 In so much land a yeare, or such a Banke,
 That turnes us so much moneys, at which rate
 Our Ancestors impos'd on Prince and State.
 Let poore Nobilitie be vertuous : Wee,
 Descended in a rope of Titles, be 80
 From *Guy*, or *Bevis*, *Arthur*, or from whom
 The Herald will. Our blood is now become
 Past any need of vertue. Let them care,
 That in the Cradle of their Gentry are ;
 To serve the State by Councels, and by Armes : 85
 We neither love the Troubles, nor the harmes.
 What love you then ? your whore. What study ? gate,
 Carriage, and dressing. There is up of late
 The Academic, where the Gallants meet—
 What, to make legs ? yes, and to smell most sweet, 90
 All that they doe at Playes. O, but first here
 They learne and studie ; and then practise there.
 But why are all these Irons i' the fire
 Of severall makings ? helps, helps, t(o)^f attire
 His Lordship. That is for his'Band, his haire 95
 This, and that box his Beautie to repaire ;
 This other for his eye-browes ; hence, away,

64 Who'll] who'll F Clownes; F : Clowns. become, F late ? F	70 know,] know ? F F3 75 beleeve,] beleeve F 87 whore. What] whore ? what F 90 What.] What F	73 Cfownes,] 82 become] 88 late F3 :

I may no longer on these pictures stay,
 These Carkasses of honour ; Taylors blocks,
 100 Cover'd with Tissue, whose prosperitie mocks
 The fate of things : whilst totter'd vertue holds
 Her broken Armes up, to their emptie moulds.

XLV.

An "Epistle to Master
Arth: Squib.

WHat I am not, and what I faine would be,
 Whilst I infoftne my selfe, I would teach thee,
 My gentle *Arthur*; that it might be said
 One lesson we have both learn¹d, and well read ;
 5 I neither am, nor art thou one of those
 That hearkens to a Jacks-pulse, when it goes.
 Nor ever trusted to that friendship yet,
 Was issue of the Taverne, or the Spit:
 Much lesse a name would we bring up, or nurse,
 10 That could but claime a kindred from the purse.
 Those are poore Ties, depend on those false ends,
 'Tis vertue alone, or nothing, that knits friends :
 And as within your Office, you doe take
 No piece of money, but you know, or make
 15 Inquirie of the worth : So must we doe,
 First weigh a friend, then touch, and trie him too :
 For there are many slips, and Counterfeits.
 Deceit is fruitfull. Men have Masques and nets,
 But these with wearing will themselves unfold :
 20 They cannot last. No lie grew ever old.
 Turne him, and see his Threds : looke, if he be
 Friend to himselfe, that would be friend to thee.
 For that is first requir'd, A man be his owne.
 But he that's too-much that, is friend of none.
 25 Then rest, and a friends value uvnderstand,
 It is a richer Purchase then of land.

xl. 7 friendship] friendship, *F* originally yet,] yet *F* //
 ends,] ends *F* originally 12 nothing,] nothing *F* 25 uvnder-
 stand,] uvnderstand *F*

XLVI.

*An Epigram on Sir Edward Coke, when he was
Lord chiefe lustice of England.*

HE that should search all Glories of the Gowne,
 And steps of all rais'd servants of the Crowne,
 He could not find, then thee, of all that store
 Whom Fortune aided lesse, or Vertue more.
 Such, *Coke*, were thy beginnings, when thy good 5
 In others-evill best was uvnderstood :
 When, being the Strangers helpe, the poore mans aide,
 Thy just defences made th'oppressor afraid.
 Such was thy Processe, when Intcgritie,
 And skill in thee, now, grew Authoritie ; 10
 That Clients strove, in Question of the Lawes,
 More for thy Patronage, then for their Cause,
 And that thy strong and manly Eloquence
 Stood up thy Nations fame, her Crownes defence.
 And now such is thy stand ; while thou dost deale 15
 Desired Justice to the publike Weale,
 Like *Solons* selfe ; explat'st the knottie Lawes
 With endlesse labours, whilst thy learning drawes
 No lesse of praise, then readers in all kinds
 Of worthiest knowledge, that can take mens minds. 20
 Such is thy All; that (as I sung before)
 None Fortune aided lesse, or Vertue more.
 Of if Chance must, to each man that doth rise,
 Needs lend an aide, to thine she had her eyes.

xlvi. I HE] HHE *F originally* 2 Crowne,] Crowne *F* 3
 thee,] thee *F* 4 Vertue more.] vertue more, *F* 7 mans corr. *F* :
mm F originally 14 defence.] defence, *F* 16 Weale,] Weale
F : Weal, F3 23 rise,] rise *F*

XLVII.

*An Epistle answering to one that
asked to be Sealed of the
Tribe of BEN.*

- M**En that are safe, and sure, in all they doe,
Care not what trials they are put unto ;
They meet the fire, the Test, as Martyrs would ;
And though Opinion stampe them not, are gold.
5 I could say more of such, but that I flie
To speake my selfe out too ambitiously,
And shewing so weake an Act to vulgar eyes,
Put conscience and my right to compromise.
Let those that meerely talke, and never thinke,
10 That live in the wild Anarchic of Drinke,
Subject to quarrell only ; or else such
As make it their proficiencie, how much
They'(h)ave glutted in, and letcher'd out that weeke,
That never yet did friend, or friendship seeke
15 But for a Sealing : let these men protest.
Or th'other on their borders, that will jeast
On all Soules that are absent ; even the dead ;
Like flies, or wormes, which mans corrupt parts fed :
That to speake well, thinke it above all sinne,
20 Of any Companie but that they are in,
Call every night to Supper in these fitts,
And are received for the Covey of Witts ;
That censure all the Towne, and all th¹affaires,
And know whose ignorance is more then theirs ;
25 Let these men have their wayes, and take their times
To vent their Libels, and to issue rimes,
I have no portion in them, nor their deale
Of newes they get, to strew out the long meale,

xlvii. 4 them not, corr. F them, not F originally gold.] gold, F
7 eyes,] eyes ; F : Eyes ; F3 8 compromise] compromise F, F3
10 Drinke,] Drinke F : Drink. F3 17 dead ;] dead F 22
received] receiv'd F

I studie other friendships, and more one,
 Then these can ever be ; or else wish none. 30
 What is't to me whether the French Designe
 Be, or be not, to get the *Val-telline* ?
 Or the States Ships sent forth belike to meet
 Some hopes of *Spaine* in their West-Indian Fleet ?
 Whether the Dispensation yet be sent, 35
 Or that the Match from *Spaine* was ever meant ?
 I wish all well, and pray high heaven conspire
 My Princes safetie, and my Kings desire,
 But if, for honour, we must draw the Sword,
 And force back that, which will not be restor'd, 40
 I have a body, yet, that spirit drawes
 To live, or fall a Carkasse in the cause.
 So farre without inquirie what the States,
Brunsfild, and *Mansfield* doe this yeare, my fates
 Shall carry me at Call; and Tie be well, 45
 Though I doe neither heare these newes, nor tell
 Of *Spaine* or *France* ; or were not prick¹d downe one
 Of the late Mysterie of reception,
 Although my Fame, to his, not uvnder-heares,
 That guides the Motions, and directs the beares. 50
 But that's a blow, by which in time I may
 Lose all my credit with my Christmas Clay,
 And animated *Pare'lane* of the Court,
 I, and for this neglect, the courser sort
 Of earthen Jarres, there may molest me too : 55
 Well, with mine owne fraile Pitcher, what to doe
 I have decreed ; keepe it from waves, and presse ;
 Lest it be justled, crack¹d, made nought, or lesse :
 Live to that point I will, for which I am man,
 And dwell as in my Center, as I can, 60
 Still looking to, and ever loving heaven ;
 With reverence using all the gifts then(ce) given.

39 if,] if F
 59 will, F3 : will; F
 62 thence G

42 fall] fall, F
 60 can. F3 : can F

58 crack'd.] crack'd F
 61 to] too F

- 'Mongst which, if I have any friendships sent,
 Such as are square, wel-tagde, and permanent,
 65 Not built with Canvasse, paper, and false lights,
 As are the Glorious Scenes, at the great sights ;
 And that there be no fev'ry heats, nor colds,
 Oylie Expansions, or shrunke durtie folds,
 But all so cleare, and led by reasons flame,
 70 As but to stumble in her sight were shame;
 These I will honour, love, embrace, and serve :
 And free it from all question to preserve.
 So short you read my Character, and theirs
 I would call mine, to which not many Staires
 75 Are asked to climbe. First give me faith, who know
 My selfe a little. I will take you so,
 As you have writ your selfe. Now stand, and then,
 Sir, you are Sealed of the Tribe of *Ben*.

XLVIII.

*The Dedication of the Kings new Cellar.**To Bacchus.*

- S**ince, *Bacchus*, thou art father
 Of Wifies, to thee the rather
 We dedicate this Cellar,
 Where now, thou art made Dweller;
 5 And scale thee thy Commission :
 But 'tis with a condition,
 That thou remaine here taster
 Of all to the great Master.
 And looke unto their faces,
 10 Their Qualities, and races,
 That both, their odour take him,
 And relish merry make him.

xlvi. 63 sent,] sent *F* 65 lights, *F3* : lights *F* 70 shame ;]
 shame. *F* 77 then,] then *F*
 xlviii. *Cellar. To*] *Cellar to* *FS* 4 now *G* : new *F*, *F3*

For, *Bacchus*, thou art freer
 Of cares, and over-seer
 Of feast, and merry meeting, 15
 And still begin'st the greeting :
 See then thou dost attend him,
Lyceus, and defend him,
 By all the Arts of Gladnesse,
 From any thought like sadnesse. 20
 So mayst thou still be younger
 Then *Phoebus* ; and much stronger
 To give mankind their eases,
 And cure the Worlds diseases :
 So may the Muses follow 25
 Thee still, and leave *Apollo*,
 And thinke thy streame more quicker
 Then *Hippocrenes* liquor :
 And thou make many a Poet,
 Before his braine doe know it; 30
 So may there never Quarrell
 Have issue from the Barrell;
 But *Venus* and the Graces
 Pursue thee in all places,
 And not a Song be other 35
 Then *Cupid*, and his Mother.
 That when King *James*, above here,
 Shall feast it, thou maist love there
 The causes and the Guests too,
 And have thy tales and jests too, 40
 Thy Circuits, and thy Rounds free,
 As shall the feasts faire grounds be.
 Be it he hold Communion
 In great Saint *Georges* Union ;
 Or gratulates the passage 45
 Of some wel-wrought Embassage :

13 For, *Bacchus*,] For *Bacchus* F 14 over-seer] over-seer, F
 16 begin'st corr. F : beginst F originally 17 him,] him F 18
Lyceus] *Lyceus* F 19 Gladnesse,] Gladnesse F 26 *Apollo*. F3 :
Apollo F 37 here,] here F 41 free,] free F

- Whereby he may knit sure up
 The wished Peace of *Europe* :
 Or else a health advances,
 50 To put his Court in dances,
 And set us all on skipping,
 When with his royall shipping
 The narrow Seas are shadie,
 And *Charles* brings home the Ladie.

Accessit fervor Capiti, Numerusfi Lucernis.

XLIX.

An Epigram

on

The Court Pucell

- D**O's the Court-Pucell then so censure me,
 And thinkes I dare not her ? let the world see.
 What though her Chamber be the very pit
 Where fight the prime Cocks of the Game, for wit ?
 5 And that as any are strooke, her breath creates
 New in their stead, out of the Candidates ?
 What though with Tribade lust she force a Muse,
 And in an Epiccene fury can write newes
 Equall with that, which for the best newes goes,
 10 As aerie light, and as like wit as those ?
 What though she talke, and cannot once with them,
 Make State, Religion, Bawdrie, all a theame ?
 And as lip-thirstie, in each words expence,
 Doth labour with the Phrase more then the sense ?
 15 What though she ride two mile on Holy-dayes
 To Church, as others doe to Feasts and Playes,
 To shew their Tires ? to view, and to be view'd ?
 What though she be with Velvet gownes indu'd,

xlx. 8 Epiccene] Epicene *F* 9 goes,] goes *F* n cannot
 once] can at once *E. M. Simpson conj.* 12 theame ?] theame. *F*

And spangled Petticotes brought forth to eye,
 As new rewards of her old secrecie ? 20
 What though she hath won on Trust, as many doe,
 And that her truster feares her ? Must I too ?
 I never stood for any place : my wit
 Thinkes it selfe nought, though she should valew it.
 I am no States-man, and much lesse Divine, 25
 For bawdry, 'tis her language, and not mine.
 Farthest I am from the Idolatrie
 To stufes and Laces, those my Man can buy.
 And trust her I would least, that hath forswore
 In Contract twice, what can shee perjure more ? 30
 Indeed, her Dressing some man might delight,
 Her face there's none can like by Candle light.
 Not he, that should the body have, for Case
 To his poore Instrument, now out of grace.
 Shall I advise thee, *Pucell* ? steale away 35
 From Court, while yet thy fame hath some small day ;
 The wits will leave you, if they once perceive
 You cling to Lords, and Lords, if them you leave
 For Sermoneeres : of which now one, now other,
 They say you weekly invite with fits o'th' Mother, 40
 And practise for a Miracle ; take heed
 This Age would lend no faith to *Dorrels* Deed;
 Or if it would, the Court is the worst place,
 Both for the Mothers, and the Babes of grace,
 For there the wicked in the Chaire of scorne, 45
 Will cal't a Bastard, when a Prophet's borne.

20 secrecie ? F3 : secrecie I F 25 Divine,] Divine F 35 thee,]
 thee F 42 *Dorrels*] *Darrels* G

L.

An "Epigram.
To the honoured
——Countesse of——

THE Wisdome, Madam, of your private Life,
 Wherewith this while you live a widow'd wife,
 And the right wayes you take unto the right,
 To conquer rumour, and triumph on sight;
 5 Not only shunning by your act, to doe
 Ought that is ill, but the suspicion too,
 Is of so brave example, as he were
 No friend to vertue, could be silent here.
 The rather when the vices of the Time
 10 Are growne so fruitfull, and false pleasures climbe,
 By all oblique Degrees, that killing height
 From whence they fall, cast downe with their owne weight.
 And though all praise bring nothing to your name,
 Who (herein studying conscience, and not fame)
 15 Are in your selfe rewarded ; yet 'twill be
 A cheerefull worke to all good eyes, to see
 Among the daily Ruines that fall foule,
 Of State, of fame, of body, and of soule,
 So great a Vertue stand upright to view,
 20 As makes *Penelopes* old fable true,
 Whilst your *Ulisses* hath taⁿe leave to goe,
 Countries, and Climes, manners, and men to know.
 Only your time you better entertaine,
 Then the great *Homers* wit, for her, could faine ;
 25 For you admit no companie, but good,
 And when you want those friends, or neere in blood,
 Or your Allies, you make your bookes your friends,
 And studie them unto the noblest ends,

1. Title——Countesse of——] Countess of Rutland F. *Cunningham*
 conj. I Wisdome, Madam.] Wisdome Madam F 2 Wliere-
 with] Where with F widow'd] widowed F 10 climbe.] climbe F
 22 Climes.] Climes F

Searching for knowledge, and to keepe your mind
 The same it was inspir'd, rich, and refin'd. 30
 These Graces, when the rest of Ladyes view
 Not boasted in your life, but practis'd true,
 As they are hard, for them to make their owne,
 So are they profitable to be knowne :
 For when they find so many meet in one, 35
 It will be shame for them, if they have none.

LI.

Lord B A C O N S Birth-day.

HAile, happie *Genius* of this antient pile !
 How comes it all things so about the(e) smile ?
 The fire, the wine, the men ! and in the midst,
 Thou stand'st as if some *Mysterie* thou did'st 1
 Pardon, I read it in thy face, the day 5
 For whose returnes, and many, all these pray :
 And so doe I. This is the sixtieth yeare
 Since *Bacon*, and thy Lord was borne, and here ;
 Sonne to the grave wise Keeper of the Scale,
 Fame, and foundation of the English Weale. 10
 What then his Father was, that since is nee,
 Now with a Title more to the Degree ;
Englands high Chancellor : the destin'd heire
 In his soft Cradle to his Fathers Chaire,
 Whose even Thred the Fates spinne round, and full, 15
 Out of their Choysiest, and their whitest wooll.
 'Tis a brave cause of joy, let it be knowne,
 For^ft were a narrow gladnesse, kept thine owne.
 Give me a deep-crown'd-Bowle, that I may sing
 In raysing him the wisdome of my King. 20

lii. Poem by Burlace. *In D, Q, Ed. In Add 17 f. 58, 'Burlase y^o painter to B: I: ypoet; Nf. 41 b. 'The Paynter to y Poet'; H6 f. 62 b, 'Burlace the painter To Ben: lonhson'; Hy f. 58, 'Burlace yPainter to B: I: the Poett'; SI 4f. 119 6, 'Burlasse yPainter to B. I. ypoet'¹. 2 And . . . but] Were I a Hy : And were a Add Painter] Painter, Q.N 4 skill] art D, £ my?] my D, Q. N. Add, S I p e n w i l l t i r e] p e n n s a t r y e r H 6: p e n n e ' s a t r y e r H ? : p e n n ' s y t r y e r S I : p e n ' s a l y a r Add 7 here] N : here ? F or] and D, Q 8 when as] whereas D. Q 9 Cheater !] Cheater ? F //*

Digression,] digression, D, Q : Digression F : discession Add
My Answer. . . Painter] *In D, Q, Ed. 'BEN JONSON The Poet, to the Painter'. In Add 17 f. 59. 'Ben lonson to yPainter'; Nf. 42, 'The Poet to y Paynter'¹ ; H6 f. 63, 'Ben: Johnsons Reply'; H7 f. 58. 'The Poett to the Painter'; S. 119 &, 'B. I. to thepaynter'; RPjf.b, 'B. Johnson, to Burlace the Painter', lines 1-15 i 'Why ?] Why D, Q seeme] Add, H6, H7, SI, RP 3 are] bee SI wherewith] where Add: by which H6 : w w RP might be] may be H6, SI : am RP: be' H6*

LIII.

An Epigram.

To

WILLIAM, Earle of Newcastle.

- W**hen first, my Lord, I saw you backe your horse,
 Provoke his mettall, and command his force
 To all the uses of the field, and race,
 Me thought I read the ancient Art of *Thrace*;
 5 And saw a Centaure, past those tales of *Greece* ;
 So seem'd your horse and you, both of a peece !
 You shew'd like *Perseus* upon *Pegasus*;
 Or *Castor* mounted on his *Cyllarus*:
 Or what we heare our home-borne Legend tell,
 10 Of bold Sir *Bevis*, and his *Arundell* :
 Nay, so your Seate his beauties did endorse,
 As I began to wish my selfe a horse.
 And surely had I but your Stable scene
 Before, I thinke my wish absolv'd had beene.
 15 For never saw I yet the Muses dwell,
 Nor any of their houshold, halfe so well.
 So well! as when I saw the floore, and Roome,
 I look'd for *Hercules* to be the Groome :
 And cri'd, Away with the *Casarian* bread,
 20 At these Immortall Mangers *Virgil* fed.

liii. In D, Q. Ed, ' To William Earle of New-Castle on the backing of his Horse'. In N f. 40, 'To the Right Honorable William viscount Mansfield: On his Horsemanship, and Stable'. To WILLIAM] To, WILLIAM F i first. D.Q.N: first F 2 mettall] mettle D. Q 5 Centaure,] Centaure D, Q past . . . Greece ;] (past. . . Greece) N Greece ; D, Q : Greece, ¥ 6 horse and you,] horse . . . You, D. Q (Horse Q): horse ; and you F a peece I] apeece : D, Q: one peece. N 8 Cyllarus] Ctlarus D, Q n Nay,] And D, Q 12 horse. D, Q'. Horse. N: horse: F 14 Before, D, Q, N: Before: F my]y«JV 15 saw I yet] yet, saw I N 16 Nor] Or AT houshold,] Houshold, N : household F 17 saw] view'd N Roome,] Roome F : roome, D. Q : Roome ; N 18 Hercules] Hercules. N 19 Away N : away, D, Q : away, F

LIV.

Epistle

To AT. ARTHUR SQUIB.

I Am to dine, Friend, where I must be weigh'd
 For a just wager, and that wager paid
 If I doe lose it: And, without a Tale,
 A Merchants Wife is Regent of the Scale.
 Who, when shee heard the match, concluded streight, 5
 An ill commoditie ! T must make good weight.
 So that upon the point, my corporall feare
 Is, she will play Dame Justice, too severe ;
 And hold me to it close ; to stand upright
 Within the ballance ; and not want a mite ; 10
 But rather with advantage to be found
 Full twentie stone ; of which I lack two pound :
 That's six in silver ; now within the Socket
 Stinketh my credit, if into the Pocket
 It doe not come : One piece I have in store, 15
 Lend me, deare *Arthur*, for a weeke five more,
 And you shall make me good, in weight, and fashion,
 And then to be return'd ; on protestation
 To goe out after——till when take this letter
 For your securitie. I can no better. 20

LV.

To

M IOHN SURGES.

Would God, my? *Burges*, I could thinke
 Thoughts worthy of thy gift, this Inke,
 Then would I promise here to give
 Verse, that should thee, and me out-live.

- 5 But since the Wine hath steep'd my braine,
 I only can the Paper staine ;
 Yet with a Dye, that feares no Moth,
 But Scarlet-like out-lasts the Cloth.

LVI.

Epistle.

To my Lady C o v E L L.

- Y**OU won not Verses, Madam, you won mee,
 When you would play so nobly, and so free.
 A booke to a few lynes : but, it was fit
 You won them too, your oddes did merit it.
 5 So have you gain'd a Servant, and a Muse :
 The first of which, I feare, you will refuse ;
 And you may justly, being a tardie, cold,
 Unprofitable Chattel!, fat and old,
 Laden with Bellie, and doth hardly approach
 10 His friends, but to breake Chaires, or cracke a Coach.
 His weight is twenty Stone within two pound ;
 And that's made up as doth the purse abound.
 Marrie the Muse is one, can tread the Aire,
 And stroke the, water, nimble, chaste, and faire,
 15 Sleepe in a Virgins bosome without feare,
 Run all the Rounds in a soft Ladyes eare,
 Widow or Wife, without the jealousye
 Of either Suitor, or a Servant by.
 Such, (if her manners like you) I doe send :
 20 And can for other Graces her commend,
 To make you merry on the Dressing stoole,
 A mornings, and at afternoones, to foole

lv. 5 braine,] braine F: Brain, F3

Ivi. A first draft in Nf. 42 b, without heading. I won . . . won]
 wan . . . wann N 4 won] wan N it. N: it, F 6 which,]
 which F feare] doubt N refuse ;] refuse. N 7 tardie,] tardie F
 10 or] ft N 12 And . . . abound] Made vp still, as ypockett doth
 abound N 13 the Muse] his Muse, N 18 either . . . by] suitor.
 or of Servaunt standing by 21 on] in N stoole, F originally :
 miscorrected stoole 22 afternoones, F originally, miscorrected
 afternoones: afternoone. N

Away ill company, and helpe in rime
 Your *Joane* to passe her melancholic time.
 By this, although you fancie not the man, 25
 Accept his Muse ; and tell, I know you can,
 How many verses, Madam, are your Due
 I can lose none in tendring these to you.
 I gaine, in having leave to keepe my Day,
 And should grow rich, had I much more to pay.. 30

LVH.

To Master Iohn Surges.

Father *John Burges*,
 Necessitie urges
 My wofull crie,
 To Sir *Robert Pie* :
 And that he will venter 5
 To send my *Debentur*.
 Tell him his *Ben*
 Knew the time, when
 He lov'd the Muses ;
 Though now he refuses 10
 To take Apprehension
 Of a yeares Pension,
 And more is behind :
 Put him in mind
 Christmas is neere ; 15
 And neither good Cheare,
 Mirth, fooling, nor wit,
 Nor any least fit
 Of gambol, or sport
 Will come at the Court, 20
 If there be no money ;
 No Plover, or Coney

Ivi. 23 rime] rime, F : Ryme N 24 Your *Joane*] Gary N melan-
 cholic] melancholiq) N 25 this, although] thys Tyrne, though N
 man, N : man F 26 tell. I . . . can,] tell, . . . can : F : tell (I . . .
 can) N 27 Due !] due, N 28 lose] loose N tendring]
 tending N 30 had I much] if I had N
 Ivii. 10 refuses] refuses, F 21 money:] money, F

- 25 Will come to the Table,
Or Wine to enable
The Muse, or the Poet,
The Parish will know it.
Nor any quick-warming-pan helpe him to bed,
If the¹ Chequer be emptie, so will be his Head.

LVIII.

Epigram, to my Book-seller.

- T**Hou, Friend, wilt heare all censures ; unto thee
All mouthes are open, and all stomachs free :
Bee thou my Bookes intelligencer, note
What each man sayes of it, and of what coat
5 His judgement is ; If he be wise, and praise,
Thanke him : if other, hee can give no Bayes.
If his wit reach no higher, but to spring
Thy Wife a fit of laughter ; a Cramp-ring
Will be reward enough : to weare like those,
10 That hang their richest Jewells i¹ their nose ;
Like a rung Beare, or Swine : grunting out wit
As if that part lay for a [] most fit!
If they goe on, and that thou lov'st a-life
Their perfum'd judgements, let them kisse thy Wife.

LIX.

An Epigram.

To WILLIAM Earle of Newcastle.

- T**Hey talke of Fencing, and the use of Armes,
The art of urging, and avoyding harmes,
The noble Science, and the maistring skill
Of making just approaches, how to kill,
5 To hit in angles, and to clash with time :
As all defence, or offence, were a chime !

lix. In D, Q, Ed, ' To William Earle of New-Castle. An Epigram on his Fencing' : in H 5 f. 20 b, ' To William Earle of Newcastle' : in N f. 39, ' To the Right Honorable William Earle of Newcastle'. 3 maistring] maistring D, Q skill] skill, Q, N 4 approaches, D, Q, N: approaches F, H kill, D, Q : kill; N : kill : F 5 angles] Angels F3 with] in H time :] time, D, Q 6 offence, D. Q : offence F

I hate such measur'd, give me mettall'd fire
 That trembles in the blaze, but (then) mounts higher I
 A quick, and dazeling motion ! when a paire
 Of bodies, meet like rarified ayre ! 10
 Their weapons shot out, with that flame, and force,
 As they out-did the lightning in the(ir) course ;
 This were a spectacle ! A sight to draw
 Wovnder to Valour 1 No, it is the Law
 Of daring not to doe a wrong, is true 15
 Valour ! to sleight it, being done to you !
 To know the heads of danger 1 where 'tis fit
 To bend, to breake, provoke, or suffer it!
 All this (my Lord) is Valour I This is yours !
 And was your Fathers I All your Ancestours I 20
 Who durst live great, 'mongst all the colds, and heates,
 Of humane life ! as all the frosts, and sweates
 Of fortune ! when, or death appear'd, or bands !
 And valiant were, with, or without their hands.

LX.

An Epitaph, on H E N R Y

L. La-ware.

To the Passer-by.

IF, Passenger, thou canst but reade :
 Stay, drop a teare for him that's dead,
 Henry the brave young Lord *La-ware*
Minerva's and the *Muses* care !

lix. 7 such] this *D, Q, H* measur'd,] measur'd : *D, Q, Ed* 8 m the]
 i'the *D* : i'th' *Q* (then)] then *D, Q* higher !] higher *D* : higher. *Q* :
 higher ; *N* g quick] swift *D, Q, H* dazeling] darling *D, Q, Ed*
 10 bodies, meet] bodies meete, *N* : men doe meet, *D, Q, H* ('meete' *H*)
 11 shot... force] with their flames & eke their force *H* shot out] darted
D. Q. N 12 their *N* : the *F, D, Q, Ed* : his *H* 13-14 spectacle I
 . . . Valour !] spectacle, . . . valour : *D. Q* 14 to] in *H* No, it is]
 no, it is *D. Q* : No. It *N* : nor is itt *H* the] a *D, Q* 15 daring]
 daring, *F* 15-16 is true .. it,] tis true, | Next to despise, it *D* : next
 to dispise it *Q, H* 16-23 No notes of exclamation in *D, Q* 17 the]
 all *D, Q* 18 to breake] or breake *N* ig All] And *D, Q* : and *H*
 this (my Lord)] this, my Lord, *N* : this my Lord *D, Q* 20 All] and
D, Q, H 21-3 'mongst . . . fortune ! not in *D, Q. H* 23 when,
 or] when *D, Q, H* or bands] and bands *H*

- 5 What could their care doe 'gainst the spight
 Of a Disease, that lov'd no light
 Of honour, nor no ayre of good ?
 But crept like darknesse through his blood ?
 Offended with the dazeling flame
 10 Of Vertue, got above his name ?
 No noble furniture of parts,
 No love of action, and high Arts,
 No aime at glorie, or, in warre,
 Ambition to become a Starre,
 15 Could stop the malice of this ill,
 That spread his body o're, to kill:
 And only, his great Soule envy'd,
 Because it durst have noblier dy'd.

LXI.

An ILpigram.

- THat you have seene the pride, beheld the sport,
 -L And all the games of Fortune, plaid at Court ;
 View'd there the mercat, read the wretched rate
 At which there are, would sell the Prince, and State :
 5 That scarce you heare a publike voyce alive,
 But whisper¹d Counsell, and those only thrive ;
 Yet are got off thence, with cleare mind, and hands
 To lift to heaven : who is't not uvnderstands
 Your happinesse, and doth not speake you blest,
 xo To see you set apart, thus, from the rest,
 T(o)'obtaine of God, what all the Land should aske ?
 A Nations sinne got pardon¹d ! 'twere a taske
 Fit for a Bishops knees ! O bow them oft,
 My Lord, till felt grieve make our stone hearts soft,
 15 And wee doe weepe, to water, for our sinne.
 He, that in such a flood, as we are in

lx. 12 Arts,] Arts. *F* 13 or,] or *F*
 Ixi. *An Epigram.* 'To the Lord-Keeper' add *G* 5 heare corr. *F*:
 heave, *F* originally 12 taske] taske ? -*F*

Of riot, and consumption, knowes the way
 To teach the people, how to fast, and pray,
 And doe their penance, to avert Gods rod,
 He is the Man, and Favorite of God. 20

LXII.

An Epigram.

To K. CHARLES

For a 100. pounds he sent me in my sickness. 1629.

GREAT CHARLES, among the holy gifts of grace
 Annexed to thy Person, and thy place,
 T is not enough (thy pietie is such)
 To cure the call'd *Kings Evill* with thy touch ;
 But thou wilt yet a Kinglier mastrie trie, 5
 To cure the *Poets Evill*, Povertie :
 And, in these Cures, do'st so thy selfe enlarge,
 As thou dost cure our *Evill*, at thy charge.
 Nay, and in this, thou show'st to value more
 One *Poet*, then of other folke ten score. 10
 O pietie ! so to weigh the poores estates !
 O bountie ! so to difference the rates !
 What can the *Poet* wish his *King* may doe,
 But, that he cure the Peoples *Evill* too ?

LXIII.

To K. CHARLES, and Q. MARY.

For the losse of their first-borne

An Epigram Consoiatorie. 1629.

WHO dares denie, that all first-fruits are due
 To God, denies the God-head to be true :
 Who doubts, those fruits God can with gaine restore,
 Doth by his doubt, distrust his promise more.

Izi. 17 consumption, . . . way] consumption . . . way, F
 Ixii. Title. 1629. corr. F : not in F originally 13 wish corr. F :
 wish, F originally
 htiii. Title. K Q.] K . . . Q F 1629. corr. F : not in F originally
 i WHO] WAO F first-fruits] first fruits F : first-Fruits F3

- : Hee can, he will, and with large interest pay,
 What (at his liking) he will take away.
 Then, Royall CHARLES, and MARY, doe not grutch
 That the Almighties will to you is such :
 But thanke his greatnesse, and his goodnesse too ;
 20 And thinke all still the best, that he will doe.
 That thought shall make, he will this losse supply
 With a long, large, and blest posteritie !
 For God, whose essence is so infinite,
 Cannot but heape that grace, he will requite.

LXIV.

An ILpigram.

To our great and good K. CHARLES

On his Anniversary Day.

1629.

- HOW happy were the Subject, if he knew,
 Most pious King, but his owne good in you !
 How many times, Live long, CHARLES, would he say,
 If he but weigh'd the blessings of this day ?
 5 And as it turnes our joyfull yeare about,
 For safetie of such Majestic, cry out ?
 Indeed, when had great *Britaine* greater cause
 Then now, to love the Sovereaigne, and the Lawes ?
 When you that raigne, are her Example growne,
 10 And what are bounds to her, you make your owne ?
 When your assiduous practise doth secure
 That Faith, which she professeth to be pure ?

Ixiii. 7 Then,] Then *F*

Ixiv. In *Nf.* 192 *b*, 'To the great and Gracious King Charles. On
 the Vniuersary [*sic*] day of his Raigne. 1629.' 1629 *corr.* *F* : not in *F*
originally i Subject,] Subject I *F*: Subiect N knew,] knew *F* :
 knew ? N 2 you] You N 3 Live . . . CHARLES,] live . . .
 CHARLES. *F* : (Liue . . . Charles) N 4 day ?] day. N 6 Majestic
corr. *F*: majestic *F originally* out ?] out. N 7 Indeed, when
 . . . greater] When had great *Britaine* any greater N *Britaine*]
Brittaine *F* 8 and the] or his N 9 you that raigne] thou that
 rul'st N 10 you make your] thou maks't thyne N n your]
 thy N 12 professeth] professes N

When all your life's a president of dayes,
 And murmure cannot quarrell at your wayes ?
 How is she barren growne of love ! or broke ! 15
 That nothing can her gratitude provoke !
 0 Times ! 0 Manners ! Surfet bred of ease,
 The truly Epidemicall disease !
 T is not alone the Merchant, but the Clowne,
 Is Banke-rupt turn'd ! the Cassock, Cloake, and Gowne, 20
 Are lost upon accompt! And none will know
 Howmuchtoheavenforthee,greatCHARLES,theyowe!

LXV.

An Epigram on the Princes birth. 1630.

ANd art thou borne, brave Babe ? Blest be thy birth,
 That so hath crown'd our hopes, our spring, and earth,
 The bed of the chast Lilly, and the Rose !
 What Month then May, was fitter to disclose
 This Prince of flowers ? Soone shoot thou up, and grow 5
 The same that thou art promis'd, but be slow,

Ixiv. 13, 14 your] thy N 15 of] in A^r 16 can] will N 16-22
N replaces marks of exclamation by periods or commas 17 Surfet]
 Surfet, F : surfeits N ease, corr. F : ease -F originally 19
 Merchant] Merchants N 20 the ... Gowne] cloak. Cassock. Robe,
 & Gowne N 21 accompt 1 And] account, and N will] doe N
 22 heaven] heauen, N CHARLES,] CHARLES F After 22 ' By yo'
 Majesties most humble seruant & thankfull Subiect. Ben: Jonson.' N
Dated below, ' March 27. 1629.' N

Ixv. *A first draft in RP2 f. 10 b, with date; RP8 f. 231, ' An Epigr. on
 y« Princes birth, may 29, 1630 ' ; RPg f. 12 b, ' An Epigram on Pnnce
 Charles his Birth : May. 29th. 1630 ' ; RPn p. 57, ' On the Princes
 Birth ' ; TCD p. 314, ' An Epigram Vpon y« Princes birth : 29th. Maye
 1630 ' . An intermediate text in Eg 4 f. 16 b. ' Ben Johnson on the pnnces
 birth ' ; Eg 5 f. 35, ' An Epigram. Vpon the Pnnce his birth. May.
 29th. 1630. ' The later text in D, Q. ' On the Princes Birth-day. An
 Epigram ' ; and in N f. 193, ' Epigramme On the Prince's Birth ' ;
 RP 4 f. 61 a, ' On the Pnnces Birth ' , birth.} birth F originally 1630.
 corr. F : not in F originally i thy birth. Q, N : thy birth D : thy
 birth ? F : the day RP2. RP8. RPg. RPu. TCD 2 That so hath]
 That thus hath RPu : Which thus hast RP4 : Hath RP2. RP8. RPg
 hopes . . . earth] hopes, our spring on earth D, Q : hopes, our spring, our
 earth Eg 4 : hopes, with thee, of Spnng & May RPz : so RP8, RPg,
 Eg 5 TCD : hopes, c* Spnng & May RPu 4 May.} May D, Q. N
 5 This] The RPz, RPg, RPu 6 art] hast RP2 promis'd,]
 promis'd ; D, Q : promis'd : N*

- And long in changing. Let our Nephewes see
 Thee quickly (come) the gardens eye to bee,
 And there to stand so. Hast now, envious Moone,
 10 And interpose thy selfe, ('care not how soone.)
 And threat' the great Eclipse. Two houres but runne,
 Sol will re-shine. If not, C H A R L E S hath a Sonne.

—————*Non displicuisse meretur,
 Fcstinat, Casar, qui placuisse tibi.*

LXVI.

An "Epigram to the Queene, then lying in. 1630.

- H**aile Mary, full of grace, it once was said,
 And by an Angell, to the blessed'st Maid,
 The Mother of our Lord : why may not I
 (Without prophanenesse) yet, a Poet, cry,
 5 Haile Mary, full of honours, to my Queene,
 The Mother of our Prince ? When was there scene
 (Except the joy that the first Mary brought,
 Whereby the safetie of Man-kind was wrought)
 So generall a gladnesse to an Isle,
 10 To make the hearts of a whole Nation smile,
 As in this Prince ? Let it be lawfull, so
 To compare small with great, as still we owe
 Glorie to God. -Then, Haile to Mary ! spring
 Of so much safetie to the Realme, and King I

Ixv. 7 And ... see] In Changing Let o¹ after Nephews see RP4. RPu :
 In changing, let our nephewes loyfull see Eg 4 8 Thee] Thee, F
 come D. Q. and most MSS: in RPz 9 there] still D, Q. RP2, RPg,
 RP ii. Eg 4 stand so. Hast,] stand. So hast TCD Hast N: Haste
 D, Q: Hast F now,] now F: thou RP4, RPu. Eg 4 10 ('care...
 soone.)] care...soone, D.Q.N 11 threat'] threat D, Q: thereat N
 Eclipse. Two] Eclips, two D, N: Eclips two Q 12 Sol... re-shine]
 And Sol will shine RP4 13, 14 Not in Eg 4, Eg 5, RPu 13
 merctur,] meretur F : moratur RPg 14 Festinat, Cesar,] Festinat
 Casar F: Festinat (Casar) RPz

Ixvi. In D, Q, Nf. 193 and TCD p. 315. 'An Epigram to the Queens
 Health'. i once was] was once TCD 2 blessed'st] blessed
 D, Q. N Maid,] Maid F 3 why may] and why D 4 (Without
 prophanenesse) yet,] Without prophanenesse, as D, Q, N cry,] cry F
 7 Except] And leaue N, TCD 8 Man-land] the world D, Q. N.
 TCD wrought.)] wrought.) F : wrought,) N 9 Isle, D, Q\ Isle I
 F : lie ? N 13 Glorie] Out thanks D, Q. N, TCD 14 safetie
 to the Realme] health, both to our Land D, Q, N, TCD (reading 'Lord')
 King I] King. F, the rest

LXVII.

An Ode, or Song, by all the Muses.

1630.

In celebration of her Majesties birth-day.

1. C L I **U**P publike joy, remember
This sixteenth of *November*,
Some brave un-common way :
And though the Parish-steeple
Be silent, to the people 5
Ring thou it Holy-day.
2. MEL. What, though the thriftie Tower
And Gunnes there, spare to poure
Their noises forth in Thunder :
As fearfull to awake 10
This Citie, or to shake
Their guarded gates asunder ?
3. THAL. Yet, let our Trumpets sound;
And cleave both ayre and ground,
With beating of our Drums : 15
Let every Lyre be strung,
Harpe, Lute, Theorbo sprung,
With touch of daintie thum's !
4. EVT. That when the Quire is full,
The Harmony may pull 20
The Angels from their Spheares :
And each intelligence
May wish it selfe a sense,
Whilst it the Dittie heares.

lxvii Italic in F. In D, Q. An Ode . . . birth-day] To the Queene on her Birth-day D, Q 1630. not in D. Q The stanza numbers and the names of the Muses not prefixed in D, Q 2 This] The D. Q 3 un-common] uncommon D, Q 4 Parish-steeple] parish Steeple D, Q 5 silent,] silent D. Q people] people. D, Q 6 Holy-day] Holy day D, Q 7 What,] What D. Q thriftie] thirsty D, Q 8 there,] there D.Q 9 forth] out D.Q 11 This . . . or] The ..as D, Q 13 Yet,... our] Yet... the D, Q 14 cleave . . . ground.] shake . . . ground D. Q 15 our] their D, Q Drums] Drum's F 18 daintie] learned D, Q thura's] thumbs D. Q 23 sense.] sense: F : sence. D, Q

- 25 5. TERP. Behold the royall *Mary*,
 The Daughter of great *Harry* !
 And Sister to just *Lewis* !
 Comes in the pompe, and glorie
 Of all her Brothers storie,
 30 And of her Fathers prowess !
6. ERAT. Shee shoves so farre above
 The fained Queene of Love,
 This sea-girt Isle upon :
 As here no *Venus* were ;
 35 But, that shce raining here,
 Had got the *Ceston* on !
7. CALLI. See, see our active *King*
 Hath taken twice the Ring
 Upon his pointed Lance :
 40 Whilst all the ravish'd rout
 Doe mingle in a shout,
 Hay ! for the flowre of *France* !
8. URA. This day the Court doth measure
 Her joy in state, and pleasure ;
 45 And with a reverend feare,
 The Revells, and the Play,
 Summe up this crowned day,
 Her two and twenti'th yeare !
9. POLY. Sweet! happy *Mary* ! All
 50 The People her doe call.
 And this the wombe divine,
 So fruitful!, and so faire,
 Hath brought the Land an Heire !
 And CHARLES a *Caroline* !

26 Daughter] Daughterr F Homy !] Harry. D, Q 27 Lewis]
 Lewis, D, Q 29 Brothers] Fathers D. Q, W, G 30 Fathers
 prowess] brothers Prowis D, Q, W, G 33 Isle] ground D, Q
 34 were ;] were : D : were Q 36 got] put D, Q, G 39 his]
 the D, Q 42 Hay !] Hey D, Q 47 Summe] Make D. Q
 48 two and twenti'th] one and twenty D. Q 49~54 not m A Q
 50 call.] call! F 51 divine,] divine! F 54 Caroline!}]
 Caroline. F

LXVIII.

An Epigram,

1630.

To the House-hold.

WHat can the cause be, when the *K(ing)* hath given
 His *Poet* Sack, the *House-hold* will not pay ?
 Are they so scantd in their store ? or driven
 For want of knowing the *Poet*, to say him nay ?
 Well, they should know him, would the *K(ing)* but grant 5
 His *Poet* leave to sing his *House-hold* true ;
 Hec'ld frame such ditties of their store, and want,
 Would make the very *Greene-cloth* to looke blew :
 And rather wish, in their cxpence of Sack,
 So, the allowance from the King to use, 10
 As the old *Bard*, should no Canary lack.
 'T were better spare a Butt, then spill his *Muse*.
 For in the *Genius* of a *Poets* Verse,
 The Kings fame lives. Go now, denie his *Teirce*.

LXIX.

Epigram.

To a friend and Sonne.

Sonne, and my Friend, I had not call'd you so
 To mee ; or bcene the same to you ; if show,
 Profit, or Chance had made us : But I know
 What, by that name, wcc each to other owe,
 Freedomc, and Truth ; with love from those begot: 5
 Wise-crafts, on which the flatterer ventures not.
 His is more safe commoditie, or none :
 Nor dares he come in the comparison.
 But as the wretched Painter, who so ill
 Painted a Dog, that now his subtler skill 10
 Was, t'have a Boy stand with a Club, and fright
 All live dogs from the lane, and his shops sight,

Ixvin. 1,5 *King/K* F n lack.] lack, F 14 *Teirce*. corr F:
teirce Y originally
 Ixix. 5 begot:] begot. F 12 sight, F3 : sight. F

- Till he had sold his Piece, drawne so unlike :
- So doth the flatt'rer with faire cunning strike
- 15 At a Friends freedome, proves all circling meanes
To keepe him off ; and how-so-e're he gleanes
Some of his formes, he lets him not come neere
Where he would fixe, for the distinctions feare.
For as at distance, few have facultie
- 20 To judge ; So all men comming neere can spie.
Though now of flattery, as of picture, are
More subtle workes, and finer pieces farre,
Then knew the former ages : yet to life,
All is but web, and painting ; be the strife
- 25 Never so great to get them : and the ends,
Rather to boast rich hangings, then rare friends.

LXX.

*To the immortall memorie, and friendship of
that noble paire, Sir Lvcivs GARY,
and Sir H. MoRisoN.*

The Turne.

- B**Rave Infant of *Saguntum*, cleare
Thy comming forth in that great yeare,
When the Prodigious *Hannibal* did crowne
His rage, with razing your immortall Towne.
- 5 Thou, looking then about,
E're thou wert halfe got out,
Wise child, did'st hastily returne,
And mad'st thy Mothers wombe thine urne.

Ixi. 14 flatt'rer with *corr. F: flattrer, with F originally faire]*
farre *F: fair* F3 20 spie.] spie, *F* 21 picture,]
picture *F*

Ixx. In *D. Ed.* 'ODE PINDARICK To the Noble Sir *Lucius Gary*':
Q. 'ODE PINDARICK On the the Death of Sir *Hen Morison*': *N.*
ff. 180, 181, To 5^l *Lucius Carey*, on the death of his Brother *Morison*':
Ash i ff. 49, 50 *a.* 'Ode on the death of S^r: *Henry Morison* to the noble
S^r: *Lucius Gary*': *Ji.* *ff.* 23-5, 'Ode Pindanque' *The Turne]* The
turne of ten *D*: the turne of 10 : the tune of 10 *Ash*: *not in Q*
i Saguntum, cleare] *Saguntutn cleare, D. Q* 8 urne.] Urne, *D, Q*:
Urne! *JV*

How summ'd a circle didst thou leave man-kind
Of deepest lore, could we the Center find ! 10

The Counter-turne.

Did wiser Nature draw thee back,
From out the horreur of that sack ?
Where shame, faith, honour, and regard of right
Lay trampled on ; the deeds of death, and night,
Urg'd, hurried forth, and horld 15
Upon th¹affrighted world :
Sword, fire, and famine, with fell fury met ;
And all on utmost ruine set ;
As, could they but lifes miseries fore-see,
No doubt all Infants would returne like thee. 20

The Stand.

For, what is life, if mcasur'd by the space,
Not by the act ?
Or masked man, if valu'd by his face,
Above his fact ?
Here's one out-liv'd his Peeres, 25
And told forth fourescore ycares ;
He vexed time, and busied the whole State ;
Troubled both foes, and friends ;
But ever to no ends :
What did this Stirrer, but die late ? 30
How well at twentie had he falne, or stood !
For three of his foure-score, he did no good.

10 deepest] secret Ash Before n The Counter -turne] The Counter-
turnc of ten D : The retourne of : 10 : like Ash n wiser] Wisest
N, Ash 12 sack ? Q : sacke ? D : sack. F 14 on ;] on D.
Q. J night.] night D, Q : Night .V 15 hurried] harried Ash
horld] hurld D, Q.N.Ash 17 and not in D, Q. N. A sh with ... fury]
with full fury D, Q : and fell fury N : fury Ash 18 set ;] sett I N
19 bfe] lives D, Q 20 thee.] thee ? F Before 21 The Stand/
The Stand, of twelve D : The stand of 22 Ash 26 yeares ;] yeeres ! N
27 time.] time I N State ;] State ! N 28 friends ;] fneends,
D, Q : freinds ! N 29 ever] never Ash ends:] ends! N 31
twentie] twenty. N stood !] stood ? N 32 good.] good ! N

The Turne.

- Hee entred well, by vertuous parts,
 Got up and thriv'd with honest arts :
 35 He purchas'd friends, and fame, and honours then,
 And had his noble name advane¹d with men :
 But weary of that flight,
 Hee stoop'd in all mens sight
 To sordid flatteries, acts of strife,
 40 And sunke in that dead sea of life
 So deep, as he did then death's waters sup ;
 But that the Corke of Title boy'd him up.

The Counter-turne.

- Alas, but *Morison* fell young :
 Hee never fell, thou fall'st, my tongue.
 45 Hee stood, a Souldier to the last right end,
 A perfect Patriot, and a noble friend,
 But most, a vertuous Sonne.
 All Offices were done
 By him, so ample, full, and round,
 50 In weight, in measure, number, sound,
 As though his age imperfect might appeare,
 His life was of Uumanitie the Spheare.

The Stand.

- Goe now, and tell out dayes summ'd up with feares,
 And make them yearcs ;
 55 Produce thy masse of miseries on the Stage,
 To swell thine age ;

Before 33 *The Turne*] *The second turne of ten D* : the second turne of
 10 Ash 34 up] vp, A' with] by 35 then,] then : N 36
 men :] men. D, Q, N 39 strife,] strife , A" 41 So] Too D, Q
 42 up.] vp I N Before 43 *The Counter-turne*] *The second Count*
turne, of ten D : The second retourne of 10 Ash 44 fall'st, F3 :
 fall'st : mpst D. Q. N, Ash. J tongue] tongue • D, Q 45 stood,
 a Souldier] stood a soldier, A" right] night D, Q 47 most. :
 most the rest Sonne.] sonne ! A' 50 in] and D, Q measure]
 fashion Ash sound,] sound : N Before 53 *The Stand*] *The second*
Stand of twelve D : The seacond stand of 12 Ash 53 out] our F3
 dayes] dayes, D, Q. A" 56 thme] thy Ask

Repeat of things a throng,
 To shew thou hast beene long,
 Not liv'd ; for Life doth her great actions spell,
 By what was done and wrought fo
 In season, and so brought
 To light: her measures are, how well
 Each syllab'e answer'd, and was form'd, how faire ;
 These make the lines of life, and that's her ayre.

The Turne.

It is not growing like a tree 65
 In bulke, doth make man better bee ;
 Or standing long an Oake, three hundred yearc,
 To fall a loggc at last, dry, bald, and scare :
 A Lillie of a Day,
 Is fairer farre, in May, 70
 Although it fall, and die that night ;
 It was the Plant, and flowre of light.
 In small proportions, we just bcautie see :
 And in short measures, life may perfect bee.

The Counter-turne.

Call, noble *Lucius*, then for Wine, 75
 And let thy lookes with gladnesse shine :
 Accept this garland, plant it on thy head,
 And thinke, nay know, thy *Morison's* not dead.
 Hee leap'd the present age,
 Possest with holy rage, 80
 To see that bright eternall Day :
 Of which we *Priests*, and *Poets* say

59, 64 Life F3 : life F₁ D, Q. N 60 By] But Ash 62 well]
 well : A Q 63 syllab'e] sillib" D, Q. lid Syllable F3. Ash 64
 her] the Before 65 The Turne] The third turne of ten D : The
 third turne of 10 Ash 65 not . . . tree] not, . . . tree, N 67
 hundred] hundued Q 68 logge] logge, F : Log D. Q : logg N
 bald] bold F. -F3 71 that] at D, Q -ji Plant . . . flowre]
 flower and plant Ash light.] light I N 73 beautie N : beauty
 D, Q.Ash: beauties F. J Before 75 The Counter-turne] The third
 Counter-turne of ten D: the third retourne of 10 Ash 78 Morison's]
 Monson Ash 80 Possest . . . rage,] (possest. . . rage) N. J 81
 that] the D. Q

Such truths, as we expect for happy men,
And there he lives with memorie ; and *Ben*

The Stand.

- 85 *Jonson*, who sung this of him, e're he went
Himselfe to rest,
Or taste a part of that full joy he meant
To have exprest,
In this bright *Asterisme* :
90 Where it were friendships schisme,
(Were not his *Lucius* long with us to tarry)
To separate these twi-
Lights, the *Dioscuri* ;
And keepe the one halfe from his *Harry*.
95 But fate doth so alternate the designc,
Whilst that in heav'n, this light on earth must shine.

The Turne.

- And shine as you exalted are ;
Two names of friendship, but one *Starre* :
Of hearts the union. And those not by chance
100 Made, or indentur'd, or leas'd out t(o)¹advance
The profits for a time.
No pleasures vaine did chime,
Of rimes, or ryots, at your feasts,
Orgies of drinke, or fain'd protests :
105 But simple love of greatnesse, and of good ;
That knits brave minds, and manners, more then blood.

84 *Ben* Q : *Hen* F, J : *Ben* D : *Ken*- N Before 85 *The Stand*/
The third Stand of twelve D • *The third stand of 12* Ash 85 *Jonson*,/
Johnson, coir. F : *Johnson*: F originally: lonson. N: lonson ' D. Q: lonson
85-6 ere he went to rest one line in 90 were] was D, Q 91
long] Long F 92 separate these] spare those 94 *Harry*./
Harry ; D, Q, N qb earth] earth. A" Before 97 *The Turne*]
The fourth turne of ten D : *The 4th*: turne Ash 97 And shine]
Shine then. Ash 98 *Starre* :] starre D, Q 99 union. And]
union : and D, Q : vnion, and N 100 or indentur'd D, Q. J : or
indenture F. N : by Indenture Ash leas'd out] leas'd 101
time] tyme IN 102 chime,] chime D, Q 103 at] of N, Ash
104 Orgies] Argues Q 106 That] W N

The Counter-turne.

This made you first to know the Why
 You lik'd, then after, to apply
 That liking ; and approach so one the tother,
 Till either grew a portion of the other : 110
 Each stiled, by his end,
 The Copie of his friend.
 You liv'd to be the great surnames,
 And titles, by which all made claimes
 Unto the Vertue. Nothing perfect done, 115
 But as a GARY, or a MORISON.

The Stand.

And such a force the faire example had,
 As they that saw
 The good, and durst not practise it, were glad
 That such a Law 120
 Was left yet to Man-kind ;
 Where they might read, and find
Friendship, in deed, was written, not in words :
 And with the heart, not pen,
 Of two so early men, 125
 Whose lines her rowles were, and records.
 Who, e're the first downe bloomed on the chin,
 Had sow'd these fruits, and got the harvest in.

Before 107 *The Counter-turne*] *The fourth Counter-turne often* D : The
 4th: retournelsA IOQ the tother] to th'other Q no other:]
 other N HI stiled, .V : stiled D.Q.F 112 friend.] friend I
 N : fiend ; D 113 surnames] sirnames D. Q 115 Vertue.
 Nothing] vertue : nothing D, Q : Vertue! Nothing N 116 MORISON.]
 Monson ! N Before 117 *The Stand*] *The fourth, and last Stand, of*
twelve D : The fourth and last stand Ash 123 in deed Ash:
 indeed F, D. Q. N 126 lines] lines N. Ash

LXXI.

To the Right Honourable,
the Lord high Treasurer of England.

1631.

An Epistle Mendicant.

MY LORD ;

POore wretched states, prcst by extremities,
Are fainc to seekc for succours, and supplies
Of *Princes aides*, or *good mens* Charities.

Disease, the Encmic, and his Ingincm's,
5 *Want*, with the rest of his conceal'd compecres,
Have cast a trench about mec, now, five yeares ;

And made those strong approaches, by *False braies*,
Reduicts, *Halfe-moones*, *Horne-workes*, and such close wayes,
The *Muse* not pecpes out, one of hundred dayes ;

10 But lyes block'd up, and straightned, narrow'd in,
Fix'd to the bed, and boords, unlike to win
Health, or scarce breath, as she had never bin,

Unlesse some saving-f/cw0Mr of the *Crowne*,
Dare thinke it, to relieve, no lesse renowne,
15 A *Bed-rid* Wit, then a *besieged* Towne.

Ixxi l-n N f 174, 'To my Lord Weston, Lo. Treasurer A Letter'
without the date. 3 or] and K 4 Ingenieeres,] Ingmeere*
F : Impincers, N 6 now, . . . yeeres ; .V : DOW . . . yeares. F
7 False braies] fausse bayes G 8 Redmcts] Redouts G 9
dayes ; A' : dayes F n boards, unlike] borde, and like A^T 12
bin, JV : bin. F 13 saving-//onour] saveing Honour N 15 then]
than A^T

LXXII.

To the King. On his Birth-day.

Novemb
19 1632

An Epigram Anniversarie.

THIS is King CHARLES his Day. Speake it, thou Towre,
Unto the Ships, and they from tier, to tier,
Discharge it 'bout the Hand, in an houre,
As lowd as Thuvnder, and as swift as fire.
Let Ireland meet it out at Sea, halfe way, 5
Repeating all Great Britain's joy, and more,
Adding her owne glad accents, to this Day,
Like Eccho playing from the other shore.
What Drums or Trumpets, or great Ordinance can,
The Poetrie of Steeples, with the Bells, 10
Three Kingdomes Mirth, in light, and aerie man,
Made lighter with the Wine. All noises else,
At Bonefires, Rockets, Fire-workes, with the Shoutes
That cry that gladnesse, which their hearts would pray,
Had they but grace, of thinking, at these routes, 15
On th'often comming of this Holy-day :
And ever close the burden of the Song,
Stilltohave such a CHARLES, but this CHARLES long.
The wish is great; but where the Prince is such,
What prayers (People) can you thinke too much ? 20

Ixxii. An earlier draft in D, Q, Ed, Hff 19 b and Ash a. p. 74. and without the date : 'Upon King CHARLES his Birth-day.' D, Q print II 1-12 in four-line slant as, and 13-18 as a six-line stanza : the concluding couplet is not in D, Q, Ash. 1 Day] birth day D, Q Speake it] speake't Ed it, . . . Towre] it . . . Towre Ƴ thou] the D. Q. H, Ash, Ed 2 tier . . . tier] Tire . . . Tire D, Q 3 Discharge it] Discharging D, Q, H, Ash 6 Britain's] Bnttam's F: Bnttames D. Q joy] Joys Ash : ioyes H 7 glad] greate H 8 the other] another D, Q. H: a nother Ash 9 Drums] Drum's F 10 Poetrie] Poetry D. Q the] their Ash n aEne] ayery D, Q : ferye Ash 12 Made . . . else,] Made loftier by the winds all noises els. D. Q, H. Ash (windes Q: winde H, Ash) 13 Rochets . . . Shoutes] squibs, and mirth, with all their shouts D : so Q, H, Ash . 14 That... gladnesse] The Cries, the gladnesse H that] the D, Q. Ash pray] pay H 15 Had . . . routes] If they had leisure, at these lawfull! routs D. Q : so H, Ash 16 On th'] The D. Q. H, Ash 17 And . . . Song] And then noyse forth the burthen of their songe H, Ash 19, 20 not in D, Q. Ash, H 20 much ?] much I F

LXXIII.

*On the Right Honourable[^] and verfuous Lord
Western, L. high Treasurer of England,
Vpon the Day,*

17.Febr. 16.32. Hee was made Earle of Portland,

To the Envious.

Looke up, thou seed of envie, and still bring
Thy faint, and narrow eyes, to reade the *King*
In his great Actions : view whom his large hand
Hath rais'd to be the *Port* unto his *Land!*
5 W E S T O N I That waking man ' that Eye of State !
Who seldome sleepes ! whom bad men only hate !
Why doe I irritate, or stirre up thee,
Thou sluggish spawn, that canst, but wilt not see ?
Feed on thy selfe for spight, and shew thy Kind:
10 To vertue, and true worth, be ever blind.
Dreame thou could'st hurt it; but before thou wake
T(o)'effect it, feelee, thou'ast made thine owne heart ake.

LXXIV.

To the Right hon^{bu} Hierome, L. Wcston.

An Ode gratulatorie,

1632. *For his Returns from his Embassie.*

Such pleasure as the teeming *Earth*
Doth take in easie *Natures* birth,
When shee puts forth the life of ev'ry thing :

Ixxiii. In *Ash* 2 p. 67 : the title as in *F*, but without the date : sub0-
scribed ' By the True Louer of you' HOD": Ben Iohnson '. L.] Lord
F3 i up, F3 : up F 3 Actions] Action Ask hand] hand. F
5 that Eye] the Eye *Ash* 8 see ?] see I F 9 selfe] flesh *Ash*
Kind] Kind F u it; . . , wake] it, . . . wake. F 12 it, feelee]
it; Feelee F

buciv. In *D. Q. Ed* in six-line stanzas. ' To Hierom (Hierome Q)
Lord Weston. upon his retorne from his Embassie ' Italic type in *F*.
L.] Lord F3 gratulatori,] gratulatorie. *F* : Gratulatory, F3 |
pleasure] pleasures *D, Q* Earth] Earth, *F*

And in a dew of sweetest Raine,
 Shee lies deliver¹d_p without paine, 5
 Of the prime beautie of the yeare, the *Spring*.
 The Rivers in their shores doe run,
 The Clowdes rack cleare before the Sun,
 The rudest Winds obey the calmest Ayre :
 Rare Plants from ev'ry banke doe rise, 10
 And ev'ry Plant the sense surprize,
 Because the order of the *whole* is faire !
 The very verdure of her nest,
 Wherein she sits so richly drest,
 As all the wealth of *Season*, there was spread ; 15
 Doth show, the *Graces*, and the *Houres*,
 Have multipli'd their arts, and powers,
 In making soft her aromatique bed.
 Such joyes, such sweet's doth your *Returne*
 Bring all your friends, (faire Lord) that burne 20
 With love, to heare your modestie relate
 The bus²nesse of your blooming wit,
 With all the fruit shall follow it,
 Both to the honour of the *King* and *State*.
 O how will then our Court be pleas'd, 25
 To see great *Charles* of Travaile eas'd,
 When he beholds a graft of his owne hand,
 Shoot up an *Olive* fruitfull, faire,
 To be a shadow to his *Heire*,
 And both a strength, and Beautie to his Land I 30

5 deliver'd,] deliver'd F, D, Q 6 yeare, the] yeare and D, Q
 7 The] That D, Q run. Fa : runne, D, Q : run . F 15 was] were
 D, Q 16 Doth show] Have shew'd D, Q Houres,] : Houres F
 heures. D. Q 18 aromatique bed] aromatiquebed F : stroma-
 tickebed Q (with ' stromaticke ' corrected to ' Aromaticque ' in the errata)
 20 (faire Lord) faire Lord, Q.D 21 love,] joy D: ioy Q relate]
 relate, F 22 bus'nesse] businesse D, Q 23 fruit shall] fruits
 that D. Q 25 then our] the D, Q 26 Travaile] travell D. Q
 28 Shoot] Spring D, Q 29 to his Heire] of the aire D: of the
 Aire Q 30 his] the D. Q

LXXV.

EPITHALAMION;
OR,
A SONG:
CELEBRATING THE NVPTIALS
of that Noble Gentleman, M^r. HIEROME WESTON,
Son, and Heire, of the Lord WESTON,
Lord high Treasurer of *England*
with the Lady
FRANCES STUART,
Daughter of ESME D. of *Lenox* deceased,
and Sister of the Surviving Duke
of the same name.

EPITHALAMION.

THough thou hast past thy Summer standing, stay
A-while with us, bright Sun, and helpe our light ;
Thou canst not meet more Glory, on the way,
Betweene thy Tropicks, to arrest thy sight,
5 Then thou shalt see to day :
We wooe thee, stay
And see, what can be seene,
The bountie of a King, and beautie of his Queene !
See, the Procession 1 what a Holy day
10 (Bearing the promise of some better fate)
Hath fil(l)ed, with *Caroches*, all the way,
From *Greenwich*, hither, to *Row-hampton* gate !
Ixxv. In N ff. 176-9 Title, of that noble] OF THAT NOBLE F Son,]
Sonne N : Son F3 the same] that A^r I hast] art N 2 A-
while] a while N us, F3 : us F helpe] mend N 3 canst]
can'st F 4 thy] the N 6 stay] Stay. N 9 day] day I
F originally 11 filled F3 *Caroches*] *Caroches* N : *Cacoches*
F. F3 12 *Greenwich*] *Greenewitch* N

When look'd the yeare, at best,
 So like a feast ?
 Or were Affaires in tune, 15
 By all the Spheares consent, so in the heart of June ?
 What Beavie of beauties, and bright youths at charge
 Of Summers Liveries, and gladding greene ;
 Doe boast their Loves, and Brav'ries so at large,
 As they came all to see, and to be seene ! 20
 When look'd the Earth so fine,
 Or so did shine,
 In all her bloome, and flower ;
 To welcome home a Paire, and deck the nuptiall bower ?
 It is the kindly Season of the time, 25
 The Month of youth, which calls all Creatures forth
 To doe their Offices in Natures Chime,
 And celebrate (perfection at the worth)
 Manage, the end of life,
 That holy strife, 30
 And the allowed warre :
 Through which not only we, but all our *Species* are.
 Harke how the Bells upon the waters play
 Their Sister-tunes, from *Thames* his either side,
 As they had learn'd new changes, for the day, 35
 And all did ring th'approches of the Bride ;
 The Lady *Frances'*, drest
 Above the rest
 Of all the Maidens faire ;
 In gracefull Ornament of Garland, Gemmes, and Haire. 40
 See, how she paceth forth in Virgin-white,
 Like what she is, the Daughter of a Duke,
 And Sister : darting forth a dazling light
 On all that come her Simpleesse to rebuke !

16 consent, so] concent, so, N 17 Beavie of] Beautie of F (*Jonson*
would write 'Beauie') : Beuy'of N youths N. youth's F 19
 Brav'nes so] brau'nes, so, N 21 fine,] fine A 26 forth] forth, N
 28 (perfection at] perfection, (at N 33 Harke] Hark. N 37
Frances] Francis N 40 Garland] Girland N Haire] Haire I N
 43 Sister :] Sister ! N

- 45 Her tresses trim her back,
 As she did lack
 Nought of a Maiden Queene,
 With Modestie so crown¹d, and Adoration seene.
 Stay, thou wilt see what rites the Virgins doe I
 50 The choisest Virgin-troup of all the Land !
 Porting the Ensignes of united Two,
 Both Crownes, and Kingdomes in their either hand ;
 Whose Majesties appeare,
 To make more cleare
 55 This Feast, then can the Day,
 Although that thou, O Sun, at our intreaty stay I
 See, how with Roses, and with Lillies shine,
 (Lillies and Roses, Flowers of either Sexe)
 The bright Brides paths, embelish'd more then thine
 60 With light of love, this Paire doth intertexe !
 Stay, see the Virgins sow,
 (Where she shall goe)
 The Emblemes of their way.
 O, now thou smil'st, faire Sun, and shin'st, as thou wouldst
 stay !
 65 With what full hands, and in how plenteous showers
 Have they bedew¹d the Earth, where she doth tread,
 As if her ayrie steps did spring the flowers,
 And all the Ground were Garden, where she led !
 See, at another doore,
 70 On the same floore,
 The Bridegroome meets the Bride
 With all the pompe of Youth, and all our Court beside.
 Our Court, and all the Grandees ; now, Sun, looke,
 And looking with thy best Inquirie, tell,
 75 In all thy age of Journals thou hast tooke,
 Saw'st thou that Paire, became these Rites so well,
- 46 she] they N 49 see] see, N 55 Day. N. F3 ; Day F
 59 Brides paths.] Brides-paths I N 64 stay !] stay F originally
 66 doth] did N 68 Ground FS : Ground, F : ground N 76-7
 welJ ____ Two ?] well ? ... two : N

Save the preceding Two ?
 Who, in all they doe,
 Search, Sun, and thou wilt find,
 They are th'exampled Paire, and mirrour of their kind. 80

Force from the Phoenix, then, no raritie
 Of Sex, to rob the Creature ; but from Man,
 The king of Creatures, take his partitie
 With Angels, Muse, to speake these : Nothing can
 Illustrate these, but they 85
 Themselves to day,
 Who the whole Art expresse ;
 All else we see beside, are Shadowes, and goe lesse.

It is their Grace, and favour, that makes scene,
 And wovnder'd at, the bounties of this day : 90
 All is a story of the King and Queene !
 And what of Dignitie, and Honour may
 Be duly done to those
 Whom they have chose,
 And set the marke upon, 95
 To give a greater Name, and Title to ! Their owne !

Weston, their Treasure, as their Treasurer,
 That Mine of Wisdome, and of Counsells deep,
 Great Say-Master of State, who cannot erre,
 But doth his Carract, and just Standard keepe 100
 In all the prov'd assayes,
 And legall wayes
 Of Tryals, to worke downe
 Mens Loves unto the Lawes, and Lawes to love the Crowne.

78 Who, in] Who'm N 79 wilt] shall N find, K : find F
 81 Phoenix,] Phoenix F 82 Man,] Man F 83 Creatures. N :
 Creatures ; F 88 lesse.] lesse ! N 90 at, N : at F day :)
 Day ! N 93 those] those, N 95 the] their N. G upon,]
 upon F : vpon, N 96 to ! Their owne !] to Their Owne. N
 09 cannot] not to N 100 But doth his] doth his prime A' Stan-
 dard] Standart A^T

105 And this well mov'd the Judgement of the King
 To pay, with honours, to his noble Sonne,
 To day, the Fathers service ; who could bring
 Him up, to doe the same himselfe had done.
 That farre-all-seeing Eye
 110 Could soone espie
 What kind of waking Man
 He had so highly set; and, in what *Barbican*.

Stand there ; for when a noble Nature's rais'd,
 It brings Friends Joy, Foes Griefe, Posteritie Fame;
 115 In him the times, no Icsse then Prince, are prais'd,
 And by his Rise, in active men, his Name
 Doth Emulation stirre ;
 To th¹ dull, a Spur
 It is : to th¹ envious meant
 120 A meere upbraiding Griefe, and tort'ring punishment.

See, now the Chappell opens ; where the King
 And Bishop stay, to consummate the Rites :
 The holy Prelate prayes, then takes the Ring,
 Askes first, Who gives her (I *Charles*) then he plights
 125 One in the others hand,
 Whilst they both stand,
 Hearing their charge, and then
 The Solemne Quire cryes, Joy ; and they returne, Amen.

0 happy bands ! and thou more happy place,
 130 Which to this use, wert built and consecrate !
 To have thy God to blesse, thy King to grace,
 And this their chosen Bishop celebrate,

106 pay,] pay F Sonne, N : Sonne F 109 farre-] farre N
 112 set] plac'd A^r 113 there ;] there ! A^r 114 Fnends Joy.
 Foes Gnefe, Postentie] Freinds, ioy; Foes, greif; Posterity, N
 119 meant A^r: meant, F 121 opens;] opens! N 124 *Charles*] *Charlts* ;
 F3 125 others] other N 126 stand, N : stand F
 130 wert] wer't F 132 celebrate. A: celebrate ; F

And knit the Nuptiall knot,
 Which Time shall not,
 Or canker'd Jealousie, 135
 With all corroding Arts, be able to untie !
 The Chappell empties, and thou may'st be gone
 Now, Sun, and post away the rest of day :
 These two, now holy Church hath made them one,
 Doe long to make themselves, so, another way : i₄₀
 There is a Feast behind,
 To them of kind,
 Which their glad Parents taught
 One to the other, long e^fre these to light were brought.
 Haste, haste, officious Sun, and send them Night 145
 Some houres before (*t* should, that these may know
 All that their Fathers, and their Mothers might
 Of Nuptiall Sweets, at such a season, owe,
 To propagate their Names,
 And keepe their Fames 150
 Alive, which else would die,
 For Fame keepes Vertue up, and it Posteritie.
 Th¹ Ignoble never liv'd, they were a-while
 Like Swine, or other Cattell here on earth :
 Their names are not recorded on the File 155
 Of Life, that fall so ; Christians know their birth
 Alone, and such a race,
 We pray may grace
 Your fruitfull spreading Vine,
 But dare not aske our wish in Language *fescennine* : 160
 Yet, as we may, we will, with chast desires,
 (The holy perfumes of the Manage bed.)
 Be kept alive those Sweet, and Sacred Ares
 Of Love betweene you, and your Lovely-head :

135 canker'd] cankered N 137 empties.] empties ; N 142
 To] to F 143-4 taught One] taught; One, N 145 Nipht]
 night, N 147 might] might, N 153 hv'd,] liu'd; N a-while]
 a while ! N 154 Cattell here] Cattell, here, N 156 birth]
 birth. F 158 grace] grace, F 160 dare JV, F3 : dare, F
 163 alive N : alive, F

165 That when you both are old,
 You find no cold
 There ; but, renewed, say,
 (After the last child borne ;) This is our wedding day.

Till you behold a race to fill your Hall,
 170 A *Richard* and a *Hierome*, by their names
 Upon a *Thomas*, or a *Francis* call;
 A *Kate*, a *Frank*, to honour their Grand-dames,
 And 'twenee their Grandsires thighs,
 Like pretty Spies,
 175 Peepe forth a Gemme ; to see
 How each one playcs his part, of the large Pedigree.

And never may there want one of the Stem,
 To be a watchfull Servant for this State ;
 But like an Arme of Eminence, 'mongst them,
 180 Extend a reaching vertue, early and late :
 Whilst the maine tree, still found
 Upright and sound,
 By this Sun's Noone-sted's made
 So great; his Body now alone projects the shade.

i8s They both are slip'd to Bed ; Shut fast the Doore,
 And let him freely gather Loves First-fruits,
 lice's Master of the Office ; yet no more
 Exacts then she is pleas'd to pay: no suits,
 Strifes, murmures, or delay,
 '90 Will last till day ;
 Night, and the sheetes will show
 The longing Couple, all that elder Lovers know.

166 find] feele AT 168 borne;)] borne) AT 171 *Francis*
 Sister A 172 honour] honor N 173 And] And, N 175
 Gemme ;] demme, N 178 this] the N 170 Eminence, A^r:
 Eminence F 'mongst] 'mong N 181 tree.] tree F : Tree, N
 183 this] the A' Noon-sted's AT : Noone sted's F 184 great]
 large N now alone projects the] then, not boughs, proiect his N
 185 slip'd] shp't N 187-8 yet. .. pay] and the more | gentlie hee
 asketh, shee will pay AT 188 suits,] suits F : Suits, N 191
 show] show, F : showe N 192 Couple, all] Couple all. N

LXXVI.

*The humble Petition of poore Ben.
To th'best of Monarch, Masters, Men,
King CHARLES.*

—Doth most humbly show it,
To your Majestic your Poet:

THat whereas your royall *Father*, 5
JAUE the blessed, pleas'd the rather,
 Of his speciall grace to *Letters*,
 To make all the MUSES debtors
 To his bountie ; by extension
 Of a free Poetique Pension, 10
 A large hundred Markes annultie,
 To be given me in gratuitie
 For done service, and to come :
 And that this so accepted summe,
 Or dispenc'd in bookes, or bread, 15
 (For with both the MUSE was fed)
 Hath drawne on me, from the times,
 All the envie of the *Rymes*,
 And the ratling pit-pat-noyse,
 Of the *esse-Poetique* boyes ; 20
 When their pot-guns ayme to hit,
 With their pellets of small wit,
 Parts of me (they judg'd) decay'd,
 But we last out, still unlay'd.

Ixxvi. A first draft in Ash I f. 48 b, 'To the Kings Most Excellent
 Maiesty | The humble Petcon of your Poet | To your Maiestye dooth
 shew it'. 5 That whereas] Whereas late Ash Father,] Father F
 6-7 the rather,... Letters,] (the rather ... letters) Ash 9 extension'
 dimension Ash 10 Of . . . pension] To his Poet of a pension ASI
 ii large] full Ash 12 me not in Ash 13 and] or Ash 14
 accepted] thiiftye Ash 15 Or] Well Ash 16 was] it Ash
 17 me] him Ash 18 the] there (= their) Ash 20 lebse-] less
 F3 brauejA 21 ayme] thmke Ash hit,] bit Ash 23 me
 (they judg'd)] him, the Judge Ash 24 But . . unlay'd.] But hee
 lasteth and vnlayde Ash

- 25 Please your Majestie to make
Of your grace, for goodnesse sake,
Those your *Fathers Markes*, your *Pounds* ;
Let their spite (which now abounds)
Then goe on, and doe its worst;
30 This would all their envie burst:
And so warme the *Poets* tongue
You'ld reade a Snake, in his next Song.

LXXVII.

To the right Honourable, the Lord Treasurer
of England.

An Epigram.

- I**F to my mind, great Lord, I had a state,
I would present you now with curious plate
Of *Noremberg*, or *Turkic* ; hang your roomes
Not with the *Arras*, but the *Persian Loomes*.
5 I would, if price, or prayer could them get,
Send in, what or *Romano*, *Tintoret*,
Titian, or *Raphael*, *Michael Angela*,
Have left in fame to equall, or out-goe
The old *Greek-hands* in picture, or in stone.
10 This I would doe, could I thinke *Western* one

Ixxvi. 30 This] That Ash

32 You'ld reade] To eate Ash

Ixxvii. An earlier draft in *D. Q. Ed* : *Nf.* 173, ' To the Right Hon^o*: my Lo: Weston L: Thres^{er}: An Epigramme' : *Ji f.* 37 6 ' To the Right Hon^{bl}. the Lord Tre: western' : *J2 f.* 19 a. ' Ben: Johnsons verses to Sir Richard Weston Lord Tr'er Ian: 10 for w*h hee gaue him 40!' of England not in *D, Q* z mind, great Lord,] mind (great Lord) *Ji, Ja* 2 you now] you, now, *N* now with] with some *D.Q. J²* 4 with] from *D, Q* 5 if price, or prayer . . . get,] (if price or prayer . . . get) *D, Ji* : (if price or prayer) . . . get (*J* could them] them could *Ji* 6 Send . . . *Tintoret*] Send what *Romano* or what *Tenteret Ja* or *Romano*,] *Romans* famous *D, Ed* : or *Romano N Tintoret*] *Tintaret D. Q, Ed, F* : *Tintarett N* : *Tinetorett Ji* 7 *Angela*,] *Angelo F* 8 equall] squall *N* 9 *Greek-hands*] *greek-hands N* : *Greeke hands D, Q* stone.] stone; *D* : stone. *Q* 10 I would] would *ID, Q* could . . . one *D.Q. N* : could I know *Weston*, one *F* : if I could thinke you one //, *Ja*

Catch'd with these Arts, wherein the Judge is wise
 As farre as sense, and onely by the eyes.
 But you I know, my Lord ; and know you can
 Discerne betweene a Statue, and a Man ;
 Can doe the things that Statues doe deserve, 15
 And act the businesse, which they paint, or carve.
 What you have studied are the arts of life ;
 To compose men, and manners ; stint the strife
 Of murmuring Subjects ; make the Nations know
 What worlds of blessings to good Kings they owe : 20
 And mightiest Monarchs feele what large increase
 Of sweets, and safeties, they possesse by Peace.
 These I looke up at, with a reverent eye,
 And strike Religion in the stavnders-by ;
 Which, though I cannot as an Architect 25
 In glorious Piles, or Pyramids erect
 Unto your honour : I can tune in song
 Aloud ; and (happ'ly) it may last as long.

ii Catch'd with] Caught them *Ja* 12 the] his *D. Q. Ji* 13
 you *D. Q* : you, *F* and know] and know, *N* 15 things] things,
N : in *Jz* the scribe failing to read the word has put a dash Statues]
 Statue *D, Q* 16 they] these *D, Q* : theise *Ji* : those *Ja* carve.]
 kerue : *N* 17 studied] studied, *N*, *F3* 18 compose] Corn-
 passe /2 manners ;] manners I *N* 19 murmuring Subjects ;]
 murmuring Subjects ! *N* : froward Citizens, *D, Qi Ji. Ja* the not in
D, J¹ J² 20 worlds] world *D, Q* owe:] ow I *N* 21 feele]
 feele. *N* 22 sweets, and safeties, they] Fame and Honour you *D. Q* :
 flame, and Honor, they *Ji* : so *Ja* Peace.] peace 1 *N* 23 I
 looke] looke I *D* : locke I *Ji* : looke you *Ja* reverent] reverend
F3: measuring *D. Q. N. Ji, Ja* 25 cannot as an Architect] cannot,
 like as an Architect, *D, Q* : cannot (as an Architect) *N* : cannot like an
 Architect *Ed* 26 glorious] stately *Ja* or] and *D. Q. Ji. Ja*
 Pyramids] Pyramides *Q. N* 27 tune] voyce *D. Q. Ji, Ja* 28
 Aloud ;] Alow'd ! *N* : As loude *Ja* (happ'ly)] (haply) *D. Q* : happily
N : hap'pily *Ja*

LXXVIII.

An Ilpigram

To my *MFSE*, the Lady Digby, on her
Husband Sir KENELME DIGBY.

THo', happy *Muse*, thou know my *Digby* well,
Yet read him in these lines : He doth excell
In honour, courtesie, and all the parts
Court can call hers, or Man could call his Arts.
5 Hee's prudent, valiant, just, and temperate ;
In him all vertue is beheld in State :
And he is built like some imperiall roome
For that to dwell in, and be still at home.
His brest is a brave Palace, a broad Street,
10 Where all heroique ample thoughts doe meet .
Where Nature such a large survey hath ta'en,
As other soules, to his, dwell in a Lane :
Witnesse his Action done at *Scandero(o)ne* ;
Upon my Birth-day the eleventh of *June* ;
15 When the Apostle *Barnabee* the bright
Unto our yeare doth give the longest light.
In signe the Subject, and the Song will live,
Which I have vow'd posteritie to give.
Goe, *Muse*, in, and salute him. Say he be
20 Busie, or frowne at first; when he sees thee,

Lxxviii. In *D*, *Q*, *Ed* ' To Sir Kenelme Digby. An Epigram ' ; and in
H 5f. 20 ' An Epigram on S^r: Kellum Digby to my Muse '. I well,
D, *Q*, *F* 3 : well; *F* 2 read] take *D*, *Q*, *H* 3 honour] Honours
D, *Q* 4 could] would *D*, *Q* his] the *H* 6 vertue] action
D, *Q* 7 built. . . roome] built, . . . roome, *D*, *Q* 8 that] those
D, *Q* : theese *H* 9 Street,] Street *F* : street. *D*, *Q* 10 ample
not in *H* 12 other] others *D*, *Q*, *H* soules, to his, *D*, *Q* : soules to
his *F* dwell *D*, *Q*, *H* : dwelt *F* 13-14 Witnesse . . . *June*] Witnesse
his birth-day, the eleventh of *June*, I And his great action done at
Scanderoone *D*, *Q* : Witnesse my birth day the Eleaventh of lune |
and his action done att *Scanderoone* *H* 15-16 not in *D*, *Q*, *H*
16 light.] light, *F* 17-18 In . . . give.] That day, which I pre-
destin'd am to sing, | For *Bnttains* honour, and to *Charles* my King :
D, *Q* : so *H* 17 live,] live *F* 19 him. Say] him, say *D*, *Q* :
him thoughe *H* 20 or] and *H*

He will cleare up his forehead, thinke thou bring'st
 Good *Omen* to him, in the note thou sing'st,
 For he doth love my Verses, and will looke
 Upon them, (next to *Spenser's* noble booke,)
 And praise them too. O ! what a fame 't will be ? 25
 What reputation to my lines, and me,
 When hee shall read them at the Treasurers bord,
 The knowing *Weston*, and that learned Lord
 Allowes them ? Then, what copies shall be had,
 What transcripts begg'd ? how cry'd up, and how glad, 30
 Wilt thou be, *Muse*, when this shall them befall ?
 Being sent to one, they will be read of all.

LXXIX.

NEW yeares, expect *new* gifts : Sister, your Harpc,
 Lute, Lyre, Theorbo, all are call'd to day.
 Your change of Notes, the *flat*, the *meane*, the *sharpe*,
 To "shew the rites, and t(o)'usher forth the way
 Of the *New Yeare*, in a new silken warpe, 5
 To fit the softnessc of our *Yeares-gift*: when
 We sing the best of *Monarchs*, *Masters*, *Men* ;
 For, had we here said lesse, we had sung nothing then.

A New-yeares-Gtft sung to King

CHARLES, 1635.

Rec **T**o ay old *Janus* opens the new yeare,
Chori. And shuts the old. Haste, haste, all loyall 1°
 Swaines,
 That know the times, and seasons when t(o)'appeare,
 And offer your just service on these plairu-s ;
 Best Kings expect first-fruits of your glad games.

Ixxviii. 21 cleare] cheare *D, Q* forehead, *D* forehead:/ 22 *Omen*/
 fortune *D, Q, H* 24 (next . . . booke,)] next . booke , *D, Q*
 (Booke ; *Q*) booke,] booke. *F* 27 shallj doth *D, Q, H* read
 om. *H* bord.] board, *D, Q* : bord ' *F* 29 Allowesj allowe *H*
 shall] will *D, Q, H* 30 begt'dj made *D, Q, H* 31 them] then
D, Q: the *H* befall ?] befall, *D, Q*

Ixxix. *Italic type in F* : *G* places the title before 1. i and prefixes
 'Prelude' to II. 1-8. 5 warpe,] warpe *F* 6 when] When *F*
 After 8 Chorus of Nymphs and Shepherds. *G*

1. PAN is the great Preserver of our bounds.
 15 2. To him we owe all profits of our grounds.
 3. Our milke. 4. Our fells. 5. Our fleeces. 6. and
 first Lambs.
 7. Our teeming Ewes, 8. and lustie-mounting
 Rammes.
 9. See where he walkes (lo) with M I R A by his side.
Char. Sound, sound his praises loud, and with his, hers
 divide.

- 20 *Shep.* Of P A N wee sing, the best of Hunters, P A N,
 That drives the Hart to seeke unused wayes,
 And in the chase, more then S Y L V A N U S can,
Char. Heare, 6 you Groves, and, Hills, resound his praise.

- Nym.* Of brightest M I R A, doe we raise our Song,
 25 Sister of P A N, and glory of the Spring :
 Who walkes on Earth as *May* still went along,
Char. Rivers, and Vallies, *Eccho* what wee sing.

- Shep.* Of P A N wee sing, the Chiefe of Leaders, P A N,
 That leades our flocks and us, and calls both forth
 30 To better Pastures then great P A L E S can :
Char. Heare, O you Groves, and, Hills, resound his worth.

- Nymp.* Of brightest M I R A, is our Song ; the grace
 Of all that Nature, yet, to life did bring ;
 And were shee lost, could best supply her place,
 35 *Char.* Rivers, and Valleys, *Eccho* what wee sing.

1. Where ere they tread th'enamour'd ground,
 The fairest flowers are alwayes found ;
 2. As if the beauties of the yeare,
 Still waited on 'hem where they were.
 40 i. Hee is the Father of our peace ;
 2. Shee, to the Crowne, hath brought encrease.

14-18 *G distributes among 9 Shepherds: query, between 5 Shepherds
 and 5 Nymphs alternately* 20 *Shep.* in F at 22 24 *Nym.* in
 F at 26 28 *Shep* 31 *Chor.*] In F *Shep. Char.* at 30 32 *Nymp.*
 35 *Char.*] In F *Nymp. Chor.* at 33 35 *Valleys,*] *Valleys* F 36-42
 I. 2.] i *Shep.* 2 *Shep.* G 37 *fairest*] *Fairest* F

I. Wee know no other power then his,
 PAN only our great Shep'ard is,
Chorus Our great, our good. Where one's so drest
 In truth of colours, both are best. 45

Haste, haste you hither, all you gentler Swaines,
 That have a Flock, or Herd, upon these plaines ;
 This is the great Preserver of our bounds,
 To whom you owe all duties of your grounds ;
 Your Milkes, your Fells, your Fleeces, and first
 Lambes, 50
 Your teeming Ewes, aswell as mounting Rammes.
 Whose praises let's report unto the Woods,
 That they may take it eccho'd by the Floods.
 'Tis hee, 'tis hee, in singing hee,
 And hunting, PAN, exceedeth thce. 55
 Hee gives all plentie, and cnrcasc,
 Hee is the author of our peace.

Where e're he goes upon the ground,
 The better grasse, and flowers are found.
 To sweeter Pastures lead hee can, 60
 Then ever PALES could, or PAN ;
 Hee drives diseases from our Folds,
 The theefe from spoyle, his presence holds.
 PAN knowes no other power then his,
 This only the great Shep'ard is. 65
 'Tis hee, 'tis hee, &c.

LXXX.

[Faire Friend, 'tis true, your beauties move
 My heart to a respect:
 Too little to bee paid with love,
 Too great for your neglect.

Ixxix 46-53, 58-65 *Rect. Cho. G* 54-7, 66 *Cho. G*
 Ixxv By SIDNEY GODOLPHIN. In *H6 ff. 32 b. 33 a.* 'A Sonnet:'
subscribed 'Godolphin' : Italic type in F. I Faire Fnend,]
 Madam

- 5 I neither love, nor yet am free,
 For though the flame I find
 Be not intense in the degree,
 Tis of the purest kind.
- 10 It little wants of love, but paine,
 Your beautie takes my sense,
 And lest you should that price disdain,
 My thoughts, too, feelee the influence.
- Tis not a passions first accesse
 Readie to multiply,
 15 But like Loves calmest State it is
 Possest with victorie.
- It is like Love to Truth reduc'd,
 All the false values gone,
 Which were created, and induc'd
 20 By fond imagination.
- Tis either Fancie, or 'tis Fate,
 To love you more then I;
 I love you at your beauties rate,
 Lesse were an Injurie.
- 25 Like unstamp'd Gold, I weigh each grace,
 So that you may collect
 Th'intrinsique value of your face
 Safely from my respect.
- And this respect would merit love,
 30 Were not so faire a sight
 Payment enough ; for, who dare move
 Reward for his delight ?]

10 beautie takes] beauties take *H* 11 price] prize *H* 12
 thoughts, too, feelee] thoughts feelee *H* 17 reduc'd,] reduc'd *F* 18
 values] value's *F* : valcws *H* 26 collect] collect, ¥ 27 face]
 face, *F* 29 would] could *H* 31 dare] dares

LXXXI.

[On the Kings Birth-Jay.

Rowse up thy selfe, my gentle Muse,
 Though now our greene conceits be gray,
 And yet once more doe not refuse
 To take thy Phrygian Harp, and play
 In honour of this cheerefull Day : 5
 Long may they both contend to prove,
 That best of Crownes is such a love.

Make first a Song of Joy, and Love,
 Which chastly flames in royall eyes,
 Then tune it to the Spheares above, 10
 When the benignest Stars doe rise,
 And sweet Conjunctions grace the skies.
 Long may, &c.

To this let all good hearts resound,
 Whilst Diadems invest his head ; 15
 Long may he live, whose life doth bound
 More then his Lawes, and better le(a)d
 By high Example, then by dread.
 Long may, &c.

Long may he round about him see 20
 His Roses, and his Lillies blowne :
 Long may his only Deare, and Hee
 Joy in Idaeas of their ownc,
 And Kingdomes hopes so timely sowne.
 Long may they both contend to prove, 25
 That best of Crownes is such a love.]

IxxxI. By Sir HENRY WOTTON. Printed in ' *Rehqwie Wottomana* '. J65J, p. 521. as 'An Ode to the King, At his Returning from Scotland to the Queen : after his Coronation there' (= W). In RP8, pp. 96, 97. 'An Ode Vpon Kg Charles's returne to y Queene from his CoronaCon in Scotland ', subscribed ' Sir Henry Votton ', and similarly MS. Tanntr 465 f. 61 b as by Wotton *Italic type in* ". 2 now not in Tanner be] are RP 4 thy] the RP, fanner 6, 7 Refrain om. W here and in stanzas 2 and 3 : so RP, Tanner, which assign II 25-6 to ' Chorus' 7, 26 That] The RP 8 and! of RP, Tanner g flames] flame M' 15 Whilst! While W. RP. Tanner 17 lead Tanner leade RP: led F 22 Idzas] Ideas W 24 so] see RP

LXXXII.

To my L. the King,
On the Christning

His second Sonne IA ME S.

- T**Hat thou art lov'd of God, this worke is done,
Great King, thy having of a second Sonne :
And by thy blessing, may thy People see
How much they are belov'd of God, in thee ;
5 Would they would understand it! Princes are
Great aides to Empire, as they are great care
To pious parents, who would have their blood
Should take first Seisin of the publique good,
As hath thy JAMES ; cleans'd from originall drosse,
10 This day, by Baptisme, and his Saviours crosse :
Grow up, sweet Babe, as blessed, in thy Name,
As in renewing thy good Grandsires fame;
Me thought, *Great Britaine* in her Sea, before,
Sate safe enough, but now secured more.
15 At land she triumphs in the triple shade,
Her Rose, and Lilly, interwind, have made.

Oceano securo meo, securior umbris.

LXXXIII.

An Elegie

On the Lady JANE PAWLET,
Marchion: of Winton.

WHat gentle Ghost, besprent with *April* deaw,
Hayles me, so solemnly, to yonder Yewgh ?
And beckning wooes me, from the fatall tree
To pluck a Garland, for her selfe, or mee ?

Ixxxiii 13 *Britaine*] *Bnttaine* F

Ixxxiii. An earlier text in D. Q, Ed, and in TCD. pp. 327-30: in TCD
subscribed ' Ben: Johnson '. JANE] *Jane* D, Q, Ed, TCD : ANNE F :
ANN Fj Winton] *Winchester* D. Q. TCD, Ed i gentle] *goodly*
D, Q. Ed. TCD 2 Hayles] *Hale's* D : Halls Q (*corrected to 'hales'*
in the errata) 3 beckning] *beckoning* D, Q : *becking* TCD 4
mee ?] *me.* D, Q

I doe obey you, Beautie ! for in death, 5
 You seeme a faire one ! O that you had breath,
 To give your shade a name ! Stay, stay, I feele
 A horreur in mee ! all my blood is steale !
 Stiffe ! starke ! my joynts 'gainst one another knock !
 Whose Daughter ? ha ? Great *Savage* of the Rock ? 10
 Hee's good, as great. I am almost a stone !
 And e're I can aske more of her, shoe's gone !
 Alas, I am all Marble ! write the rest
 Thou wouldst have written, Fame, upon my brest:
 It is a large faire table, and a true, 15
 And the disposure will be something new,
 When I, who would her Poet have become,
 At least may beare th'inscription to her Tombe.
 Shee was the Lady *Jane*, and *Marchionisse*
 Of *Winchester* ; the Heralds can tell this : 20
 Earle *Rivers* Grand-Child—serve not formes, good Fame,
 Sound thou her Vertues, give her soulc a Name.
 Had I a thousand Mouthes, as many Tongues,
 And voyce to raise them from my brazen Lungs,
 I durst not aime at that: The dotes were such 25
 Thereof, no notion can expresse how much
 Their Carract was ! I, or my trump must breake,
 But rather I, should I of that part speack !
 It is too neere of kin to Heaven, the Soule,
 To be describ'd ! Fames fingers are too foule 30
 To touch these Mysteries ! We may admire
 The blaze, and splendor, but not handle fire !
 What she did here, by great example, well,
 T(o)inlive posteritie, her Fame may tell !

6 you] I D, Q 7 a name] a lasting name Ed Stay, stay,] stay I
 stay i D, Q 12 her,] her F.D.Q 14 written. Fame,] written Fame
 D : written fame Q 16 something] somewhat D, Q 17 her D, Q.
 Ed: the F 19 *Marchiomse*] *Marchionesse* D. Q 20 can] could
 TCD this : D. Q: this. F 21 formes, pood] titles, D, Q 25 not
 om. TCD aime at] aime't Ed at that: The dotes] at, the Dotes
 thereof D, Q, Ed dotes] doubts TCD 26 Thereof, no notion] No
 Nation D, 0, Ed 27 Carract] Charact D, Q I, or] for TCD 29
 Heaven] God D. Q. TCD 31 these] those D, Q: the TCD 32 blaze]
 heat D, Q 33 here, by] by a D: by Q 34 To'inlive] t'mlive F

- 35 And, calling truth to witnesse, make that good
 From the inherent Graces in her blood 1
 Else, who doth praise a person by a new,
 But a fain'd way, doth rob it of the true.
 Her Sweetnesse, Softnesse, her faire Courtesie,
 40 Her wary guardes, her wise simplicitie,
 Were like a ring of Vertues, 'bout her set,
 And pietie the Center, where all met.
 A reverend State she had, an awfull Eye,
 A dazling, yet inviting, Majestic :
 45 What Nature, Fortune, Institution, Fact
 Could summe to a perfection, was her Act!
 How did she leave the world ? with what contempt ?
 Just as she in it liv'd ! and so exempt
 From all affection I when they urg'd the Cure
 50 Of her disease, how did her soule assure
 Her suffrings, as the body had beene away !
 And to the Torturers (her Doctors) say,
 Stick on your Cupping-glasses, feare not, put
 Your hottest Causticks to, burne, lance, or cut:
 55 'Tis but a body which you can torment,
 And I, into the world, all Soule, was sent!
 Then comforted her Lord ! and blest her Sonne !
 Chear'd her faire Sisters in her race to runne !
 With gladnesse temper'd her sad Parents teares !
 60 Made her friends joyes to get above their feares !
 And, in her last act, taught the Stavnders-by,
 With admiration, and applause to die !
 Let Angels sing her glories, who did call
 Her spirit home, to her original!!
 65 Who saw the way was made it! and were sent
 To carry, and conduct the Complement

35 that] it D, Q, TCD 38 rob] spoyle D, Q, TCD 44 dazling]
 darling D, Q, Ed yet inviting.] (yet inviting) D 46 summe]
 heap D, Q 51 body had] body'had Ed 52 (her Doctors)] her
 Doctors D, Q 54 hottest] hotter TCD to,] to D, Q 56 world,
 all] world with my D, O, Ed 51 With] Which D, Q 60 joyeb
 D : ioyes Q : joyes, F 65 Who] That D, Q. TCD

Twixt death and life ! Where her mortalitie
 Became her Birth-day to Eternitie !
 And now, through circumfused light, she lookes
 On Natures secrets, there, as her owne bookes : 70
 Speakes Heavens Language ! and discourseth free
 To every *Order*, ev'ry *Hierarchic* !
 Beholds her Maker ! and, in him, doth see
 What the beginnings of all beauties be ;
 And all beatitudes, that thence doe flow : 75
 Which they that have the Crowne are sure to know I
 Goe now, her happy Parents, and be sad,
 If you not uvnderstand, what Child you had.
 If you dare grudge at Heaven, and repent
 T'have paid againe a blessing was but lent, 80
 And trusted so, as it deposited lay
 At pleasure, to be cail'd for, every day !
 If you can envie your owne Daughters blisse,
 And wish her state lesse happie then it is !
 If you can cast about your either eye, 85
 And see all dead here, or about to dye !
 The Starres, that are the Jewels of the Night,
 And Day, deceasing with the Prince of light,
 The Sunne I great Kings, and mightiest Kingdomes fall!
 Whole Nations ! nay, Mankind I the World, with all 90
 That ever had beginning there, to'(h)ave end !
 With what injustice should one soule pretend
 T(o)'escape this common knowne necessitie,
 When we were all borne, we began to die ;
 And, but for that Contention, and brave strife 95
 The Christian hath t(o)'enjoy the future life,

69 light] lights *D, Q* 70 Natures] natural! *TCD* secrets] secret *G*
 71 discourseth *G* : discourses *D, Q, Ed* : discovereth *F* 74 beginnings]
 beginning *D, Q* 75 doe] doth *D, Q* 76 they that have the
 Crowne] the Elect of God *D, Q, TCD* 77 sad,] sad *F* 78 you] yee
D, Q, Ed 79 grudge at] quarrel! *D, Q, TCD* 80 T'have] To have
D, Q 83 envie] enioy *TCD* 88 And] The *D, Q, TCD* deceasing
D, Q : deceasing I *F* 89 Kings, *D, Q* : Kings *TCD*: Kings' *F*
 mightiest] mighty *Ed* 90 nay, *D, Q* : nay *F* with] and *D, Q*
 91 there, *not in D, Q* to have *D, Q, TCD* 92 should] can *D, Q*
 95 Contention, and brave] brave contention and *D, Q* 96 the] a *Z, 3*

Hee were the wretched'st of the race of men :
 But as he scares at that, he bruiseth then
 The Serpents head : Gets above Death, and Sinne,
 10o And, sure of Heaven, rides triumphing in.

LXXXIV.

EUPHEME;

OR,

THE FAIRE FAME

LEFT TO POSTERITIE

Of that truly-noble Lady, the Lady VENETIA DIGBY,
 late Wife of Sir KENELME DIGBY, Knight:
 A Gentleman absolute in all Numbers ;

Consisting of these Ten Pieces.

The Dedication of her CRADLE.

The Song of her DESCENT.

The Picture of her BODY.

Her MIND.

Her being chosen a MUSE.

Her faire OFFICES.

Her happie MATCH.

Her hopefuU ISSUE.

Her Ano0EO£I£, or Relation to the Saints.

Her Inscription, or CROWNE.

Vivam amare voluptas, defunctam Religio.
 Stat(ius).

I.

The Dedication of her CRADLE.

FAire FAME, who art ordain'd to crowne
 With ever-greene, and great renowne,
 Their Heads, that ENVY would hold downe
 With her, in shade

Of Death, and Darknesse ; and deprive 5
 Their names of being kept alive,
 By THEE, and CONSCIENCE, both who thrive
 By the just trade

Of Goodnesse still: Vouchsafe to take
 This CRADLE, and for Goodnesse sake, 10
 A dedicated Ensigne make
 Thereof, to TIME.

That all Posteritie, as wee,
 Who read what the CREPUNDIA bee,
 May something by that twilight see 15
 'Bove rattling Rime.

For, though that Rattles, Timbrels, Toyes,
 Take little Infants with their noyse,
 As prop'rest gifts, to Girles, and Boyes,
 Of light expence ; 20

Their Corrals, Whistles, and prime Coates,
 Their painted Maskes, their paper Boates,
 With Sayles of silke, as the first notes
 Surprize their sense :

Yet, here are no such Trifles brought, 25
 No cobweb Call's ; no Surcoates wrought
 With Gold, or Claspes, which might be bought
 On every Stall.

But, here's a Song of her DESCENT ;
 And Call to the high Parliament 30
 Of Heaven ; where SERAPHIM take tent
 Of ord'ring all.

This, utter'd by an antient BARD,
 Who claimes (of reverence) to be heard,
 35 As comming with his Harpe, prepar'd
 To chant her 'gree,

Is sung : as als(o)'her getting up
 By JACOBS Ladder, to the top
 Of that eternall Port kept ope
 40 " ForsuchasSHEE.

2.

The Song of her DESCENT.

I Sing the just, and uncontrol'd Descent
 Of Dame VENETIA DIGBY, styl'd The Faire :
 For Mind, and Body, the most excellent
 That ever Nature, or the later Ayre
 5 Gave two such Houses as NORTHUMBERLAND,
 And STANLEY, to the which shee was Co-heire.
 Speake it, you bold PENATES, you that stand
 At either Stemme, and know the veines of good
 Run from your rootes ; Tell, testifie the grand
 xo Meeting of Graces, that so swell¹d the flood
 Of vertues in her, as, in short, shee grew
 The wonder of her Sexe, and of your Blood.
 And tell thou, ALDE-LEGH, None can tell more true
 Thy Neeces line, then thou that gav'st thy Name
 15 Into the Kindred, whence thy Adam drew
 Meschines honour with the '*Cestrian* fame
 Of the first *Lupus*, to the Familie
 By *Ranulph*————

The rest of this Song is lost.



Lady Digby on her death-bed, from the portrait in the Dulwich Picture Gallery

3.

The Picture of the B O D Y.

Sitting, and ready to be drawne,
 What make these Velvets, Silkes, and Lawne,
 Embroderies, Feathers, Fringes, Lace,
 Where every lim takes like a face ?

5

Send these suspected helps, to aide
 Some Forme defective, or decay'd ;
 This beautie without falshood fayre,
 Needs nought to cloath it but the ayre.

10

Yet something, to the Painters view,
 Were fitly interpos'd ; so new :

Ixxxiv (3) *The Picture of the BODY* In D. Q, Ed 'His Mistress Drawne' : In Add 12 . 75 6. 'The Body' ; Add 13 f. 153. *without heading* ; Add 17, f. i, 'The Picture of the body and minde of MTM Venetia Stanley since Lady Digby made by M^r Benjamin Iohnson. | *The Body* ' ; Add 19 f 2, 'On a Gentlewoman Sittinge to hav hir Picktur Drawne' (an illiterate copy) ; H2 f. 49 b. 'On Mⁿ Venetia Stanly' (crossed out), 'The Body' ; SI a f. 91, 'On his Mⁿ Bitting to be drawne' , with a note 'this should haue byn writt in y 154. page before Mynde' ; SI 4 f. 56, 'The body' ; Nf 35. 'The Bodie' ; Ash a p. 5, 'The bodie' ; RPa f. 16, 'Vpon Venetia Stanley her picture' ; RP 7. 16 b 'On M^{re} Venetia Stanlye to the Paynter II. 13-28 only ; RPg . no ' BEN IONSON To the Painter ' ; RPij p. 85, 'The same Ben: Jhonsons description of mⁿ Venetia Stanly, since wife of ST kel: Digby' ; Firth p. 73 'A Sonnett' ; two copies in TCD pp. 369. 431. *without heading* ; Dobell MS II p. 159. 'The Body : Ben. Johnson' ; *Poems from Sir Kenelm Digby's Papers*, p. 21. 'A picture of the body of Lady Venetia Digby by Ben. Johnson' . *The stanza form is not kept in Q. N. Add 12. i* Sitting, . . . drawne,] Sittinge ? . . . drawne ? N. Dobell 2 make D, Q, N. Add 17. SI a, RP9, RP14. Firth. Digby. Dobell: makes F, Ash, TCD(i): meane Add ia, Add 19, TCD(2): needes RPg these Velvets.] this velvitt. Add ig Silkes] alike N, Add 13, Add 19. RP9, Firth. TCD(a) Lawne.] Lawn ? D, Q. Dobell 3 Embrodenes, . . . Lace.] Embroyderies ? feathers ? fringes ? lace ? Dobell Embrodenes] Imbroyderies D. Q. TCD(i) Fringes,] Fnngge. and Q : Fringe and D, RPa. TCD(i) 4 Where] When D. Q takes] looks Add 13. Add 19. Firth : looked RPg 5 these] those Dobell. RPa helps] thingf Ash 6 or] and D. Q. Dobell. RPg 7 beautie without] truth, without all Dobell 9 to the Painters view] for the Painters Add 19: for the paynter due TCD(a) 10 Were . . . new] we fitly interpose for Vew Add xg Were] Was Ha so] to TCD(i): as TCD(2) 10-11 new : Hee] new He D. Q. Dobell: new As RPa

Hee shall, if he can vnderstand,
 Worke with my fancie, his owne hand.

Draw first a Cloud : all save her neck ;
 And, out of that, make Day to breake ;
 15 Till, like her face, it doe appeare,
 And Men may thinke, all light rose there.

Then let the beames of that, disperse
 The Cloud, and show the Universe ;
 But at such distance, as the eye
 May rather yet adore, then spy.

The Heaven design'd, draw next a Spring,
 With all that Youth, or it can bring :
 Foure Rivers branching forth like Seas,
 And Paradise confining these.

25 Last, draw the circles of this Globe,
 And let there be a starry Robe

11 Hee] *It RPg* if... vnderstand,] (if he can vnderstand) *D, Q, Add*
 12, *SI a. RP a* : then (if hee vnderstande) *RPi4* 12 with my fancie,
 his owne hand] by my fancy with his hand *D, Q* : myne owne fancy w
 his hand *Add ig, TCD(a)* 13 first] first, *N* Cloud :] Cloud, *D, Q*
 save] to *Add ig* her] the *Add 13, Add 19, RPi4* neck •] necke *D Q*
 15 Till] Thatt *Add ig* her face] a face *RPj* : a fire *RPg* : the Son'ne
Dobell doe] doth *SI 2, Add 12, Add 13, H2, RP2, RPj, Firth. TCD(i).*
(a). Ash. Dobell : may *Add ig* 16 And] So *RP?* thinke] saye
Addia, RPi4 light] lights *Ha, RPg, Firth* rose] nse *Dobell* there.]
 there I *N* 17 Then] Then, *N* let] like *Ha, RPy* beames] light
Firth of that] thereof *Add ig, TCD(2)* 18 Cloud] Clowdes *Add 13*
 show] see *Addig* : then? *P7* 19 But] Yet *FirtA* such] some *Dobell*
 as] all *N* : that *Add ig, TCD(a)* 20 yet] it *D, Q. Add ia. Add 13,*
Add ig. Firth, TCD(a) adore] admire *RPg* 21 The . . . Spring]
 then next hir neck draw bdt A Spring *Add ig* The . . . design'd,]
 the heavens designe: *RPg* Heaven] Heavens *Q* : heavens *D, Add 13*
 draw next] next draw *RP a. RP9* : then drawe *Add 13 a]* the *RP2*
 22 Youth, or it] it and youth *TCD(a)* : art & youth *Add ig* or] and
RP a. RPg it] it (with marginal note 'legendum fortasse unite ') *RP14* :
 wit *Ha, RP?* : arte *Ash* : loue *Firth* can] may *D, Q* 23 Foure]
 faire *RPg* branching] breaking *SI 4* forth] out *Ash, RP a. RPg*
 cutt (a miscopying of 'out') *TCD(2)* : *Add ig* has 'cQtt frauthing'
 24 And] A *Add 13* confining] confin'd in *D. Q. Firth* : confirming
Dobell 25 Last] next *Add ig. Firth* : Thus *Ha* : Then *RPi4*
 the . . . Globe.] a circle like the globe : *RP a* circles] circle *D. Q.*
Add 13. Ha. RPj. Firth. TCD(a). Digby, Dobell this] the *Ash, RP14*
RP14. Firth 26 And ... be] And set thereby *RPg*

Of Constellations 'bout her horld ;
And thou hast painted beauties world.

But, Painter, see thou doe not sell
A Copie of this peecc ; nor tell 30
Whose 'tis : but if it favour find,
Next sitting we will draw her mind.

4-

The MIND.

PAinter, yo'are come, but may be gone,
Now I have better thought thereon,
This worke I can performe alone;
And give you reasons more then one.

Not, that your Art I doe refuse : 5
But here I may no colours use.
Beside, your hand will never hit,
To draw a thing that cannot sit.

Ixxxiv (3). 27 her] it Add 17. Add 19. R^P2, Digby, TCD(2): them R^Pg
horld,] hurl'd, D, Q 28 And . . . hast] And then th'ast R^Pg : &
then you've Add 19 beauties world] Brwtys 0 Add 19 29 thou]
you D, Q, N, Add 17, Ash, R^Pz, R^Pi4, TCD(i) vo" Add 13 doe] do'st
Hz, TCD(2) 30 A] the SI 2 this] thy R^Pg nor] or TCD(i).
Dobell 31 Whose] Whoe R^Pg 'tis] 'twas TCD(i) 32 we] 1 R^Pa
her] the Add 12. Add 13, S 12, SI 4. R^Pg, Digby, Dobell

Ixxxiv (4) *The MIND*] In D, Q, Ed. 'Her Minde'. In Add 12 f. 76,
1 The Mynde'; Add 13 f. 153 and in Add 17 . 2, 'The Minde'; SI2
f. 89 b. 'Minde'; SI 4 f. 56 b. 'The Minde'; H2f 50. 'The mind';
HS . 21 6, 'The Mnde'; .V 36, 'The Minde'; Ash 2 p 5, 'The
Minde', subscribed 'finis | Geo: Chapman'; R^Pg f in. 'The Mind';
R^Pi4 p. 86, 'Her Mynde'; Dobell MS II p. 161, 'The Minde';
Poems from Sir Kenelm Digby's Papers p 31, 'The picture of the minde
of the Lady Venetia Digby by Ben. Johnson'. The stanza form is not
kept in Q, N, Add 12. i Painter.] Painter P yo'are] y'are D, Q,
Add 12, N, R^Pi4, Dobell : yare Hj : you are Add 17, Digby 3
This] The H2 : thy HS. R^Pg can] must Ash 2. R^Px4 5 I]
wee HS doe] dare SI 2 : would R^Pi4 6 here] there SI 2 I] we
Add 12, Add 13, HS. SI 2, SI 4, N, R^Pi4. Dobell may no] must more
HS. R^Pg 7 Beside] Besides D, Q, Add 12, Add 13, H2, HS, N, SI 2,
Ash, R^Pg, R^Pi4, Dobell, Digby your] the SI 4 will] can R^Pi4
hit] fitt Add 13 8 a thing] the thing. D. Q. Add 13, HS, N, SI 2.
Ash. R^Pi4, Dobell. Digby : the things R^Pg that] w R^Pi4 sit]
fitt HS : fit R^Pg

You could make shift to paint an Eye,
 10 An Eagle towring in the skye,
 The Sunne, a Sea, or soundlesse Pit ;
 But these are like a Mind, not it.

No, to expresse a Mind to sense,
 Would aske a Heavens Intelligence ;
 15 Since nothing can report that flame,
 But what's of kinne to whence it came.

Sweet Mind, then speake your selfe, and say,
 As you goe on, by what brave way
 Our sense you doe with knowledge fill,
 20 And yet remaine our wovnder still.

I call you *Muse* ; now make it true :
 Hence-forth may every line be you ;
 That all may say, that see the frame,
 This is no Picture, but the same.

25 A Mind so pure, so perfect fine,
 As 'tis not radiant, but divine :
 And so disdaining any tryer ;
 Tis got where it can try the fire.

9 could] woilde Add 12 shift] a shift H2 paint] draw Digby
 ii The Sunne] A Sunne D. Q, Add 13, H5. N, Ash, RPg, RPi4, Dobell
 a Sea] the Sea Ha or] D.Q. Add 13, Add 17, H5, SI 2, SI 4. RPg, RPi4,
 Dobell, Digby : the H2 soundlesse] soundes (o r 'soundles ') Add 12 :
 Sandlesse Q 12 But] And Q. H5. RP9 : all Add 13 like ... it]
 not like the Minde yet Dobell a] the S14 it] yett #5 : yet RPg
 13 No,] but Add 13 a not in F originally : this D. Q, N, Digby : a (with
 marginal note ' her ') RPi4 to] in Hj, RPg 14 a] all Add 13
 15 Since] Since that Q report] express A sh that] her N, SI 2, Digby :
 the H2, H\$. RPg flame] same Dobell 16 what's ... to] that I
 say from H2 of kinne to] a kin from H2 to ... came] from ... came
 (with marginal note ' Legendum puto To y same ') RPi4 to] from
 Add 13, RP9, Dobell 17 your] thy 75, RPg 18 As you goe] thou
 goest H5, RPg brave] strange Add 13 19 you doe] thou doest
 f5, RPg 20 our] my RPi4 : a Add 13 still] still ? N 21
 Muse] must Dobell 22 Hence-forth may] hence for my H\$ may]
 lett Add 13, RPi4 : my Ash 23 that] who RPi4 25 Mind]
 Mind ? D so pure ... fine] so perfect pure and fine JF3 pure, sol
 puere Ash perfect] perfecte. Add 13 26 'tis] is Add 13. Ash
 27 disdaining] disdaymyng Dobell tryer] tire Q : tyre SI 2 : Higher
 Dobell: Hyhar SI 2 28 Tis] it's RPi4 can try] can get RPg :
 may gett H5 RP9 the fire] no fire H2

There, high exalted in the Spheare,
 As it another Nature were, 30
 It moveth all; and makes a flight
 As circular, as infinite.

Whose Notions when it will expresse
 In speech ; it is with that excesse
 Of grace, and Musique to the eare, 35
 As what it spoke, it planted there.

The Voyce so sweet, the words so faire,
 As some soft chime had stroak'd the ayre ;
 And, though the sound were parted thence,
 Still left an Eccho in the sense. 40

But, that a Mind so rapt, so high,
 So swift, so pure, should yet apply
 It selfe to us, and come so nigh
 Earths grossnesse ; There's the how, and why.

Is it because it sees us dull, 45
 And stuck in clay here, it would pull
 Us forth, by some Celestiall slight
 Up to her owne sublimed hight ?

29 There, high] There (high D. Q : Then high SI 4 : her sight HS. RPg the] her Add 17, Digby 30 it] if H 5 were,] were) D.Q 31 makes] takes H5. RP9 33 Notions] motions Add 13, H2. HS. SI 2, SI 4, RPg. Dobell will] woulde Q. Add 13. SI 4, Dobell 34 speech] spigot (for 'spright') Ash excesse] accesse Add 12 (as a correction of 'excesse '), Add 13. Addi7, H2. HS. SI2. SI 4. Dobell. Digby: acces (with marginal note 'lege excesse ') RPi4 : anesse RPg 35 Of ... eare] and Musick to the Optique Eare Add 13 36 it... it] is ... is Add 12. H2 is ... -were Add 13 spoke] spake D. Q. Dobell planted] painted H5, RPg 37 Voyce] vowe HS. RPg words] word SI 4. Dobell. RPg 38 stroak'd] stroake Ash : stroke Hz : struck Add 13, HS. SI 2. Dobell: strooke RPg: sunke (with marginal note '• Stucke') Digby 39 And, though ... thence.] And (though ... thence) N, SI 2 were] had H2, Ash 40 left] leaved RPg 42 yet] ytt Ash apply] alye HS. RPg 43 It ... nigh not in Hz 44 Earths ... why] our gladnes shoves the hower & why HS 'so RPg, reading 'our grosnes' Earths] Our Add 13. N, SI 2, Ash, Dobell grossnesse;] grossnesse! D There's] wheres H2 the ... why] the (how) and (why) SI 4: the How and Whye Add 12: the how ? and why ? Dobell why.] why ! N : why ? D. Q 45 Is it] It is Add 12. Add 13. HS. RPg 46 stuck] shrunke HS. RPg : sunke (stucke in the margin) Digby clay here,] clay ? here Hz : Claye, heere H5 it] yett Ash : that SI 2 47 Celestiall] Ccelestiall Q. HS. RPi4 : ccElestiall Add 12. SI 2. SI 4 48 Up] vp, N her] his H2

Or hath she here, upon the ground,
 50 Some Paradise, or Palace found
 In all the bounds of beautie fit
 For her t(o)'inhabit ? There is it.

Thrice happy house, that hast receipt
 For this so loftie forme, so streight,
 55 So polisht, perfect, round, and even,
 As it slid moulded off from Heaven.

Not swelling like the Ocean proud,
 But stooping gently, as a Cloud,
 As smooth as Oyle pour'd forth, and calme
 60 As showers ; and sweet as drops of Balme.

Smooth, soft, and sweet, in all a floud
 Where it may run to any good ;
 And where it stayes, it there becomes
 A nest of odorous spice, and gummess.

65 In action, winged as the wind,
 In rest, like spirits left behind
 Upon a banke, or field of flowers,
 Begotten by that wind, and showers.

49 hath] that *Dobell* she] it *RPi4* the] this *Dobell* 51 all the]
 fleshly *Dobell* bounds] Bonds *SI 2* 52 to inhabitt *HS, Ash, Digby*:
 to inherit *SI 4. Dobell* 53 Thnce happy] Thrice-happie *N* 54
 loftie] softly *D, Q* forme, so] formd and *Ash* streight,] streight! *N*
 55 So . . . even] so rounde, so polish'd, pure, and euen *RPi4* round,
 and] smooth and *Add jj*: and so *D, Q* even,] even ! *N* 56 it
 slid] it weare *Ash* • tweere *HS* : if twere *RP9* off from] out of *D, Q* :
 downe from *H2, Dobell* Heaven.] heaven *I N* 57 the] an
Add 13 58 stooping] stroakinge *HS, RP9* gently] greatly *RPg*
 as] like *HS, Add 13* 59 and] as *Dobell* 60 showers] showres
 (with marginal note ' shoares ') *RPi4* and] as *Add 13* and . . . drops]
 or the dropps *Ash* Balme.] balme *1 N* 61 soft] calme *RPi4* in
 all] and all *Q. Add 12, HS, N, SI 2. SI 4. RP9. Dobell. Digby* : and as
Add 13 a] the *H2* 62 Where] When *SI 4* (so 63) any] every *Ha*
 63 there] then *Dobell* 64 odorous . . . gummess] Odours, *Spice*,
 and Gummess *D, Q, H2, Dobell*: Odors, spices, Gums *HS, RPg* : *Spices*,
 Odors, Gummess *Add 12, Add 13, Add 17, N, SI 2, SI 4. Ash, RPi4, Digby*
 65 In] An *SI 4, Dobell* as] like *Add 13, Ash. Digby* 67 a . . .
 field] some fiede, or Bancke *RPi4* a] Some *Add 12* 68 that]
 the *D, Q, H2, HS. SI 2. SI 4. RPg* and] or *H2*

In thee, faire Mansion, let it rest,
 Yet know, with what thou art possesst, 70
 Thou entertaining in thy brest,
 But such a Mind, mak'st God thy Guest.

(8.)

A whole quaternion in the midst of this Poem is lost, containing entirely the three next pieces of it, and all of the fourth (which in the order of the whole, is the eighth) excepting the very end : which at the top of the next quaternion goeth on thus:

BUt, for you (growing Gentlemen) the happy branches of two so illustrious Houses as these, wherefrom your honour^d Mother is in both lines descended ; let me leave you this last Legacie of Counsell; which so soone as you arrive at yeares of mature Uvnderstanding, open you (Sir) 5 that are the eldest, and read it to your Brethren, for it will concerne you all alike. Vowed by a faithfull Servant, and Client of your Familie, with his latest breath expiring it,
B. I.

To KENELME, JOHN, GEORGE.

BOast not these Titles of your Ancestors ; 10
 (Brave Youths) th(ey)'are their possessions, none of
 yours :
 When your owne Vertues, equall'd have their Names,
 Twill be but faire, to leane upon their *Fames* ;
 For they are strong Supporters : But, till then,
 The greatest are but growing Gentlemen. 15
 It is a wretched thing to trust to reedes ;
 Which all men doe, that urge not their owne deeds
 Up to their Ancestors ; the rivers side,
 By which yo'are planted, shew's your fruit shall bide.

Ixxxiv (4). 69 thee,] the Q, Add 12. SI 2 : thy 5, RP9 : her Add 13
 70 thou art] you are Add 13, SI 2 72 But] By Dobell mak'st]
 makes H5, Ash God] good SI 2, Ask thy] a D. Q. N. Add 13
 Ixxxiv (8) 2 illustrious] Ulustirous F originally wherefrom W :
 where from F 3 Mother] Mother, F 8 it, F3 : it F 19
 bide.] bide: F

- 20 Hang all your roomes, with one large Pedigree :
 Tis Vertue alone, is true Nobilitie.
 Which Vertue from your Father, ripe, will fall;
 Study illustrious Him, and you have all.

9.

Elegie on my Muse.

THe truly honoured Lady, the Lady V E N E T I A D I G -
 B Y ; who living, gave me leave to call her so.

Being

Her Ano0EnEIE, or Relation to the Saints.

Sera quidem tanto struitur medicina dolori.

- T**Were time that I dy'd too, now shee is dead,
 Who was my *Muse*, and life of all I sey'd,
 The Spirit that I wrote with, and conceiv'd ;
 All that was good, or great in me she weav'd,
 5 And set it forth ; the rest were Cobwebs fine,
 Spun out in name of some of the old *Nine I*
 To hang a window, or make darke the roome,
 Till swept away, th(ey)'were cancell'd with a broome I
 Nothing, that could remaine, or yet can stirre
 10 A sorrow in me, fit to wait to her !
 0 I had I seene her laid out a faire Corse,
 By *Death*, on Earth, I should have had remorse
 On *Nature*, for her : who did let her lie,
 And saw that portion of her selfe to die.
 15 Sleepie, or stupid Nature, couldst thou part
 With such a *Raritie*, and not rowse Art

Ixxxiv (9) *In Add 17 f. 4 b, 'An Elegie made by M^r: Ben: Iohnscm to S^r: Kenelme Digby vpon the death of his Lady'. | Elegie | On my Muse. | The truly . . . so. j Sera quidem . . . dolori.' In EP 3 pp. 80-6*
¹ *An Elegie on my Muse; . . . call hir so'. After 'dolori.' F repeats 'An Elegie on my Muse*.* I dy'd corr. F: ty'd F originally
 2 sey'd,] sey'd. corr. F: dy'd. F originally : did. Fj 3 conceiv'd ;]
 conceiv'd, F 4 in] with G 5 Cobwebs] Cop-webs Add. EP
 9 ^{vet}] get* EP 11 faire] faite F originally

With all her aydes, to save her from the seize
 Of *Vulture death*, and those relentlesse cleies ?
 Thou wouldst have lost the *Phoenix*, had the kind
 Beene trusted to thee : not to't selfe assign'd. 20
 Looke on thy sloth, and give thy selfe undone,
 (For so thou art with me) now shee is gone.
 My wounded mind cannot sustaine this stroke,
 It rages, runs, flies, stands, and would provoke
 The world to ruine with it; in her *Fall*, 5
 I summe up mine owne breaking, and wish all.
 Thou hast no more blowes, *Fate*, to drive at one :
 What's left a *Poet*, when his *Muse* is gone ?
 Sure, I am dead, and know it not! I feele
 Nothing I doe ; but, like a heavie wheele, 30
 Am turned with an others powers. My Passion
 Whoorles me about, and to blaspheme in fashion !
 I murmure against *God*, for having ta'en
 Her blessed Soule, hence, forth this valley vane
 Of teares, and dungeon of calamitie ! 35
 I envie it the Angels amitie !
 The joy of Saints ! the *Crawne* for which it lives,
 The glorie, and gaine of rest, which the place gives I
 Dare I prophane, so irreligious bee
 To 'greet, or grieve her soft Euthanasee ? 40
 So sweetly taken to the Court of blisse,
 As spirits had stolne her *Spirit*, in a kisse,
 From off her pillow, and deluded bed ;
 And left her lovely body unthought dead !
 Indeed, she is not dead ! but laid to sleepe 45
 In earth, till the last *Trumpe* awake the *Sheepe*
 And *Goates* together, whither they must come
 To heare their Judge, and his eternall doome ;
 To have that finall retribution,
 Expected with the fleshes restitution. 50

21 sloth] cloth EP 27 one :] one, F originally 40 Euthanasee ?]
 Euthanasee! F: Euphan'see (correcting' Euthan'see') EP 46 Sheepe]
 sheepe F originally 48 his] there EP doome;] dome. F 49,
 50 not in EP

For, as there are three *Natures*, *Schoolemen* call
 One *corporall*, only ; th'other *spiritual*
 Like single ; so, there is a third, commixt,
 Of *Body* and *Spirit* together, plac'd betwixt
 55 Those other two ; which must be judg'd, or crown'd :
 This as it guilty is, or guiltlesse found,
 Must come to take a sentence, by the sense
 Of that great Evidence, the *Conscience* !
 Who will be there, against that day prepar'd,
 60 T(o)'accuse, or quit all *Parties* to be heard !
 O *Day* of joy, and suretie to the just!
 Who in that feast of *Resurrection* trust!
 That great eternal! *Holy-day* of rest,
 To *Body*, and *Soule* ! where *Love* is all the guest!
 65 And the whole *Banquet* is full sight of *God* !
 Of joy the *Circle*, and sole *Period* !
 All other gladnesse, with the thought is barr'd ;
Hope, hath her end ! and *Faith* hath her reward !
 . This being thus : why should my tongue, or pen
 70 Presume to interpell that fulnesse, when
 Nothing can more adorne it, then the seat
 That she is in, or, make it more compleat ?
 Better be dumbe, then superstitious !
 Who violates the *God-head*, is most vitious
 75 Against the *Nature* he would worship. *Hee*
 Will honour'd be in all simplicitie !
 Have all his actions wondred at, and view'd
 With silence, and amazement! not with rude,
 Dull, and prophane, weake, and imperfect eyes,
 80 Have busie search made in his mysteries !
Hee knowes, what worke h'hath done, to call this *Guest*,
 Out of her noble body, to this *Feast* :
 And give her place, according to her blood,
 Amongst her *Peeres*, those *Princes* of all good I

Saints, Martyrs, Prophets, with those Hierarchies, 85
Angels, Arch-angels, Principalities,
The Dominations, Vertues, and the Powers,
The Thrones, the Cherube, and Seraphick bowers,
 That, planted round, there sing before the *Lamb*,
 A new Song to his praise, and great *AM :* 90
 And she doth know, out of the shade of Death,
 What 'tis t(o)'enjoy an everlasting breath !
 To have her captiv'd spirit freed from flesh,
 And on her Innocence, a garment fresh
 And white, as that, put on : and in her hand, 95
 With boughs of Palme, a crowned *Victrice* stand !
 And will you, worthy Sonne, Sir, knowing this,
 Put black, and mourning on ? and say you misse
A Wife, a Friend, a Lady, or a Love ;
 Whom her *Redeemer*, honour¹d hath above 100
 Her fellowes, with the oyle of gladnesse, bright
 In Heav'n(s) *Empyrean*, with a robe of light ?
 Thither, you hope to come ; and there to find
 That pure, that pretious, and exalted mind
 You once enjoy'd : A short space severs yee, 105
 Compared unto that long eternitie,
 That shall re-joyne yee. Was she, then, so deare,
 When shee departed ? you will meet her there,
 Much more desir'd, and dearer then before,
 By all the wealth of blessings, and the store 110
 Accumulated on her, by the *Lord*
 Of life, and light, the Sonne of *God*, the *Word* !
 There, all the happy soules, that ever were,
 Shall meet with gladnesse in one *Theatre* ;
 And each shall know, there, one anothers face, 115
 By beatifick vertue of the Place.
 There shall the Brother, with the Sister walke,
 And Sons, and Daughters, with their Parents talke ;

87 *Vertues*] *victors EP* 92 to enjoy] t'enjoy, *F*: to loy *Add, EP*
 95 hand,] hand *F* 102 Heav'ns *Empyrean*, Editor: heaven *Em-*
pyre, and *F* originally, *EP*: heav'n *Empire*, and corr. *F*: heaven's empire,
 and *W* 106 eternitie] zternitie *Add* 115 face,] face : *F*

But all of *God*; They still shall have to say,
 120 But make him *All in All*, their *Theme*, that *Day* :
 That happy *Day*, that never shall see night 1
 Where *Hee* will be, all *Beautie* to the *Sight*;
 Wine, or delicious fruits, unto the *Taste* ;
 A *Musique* in the *Eares*, will ever last;
 125 Unto the *Sent*, a *Spicerie*, or *Balme* ;
 And to the *Touch*, a *Flower*, like soft as *Palme*.
 Hee will all *Glory*, all *Perfection* be,
God, in the *Union*, and the *Trinitie* I
 That holy, great, and glorious *Mysterie*,
 130 Will there revealed be in *Majestie* I
 By light, and comfort of spirituall *Grace*,
 The vision of our *Saviour* face to face,
 In his *humanitie* ! To heare him preach
 The price of our *Redemption* and to teach
 135 Through his inherent *righteousnesse*, in death,
 The *safetie* of our *soules*, and *forfeit* breath I
 What *fulnesse* of *beatitude* is here ?
 What love with mercy mixed doth appeare ?
 To style us *Friends*, who were, by *Nature*, *Foes* ?
 140 Adopt us *Heires*, by *grace*, who were of those
 Had lost our selves ? and prodigally spent
 Our native portions, and possessed rent;
 Yet have all debts forgiven us, and advance
 B(y)'imputed right to an inheritance
 145 In his eternall *Kingdome*, where we sit
 Equall with *Angels*, and *Co-heires* of it ?
 Nor dare we uvnder *blasphemy* conceive
 He that shall be our supreme *Judge*, should leave
 Himselfe so un-informTd of his elect,
 150 Who knows the hearts of all, and can dissect
 The smallest *Fibre* of our flesh ; he can

122 will be] shalbe EP

123 the] tee F

125 Sent] Scent F3

131 Grace,] Grace ; F

132 face to face,] face, to face F

135

inherent] inherentAdd

136 forfeit] fonett EP

144 By'imputed

Add, EP 145 eternall] zternall Add

146 Equall] Squall Add :

equall EP it ?] it. F

149 elect,] elect F

151 Fibre] bunAdd, EP

Find all our Atomes from a point t(o)'a span I
 Our closest Creekes, and Corners, and can trace
 Each line, as it were graphick, in the face I
 And best he knew her noble Character, 135
 For 'twas himselfe who form'd, and gave it her.
 And to that forme, lent two such veines of blood
 As nature could not more increase the flood
 Of title in her ! All Nobilitie
 (But pride, that schisme of incivilitie) 160
 She had, and it became her I she was fit
 T'have knowne no envy, but by suffring it I
 She had a mind as calme, as she was faire ;
 Not tost or troubled with light Lady-aire ;
 But, kept an even gate, as some streight tree 165
 Mov'd by the wind, so comely moved she.
 And by the awfull manage of her Eye
 She swaid all bus'nesse in the Familie I
 To one she said, Doe this, he did it; So
 To another, Move ; he went; To a third, Go, 170
 He run ; and all did strive with diligence
 T(o)'obey, and serve her sweet Commandements.
 She was, in one, a many parts of life ;
 A tevnder *Mother*, a discreeter *Wife*,
 A solemne *Mistresse*, and so good a *Friend*, 175
 So charitable, to religious end,
 In all her petite actions, so devote,
 As her whole life was now become one note
 Of Pietie, and private holinesse.
 She spent more time in teares her selfe to dresse 180
 For her devotions, and those sad essayes
 Of sorrow, then all pompe of gaudy daies :
 And came forth ever cheered, with the rod
 Of divine Comfort, when sh'had talk'd with *God*.

154 face I] face. F 156 form'd] fram'd EP 159 Nobilitie]
 nobilitie F originally 160 schisme] scheme EP 161 her] him EP
 171 run ; and] ran. And Add 172 sweet Commandements] fain
 commandement EP 173 was, Add: was F 177 her petite ...
 devote] the petty . . . devout EP 178 was now] was, now. EP
 184 sh'had] she'had Add

- 185 Her broken sighes did never misse whole sense :
 Nor can the bruised heart want eloquence :
 For, Prayer is the Incense most perfumes
 The holy Altars, when it least presumes.
 And hers were all Humilitic ! they beat
- 190 The doore of *Grace*, and found the *Mercy-Seat*.
 In frequent speaking by the pious *Fsalmes*
 Her solemne houres she spent, or giving *Almes*,
 Or doing other deeds of *Charitie*,
 To cloath the naked, feed the hungry. Shec
- 195 Would sit in an *Infirmery*, whole dayes
 Poring, as on a *Map*, to find the wayes
 To that eternall Rest, where now sh'hath place
 By sure Election, and predestin'd grace !
 Shee saw her Saviour, by an early light,
- 200 Incarnate in the Manger, shining bright
 On all the world ! She saw him on the *Crosse*
 Suffring, and dying to redeemt¹ our losse !
 Shee saw him rise, triumphing over Death
 To justifie, and quicken us in breath !
- 205 Shee saw him too, in glory to ascend
 For his designed worke, the perfect end
 Of raising, judging, and rewarding all
 The kind of Man, on whom his doome should fall!
 All this by *Faith* she saw, and fram'd a Plea,
- 210 In manner of a daily *Apostrophe*,
 To him should be her Judge, true *God*, true *Man*,
Jesus, the onely-gotten *Christ*, I who can
 (As being Redeemer, and Repairer too
 Of lapsed Nature) best know what to doe,
- 215 In that great Act of judgement: which the *Father*
 Hath given wholly to the *Sonne* (the rather
 As being the *Sonne* of *Man*) to shew his *Power*,
 His *Wisdome*, and his *Justice*, in that houre,

194 To not in EP
 eternall] eternall A dd
 dayli' Apostrophe Add :
 onely gotten F

195 Infirmery] Infirmer F
 206 worke,] worke F
 213 (As Add : As F

107
 210 daily Apostrophe]
 212 onely-gotten]
 214 Oi Add : (Of F

The last of houres, and shutter up of all;
 Where first his *Power* will appeare, by call 220
 Of all are dead to life ! His *Wisdom* show
 In the discerning of each conscience, so !
 And most his *Justice*, in the fitting parts,
 And giving dues to all Mankinds deserts !
 In this sweet *Extasie*, she was rapt hence. 225
 Who reads, will pardon my *Intelligence*,
 That thus have vntur'd these true straines upon;
 To publish her a Sam. My *Muse* is gone.

In pietatis memoriam
qitam prastas 230
Venetiae tuce illustrissim:
Marit: dign: Digbeie
Hanc AII00EnEIN, tibi, tuis% sacro.

The Tenth, being her Inscription, or C R O W N E, is lost.

LXXXV.

(Horace. *Epode* 2.)

The praises of a Countrie life.

HAppie is he, that from all Businesse cleere,
 As the old race of Mankind were,
 With his owne Oxen tills his Sires left lands,
 And is not in the Usurers bands :
 Nor Souldier-like started with rough alarmes, 5
 Nor dreads the Seas intraged harmes :
 But flees the Barre and Courts, with the proud bords,
 And waiting Chambers of great Lords.

Ixxxiv. (9) 220 *Power* | power & EP 224 deserts] desarts Add
 229-33 Not in EP 232 *sacro*] *sacro* | Ben Johnson. | Vxorem
 enim vmam amare voluptas est: | defunctam religio. Add

Ixxxv. Printed in F facing the Latin, 'Vita Rustica Laudes'. Early
 drafts in H+ ff. 250-1, RPj f 28. 'An Ode in Horace in prayse of a
 Countrie lyfe. Translated'. MSS = H and RP 2 race] stock MSS
 6 dreads] treades MSS

- The Poplar tall, he then doth marrying twine
 10 With the growne issue of the Vine ;
 And with his hooke lops off the fruitlesse race,
 And sets more happy in the place :
 Or in the bending Vale beholds a-farre
 The lowing herds there grazing are :
 15 Or the prest honey in pure pots doth keepe
 Of Earth, and sheares the tevdnder Sheepe :
 Or when that Autumne, through the fields, lifts round
 His head, with mellow Apples crown'd,
 How plucking Peares, his owne hand grafted had,
 20 And purple-matching Grapes, hee's glad !
 With which, *Priapus*, he may thanke thy hands,
 And, *Sylvane*, thine, that keptst his Lands 1
 Then now beneath some ancient Oke he may,
 Now in the rooted Grasse him lay,
 25 Whilst from the higher Bankes doe slide the floods ;
 The soft birds quarrell in the Woods,
 The Fountaines murmure as the streames doe creepe,
 And all invite to easie sleepe.
 Then when the thundring *Jove* his Snow and showres
 30 Are gathering by the Wintry houres ;
 Or hence, or thence, he drives with many a Hound
 Wild Bores into his toyles pitch'd round :
 Or straines on his small forke his subtill nets
 For th'eating Thrush, or Pit-falls sets :
 35 And snares the fearfull Hare, and new-come Crane,
 And 'counts them sweet rewards so ta'en.
 Who (amongst these delights) would not forget
 Loves cares so evil, and so great ?

9-10 The . . . issue] There, or the tall witch-hazill hee doth twyne | w
 sproutinge tendrells MSS n off] of H 12 sets] graftes MSS
 13-14 In MSS before II 10, n (as in the original Latin) 13 a-farre]
 from flair MSS 14 lowing] loughing MSS 17 fields,] fields F
 19 How] How. H 21 thanke] greet MSS 22 thine,] thine F
 keptst] keep'si MSS 23 may.] may F 24 Now . . . Grasse]
 now, . . . grasse, H 25 floods ; 1 floods ? F 27 murmure as]
 murmure, & H 29 Jove] Jove. F 33 subtill] subtler MSS.
 34 Pit-falls] Pittfall RP th'] the H 36 'counts] counts H 38
 cares] cares, H

But if, to boot with these, a chaste Wife meet
 For houshold aid, and Children sweet; 40
 Such as the *Sabines*, or a Sun-burnt-blowse,
 Some lustie quick *Apulians* spouse,
 To deck the hallow'd Harth with old wood fir'd
 Against the Husband comes home tir'd ;
 That penning the glad flock in hurdles by, 45
 Their swelling udders doth draw dry :
 And from the sweet Tub Wine of this yeare takes,
 And unbought viands ready makes :
 Not Lucrine Oysters I could then more prize,
 Nor Turbot, nor bright Golden-eyes : 50
 If with bright floods, the Winter troubled much,
 Into our Seas send any such :
 Th¹ Ionian God-wit, nor the Ginny hen
 Could not goe downe my belly then
 More sweet then Olives, that new gather¹d be 55
 From fattest branches of the Tree :
 Or the herb Sorrel¹, that loves Meadows still,
 Or Mallowes loosing bodyes ill:
 Or at the Feast of Bounds, the Lambe then slaine,
 Or Kid forc't from the Wolfe againe. 60
 Among these Cates how glad the sight doth come
 Of the fed flocks approaching home !
 To view the weary Oxen draw, with bare
 And fainting necks, the turned Share I
 The wealthy houshold swarme of bondmen met, 65
 And 'bout the steeming Chimney set!
 These thoughts when Usurer *Alphius*, now about
 To turne mere farmer, had spoke out,
 'Gainst th'Ideas, his moneys he gets in with paine,
 At th¹ Calends, puts all out againe. 70

42 *Apulians*] *Appulian RP* 43 Harth . . . wood] harth, . . . wood, *H*
 45 by.] by *F* 47 And . . . Tub . . . yeare] And, . . . tub, . . . yeare, *H*
 50 Golden-eyes] Golden eyes *F*: Golden Eyes *F3* 51 bright] East *MSS*
 55 sweet then] then sweete *RP* 58 loosing] good for *MSS* 61
 Among] Among'st *RP* 63 weary] wearyed *RP* 66 steeming]
 shining *MSS* 67 thoughts] thingf *RP* 68 mere *G*: meare *H*:
 meere *RP* : more *F* out,] out *F* 69 moneys] gott moneyes *MSS*
 70 th'] the *RP* puts] putt *RP*

LXXXVI.

(Horace.) *Ode the first. The fourth Booke.*

To Venus.

- V**enus, againe thou mov'st a warre
 Long intermitted, pray thee, pray thee spare:
 I am not such, as in the Reigne
 Of the good *Cynara* I was : Refraine,
 5 Sower Mother of sweet Loves, forbear
 To bend a man, now at his fiftieth yeare
 Too stubborne for Commands so slack :
 Goe where Youths soft intreaties call thee back.
 More timely hie thee to the house,
 10 With thy bright Swans, of *Paulus Maximus* :
 There jest, and feast, make him thine host,
 If a fit livor thou dost seeke to toast;
 For he's both noble, lovely, young,
 And for the troubled Clyent fyl's his tongue,
 15 Child of a hundred Arts, and farre
 Will he display the Ensigns of thy warre.
 And when he smiling finds his Grace
 With thee 'bovc all his Rivals gifts take place,
 He'll thee a Marble Statue make
 20 Beneath a Sweet-wood Roofe, neere *Alba Lake* :
 There shall thy dainty Nostrill take
 In many a Gumme, and for thy soft eares sake
 Shall Verse be set to Harpe and Lute,
 And *Phrygian* Hau'boy, not without the Flute.
 25 There twice a day in sacred Laics,
 The Youths and tender Maids shall sing thy praise :
 And in the *Salian* manner meet
 Thrice 'bout thy Altar with their Ivory feet.

Ixxxvi. In *F* facing the Latin. ' Ode i. \ Lib. quarto. \ Ad Venerem.'
 i Venus,] Venus F 6 man.] man F 7 Commands] Commands,
 F 10 Swans, corr. F : Swans F originally 14 fyl's] nils Fj
 19 He'll G : He will F

Me now, nor Wench, nor wanton Boy,
 Delights, nor credulous hope of mutuall Joy, 30
 Nor care I now healths to propound ;
 Or with fresh flowers to girt my temple round.
 But, why, oh why, my *Ligurine*,
 Flow my thin teares, downe these pale cheeks of mine ?
 Or why, my well-grac'd words among, 35
 With an uncomely silence failes my tongue ?
 Hard-hearted, I dreame every Night
 I hold thee fast I but fled hence, with the Light,
 Whether in *Mars* his field thou bee,
 Or *Tybers* winding streames, I follow thee. 40

LXXXVII.

(Horace.) Ode ix. 3 Booke, to Lydia.

Dialogue of Horace, and Lydia.

H O F **W** l s t , *Lydia*, I was lov'd of thee,
 And ('bout thy Ivory neck,) no youth did fling
 His armes more acceptable free,
 I thought me richer then the Persian King.
 LYD. Whilst *Horace* lov'd no Mistres more, 5
 Nor after *C(h)loe* did his *Lydia* sound ;
 In name, I went all names before,
 The Roman *Ilia* was not more renown'd.
 HOR. Tis true, Tarn *Thracian Chloes*, I,
 Who sings so sweet, and with such cunning plaies, 10
 As, for her, I'd not feare to die,
 So Fate would give her life, and longer daies.
 LYD. And I, am mutually on fire
 With gentle *Calais*, *Thurine Ornilh*s Sonne ;
 For whom I doubly would expire, 15
 So Fates would let the Boy a long thred run.

lxxxvi. 32 temple] Temple F

lxxxvii. In F facing the Latin, ' Ode ix. lib. 3. Ad *Lydiam*. \ *Dialogua*
Horatu A Lydia. and *Lydia.* and *Lydia F* 2 fling] fling, F
 3 acceptable] acceptably Fj 6 *Chloi* FS (so 19) 9 *CAloJs*
Chloes F I,] I F ii lid] I'd F 13 And I.] And. I F
 14 *Calais, Thurine*] *Calais Thurine, F*

- HOR. But, say old Love returne should make,
 And us dis-joyn'd force to her brazen yoke,
 That I bright *C(h)loe* off should shake ;
 20 And to left-Lyrfifl, now the gate stood ope.
 LYD. Though he be fairer then a Starre ;
 Thou lighter then the barke of any tree,
 And then rough *Adria*, angrier, farre ;
 Yet would I wish to love, live, die with thee.

LXXXVIII.

(*A Fragment of Petronius Arbiter**)

- D**Oing, a filthy pleasure is, and short;
 And done, we straight repent us of the sport :
 Let us not then rush blindly on unto it,
 Like lustfull beasts, that onely know to doe it:
 5 For lust will languish, and that heat decay.
 But thus, thus, keeping endlesse Holy-day,
 Let us together closely lie, and kisse,
 There is no labour, nor no shame in this;
 This hath pleas'd, doth please, and long will please ; never
 x0 Can this decay, but is beginning ever.

LXXXIX.

(*Martial. Epigram LXXVII. Book vm.*)

- L**^{*iber*}, of all thy friends, thou sweetest care,
 Thou worthy in eternall Flower to fare,
 If thou be'st wise, with 'Syrian Oyle let shine
 Thy locks, and rosie garlands crowne thy head ;

Ixxxviii. In F facing the Latin, 'Fragmentum Petron. Arbitr.' with heading 'The same translated'. In Ash 2 p. 62. 5 will] doth Ash that heat] lust[£] heates Ash decay.] decay. F: decayes Ash 6 Holy-day] Holidayes Ash 9 long not in Ash 10 Can] dothe Ash

Ixxxix. In F facing the Latin, 'Epigramma Martialis. | Lib. viii. Lxxvii' with heading 'The same translated'.

Darke thy cleare glasse with old *Falernian* Wine ; 5
 And heat, with softest love, thy softer bed.
 Hee, that but living halfe his dayes, dies such,
 Makes his life longer then 'twas given him, much.

XC.

Martial. (*Epigram XLVII, Book x.*)

THE Things that make the happier life, are these,
 Most pleasant Martial; Substance got with ease,
 Not labour^d for, but left thee by thy Sire ;
 A Soyle, not barren ; a continewall fire ;
 Never at Law ; seldome in office gown'd ; 5
 A quiet mind ; free powers ; and body sound ;
 A wise simplicity ; freindes alike-stated ;
 Thy table without art, and easy-rated :
 Thy night not dronken, but from cares layd wast;
 No sowre, or sollen bed-mate, yet a Chast; 10
 Sleepe, that will make the darkest howres swift-pac't;
 Will to bee, what thou art; and nothing more :
 Nor feare thy latest day, nor wish therfore.

xc. From the holograph in Dulwich College, MS I. JJJ. / . 259. In
Hi f. 59 b, subscribed 'Owen, Ep.'. Not in *F.* First printed by J. P.
Collier, 'Memoirs of Edward Atteyn', p. 54. 4 A Soyle,] land, and *H*
 5 in office] for Visitts *H* office] Jonson originally wrote 'offise' 6
 free powers.] cleare strength *H* 7, 8 not in *H* 9 night] nights *H*
 dronken, but] drunken, yet *H* cares] care *H* 10 sollen] sober *H*
 ii Sleepe, . . . make] and sleepe, which makes *H* 12 what] that *H*

HORACE HIS ART OF POETRY

THE TEXT

Jonson's version of the *Ars Poetica* was first published in 1640 in two forms, an earlier draft in John Benson's Duodecimo collection of the *Poems*, and a carefully revised version in the second volume of the Folio.

The Benson text, *Q. Horatius Flaccus : His Art of Poetry. Englished by Ben Jonson*, was dedicated to the Earl of Windsor and prefaced with three tributes from Edward, Lord Herbert of Cherbury, Barton Holiday, and Iouuch Townley; then, perhaps because of the opening lines of the concluding stanza

Sing English Horace, sing
The wovnder of thy King—,

followed I.C.'s 'Ode. To Ben Jonson Upon his Ode to himselfe' on the failure of *The New Inn*. These filled the twelve preliminary pages. 'Quintus Horatius Flaccus his Book of the Art of Poetry to the PISO'S' was on B», Ci, C2 recto, pages 1-27, followed by a blank page. The arrangement of the text differs so completely from the Folio version that we have reprinted it in an appendix.

The Duodecimo text was appended to E. H. Blakeney's edition and translation of the *Ars Poetica* published by the Scholartis Press in 1928.

The revised version of the Folio was in the final section of that volume, with *The English Grammar* and *Timber, or Discoveries. Horace His Art of Poetrie*, 'Printed M.DC.XL.' opposite the Latin text, opens the section. The collation is A to C in fours, Di to 03 recto, pages 1-29, with page 30 blank. The noteworthy feature of the revision is the rearrangement of the Latin text designed to give a more logical sequence to the sections of Horace's *causerie*. For this Jonson was indebted to the critical recension of Horace's text by Daniel Heinsius,¹ *Q. Horatii Flacci Opera Omnia*, .. . *Accedit Horatij ad Pisones epistola, Aristotelis de*

poetica libellus ; ordini suo nunc demum . . . restituta, published by the Plantin press in 1610.

Taking the line numbering of the Duodecimo, which follows the accepted manuscript arrangement of the Latin text, we get the following resetting in the Folio :

Lines 1-120, If to a Womans head . . . doe businesse in.
 127-31, The Comick matter . . . decent thewes.
 121-6, If now the turnes . . . or know ?
 132-310, Yet. sometime, . . . *Delphick* riddling.
 391-8, *Thespis* is said . . . in the buskin stalke.
 311-56, Hee too, that did . . . an applause, the more.
 399-404, To these succeeded . . . made to cease.
 357-90, Two rests . . . or finger scan.
 405-78, Our Poets . . . teach life the right.
 557-79, *Orpheus*, a priest. . . be'asham'd.
 479-556, Be briefe . . . never returned yet.
 580-679, 'Tis now inquir'd . . . full of blood.

In a few passages the two texts correct each other. The Duodecimo has in lines 75, 76

So they full gently from the *Grecian* spring,
 And came not too much wrested.

The Folio has the correct 'fall gently' and 'come'. In line 116 the Duodecimo has 'winds', the Folio the correct 'wines'; in line 512 the Duodecimo has the misprint 'thee 50d(7Vthe Folio 'the *Sosij* In line 461 the Duodecimo has

The Muse that onely gave the *Greeks* a wit. . .

¹ The Muse not only 'in the Folio. On the other hand, the Duodecimo has 'men, that wildly liv'd' (l. 558), and ¹ Wild ranging lusts ' (l. 567), where the Folio misprints ⁴ men, and wildly liv'd' and 'Wild raging lusts' (ll. 480, 479). The punctuation of both texts leaves much to be desired. Our critical apparatus records corrections made in the Folio text from the Duodecimo and corrections of the punctuation.

In *The Poems of Horace . . . Revndered into English verse by Several Persons*, a variorum translation edited by Alexavnder Brome in 1666 (a second edition 1671, a third edition

1680), Jonson's version was reprinted from the Folio:
¹ *De Arte Poetica being long since Englished by that great Master thereof B. Johnson, have borrowed to crown the rest*¹, says Brome. The antiquary Thomas Hearne took the trouble to copy out Brome's text up to line 314 ; it is preserved in MS. Rawlinson D. 261, pages 104-15.

In view of the transpositions which make it difficult to follow the original, we have reprinted Jonson^T's Latin text. It is taken from Heinsius, and has some bad mistakes. The worst are 'ostendit' for 'ostendis' (1. 188), 'Aitoris' for 'Actoris' (1. 193), 'fumulus' for 'famulus' (1. 245),
¹ 'Latiam' for 'Latium' (1. 290), 'Saxo' for 'Saxa' (0- 339)i 'wgenius' for 'ingenuus' (1. 400), 'Nulla ultra verbum' for 'Nullum' (1. 443), and the unmetrical 'semel derisum' for 'derisum semel' (1. 452). A line is omitted after 145, 'Nee reditum Diomedis ab interitu Meleagri'. There are press-corrections at lines 233, 243, 264.

HORACE,
HIS ART
OF
POETRIE

MADE ENGLISH
BY

BEN. JOHNSON.

Printed M.DC.XL.

HORATIUS

DE ARTE

POETICA.

- H** *Umano capiti cervicem pictor equinam
Jungere si velit, & varias inducere plumas,
Undify collatis membris, ut turpiter atrum
Desinat in piscem mulier formosa supernè ;*
- 5 *Spectatum admissi risum teneatis, amid ?
Credite, Pisones, isti tabula fore librum
Persimilem ; cujus, velut agri somnia, vana
Fingentur species, ut nec pes, nec caput, uni
Reddatur forma. Pictoribus, atq Poëtis,*
- 10 *Quidlibet audendi semper fuit aqua potestas.
Scimus ; & hanc veniam petimusq, damusq, vicissim :
Sed non ut placidis coeant immitia, non ut
Serpentes avibus gementur, tigribus agni.*
- Incasptis gravibus plerumq & magna professis,*
- 15 *Purpureus late qui splendeat unus & alter
Assuitur pannus, cum lucus, & ara Dianae,
Et properantis aqua per amasnos ambitus agros,
Autflumen Rhenum, aut pluvius describitur arcus.
Sed nunc non erat his locus : &, fortasse, cupressum*
- 20 *Scis simulare. Quid hoc, si fractis enatat expes
Navibus, are dato qui pingitur ? Amphora caepit*

HORACE,

OF

THE ART

OF

POETRIE.

IF to a Womans head a Painter would
 Set a Horse-neck, and divers feathers fold
 On every limbe, ta'en from a several! creature,
 Presenting upwards, a faire female feature,
 Which in some swarthie fish uncomely ends : 5
 Admitted to the sight, although his friends,
 Could you containe your laughter ? Credit mee.
 This peece, my *Piso's*, and that booke agree,
 Whose shapes, like sick-mens dreames, are fain'd so vaine,
 As neither head, nor foot, one forme retaine. 10
 But equall power, to Painter, and to Poet,
 Of daring all, hath still beene given ; we know it:
 And both doe crave, and give againe, this leave.
 Yet, not as therefore wild, and tame should cleave
 Together : not that we should Serpents see 15
 With Doves ; or Lambes, with Tygres coupled be.
 In grave beginnings, and great things profest,
 Ye have oft-times, that may ore-shine the rest,
 A Scarlet peece, or two, stitch'd in : when or
Diana's Grove, or *Altar*, with the bor- 20
 Dring Circles of swift waters that intwine
 The pleasant grounds, or when the River *Rhine*,
 Or Rainbow is described. But here was now
 No place for these. And, Painter, hap'ly, thou
 Know'st only well to paint a Cypresse tree. 25
 What's this ? if he whose money hireth thee
 To paint him, hath by swimming, hopelesse, scap'd,
 The whole fleet wreck'd ? A great Jarre to be Shap'd,

HORACE . . . POETRIE.] *Quintus Horatius Flaccus* his Book of the Art
 of Poetry to the *PISO'S*. D 6 friends F 27 swimming,
 hopelesse. D : swimming hopelesse F 28 A] a F

306 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

Institui ; currente rotd, cur urceus exit ?

Deniq₃ sit, quod vis, simplex duntaxat, & unum.

Maxima pars vatium, pater, 6 juvenes patre digni,

25 *Decipimur specie recti : Brevis esse laboro,*

Obscurus fio : Sectantem levia, nervi

Deficiunt animiq₃: professus grandia, turget:

Serpit humi, tutus nimium, timidus& procellce.

Qui variare cupit rent prodigialiter unam,

30 *Delphinum silvis appingit, fluctibus aprum.*

In vitium ducit culpce fuga, si caret arte.

jEmilium circa ludum faber imus, & ungueis

Exprimet, & molleis imitabitur are capillos ;

Infaslix operis summa : quia ponere totum

35 *Nesciet. Hunc ego me, si quid componere curem,*

Non magis esse velim, qudm pravo vivere naso,

Spectandum nigris oculis, nigro% capillo.

Sumite materiam vestris, qui scribitis, cequam

Viribus, 6- versate diu, quid ferre recusent,

40 *Quid valeant humeri. Cui lecta potenier erit res,*

Nee facundia deserit hunc, nee lucidus or do.

Ordinis fuec virtus erit, & venus, out ego faitor,

Ut jam nunc dicat, jam nunc debentia did,

Plera£ differat, & prcesens in tempus omittat.

45 *Hoc amet, hoc spernat promissi carminis autor.*

In verbis etiam tennis cautusfi serendis,

Dixeris egregie, notum si callida verbum

Reddiderit Junetura novum. Si forte necesse est,

Indiciis monstrare recentibus abdita rerum ;

Was meant at first. Why, forcing still about
 Thy labouring wheele, comes scarce a Pitcher out ? 30
 In short; I bid, Let what thou work'st upon,
 Be simple quite throughout, and wholly one.

Most Writers, noble Sire, and either Sonne,
 Are, with the likenesse of the truth, undone. 35
 My selfe for shortnesse labour ; and I grow
 Obscure. This, striving to run smooth, and flow.

Hath neither soule, nor sinewes. Loftie he
 Professing greatnesse, swells : That, low by lee
 Creepes on the ground ; too safe, too afraid of storme. 40
 This, seeking, in a various kind, to forme
 One thing prodigiously, paints in the woods
 A Dolphin, and a Boare amid' the floods.

So, shunning faults, to greater fault doth lead,
 When in a wrong, and artlesse way we tread. 45
 The worst of Statuaries, here about
 Th'*Emilian* Schoole, in brasse can fashion out

The nailes, and every curled haire disclose ;
 But in the maine worke haplesse : since he knowes
 Not to designe the whole. Should I aspire 50
 To forme a worke, I would no more desire
 To be that Smith ; then live, mark'd one of those.
 With faire black eyes, and haire ; and a wry nose.

Take, therefore, you that write, still, matter fit
 Unto your strength, and long examine it,
 Upon your shoulders. Prove what they will beare, 55
 And what they will not. Him, whose choice doth reare
 His matter to his power, in all he makes,
 Nor language, nor cleere order ere forsakes.

The vertue of which order, and true grace,
 Or I am much deceiv'd, shall be to place 60
 Invention. Now, to speake ; and then differ
 Much, that mought now be spoke : omitted here
 Till fitter season. Now, to like of this,
 Lay that aside, the *Epicks* office is.

In using also of new words, to be 65
 Right spare, and wane : then thou speak'st to mee
 Most worthie praise, when words that common grew,
 Are, by thy cunning placing, made meere new.
 Yet, if by chance, in utt'ring things abstruse,
 Thou need new termes ; thou maist, without excuse, 70

29 Why.] Why *F* 30 out ?] out. *F* 32 simple *D*, *G* : simply *F*
 36 This.] This *F* 38 That.] That *F* 40 This.] This *F* 41
 thing *D* : thing, *F* 47 nailes,... disclose; *D* : nailes ; ... disclose. *F*
 55 shoulders] Shoulders *F* 56 Him.] Him *F* 61 differ *D*. *F* :
 defer *Brome*, *G* 63 this, *D* : this ; *F*

- 50 *Fingere cinctutis non exaudita Cethegis*
Continget, dabiturfi licentia, sumpta pudenter.
Et nova fictaq nupir habebunt verba fidem, si
Graco fonte cadant, parci detorta. Quid autem
Caecilio, Plautoq; dabit Romanus, ademptum
- 55 *Virgilio, Varioque ? Ego cur acquirere pauca*
Si possum, invideor : cum lingua Catonis, & Enni
Sermonem patrium ditaverit; 6- nova rerum
Nomina protulerit ? Licuit, semper licebit,
Signatum prasente notd producere nomen.
- 60 *Ut silvce foliis pronos mutantur in annos,*
Prima cadunt; itd verborum vetus interit cetas,
Etjuvenum rituflorent modo nata, Vigentq3
Debemur morti nos, nostraq3 : sive receptus
Terrd Neptunus, classes Aquilonibus arcet,
- 65 *Regis opus, sterilisve diu palus, apta£ remis,*
Vicinas urbes alit, 6 grave sentit aratrum :
Seu cursum mutavit iniquum frugibus amnis,
Doctus iter melius. Mortalia facia peribunt:
Nedum sermonum stet honos, & gratia vivax.
- 70 *Multa renascentur, qua jam cecidere, cadent£,*
QUCB nunc sunt in honore, vocabula, si volet usus ;
Quern penes arbitrium est, 6 vis, & norma loquendi.
Res gestce regumfy, ducum£, & tristia bella
Quo scribi possent numero, monstravit Homerus.
- 75 *Versibus impariter junctis querimonia primum,*
Post etidm inclusa est voti sententia compos.
Quis tamen exiguos elegos emiseric author,
Grammatici certant, 6- adhuc sub iudice Us est.
Musa dedit fidibus Divos pueros% Deorum,

Faine words, unheard of to the well-truss'd race
Of the *Cethegi* ; And ail men will grace,
And give, being taken modestly, this leave,
And those thy new, and late-coyn'd words receive,
So they fall gently from the *Grecian* spring, 75
And come not too much wrested. What's that thing,
A Roman to *Cacilius* will allow,
Or *Plautus*, and in *Virgil* disavow,
Or *Varius* ? Why am I now envi'd so,
If I can give some small increase ? when, loe, 80
Cato's and *Ennius* tongues have lent much worth,
And wealth unto our language ; and brought forth
New names of things. It hath beene ever free,
And ever will, to utter termes that bee
Stamp'd to the time. As woods whose change appears 85
Still in their leaves, throughout the sliding yeares,
The first-borne dying ; so the aged state
Of words decay, and phrases borne but late
Like teyvnder buds shoot up, and freshly grow.
Our selves, and all that's ours, to death we owe : 90
Whether the Sea receiv'd into the shore.
That from the North, the Navie safe doth store,
A kingly worke ; or that long barren fen
Once rowable, but now doth nourish men
In neighbour-townes, and feelles the weightie plough ; 95
Or the wilde river, who hath changed now
His course so hurtfull both to graine, and seedes,
Being taught a better way. AU mortall deeds
Shall perish : so fane off it is, the state,
Or grace of speech, should hope a lasting date. 100
Much phrase that now is dead, shall be reviv'd ;
And much shall dye, that now is nobly liv'd,
If Custome please ; at whose disposing will
The power, and rule of speaking resteth still.
The gests of Kings, great Captaines, and sad Warres, 105
What number best can fit, *Homer* declares.
In Verse unequall match'd, first sowre Laments,
After, mens Wishes, crown'd in their events,
Were also clos'd : But, who the man should be,
That first sent forth the dapper Elegie, no
All the Grammarians strive ; and yet in Court
Before the Judge, it hangs, and waites report.
Unto the Lyrick Strings, the Muse gave grace

79 Why *D* : why *F* 80 when *D* : When *F* 98, 99 All...
perish *roman* in *D*, *italic* in *F* 108 After,] After *F* events,]
events *F* 113 New paragraph in *F*

310 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- 80 *Et pugilem victorem, & equum certamine primum,
Et juvenum euros, & libera vina referre.
Archilochum proprio rabies armavit lambo.
Hunc socci cepSre pedem, grandest cothurni
Alternis aptum sermonibus, & populares*
- 85 *Vincentem strepitus, & natum rebus agendis.
Versibus exponi Tragicis res Comica nan vult.
Indignatur item privatis, ac prope socco
Dignis carminibus, celebrari coena Thyestae.
Singula qu&& locum teneant sortita decenter.*
- 90 *Descriptas servare vices operumq̃ colores,
Cur ego, si nequeo, ignore Poet a salutor ?
Cur nescire pudens prave, quam discere malo ?
Interdum tamen, \$• vocem Comcedia tollit,
Iratusb Chremes tumido delitigat ore,*
- 95 *Et Tragicus plerumque dolet sermone pedestri
Telephus, & Peleus, cum pauper, & exul uterq,
Projicit ampullas, & sesquipedia verba,
Si curat cor spectantis tetigisse quereld.
Non satis est pulchra esse poemata : dulcia sunt,*
- 100 *Et quocunq̃i volent animum auditoris agunto.
Ut ridentibus arrident, ita flentibus adflent
Humani vultus. Si vis me flere, dolendum est
Primum ipsi tibi: tune tua me infortunia l&dent,
Telephe, vel Pel(e)u. Male si mandata loqueris,*
- 105 *Aut dormitabo, out ridebo. Tristia musstum
Vidturn verba decent: iratum, plena minarum :
Ludentem, lasciva: severum, seria dictu.
Format enim natura prius nos intus ad omnem
Fortunarum habitum : iuvat, out impellit ad iram,*
- 110 *Aut ad humum moerore gravi deducit, & angit:
Post effert animi motus interprete lingua.*

To chant the Gods, and all their God-like race,
 The conqu'ring Champion, the prime Horse in course, 115
 Fresh Lovers busnesse, and the Wines free source.
 Th'Iambick arm'd *Archilochus* to rave.
 This foot the socks tooke up, and buskins grave,
 As fit t(o)'exchange discourse ; a Verse to win
 On popular noise with, and doe busnesse in. 120
 The Comick matter will not be exprest
 In tragick Verse ; no lesse *Thyestes* feast
 Abhorres low numbers, and the private straine
 Fit for the sock : Each subject should retaine
 The place allotted it, with decent thewes. 125
 If now the turnes, the colours, and right hues
 Of Poems here describ'd, I can, nor use,
 Nor know t(o)'observe : why (i'the Muses name)
 Am I call'd Poet ? wherefore Math wrong shame,
 Perversly modest, had I rather owe 130
 To ignorance still, then either learne, or know ?
 Yet, sometime, doth the Comedie excite
 Her voyce, and angry *Chremes* chafes out-right
 With swelling throat : and, oft, the tragick wight
 Complaines in humble phrase. Both *Telephus*, 135
 And *Peleus*, if they seeke to heart-strike us
 That are Spectators, with their miserie,
 When they are poore, and banish'd, must throw by
 Their bombard-phrase, and foot-and-halfe-foot words.
 Tis not enough, th'elaborate Muse affords 140
 Her Poem's beautie, but a sweet delight
 To worke the hearers minds, still, to their plight.
 Mens faces, still, with such as laugh, are prone
 To laughter; so they grieve with those that mone.
 If thou would'st have me weepe, be thou first drown'd 145
 Thy selfe in teares, then me thy losse will wound,
Peleus, or *Telephus*. If you speake vile
 And ill-penn'd things, I shall, or sleepe, or smile.
 Sad language fits sad lookes; stuff'd menacings,
 The angry brow ; the sportive, wanton things; 150
 And the severe, speech ever serious.
 For Nature, first, within doth fashion us
 To every state of fortune ; she helps on,
 Or urgeth us to anger; and anon
 With weightie sorrow hurles us all along, 155
 And tortures us : and, after, by the tongue

128 why D : Why F 131 know ?] know. F 132 Comedie]
 Comcedy D 134 oft, D: oft F 139 words.] words : F 152
 first,] first F 156 after,] after F

312 HÖRATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- Si dicentis erunt fortunis absona dicta,
Romani tollent equites pedites cachinnum.
Intererit multum, Davusn loquatur, an heros:*
- 115 *Matur&sne senex, an adhuc fiorente juventd
Fervidus : an matrona potens, an seduLa nutrix:
Mercatorne vagus, cultorne virentis agelli:
Colchus, an Assyrius : Thebis nutritus, an Argis.
Aut famam sequere, aut sibi convenientia finge*
- 120 *Scriptor. Honoratum si forti reponis Achillem,
Impiger₁ iracundus, inexorabilis, aeer_t
Jura neget sibi nata, nihil non arroget armis.
Sit Medea ferox, invictaq ; fiebilis Ino,
Perfidus Ixion, lo vaga, tristis Orestes.*
- 125 *Si quid inexpertum sconce committis, 6 audes
Personam formare novam ; servetur ad imum
Qualis ad incaepo processerit, & sibi constet.
Difficile est proprii communia dicere ; tu%
Rectius Iliacum carmen deducis in actus,*
- 130 *Quam si proferres ignota_t indicia primus.
Publica materies privati juris erit; si
Nee circa vilem, patulumfi moraberis orbem :
Nee verbum verbo cur obis redder e fidus
Interpres : nee desilies imitator in arctum,*
- 135 *Unde pedem proferre pudor vetet, aut opens lex.
Nee sic incipies, ut scriptor Cyclicus olim :
Fortunam Priami cantabo, & nobile bellum.
Quid dignum tanto feret hie promissor hiatu ?*

114 Davus ne
118 Argis:
123 Ino

125 scena
audes,
127 pro cesserit

Her truch-man, she reports the minds each throw.
 If now the phrase of him that speakes, shall flow,
 In sound, quite from his fortune ; both the rout.
 And Roman Gentry, jearing, will laugh out. 160
 It much will differ, if a God speake, than,
 Or an *Heroe*; if a ripe old man,
 Or some hot youth, yet in his flourishing course ;
 Where some great Lady, or her diligent Nourse ;
 A ventring Merchant, or the Farmer free 165
 Of some small thankfull land : whether he bee
 Of *Colchis* borne ; or in *Assyria* bred ;
 Or, with the milke of *Thebes* ; or *Argus*, fed.
 Or follow fame, thou that dost write, or faine
 Things in themselves agreeing : If againe 170
 Honour'd *Achilles* chance by thee be seiz'd,
 Keepe him still active, angry, un-appeas'd,
 Sharpe, and contemning lawes, at him should aime,
 Be nought so'above him but his sword let claime.
Medea make brave with impetuous scorne ; 175
Ino bewaild ; *Ixion* false, forsworne ;
 Poore *Jo* wandring ; wild *Orestes* mad :
 If something strange, that never yet was had
 Unto the *Scene* thou bringst, and dar'st create 180
 A meere new person, looke he keepe his state
 Unto the last, as when he first went forth,
 Still to be like himselfe, and hold his worth.
 Tis hard, to speake things common, properly :
 And thou maist better bring a *Rhapsody*
 Of *Homers*, forth in acts, then of thine owne, 185
 First publish things unspoken, and unknowne.
 Yet common matter thou thine owne maist make,
 If thou the vile, broad-troden ring forsake.
 For, being a Poet, thou maist feigne, create,
 Not care, as thou wouldst faithfully translate, 190
 To revnder word for word : nor with thy sleight
 Of imitation, leape into a straight,
 From whence thy Modestie, or Poemes law
 Forbids thee forth againe thy foot to draw.
 Nor so begin, as did that Circler late, 195
 sing a noble Warre, and Priam's Fate.
 What doth this Promiser such gaping worth

158 flow.] flow F 162 *Heroe*] herofi G if] If F 164 Where]
 Whe'r D: Wher G 165 the] a G 167 *Colchis* D: *Cholcis* F
 174 so' above F originally : miscorrected to ' so 'bove ' 175 New
 paragraph in F 180 person, looke D (reading ' look '): person.
 Looke F 196 I sing . . . Fate} I sing a noble Warre, and Priam's
 FateF

- Parturient mantes, naseetur ridiculus mus.*
140 *Quanta rectius hie, qui nil molitur inepti :*
Die mihi Musa virum, captcz post tempora Trojae,
Qui mores hominum multorum vidit, 6- urbeis.
Non fumum ex fulgore, sed ex fumo dare lucem
Cogitat, ut speciosa dehinc miracida promat,
145 *Antiphaten, Scyllamq;, 6- cum Cyclope Charybdim :*
(Nee reditum Diomedis ab interitu Meleagri,)
Nee gemino helium Trojanum orditur ab ovo.
Semper ad eventum festinat, & in medias res,
Non secus ac notas, auditorem rapit: & qua
150 *Desperat tractata nitescere posse, relinquit.*
Atq; ita mentitur, sic veris falsa remiscet,
Primo ne medium, media ne discrepet imum.
Tu quid ego, & populus mecum desideret, audi.
Si plausoris eges aulcea manentis, & usq;
155 *Sessuri, donec cantor, Vos plaudite, dicat,*
ALtatis cujus& notandi sunt tibi mores,
Mobilibus& decor naturis dandus, 6 annis.
Reddere qui voces jam stit puer, & pede certo
Signal humum, gestit paribus colludere, & iram
160 *Colligit, ac ponit temeri, & mutatur in haras.*
Imberbis juvenis, tandem custode remote,
Gaudet equis, canibusq;, & aprici gramine campi,
Cereus in vitium flecti, monitoribus asper,
Utilium tardus proirisor, prodigus aris,
165 *Sublimis, cupidust, & amata relinquere pernix.*
Conversus studiis atas, animus virilis
Quarit opes, & amidtias: inservit honori:
Commisisse covet, quod max mutare laboret.
Multa senem circumveniunt incommoda, vel quidd

Afford ? The Mountaines travail'd, and brought forth
 A scorned Mouse ! O, how much better this,
 Who nought assaies unaptly, or amisse ? 200
Speake to me, Muse, the Man, who, after Troy was sack't,
Saw many Townes, and Men, and could their manners tract.
 Hee thinkes not, how to give you smoake from light,
 But light from smoake ; that he may draw his bright
 Wovnders forth after : As *AntipJiu*,', 05
Seylla, Charybdis, Polypheme, with these.
 Nor from the brand, with which the life did burne
 Of *Meleager*, brings he the relume'
 Of *Diomed* ; nor *Troyes* sad Warn? begins
 From the *two Egges*, that did disclose the twin;. 21
 He ever hastens to the end, and so
 (As if he knew it) rapps his hear r to
 The middle of his matter: letting goe
 What he despaires, beinp handled, might n' -w.
 And so well faines, so mixeth cunningly 215
 Falshood with truth, as no man can espie
 Where the midst differs from the first: or where
 The last doth from the midst dis-joju'd appeare.
 Heare, what it is the People, and I desire :
 If such a ones applause thou dost require, 220
 That tarries till the hangings be ta'en downe,
 And sits, till *th'Epilogue* saies *Clap*, or *Crowne* :
 The customes of each age thou must observe,
 And give their yeares, and natures, as they swerve,
 Fit rites. The Child, that now knowes how to say, 225
 And can tread firme, longs with like lads to play ;
 Soone angry, and soone pleas'd, is sweet, or sowre,
 He knowes not why, and changeth every houre.
 Th'unbearded Youth, his Guardian once being gone,
 Loves Dogges, and Horses ; and is ever one 230
 I'the open field ; is Waxe like to be wrought
 To every vice, as hardly to be brought
 To endure counsell: a Provider slow
 For his owne good, a carelesse letter-goe
 Of money, haughtie, to desire soon mov'd, 235
 And then as swift to leave what he hath lov'd.
 These studies alter now, in one, growne man ;
 His better'd mind seekes wealth, and friendship : than
 Lookes after honours, and bewares to act
 What straight-way he must labour to retract. 240
 The old man many evils doe girt round ;

- 170 *Quant, & inventis miser abstinet, ac timet uti :*
Vel quidd res omneis timidi gelideꝫ ministrat;
Dilator, spe longus, iners, avidusꝫ futuri,
Diffidlis, querulus, laudator temporis acti
Se puero: censor; castigatꝫ minorum.
- 175 *Multa ferunt anni venientes commoda secum :*
Multa recedentes adimunt. Ne forte seniles
Mandentur juveni paries, pueroꝫ viriles,
Semper in adjunctis, zvoꝫ morabimur aptis.
Aut agitur res in scanis, aut acta refertur.
- 180 *Segnibs irritant animos demissa per aurem,*
Quiun qua sunt oculis subjecta fidelibus, & qua
Ipsē sibi tradit spectator. Non tamen intus
Digna geri, promes in scanam : multaꝫ tolles
Ex oculis, qua mox narret facundia prasens.
- 185 *Nee pueros coram populo Medea trucidet:*
Aut humana palꝫ coquat exta nefarius Atreus :
Aut in avem Progne vertatur, Cadmus in anguem.
Quodcunfi ostendis mihi sic, incredidus odi.
Ntve minor, quinto, neu sit productior actu
- 190 *Fabula qua ꝑosd uult, & spectata reponi.*
Nee Deus intersit, nisi dignus vindice nodus
Incident: nee quarta loqui persona laboret.
Actoris parteis chorus, officiumꝫ virile
Defendat, neu quid medios interdñat actus
- 195 *Quod non proposito conducat, & hareat apti.*
I lie bonis faveatfi, & condlietur amid,
Et regal iratos, & amet peccare timenteis.
Ille dapeis laudet menses brevis: ille salubrem
Justitiam, leges, & apertis otia portis.

176 *ne*
182 *non*
179, 183 *scenis, scenam*

188 *ostendit*
193 *Autons (so Heinsius)*
196 *amid.*

Either because he seekes, and, having found,
 Doth wretchedly the use of things forbear,
 Or do's all businesse coldly, and with feare ;
 A great deferrer, long in hope, growne numbe 245
 With sloth, yet greedy still of what's to come :
 Froward, complaining, a commevnder glad
 Of the times past, when he was a young lad ;
 And still correcting youth, and censuring.

Mans comming yeares much good with them doe bring : 250
As his departing take much thence : lest, then,
The parts of age to youth be given ; or men
To children ; we must alwayes dwell, and stay
In fitting proper adjuncts to each day.

The businesse either on the Stage is done, 255
Or acted told. But, ever, things that run
In at the eare, doe stirre the mind more slow
Then those the faithfull eyes take in by show,
And the beholder to himselfe doth revnder.

Yet, to the Stage, at all thou maist not teynder 260
Things worthy to be done within, but take
Much from the sight, which faire report will make
Present anone : *Medea* must not kill

Her Sonnes before the people ; nor the ill-
Natur'd, and wicked *Atreus* cooke, to th'eye, 265
His Nephews entrailes ; nor must *Progne* flie
Into a Swallow there ; Nor *Cadmus* take,
Upon the Stage, the figure of a Snake.
What so is showne, I not beleewe, and hate.

Nor must the Fable, that would hope the Fate, 270
Once seene, to be againe call'd for, and plaid,
Have more or lesse then just five Acts : nor laid,
To have a God come in ; except a knot
Worth his untying happen there : And not
Any fourth man, to speake at all, aspire. 275

An Actors parts, and Office too, the Quire
Must maintaine manly ; not be heard to sing,
Betweene the Acts, a quite cleane other thing
Then to the purpose leades, and fitly 'grees.
It still must favour good men, and to these
Be wonne a friend ; it must both sway, and bend
The angry, and love those that feare t(o)'offend.
Praise the spare diet, wholsome justice, lawes,
Peace, and the open ports, that peace doth cause.

251 As W : At D, F 265 cooke D : Cooke F 270 Fate,]
Fate F 277 sing,] sing F 279 fitly 'greens'] fitly agrees' D: *Jonson*
probably wrote' fitly 'agrees' 281 it D: *It*F 284 cause,] cause F

318 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- 200 *Ille tegat commissa, Deosq₃ precetur, & oret,
Ut redeat miser is, abeat fortuna superbis.*
Tibia non, ut nunc, ariehalco vincta, tubceb
Mmula, sed tenuis, simplex faramine pauco
Aspirare, & adesse charis erat utilis, atque
- 205 *Nondum spissa nimis complere sedilia flatu,*
Quo sani populus numerabilis, utpote parvus,
Et frugi, castusfi verecundusfi coibat.
Postquam coepit agros extevnders victor, & urbem
Lator amplecti murus, vinoq₃ diurno,
- 210 *Placari Genius festis impuni diebus,*
Accessit numerisfi modis% licentia major.
Indoctus quid enim saperet, liberfi laborum,
Rusticus urbano confusus, turpis honesto ?
Sic prisccz motumq., & luxuriant addidit arti
- 215 *Tibicen, traxitfi vagus per pulpita vestem.*
Sic etiam fidibus voces crevere sevens,
Et tulit eloquium insolium facundia pr&iceps :
Utiliunufc sagax rerum, 6 divina futuri
Sortilegis non discrepuit sententia Delphis.
- 220 *Ignotum Tragicce genus invenisse Camcena*
Dicitur, 6- plaustis vexisse poemata Thespis,
Qua canerent agerentfi peruncti f&cibus ora.
Post hunc personce palla repertor honesta
Æschylus, & modicis instravit pulpita tignis,
- 225 *Et docuit magnum loqui niti£ cothurno.*
Carminē qui Tragico vilem certavit ob hircum,
Mox etiam agresteis Satyros nudavit, & asper
Incolumi gravitate jocum tentavit: eo quod
Ittecebris erat, & gratd novitate morandus
- 230 *Spectator, functusfi sacris, & potus, £• exlex.*

Hide faults, pray to the Gods, and wish aloud 285
 Fortune would love the poore, and leave the proud.

The Hau'-boy, not as now with latten bound,
 And rivall with the Trumpet for his sound,
 But soft, and simple, at few holes breath'd time
 And tune too, fitted to the *Chorus* rime, 290
 As loud enough to £01 the seates, not yet
 So over-thick, but, where the people met,

They might with ease be numbred, being a few
 Chaste, thhftie, modest folke, that came to view.
 But, as they conquer'd, and enlarg'd their bound, 295
 That wider Walls embrac'd their Citie round,

And they uncensur'd might at Feasts, and Playes
 Steepe the glad *Genius* in the Wine, whole dayes,
 Both in their tunes, the licence greater grew,
 And in their numbers ; For, alas, what knew 300
 The Idiot, keeping holy-day, or drudge,
 Clowne, Towns-man, base, and noble, mix'd, to judge ?
 Thus, to his antient Art the Piper lent

Gesture, and riot, whilst he swooping went
 In his train'd Gowne about the Stage : So grew 305
 In time to Tragedie, a Musicke new.

The rash, and head-long eloquence brought forth
 Unwonted language ; and that sense of worth
 That found out profit, and foretold each thing,
 Now differ'd not from *Delphick* 310
riddling.

Thespis is said to be the first found out
 The Tragedie, and carried it about,
 Till then unknowne, in Cans, wherein did ride
 Those that did sing, and act: their faces dy'd
 With lees of Wine. Next *Eschylus*, more late, 315
 Brought in the Visor, and the robe of State,

Built a small-timbred Stage, and taught them talke
 Loftie, and grave ; and in the buskin stalke.
 Hee too, that did in Tragick Verse contend

For the vile Goat, soone after, forth did send 320
 The rough rude Satyres naked ; and would try,
 Though sower, with safetie of his gravitie,

How he could jest, because he mark'd and saw,
 The free spectators, subject to no Law,
 Having well eat, and drunke (the rites being done) 325

301 Idiot *D* : Ideot *F* 308 and *D* : And *F* 309 thing, *D* :
 thing *F* 312 Tragedie] Tragedy *D* 315 *Eschylus*] *JEschiluaD* :
Aischylus Brome late,] late *F* 317 small-timbred] small
timbr'd *F* 319 contend] contende, *F* 322 gravitie.] gravitie. *F*
323 saw,] saw *F* 325 drunke (the . . . done)] drunke : the . . .
done, *D*, *F*

320 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- Verum ita risores, ita commendare dicaces
Conveniet Satyros, ltd, vertere seria ludo :
Ne, quicunfi Deus, quicun£ adhibebitur Heros,
Regali conspectus in auro nuper, & ostro,*
235 *Migret in obscur as humili sermone tabernas ;
Aut, dum vital humum, nubeis, & inania captet.
Effutire leveis indigna Tragasdia versus :
Ut festis matrona moveri iussa diebus_t
Intererit Satyris paidum pudibunda protervis.*
240 *Nan ego inornata, 6 dominantia nomina solum,
Verba& Piones, Satyrorum scriptor amabo :
Nee sic enitar Tragico differre colori
Ut nihil intersit, Davusw loquatur, an audax
Pythias emuncto lucrata Simone talentum ;*
245 *An custos, famulus dei Silenus alumni.
Ex noto fiction carmen sequar, ut sibi quivis
Speret idem : sudet multumfrustra_qlaboret
Ausus idem : tantum series junctura pallet :
Tantum de medio sumptis accedit honoris.*
250 *Silvis deducti caveant, me iudice, Fauni,
Ne velut innati triviis, ac pcenl forenses,
Aut nimium teneris juvenentur versibus unqztam,
Aut immunda crepent, ignominiosafi dicta.
Offenduntur enim, quibus est equus, & pater, & res :*
255 *Nee, si quid jrikti ciceris probat, & nucis emptor,
Æquis accipiunt animis, donantve corona.
Successit vetus his Comasdia non sine multd
Laude, sed in vitium libertas excidit, & vim
Dignam lege regi. Lex est accepta, chorus*

233 Ne, corr. F: Ne; F
originally
237 New paragraph in F
243 Davustw con. F: Davus ne
F originally

245 fumulus
251 ptni
256 Æquis
donant've

Were to be staid with softnesses, and wonne
 With something that was acceptably new.
 Yet so the scoffing Satyres to mens view,
 And so their prating to present was best,
 And so to turne all earnest into jest, 330
 As neither any God, were brought in there,
 Or Semi-god, that late was seene to weare
 A royall Crowne, and purple, be made hop,
 With poore base termes, through every baser shop :
 Or, whilst he shuns the Earth, to catch at Aire 335
 And emptie Clowdes. For Tragedie is faire,
 And farre unworthy to blurt out light rimes ;
 But, as a Matrone drawne at solemne times
 To Dance, so she should, shamefac'd, differ farre
 From what th'obscene, and petulant Satyres are, 340
 Nor I, when I write Satyres, will so love
 Plaine phrase, my *Piso's*, as alone, t(o)'approve
 Meere rainging words : nor will I labour so
 Quite from all face of Tragedie to goe,
 As not make difference, whether *Davus* speake, 345
 And the bold *Pythias*, having cheated weake
Simo ; and, of a talent wip'd his purse ;
 Or old *Silenus*, *Bacchus* guard, and Nurse.
 I can out of knowne geare, a fable frame,
 And so, as every man may hope the same ; 350
 Yet he that offers at it, may sweat much,
 And toile in vaine : the excellence is such
 Of Order, and Connexion ; so much grace
 There comes sometimes to things of meanest place.
 But, let the *Faunes*, drawne from their Groves, beware, 355
 Be I their Judge, they doe at no time dare
 Like men street-borne, and neere the Hall, reherse
 Their youthfull tricks in over-wanton verse :
 Or crack out bawdie speeches, and uncleane.
 The Roman Gentry, men of birth, and meane, 360
 Will take offence, at this : Nor, though it strike
 Him that buyes chiches blanch't, or chance to like
 The nut-crackers throughout, will they therefore
 Receive, or give it an applause, the more.
 To these succeeded the old Comoedie, 365
 And not without much praise ; till libertie
 Fell into fault so farre, as now they saw
 Her licence fit to be restrain'd by law :

333 purple. . . . hop.] purple ; . . . hop F 335 Or. D : Or F
 355 beware, *corf.* F : beware. F originally 360 men of birth] Men
 of Birth F meane,] Meane F 365 No paragraph in F

322 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- 260 *Turpiter obticuit, sublato jure nocendi.*
Syllaba longa brevi subjecta, vocatur Iambus,
Pes citus : unde etiam trimetris accrescere jussit
Nomen lambeis, cum senos redderet ictus,
Primus ad extremum similis sibi : nan ita pridem
- 265 *Tardier ut paulo gravior veniret ad aureis,*
Spondes stabiles in jura paterna recepit
Commodus, & patiens: non ut de sede secunda
Cederet, aut quarta socialiter. Hic & in Acci
Nobilibus trimetris apparet rarus: 6 Enni
- 270 *In scetnam missos magno cum pondere versus,*
Aut opera celeris nimium, cura & carentis,
Aut ignoratce premit artis crimine turpi.
Non quivis videt immodulata poemata iudex,
Et data Romanis venia est indigna poetis.
- 275 *Idcirco vager, scribam si licenter ? an omnes*
Visuros peccata putem mea ? tutus, & intra
Spem venia cautus ? Vitavi denique culpam,
Non laudem merui. Vos exemplaria Graeca
Nocturnaversate manu, versate diurno.
- 280 *At nostri proavi Plautinos, 6- numeros, &*
Laudavere sales: nimium patienter utrumque,
Ne dicam stulte, mirati ; si modo ego, & vos
Scimus inurbanum lepido seponere dicto,
Legitimum si sonum digitis callemus, 6- aure.
- 285 *Nil intentatum nostri liquere poete,*
Nec minimum meruere decus, vestigia Graeca
Ausi deserere, & celebrare domestica facta :
Vel qui Praetextas, vel qui docuere Togatas.

• 261 Iambus	270 scenam
264 similis sibi: corr. F : simi-	272 turpi :
Ks : sibi F originally	273 iudex.
266 Spondeos	274 poetis,
268 hic	277 vitavi
269 Enni.	281 utrumque

Which law receiv'd, the *Chorus* held his peace,
His power of foulely hurting made to cease. 370

Two rests, a short and long, *ih'Iambick* frame ;
A foot, whose swiftnesse gave the Verse the name
Of *Trimeter*, when yet it was sixe-pac'd,
But meere *Iambicks* all, from first to last.

Nor is't long since, they did with patience take 375
Into their birth-right, and for fitnessse sake,
The steadie *Spond&es* ; so themselves to beare

More slow, and come more weightie to the eare :
Provided, ne're to yeeld, in any case

Of fellowship, the fourth, or second place. 380
This foot yet, in the famous *Trimeters*

Of *Accius*, and *Ennius*, rare appeares:
So rare, as with some taxe it doth ingage

Those heavie Verses, sent so to the Stage,
Of too much haste, and negligence in part, 385

Or a worse Crime, the ignorance of art.
But every Judge hath not the facultie

To note, in Poemes, breach of harmonic ;
And there is given too unworthy leave

To Roman Poets. Shall I therefore weave 390
My Verse at randome, and licentiously ?

Or rather, thinking all my faults may spie,
Grow a safe Writer, and be warie-driven

Within the hope of having all forgiven ?
'Tis cleare, this way I have got off from blame, 395

But, in conclusion, merited no fame.
Take you the Greeke Examples, for your light,

In hand, and turne them over, day, and night.
Our Ancestors did *Plautus* numbers praise,

And jests ; and both to admiration raise 400
Too patiently, that I not fondly say ;

If either you, or I, know the right way
To part scurrilitie from wit: or can

A lawfull Verse, by th'eare, or finger scan. 405
Our Poets, too, left nought unproved here ;

Nor did they merit the lesse Crowne to weare.
In daring to forsake the *Grecian* tracts,

And celebrating our owne home-borne facts ;
Whether the guarded *Tragedie* they wrought,

Or 'twere the gowned *Comady* they taught. 410

371 rests] rest's F 377 to D : doe F 384 Verses F 388
note,] note F 389 too D : too, F 394 forgiven ?] forgiven. F
398 over,] over F 399 No paragraph in F 407 Grecian]
Gracian D 409 *Tragedie*] *Tragoeche* D

324 HORATIUS, *de Arte Poetica*.

- Nee virtute foret, clarisve potentius armis,*
290 *Quam lingud, Latium, si non offevnderet unum-*
Quem£ poetarum limes labor, & mora. Vos, d
Pompilius sanguis, carmen reprehendite, quod non
Multa dies, & multa litura coercuit, atq₃
Perfectum decies non castigavit ad unguem.
295 *Ingenium miser d quia fortunatius arte*
Credit, & excludit sanos Helicone poetas
Democritus, bona pars non ungueis ponere curat,
Non barbam, secreta petit loca, balnea vital.
Nanciscetur enim pretium, nomenq poeta,
300 *Si tribus Anticyris caput insanabile nunquam*
Tonsori Lycino commiserit. O ego l&vus,
Qui purgor bilem sub verni temporis horam.
Non alius faceret meliora poemata. Verum,
Nil tanti est: ergo fungar vice cotis, acutum
305 *Reddere qua ferrum valet, ex(s)ors ipsa secandi.*
Munus & officium nil scribens ipse docebo ;
Unde parentur opes: quid alatformet% Poetam :
Quid deceat, 'quid non : quo virtus, quo ferat error.
Scribendi recte, sapere, est & principium & fons.
310 *Rem tibi Socraticae poterunt ostevndere chartce :*
Verbal provisam rem non invita sequentur.
Qui didicit, patriot quid debeat, & quid amicis:
Quo sit amore parens, quo frater amandus, & hospes:
Quod sit conscripti, quod judicis officium : qua
315 *Paries in helium missi ducis : ille profecto*
Reddere persona scit convenientia cuiq.,
Respicere exemplar vita, morumo jubebo

289 *virtute*
200 *Latiam*
291 *Vos*

295

92 *sanguis*
303 *verum*
a

Nor had our *Italic* more glorious bin
 In vertue, and renowne of armes, then in
 Her language, if the Stay, and Care t'have mended,
 Had not our every Poet like offended.
 But you, *Pompilius* off-spring, spare you not 415
 To taxe that Verse, which many a day, and blot
 Have not kept in ; and (lest perfection faile)
 Not, ten times o're, corrected to the naile.
 Because *Democritus* beleeves a wit
 Happier then wretched art, and doth, by it, 420
 Exclude all sober Poets, from their share
 In *Helicon* ; a great sort will not pare
 Their nailes, nor shave their beards, but to by-paths
 Retire themselves, avoid the publike baths ;
 For so, they shall not only gaine the worth, 425
 But fame of Poets, they thinke, if they come forth,
 And from the Barber *Licinus* conceale
 Their heads, which three *Anticyra's* cannot heale.
 O I left-witted, that purge every spring
 For choller ! If I did not, who could bring 430
 Out better Poems ? But I cannot buy
 My title, at the(ir) rate, I'(h)ad rather, I,
 Be like a Whet-stone, that an edge can put
 On steele, though t selfe be dull, and cannot cut.
 I, writing nought my selfe, will teach them yet 435
 Their Charge, and Office, whence their wealth to fet,
 What nourisheth, what formed, what begot
 The Poet, what becommeth, and what not:
 Whether truth may, and whether error bring.
 The very root of writing well, and spring 440
 Is to be wise ; thy matter first to know ;
 Which the *Socratick* writings best can show :
 And, where the matter is provided still,
 There words will follow, not against their will.
 Hee, that hath studied well the debt, and knowes 445
 What to his Countrey, what his friends he owes,
 What height of love, a Parent will fit best,
 What brethren, what a stranger, and his guest,
 Can tell a States-mans dutie, what the arts
 And office of a Judge are, what the parts 450
 Of a brave Chiefe sent to the warres : He can,
 Indeed, give fitting dues to every man.
 And I still bid the learned Maker looke
 On life, and manners, and make those his booke,

326 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- Doctum imitatore, & veras hinc ducere voces.*
Interdum speciosa locis, morataq rectt
- 320 *Fabula, nullius veneris, sine povndere, & arte,*
Valdius obleciat populum, melius& moratur,
Quam versus inopes rerum, nug&Q'canorce.
Graiis ingenium, Graiis dedit ore rotundo
Musa loqui, prater laudem, nullius avaris.
- 35 *Romani pueri longis rationibus assem*
Discunt in parteis centum diducere. Dicat
Filius Albini, Si de quincunce remota est
Uncia, quid superat ? Poteras dixisse triens. Eu,
Rem poteris servare tuam. Redit uncia : quid fit ?
- 330 *Semis. Ad htzc animos arugo, & cur a peculi*
Cum semel imbuerit speramus carmina fingi
Posse linenda cedro, 6- levi servanda cupresso ?
Aut prodesse volunt aut delectare Poetz
Aut simul & jucunda, 6- idonea dicere vita.
- 335 *Silvestres homines sacer, interpresq Deorum*
Ccedibus 6- victu fcedo deterruit Orpheus,
Dictus ob hoc lenire tigres, rapidosq leones.
Dictus & Amphion Thebanae conditor arcis
Saxa movere sono testudinis, & prece blanda
- 340 *Ducere quo vellet. Fuit hcec sapientia quondam,*
Publica privatis secernere, sacra profanis
Concubitu prohibere vago, dare jura maritis
Oppida moliri, leges incidere ligno.
Sic honor, & nomen divinis vatibus, atq
- 345 *Carminibus venit. Post hos insignis Homerus,*
Tyrtaeusq; mares animos in tristia bella

320 Veneris
328 potevas . . . eu
329 redit
330 d

339 Saxo
342 vago :
345 post

Thence draw forth true expressions. For, sometimes, 455
 A Poeme, of no grace, weight, art, in rimes,
 With specious places, and being humour'd right,
 More strongly takes the people with delight,
 And better staves them there, then ail fine noise
 Of verse meere-matter-lesse, and tinckling toies. 460

The Muse not only gave the *Greek's* a wit,
 But a well-compass'd mouth to utter it;
 Being men were covetous of nought, but praise.
 Our Roman Youths they learne the subtle wayes
 How to divide, into a hundred parts, 465
 A pound, or piece, by their long computing arts :
 There's *Albin's* sonne will say, Subtract an ounce
 From the five ounces ; what remains ? pronounce
 A third of twelve, you may : foure ounces. Glad,
 He cries, Good boy, thou'lt keepe thine owne. Now, adde 470
 An ounce, what makes it then ? The halfe pound just;
 Sixe ounces. O, when once the canker'd rust,
 And care of getting, thus, our minds hath stain'd,
 Thinke wee, or hope, there can be Verses fain'd
 In juyce of *Cedar* worthy to be steep'd, 475
 And in smooth *Cypresse* boxes to be keep'd ?
 Poets would either profit, or delight,
 Or mixing sweet, and fit, teach life the right.

Orpheus, a priest, and speaker for the Gods,
 First frighted men, that wildly liv'd, at ods, 480
 From slaughters, and foule life ; and for the same
 Was Tigers, said, and Lyons fierce, to tame.
Amphion, too, that built the *Theban* towres,
 Was said to move the stones, by his Lutes powers,
 And lead them with soft songs, where that he would. 485
 This was the wisdom, that they had of old,
 Things sacred, from profane to separate ;
 The publike, from the private ; to abate
 Wild ra(n)ging lusts ; prescribe the manage good ;
 Build Townes, and carve the Lawes in leaves of wood. 490
 And thus, at first, an honour, and a name
 To divine Poets, and their Verses came.
 Next these great *Homer* and *Tyrtaus* set
 On edge the Masculine spirits, and did whet

456 limes,] rimes *F* 461 wit,] wit *F* 462 it;] it. *F*
 463 praise.] praise ; *F* 470 ounce corr. *F*: ownce *F* originally
 472 whenD: whence *F* *Cedar*] *Cedar*, *F* 479 a priest, and speaker
 corr. *F*, *D*. *F3*: and priest, a speaker *F* originally Gods,] Gods *F*
 480 that *D* : and *F* 487 profane . . . separate corr, *F* : profaane . . .
 seperate *F* originally 489 ranging *D* 490 carve corr. *F* : crave
F originally 491 thus,] thus *F* 493 *Tyrtaus* 'D: *Tyrtaus* *F*

328 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- Versibus exacuit. Dictæ per carmina series,
Et vita monstrata via est & gratia regum
Pieris tentata modis, ludus& repertus,
350 Et longorum operum finis. Ne forti pudori
Sit tibi Musa lyræ solers, (& cantor Apollo.
Quicquid præcipies esto brevis : ut cito dicta
Percipiant animi dociles, teneantfideles.
Omne supervacuum plena de pectore manat.
355 Ficta, voluptatis causâ, sint proxima veris.
Nee quodcunq; volet, poscat sibi fabula credi:
Neu prænse Lamiae vivum puerum extrahat alvo.
Centuries seniorum agitant expertia frugis:
Celsi præcetereunt austera poemata Rhæmnes.
360 Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci,
Lætor em delectando, pariter monendo.
Hic meret cæra liber Sorsis : hic & mare transit,
Et longum noto scriptori prorogat ovum.
Sunt delicta tamen quibus ignovisse velimus.
365 Nam ne chorda sonum reddit, quænavlt manus & mens,
Poscentitfç gravem, perscepe remittit acutum :
Nee semper feriet, quodcunq; minabitur arcus.
Verum ubi plura nitent in carmine, non ego paucis
Offendar maculis, quas aut incuria fudit,
370 Aut humana parum cavit natura. Quid ergo ?
Ut scriptor si peccat idem libraries usq;
Quamvis est monitus, venia caret, & citharcedus
Ridetur, chorda qui semper oberrat eadem :
Sic mihi, qui multum cessat, fit Choerilus ille,
375 Quænavlt bis terq; bonum cum risu miror ; & idem
Indignor. Quandoq; bonus dormitat Homerus.
Verum opere in longo fas est obrepere somnum.
Ut pictura, poesis erit: qua, si propius stes,

347 dicta

350 ne

368 incarmine

370 quid

371 ~~utq;~~

372 caret

374 Cherilus

376 quandoft

378 propnus

Their minds to Warres, with rimes they did rehearse ; 495
 The Oracles, too, were given out in Verse ;
 All way of life was shewen ; the grace of Kings
 Attempted by the Muses tunes, and strings ;
 Playes were found out; and rest, the end, and crowne
 Of their long labours, was in Verse set downe : 500
 All which I tell, lest when *Apollo's* nam'd,
 Or *Muse*, upon the Lyre, thou chance b(e)'asham'd.
 Be briefe, in what thou wouldst command, that so
 The docile mind may soone thy precepts know,
 And hold them faithfully ; For nothing rests, 505
 But flowes out, that ore-swellethe in full breasts.
 Let what thou fain'st for pleasures sake, be neere
 The truth ; nor let thy Fable thinke, what e're
 It would, must be : lest it alive would draw
 The Child, when LamzVhas din'd, out of her maw. 510
 The *Poems* void of profit, our grave men
 Cast out by voyces ; want they pleasure, then
 Our Gallants give them none, but passe them by :
 But he hath every suffrage, can apply
 Sweet mix'd with sowre, to his Reader, so 515
 As doctrine, and delight together go.
 This booke will get the *Sosii* money ; This
 Will passe the Seas, and long as nature is,
 With honour make the farre-knowne Author live.
 There are yet faults, which we would well forgive, 520
 For, neither doth the String still yeeld that sound
 The hand, and mind would, but it will resound
 Oft-times a Sharpe, when we require a Flat:
 Nor alwayes doth the loosed Bow, hit that
 Which it doth threaten. Therefore, where I see 525
 Much in the *Poeme* shine, I will not bee
 Offended with few spots, which negligence
 Hath shed, or humane frailtie not kept thence.
 How then ? Why, as a Scrivener, if h(e)'offend
 Still in the same, and warned will not mend, 530
 Deserves no pardon ; or who'd play, and sing
 Is laugh'd at, that still Jarreth on one string :
 So he that flaggeth much, becomes to me
 A *Chcerilus*, in whom if I but see
 Twice, or thrice good, I wovnder: but am more 535
 Angry. Sometimes, I heare good *Homer* snore.
 But, I confesse, that, in a long worke, sleepe
 May, with some right, upon an Author creepe.
 As Painting, so is Poesie. Some mans hand

330 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

- Te capiet magis, & quadam, si longius abstes.*
380 *Hcec amat obscurum : volet hcec sub luce videri,*
Judicis argutum qua non formidat acumen.
Hac placuit semel: hcec decies repetita placebit.
O major juvenum, quamvis & voce paterna
Fingeris ad rectum, & per te sapis, hoc tibi dictum
385 *Tolle memor : certis medium, & tolerabile rebus*
Recte concedi. Consultus juris, & actor
Causarum mediocris, abest virtute diserti
Messalae, nee scit quantum Cacellius Aulus :
Sed tamen in pretio est. Mediocribus esse poetis
390 *Non homines, non Dii, non concessere columna.*
Ut gratas inter mensas symphonia disc ors,
Et crassum unguentum, & Sardo cum melle papaver,
Offendunt; poterat dud quia ccena sine istis :
Sic animis natum inventumq poema juvandis,
395 *Si paulum summo discessit, vergit ad imum.*
Ludere qui nescit, campestribus abstinet armis,
Indoctusq pila, discive, trochive, quiescit,
Ne spisse risum tollant impune coronte.
Qui nescit, versus tamen audet fingere : quid ni ?
400 *Liber, & ingenuus, prasertim census equestrem*
Summam nummorum, vitio£ remotus ab omni.
Tu nihil invitd dices, facies£ Minerva :
Id tibi judicium est, ea mens. Si quid tamen olim
Scripseris, in Metii descendat judicis aures,
405 *Et patris, 5- nostras, nonumq prematur in annum.*
Membranis intus positis delere licebit,
Quod non edideris. Nescit vox missa reverti.
Naturdfieret laudabile carmen, an arte,
Quasitum est. Ego nee studium sine divite vena,
410 *Nee rude quid prosit video ingenium ; alterius sic*

386 *consultits*

388 *Cacellius (so in Heinsius)*

400 *ingemus*

402 *Mtnervd.*

403 *mens, si*

407 *adidens*

409 *ego*

Will take you more, the neerer that you stand ; 540
 As some the farther off : This loves the darke ;
 This, fearing not the subtlest Judges marke,
 Will in the light be view'd : This, once, the sight
 Doth please ; this, ten times over, will delight.

 You Sir, the elder brother, though you are 545
 Informed rightly, by your Fathers care,
 And, of your selfe too, uvnderstand ; yet mind
 This saying : To some things there is assign'd
 A meane, and toleration, which does well:
 There may a Lawyer be, may not excell; 550
 Or Pleader at the Barre, that may come short
 Of eloquent *Messatta's* power in Court,
 Or knowes not what *Cassellius Aldus* can ;
 Yet, there's a value given to this man.
 But neither, Men, nor Gods, nor Pillars meant, 555
 Poets should ever be indifferent.

 As jarring Musique doth, at jolly feasts,
 Or thick grosse ointment, but offend the Guests :
 As Poppie, and *Sardane* honey ; 'cause without
 These, the free meale might have beene well drawne out: 560
 So, any *Poeme*, fancied, or forth-brought
 To bettring of the mind of man, in ought,
 If ne're so little it depart the first,
 And highest; sinketh to the lowest, and worst.

 Hee, that not knowes the games, nor how to use 565
 His armes in *Mars* his field, he doth refuse ;
 Or, who's unskilfull at the Coit, or Ball,
 Or trundling Wheele, he can sit still, from all;
 Lest the throng'd heapes should on a laughter take :
 Yet who's most ignorant, dares Verses make. 570
 Why not ? I'm gentle, and free-borne, doe hate
 Vice, and, am knowne to have a Knights estate.
 Thou, such thy judgement is, thy knowledge too,
 Wilt nothing against nature speake, or doe :
 But, if hereafter thou shalt write, not feare 575
 To send it to be judg'd by *Metius* eare,
 And, to your Fathers, and to mine; though 't be
 Nine yeares kept in, your papers by, yo'are free
 To change, and mend, what you not forth doe set.
 The Writ, once out, never returned yet. 580

 'Tis now inquir'd, which makes the nobler Verse,
 Nature, or Art. My Judgement will not pierce
 Into the Profits, what a meere rude braine
 Can; or all toile, without a wealthie veine :

332 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

Altera posci, opem res, & conjura, amice.

Qui stude, optatam cursu contingere metam

Multa tuli, fecitq₃ puer : sudavit, & alsit,

Abstiniui, Venere, & vino. Qui Pythica cantat

415 Tibicen, didici, prius, extimuit & magistrum.

Nunc satis es, dixisse, Ego mira Poemata pango :

Occupe, extremum scabies, mihi turpe relinqui est,

E, quod non didici sane nescire fateri.

U, praececo ad merces turbam qui cogi, emendas,

420 Assentatores jube, ad lucrum ire Poeta

Dives agris, dives positus in fanore nummis.

Si verd est, unctum qui recte ponere possit,

E, spovndere levi pro paupere, & eripere atris

Litibus implicitum ; mirabor, si scie, inter-

425 Noscere mendacem verumq₃ beatus amicum.

Tu seu donaris, seu quid donare voles cui,

Nolito ad versus tibi factos ducere plenum

Lcetitice. Clamabi, enim, Pulchre, bene, recte ;

Pattesci, super his : etiam stillabi, amicis

430 Ex oculis rorem, saliet, tunde, pede terram.

U, qui conducti ploran, in funere, dicunt,

E, faciun, prope plura dolentibus ex animo : sic

Derisor vero plus laudatore movetur.

Reges dicuntur multis urgere culullis,

435 ~~E, torquerer n e r o, quern perspexisset~~ a b o r a n t
An sit amicitia dignus. Si carmina condas,

Nunquam te fallan, animi sub vulpe latentes.

Quintilio, si quid recitares, corrige, sodes,

Hoc aiebat, & hoc. Meliis te posse negares,

440 Bis, terq₃ expertum frustra ; delere jubebat,

E, male tornatos incudi reddere versus.

412 aptatam

414

419 praeco

qui

428 damdbit

436 si

439 Hoc . . . meltus

So doth the one, the others helpe require, 585
And friendly should unto one end conspire.

Hee, that's ambitious in the race to touch
The wished goale, both did, and suffer'd much
While he was young ; he sweat; and freez'd againe :
And both from Wine, and Women did abstaine. 590
Who, since, to sing the *Pythian* rites is heard,
Did learne them first, and once a Master fear'd.

But, now, i, is enough to say ; I make
An admirable Verse. The grea, Scurfe take
Him tha, is last, I scorne to come behind, 595
Or, of the things, tha, ne're came in my mind,
To say, I'm ignorant. Jus, as a Crier
Tha, to the sale of Wares calls every Buyer ;

So doth the Poet, who is rich in land,
Or grea, in money's ou, a, use, command 600
His flatterers to their gaine. Bu, say, he can
Make a grea, Supper ; or for some poore man
Will be easuretie ; o r c a n helpe h i m o u , O fa

Of an entangling suit ; and bring 't about :
I wovnder how this happie man should know, 605
Whether his soothing friend speake truth, or no.

Bu, you, my *Piso*, carefully beware,
(Whether yo'are given to, or giver are)
You doe no, bring, to judge your Verses, one,
With joy of wha, is given him, over-gone : 610
For hee'll cry, *Good, brave, better, excellen,!*
Looke pale, distill a showre (was never meant)
Ou, a, his friendly eyes, leape, bea, the groun'.
As those tha, hir'd to weepe a, Funeralls, swoune,
Cry, and doe more then the true Mourners : so 615
The Scoffer, the true Praiser doth out-goe.

Rich men are said with many cups to plie,
And rack, with Wine, the man whom they would try,
If of their friendship he be worthy, or no :
When you write Verses, with your judge do so : 620
Looke through him, and be sure, you take no, mocks
For praises, where the mind conceales a foxe.

If to *Quintilius*, you recited ought:
Hee'd say, Mend this, good friend, and this ; 'tis naught.
If you denied, you had no better straine, 625
And twice, or thrice had 'ssayd it, still in vaine :
Hee'd bid, blo, all: and to the anvile bring
Those ill-torn'd Verses, to new hammering.

596 mind, D: mind F 608 are)] are.) F 615 then] to W
624 'tis D: 'Tis F

334 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

Si defevndere delictum, qudm vertere malles,
NuUum ultra verbum, au,operam sumeba,inanem,
Quin sine rivali te, & tua solus amares.

- 445 Vir bonus & prudens, versus reprehendi,inerteis,
Culpabi,duros, incomptis alline,atrum

Transversecalamosignum,ambitosar e c i d e , O r n a m e
Ornamenta, parum claris lucem dare coget :

Argue,ambigui dictum, mutanda notabit:

- 45° Fie,Aristarchus, nee dicet, Cur ego amicum

Offendami n,nugis?H anugceseriad u . c e n ,
In mala, derisum semel, exceptumq; sinistrè.

U,mala quam scabies, au,morbus regius urget,
Au,fanaticus error, & iracunda Diana,

- 455 Vesantum tetigisse timen,fugiuntq; Poetam
Qui sapiunt: agitan,pueri, incautiq3 sequuntur.
Hie, dum sublimeis versus ructatw, 6- errat,
Si veluti merulis intentus decidi,auceps
In puteum, fovedmve, lice,Succurrite, longum

- 460 Clamet, Id cives, non si,qui tollere curet.
Si quis cure,opem ferre, 6- demittere funem,
Qui scis, an prudens hue se dejecerit, atq3
Servari noli,? dicam, Siculiq; Poetce
Narrabo interitum. Deus immortalis haberi

- 465 Dum cupi,Empedocles, ardentem frigidus jEtnam
Insiluit. Si,jus, liceatfi perire Poetis.
Invitum qui servat, idem faci,occidenti.
Nee semel hoc fecit: nee si retractus erit, jam
Fie,homo : & pone,famosce mortis amorem.

- 470 Nee satis apparet, cur versus factitet: utrum
Minxeri,in patrios cineres, an triste bidental

442 qudm
443 Nulla
451 ha

452 semel derisum
459 succurrite
460 Clame,16

Then : If your faul, you rather had defend
 Then change ; no word, or worke, more would he spend 630
 In vaine, bu, you, and yours, you should love still
 Alone, withou, a rivall, by his will.

A wise, and hones, man will cry ou, shame
 On artlesse Verse ; the hard ones he will blame ;
 Blo, ou, the carelesse, with his turned pen ; 635
 Cu, off superfluous ornaments ; and when
 They're darke, bid cleare this : all that's doubtfull wrote
 Reprove ; and, wha, is to be changed, note :
 Become an *Arisiarchus*. And, no, say,
 Why should I grieve my friend, this trifling way ? 640
 These trifles into serious mischiefs lead
 The man once mock'd, and suffer'd wrong to tread.

Wise, sober folke, a frantick *Poe*, feare.
 And shun to touch him, as a man tha, were
 Infected with the leprosie, or had 645
 The yellow Jaundies, or were furious mad
 According to the Moone. But, then the boyes
 They vexe, and follow him with shouts, and noise.

The while he belcheth loftie Verses out,
 And stalketh, like a Fowler, round about, 650
 Busie to catch a Black-bird ; if he fall
 Into a pit, or hole ; although he call,

And cry aloud, Helpe, gentle Countrey-men,
 There's none will take the care, to helpe him then ;
 For, if one should, and with a rope make haste 655
 To le, i, downe, wh o knowes, i fh e d i d c a s , H i m s e l f

Himselfe there purposely, or no ; and would

No, thende be sav'd, although indeed he could ?
 Tie tell you bu, the death, and the disease
 Of the Sicilian *Poe, Empedocles*, 660

Hee, while he labour'd to be though, a God
 Immortall, tooke a melancholique, odde
 Concept, and into burning *Aetna* leap'd.
 Le, Poets perish, tha, will no, be kept.

Hee tha, preserves a man, agains, his will, 665
 Doth the same thing with him, tha, would him kill.
 Nor did he doe this once ; for if you can
 Recall him yet, hee'd be no more a man :
 Or love of this so famous death lay by.

His cause of making Verses none knowes why : 670
 Whether he piss'd upon his Fathers grave ;
 Or the sad thuvnder-stroken thing he have

336 HORATIUS, de Arte Poetica.

*Moveri,incestus: certi furit, ac, velu,ursus,
Objectos cavea valui,si frangere clathros,
Indoctum, doctum& fuga,recitator acerbus.*

475 *Quern verb arripuit, tenet, occiditfi legendo,
Non missura cittern nisi plena cruoris hirudo.*

FINIS.

473 *dathros*

HORACE, *of the Art, of Poetrie.* 337

(Defiled) touch'd ; bu, certaine he was mad,
And, as a Beare, if he the strength bu, had
To force the grates, tha, hold him in, would fright 675
All; So this grievous Writer puts to flight
Learn'd and unlearn'd ; holding, whom once he takes ;
And, there an end of him, reciting makes :
No, letting goe his hold, where he drawes food,
Till he drop off, a Horse-leech, full of blood. 680

FIN I S.

673 (Defiled)] Defiled, *F*

APPENDIX XV

THE FIRST VERSION OF THE DUODECIMO

Four copies have been collated, the British Museum copy, the perfect Malone and the imperfect Douce copy in the Bodleian, and a copy, which once belonged to Philip Bliss, now in the possession of the editors. These copies have no variants.

The critical apparatus records the readings which have been corrected, mainly matters of defective punctuation.

Quintus Horatius Flaccus

his book of the Art of

Poetry to the

PISO'S.

- IF to a womans head, a painter would
 A horse neck joyn, & sundry plumes ore-fold
 On every limb, ta'ne from a several creature,
 Presenting upwards a fair female feature,
 5 Which in a blacke foule fish uncomely ends :
 Admitted to the sight, although his friends,
 Could you containe your laughter ? Credit me,
 That Book, my *Piso's*, and this piece agree,
 Whose shapes like sick mens dreams are form'd so vain,
 10 As neither head, nor foot, one forme retain :
 But equall power to Painter, and to Poet,
 Of daring ought, hath still bin given ; we know it:
 And both doe crave, and give again this leave :
 Yet not as therefore cruell things should cleave
 15 To gentle ; not that we should Serpents see
 With Doves ; or Lambs with Tigres coupled be.
 In grave beginnings, and great things profest,
 You have oft-times, that may out-shine the rest,
 A purple piece, or two stitch'd in : when either
 20 *Diana's* Grove, and Altar, with the nether
 Bouts of fleet waters, that doe intertwine
 The pleasant grounds, or when the River *Rhine*,

Or Rain-bow is describ'd ; bu, here was now
 No place for these : And, Painter, haply thou
 Knows, well alone to pain, a *Cypresse* Tree ; 25
 What's this, if he whose mony hireth thee
 To pain, him, hath by swimming, hopelesse, scap'd,
 The whole Flee, wrack'd ? A grea, Jarre to be shap'd
 Was mean, a, first, why, forcing still about
 Thy labouring wheel, comes scarce a pitcher ou, ? 30
 Heare me conclude ; le, wha, thou works, upon
 Be simple quite throughout, and alwayes one.

The greater part, tha, boas, the Muses fire,
 Father, and sons righ, worthy of your Sire,
 Are with the likeness of the truth beguil'd : 35
 My selfe for shortnesse labour, and am stil'd
 Obscure. Another striving smooth to runne,
 Wants strength, and sinewes, as his spirits were done ;
 His Muse professing height, and greatnesse, swells ;
 Downe close by shore, this other creeping steales, 40
 Being over-safe, and fearing of the flaw :
 So he tha, varying still affects to draw
 One thing prodigiously, paints in the woods
 A Dolphin, and a Boare amids, the floods.
 The shunning vice, to greater vice doth lead, 45
 If in th'escape an artlesse path we tread.

~~The Emilian, Scholer, in Brasse can figure out~~ J E m i l i a n Schol
The nailes, and every gentle haire disclose ;

Ye, in the main work haplesse : since he knowes 5°
 No, to designe the whole. Should I aspire
 To frame a worke, I would no more desire

~~To the fellow, then to hem, a r k, o, u~~ W i t h faire b
With faire black eyes, and hair, and some vile snout.

Take therefore, you tha, write, a subjec, fit 55
 Unto your strength, and long be turning it:
 Prove wha, your shoulders will, or will no, beare.
 His choise, who's matter to his power doth reare,
 Nor language nor cleare order will forsake :
 The vertue and grace of which, or I mistake, 60
 Is now to speak, and even now to differ
 Much tha, mough, now be spoke, omitted here

340 *Horace-His Art, of Poetry.*

- Till fitter season ; now to like of this,
Lay tha,aside, the Epicks office is.
- 65 In using also of new words, to be
Righ,spare, and wary : then thou speak's,to me
Mos,worthy praise, when words tha,vulgar grew
Are by thy cunning placing made meer new.
Yet, if by chance in uttering things abstruse,
- 70 Thou need new termes ; thou maist, withou,excuse,
Feigne words un-heard of to the girded Race
Of the *Cethegi* ; and all men will grace
And give, being taken modestly, this leave,
And those thy new, and late-coyn'd words receive,
- 75 So they fall gently from the *Grecian* spring,
And come no,too much wrested. What's tha,thing
A *Roman* to *Cacilius* will allow,
Or *Plautns*, and in *Virgil* disavow,
Or *Varius* ? Why am I now envy'd so,
- 80 If I can give some small encrease ? when, loe,
Colo's, and *Ennius* tongues have len,much worth
And wealth unto our Language ; and brough,forth
New names of things. I,hath beene ever free,
And ever will, to utter termes tha,be
- 85 Stamp,to the time. As woods whose change appears
Still in their leavs, throughou,the sliding years,
The first-borne dying ; so the aged Fate
Of words decay, and phrases borne bu,late
Like tevnder Buds shoo,up, and freshly grow.
- 90 Our selves, and all that's ours, to death we owe :
Whether the Sea receiv'd into the shore,
Tha,from the North the Navy safe doth store,
A Kingly work ; or tha,long barren Fen
Once rowable, bu,now doth nourish men
- 95 In neighbour-towns, and feels the weighty plough ;
Or the wild River, who hath changed now
His course, so hurtfull both to grain and seeds,
Being taught,a better way. All mortall deeds
Shall perish : so farre of i,is, the state
- ioo Or grace of speech, should hope a lasting date.
Much phrase tha,now is dead shall be reviv'd,

64 is, 70 mais, 75 fall F: full D 76 come F: came D
77 *C&cilius* 87 firs,borne 90 thats 95 plough : 99
state F : Fate D io0 date.

And much shall dye, tha,now is nobly liv'd,
 If custome please, with whom both choyse, and will,
 Power, Art, and rule of speaking resteth still.

The deeds of Kings, grea,Captains, and sad wars, 105
 Wha,number bes,can fit, *Homer* declares.

In verse unequal match'd, firs,sowre laments,
 After, mens wishes, crown'd in their events,
 Were also clos'd : bu,who the man should be,
 Tha,firs,sen,forth the dapper Elegie, no

~~All the Grammarians strive: and dye in C o u r , B e f~~
Before the Judge it hangs, and waits report.

Unto the Lyrick strings, the Muse gave grace
 To chan,the gods, and all their god-like race,
 The conquering champion, the prime horse in course, 115
 Fresh Lovers busnesse, and the wines free source.

The *lambicke* arm'd *Archilochus* to rave,
 This foo,the socks tooke up, and Buskins grave,
 As fi,t'exchange discourse, and quell the rings
 Of popular noyses, borne to actuate things. 120

If now the changes, and the severall hues
 Of Poems here describ'd, I can nor use,
 Nor know t^lobserve ; why (i'the Muses name)
 Am I cald **Poe**,? wherefore with wrong shame
 Perversely modes,had I rather owe 125
 To ignorance still, then ye,to learne, or know ?

~~In Tragick verse, no lesse Thyestes feast~~
Abhorres low numbers, and the private straine

Fi,for the Sock : Each subjec,should retaine 130
 The place allotted it, with decen,praise :
 Ye,sometime both the Comoedy doth raise
 Her voyce, and angry *Chremes* chafes out-right,

~~With swelling throa: and oft, the Tragick w i g h , C o m p l~~
Complaines in humble phrase. Both *Telephus* 135

And *Peleus*, if he seek to heart-strike us,
 Tha,are spectators, with his misery,
 When he is poore, and banisht, mus,throw by
 His Bombard-phrase, and foot-and-half-foo,words.
 Tis no,enough the labouring Muse affords 140

102 liv'd	103 will	106 declares,	108 After . . . events
no Elegie	114 god like race	116 wines <i>F</i> : winds <i>D</i>	118
grave	121 <i>No paragraph</i>	126 know.	139 words:

342 *Horace His Art, of Poetry.*

- Her Poems beauty, bu, a swee, delight,
 To worke the hearers minds, still, to the plight.
 Mens count'nances, with such as laugh, are prone
 To laughter : so they grieve with those tha, mone :
 145 If thou woulds, have mee weep, bee thou firs, dround
 Thy selfe in tears, then me thy harms will wound,
Peleus, or *Telephus*. If thou speak vile
 And ill-pen'd things, I shall or sleep, or smile.
 Sad language fits sad looks ; stuf, menacings,
 150 The angry brow ; the sportive, wanton things;
 And the severe, speech ever serious :
 For nature firs, within doth fashion us
 To every Fortunes habit; she helps on,
 Or urgeth us to anger ; and anon
 155 With weighty woes she hurles us all along ;
 And tortures us, and after by the tongue,
 Her Truch-man, she reports the minds each throe.
 If now the phrase of him tha, speaks, shall flow
 In sound, quite from his fortune ; both the rout,
 iGo And *Roman* Gentry, will with laughter shout.
 I, much will sway whether a god speak, than ;
 Or an *Heroe* : If a ripe old man,
 Or some ho, youth, ye, in his flourishing course ;
 Whe'r some grea, Lady, or her diligen, Nurse ;
 165 A ventring Merchant, or the husband free
 Of some small thankfull land : whether he be
 Of *Colchis* borne ; or in *Assyria* bred;
 Or with the Milke of *Thebes*, or *Argus* fed.
 Or follow fame, thou tha, dos, write, or faine
 170 Things in themselves agreeing : if againe
 Honour'd *Achilles* chance by thee be seiz'd ;
 Keepe him still active, angry, unappeas'd,
 Sharp, & contemning Lawes a, him should aime,
 Be nough, so 'bove him, bu, his bold sword claime.
 175 *Medea* make wild, fierce, impetuous ;
Ino bewaild ; *Ixion* trecherous ;
lo still wandring ; griev'd *Orestes* sad :
 If something fresh, tha, never ye, was had,
 Unto the Stage thou bhngst, and dar's, create

142 still 150 brow : 157 Truck-man . . . throe; 167
 borne : 168 fed : 174 Probably Jonson wrote ' so'above him '
 175 impetuous :

A meer new person, look he keep his state zBo
 Unto the last, as when he firs, wen, forth,
 Still to be like himselfe, and hold his worth.

Tis hard, to speake things common properly :
 And thou mais, better bring a Rhapsody
 Of *Homers* forth in Acts, then of thine owne 185
 Firs, publish things unspoken, and unknowne.
 Yet, common matter thou thine owne mais, make,
 If thou the vile, broad-troden ring forsake.
 For, being a Poet, thou mais, feigne, create,
 No, care, as thou woulds, faithfully translate, 190

Of imitation, deape into a straight ys l e i g h ,

From whence thy modesty, or Poems Law
 Forbids thee forth againe thy foo, to draw.
 Nor so begin, as did tha, Circler, late, 195
 I sing a noble warre, and *Priams* fate.
 Wha, doth this promiser, such grea, gaping worth
 Afford ? The Mountains travail'd, and brough, forth
 A trifling Mouse ! O how much better this
 Who nough, assaies, unaptly, or amisse ? 200

Speakt om e. Muse, th e man, wh o after Troy w a s s a c k
Saw many towns, & men, & could their manners tract.

He thinks no, how to give you smoak from light,
 Bu, ligh, from smoak, tha, hem a y draw h i s b r i g h , W o v
Wonders forth after : As *Antiphates*, 205

Scylla, Charybdis, Polypheme, with these.
 No, from the brand with which the life did burne
 Of *Meleager*, brings he the returne
 Of *Diomede*, nor *Troyes* sad wars begins
 From the two Egges, tha, did disclose the twins. 210
 He ever hastens to the end, and so
 (As if he knew it) rapp's his hearer to
 The middle of his matter : letting goe
 Wha, he despaies, being handled, migh, no, show.
 And so well faines, so mixeth cunningly 215
 Falshood and truth, as no man can espy
 Where the mids, differs from the first, or where
 The las, doth from the mids, disjoyn'd appeare.
 Heare, wha, i, is the people, and I desire.
 If such a ones applause thou dos, require, 220

198 the 202 tract. 214 handled

344 *Horace His Art, of Poetry.*

Tha, tarries till the Hangings be tane downe,
 And sits till the Epilogue says clap, or crowne :
 The customes of each age thou mus, observe,
 And give their years and natures, as they swerve,
 225 Fi, dues. The child tha, now knows how to say,
 And can tread firme, longs with like lads to play.
 Soone angry, and soone pleas'd, is sweet, or soure,
 He knowes no, why, and changeth every houre.

The unbearded youth, his Guardian being gone,
 230 Loves Dogs, and Horses ; and is ever one

~~The every ficed ; as hardly to be brought~~ o u g h ,
To endure Counsell : a provider slow

For his owne good, a carelesse letter-goe
 235 Of Mony, haughty, to desire soone mov'd,
 And then as swif, to leave wha, he hath lov'd.

These Studies alter now, in one growne Man ;
 His betterd mind seeks wealth, and friendships than,
 Looks after honours, and bewares to act
 240 Wha, straightway he mus, labour to retract.

The old man many evils doe gir, round ;
 Either because he seeks, and having found,
 Doth, wretchedly, the use of things forbear,
 Or does all businesse coldly, and with feare :
 245 A grea, differrer, long in hope, grown numbe
 With sloth, ye, greedy still of what's to come :
 Froward, complaining ; a commevnder glad
 Of the times past, when he was a young lad,
 And still correcting youth, and censuring.

Mans comming yeares much good with them doe bring,
 230 A, his departing take much thence : les, then
 The parts of age to youth be given, or men
 To children, we mus, alwayes dwell, and stay,
 In fitting proper adjuncts to each day.

255 The businesse either on the stage is done,
 Or acted told : but, ever, things tha, runne
 In a, the eare, doe stirre the mind more slow
 Than those tha, faithfull eyes take in by show,
 And the beholder to himselfe doth revnder.

260 Ye, to the Stage a, all thou mais, no, tevnder

Things worthy to be done within, bu, take
 Much from the sight, which faire Repor, will make
 Presen, anon. *Medea* mus, no, kill
 Her Sons before the people : or the ill-
 Natur'd, and wicked *Atreus* cooke to the eye 265
 His Nephews intrailes : nor mus, *Progne* flye
 Into a Swallow there : nor *Cadmus* take,
 Upon the stage, the figure of a Snake.
 Wha, so is shewne, I no, believe, and hate.
 Nor mus, the Fable, tha, would hope the fate 270
 Once scene, to be againe calTd for, and play'd ;
 Have more, or lesse than jus, five Acts : nor lay'd

With his untying diapers there : and not , W o r t h h
Any fourth man to speak at all desire. 275

An Actors part, and office too, the quire
 Mus, manly keep, and no, be heard to sing
 Between the Acts a quite cleane other thing
 Than to the purpose leads, and fitly agrees.
 I, still mus, favour good men, and to these 280
 Be wonne a friend ; i, mus, both sway and bend
 The angry, and love those tha, fear t'offend.
 Praise the spare dyet, wholsome Justice, Lawes,
 The open ports, and sports tha, peace doth cause,
 Hide faults, and pray to th^f gods, and wish aloud 285
 Fortune would love the poore, and leave the proud.

The Hau-boy, no, as now with Latten bound,
 And rivall with the Trumpe, for his sound,
 Bu, so, and simple, a, few holes breath'd time,
 And tune too, fitted to the Chorus Rime, 290

As loudenought of ill the Seats, n o , y e , S o o v e r -
So over-thick, but where the people met,

They migh, with ease be numbred, being a few
 Chast, thrifty, modes, folk, tha, came to view.
 Bu, as they conquer'd, and inlarg'd their bound, 295
 The wider walls imbrac', their City round,
 And they un-censur'd migh, a, feasts, and playes,
 Steep the glad Genius in the Wine, whole dayes,
 Both in their Tunes the license greater grew,
 And in their Numbers ; for alas, wha, knew 300

- The Idiot, keeping holy day, or drudge,
 Clowne, townsman, base, and noble, mixt, to judge ?
 Thus to his ancien,ar,the piper lent
 Gesture, and Riot, whils,he wandring went
 305 In his train'd Gown, abou,the stage, thus grew
 To the grave Harp, and Violl voyces new ;
 The rash and headlong eloquence brough,forth
 Unwonted language ; and tha,sense of worth
 Tha,found ou,profit, and fore-told each thing,
 310 Now differ'd no,from *Delphick* ridling.
 He too, tha,did in Tragicke Verse contend
 For the vile Goat, soone after forth did send
 The rough rude Satyrs naked, and would trye,
 Though sower, with safety of his gravity,
 315 How he could jest; because he mark',& saw
 The free spectators, subjec,to no law,
 Having well eate and drunke (the Rites being done)
 Were to be staid with softnesses, and wonne
 With something, tha,was acceptably new.
 320 Ye,so the scoffing Satyrs to mens view,
 And so their pratling to presen,were best,
 And so to turne our earnes,into jest,
 As neither any god, be brough,in there,
 Or semi-god, tha,late was scene to weare
 325 A royall Crown, and Scarlet, be made hop,
 With poore base termes, through every baser shop :
 Or, whils,he shuns the earth, to catch the aire,
 And empty clouds. For Tragedy is faire,
 And farre unworthy to blur,ou,ligh,Rimes ;
 330 But, as a Matron drawne a,solemne times
 To dance, so she should, shame-fac'd, differ farre
 From wha,th'obscene, and petulan,Satyres are.
 Nor I, when I write Satyres, will so love
 Plaine phrase, my *Piso's*, as alone t'approve
 335 Meere raining words : nor will I labour so
 Quite from all face ol Tragedy to goe,
 As no,make difference whether *Davits* speake,
 And the bold *Pythias*, having cheated weake
Sinio, and of a talen,cleans'd his purse ;
 340 Or old *Silenus*, *Bacchus* Guard, and nurse.

302 mixt. . . judge :
 drunke : the . . . done,

307 forth,
 325 hop

316 spectators

317

I can, ou, of knowne stuff, a Fable frame.
 And so, as every man may hope the same :
 Ye, he tha, offers a, it, may swea, much,
 And toyle in vaine : the excellence is such
 Of order, and connexion ; so much grace 345
 There comes sometimes to things of meanes, place ;
 Bu, le, the Faunes, drawne from the groves, beware,
 Be I their judge, they doe a, no time dare,
 Like men Town-born, and neare the place, rehearse,
 Or play young tricks in over-wanton verse ; 330
 Or cracke ou, shamefull speeches, or uncleane.
 The Roman Gentry, men of birth, and meane,
 Take jus, offence a, this : nor, though i, strike
 Him tha, buyes Pulse there, or perhaps may like
 The nut-crackers throughout, will they therfore 355
 Receive, or give i, any Crowne the more.

Two rests, a short, & long, *ih'Iambicke* frame,
 A foote, whose swiftnesse gave the verse the name
 Of Trimeter, when ye, i, was sixe-pac'd,
 Bu, meere *lambicks* all, from firs, to last. 300
 Nor is', long since they did with patience take
 Into their Birth-right, and for fitnessse sake,
 The steady *Spondaes* ; so themselves to beare
 More slow, and come more weighty to the eare :
 Provided, ne're to yield, in any case 365
 Of fellowship, the fourth, or second place.
 This foote ye, in the famous Trimeters
 Of *Accius*, and *Ennuis*, rare appcares ;
 So rare as with some taxe i, doth engage
 Those heavy verses sen, so to the stage 370
 Of too much hast, and negligence in part,
 Or a worse crime, the ignorance of art:
 Bu, every Judge hath no, the faculty
 To note, in Poems, breach of harmony ;
 And there is given too unworthy leave 375
 To *Roman* Poets : shall I therefore weave
 My verse a, randome, and licentiously ?
 Or rather, thinking all my faults may spy,
 Grow a safe Writer, and be wary-driven
 Within the hope of having all forgiven. 380

348 *Horace His Art, of Poetry.*

Tis cleare, this way I have go, off from blame,
 Bu, in conclusion merited no fame.

Take you the *Greeks* examples, for your light,
 In hand, and turne them over, day, and night.

385 Your Ancestors, old *Plautiis* numbers prais'd,
 And jests, and both to admiration rais'd,
 Too patiently, **tha**, I no, fondly say ;
 If either you, or I know any way
 To par, scurrility from wit: or can

390 A lawfull Verse, by th'eare, or finger scan.

Thespisi ssaidt ob et h efirst, foundo u , T

The Tragædy, and carried it about,

Till then unknown, in Carts, wherein did ride
 Those **tha**, did sing, and act: their faces dy'd

395 With lees of Wine. Nex, *Mschilus* more late
 Brough, in the visor, and the robe of state,
 Buil, a small-timber'd stage, and taught, them talke
 Lofty, and great; and in the Buskin walk.

To these succeeded the old Comoedy,

400 And no, withou, much praise ; till liberty
 Fell into faul, so farre, as now they saw
 Her force was fi, to be restrain'd by law :
 Which law receiv'd, the Chorus held his peace,
 His power of fowly hurting made to cease.

405 Our Poets, too, lef, nough, unproved here :
 Nor did they meri, the lesse Crowne to weare,
 In daring to forsake the *Grczcian* Tracts,
 And celebrating their owne home-born facts :
 Whether the guarded Tragcedy they wrought,

410 Or 'twere the gown'd Comcedy they taught.

Nor had our *Italy* more glorious bin
 In vertue, and renowne of Armes, than in
 Her language, if the stay, and care t'have mended
 Had no, our every Poe, like offended.

4 5 But, ~~to take that Verse, which many a day and bloo~~ , T

Have not kept in, and (least perfection faile)

Not, ten times o're, corrected to the naile.

Because *Democritus* believes a wit

420 Happier than wretched Art, and doth by it

384 night: 385 No paragraph in D 386 rais'd; 393
 Carts F: Courts D 39? small timber'd 411 No paragraph in D

Exclude all sober Poets from their share
 In *Helicon* ; a grea, sor, will no, pare
 Their nails, nor shave their beards, bu, seek by-paths
 In secre, places, flee the public baths.
 For so, they shall no, onely gaine the worth, 425
 Bu, fame of Poets, if they can come forth,
 And from the Barber *Licinus* conceale
 The head tha, three *Anticira's* canno, heale.
 O I, left-witted, tha, purge every spring
 For Choler ! if I did not, none could bring 430
 Ou, better Poems : bu, I canno, buy
 My title a, their rate. I had rather, I,
 Be like a whetstone, tha, an edge can put
 On steele, though 'selfe be dull, and canno, cut.
 I, writing nough, my selfe, will teach them yet 435
 Their charge, and office, whence their wealth to fet,
 Wha, nourisheth, wha, formed, wha, begot
 The Poet, wha, becommeth, and wha, no, :
 Whether truth will, and whether errorr bring,
 The very roo, of writing well, and spring 440
 Is to be wise, thy matter firs, to know,
 Which the *Socratick* writing bes, can show :
 And, where the matter is provided still,
 There words will never follow 'gains, their will.
 He tha, hath studied well the debt, and knowes 445
 Wha, to his Country, wha, his friends he owes,
 Wha, heigh, of love a Paren, will fi, best,
 Wha, brethren, wha, a stranger, and his guest,
 Can tell a States-mans duty, wha, the Arts
 And office of a Judge are, wha, the parts 450
 Of a brave Chiefe sen, to the warres, he can
 Indeed give fitting dues to every man.
 And I still bid the learned maker look
 On life, and manners, and make those his booke :
 Thence draw forth true expressions, for somtimes, 455
 A Poem, of no grace, waight, ar, in Rimes,
 With specious places, and being humour'd right,
 More strongly takes the people with delight,
 And better stayes them there than all fine noyse
 Of empty Verses, and meere tinckling toyes. 460

350 *Horace His Art, of Poetry.*

- The Muse no, onely gave the *Greeks* a wit,
 Bu, a well-compass'd mouth to utter it,
 Being men were covetous of nough, bu, praise.
 Our *Roman* youthes they learne more thriving wayes
 465 How to divide, into a hundred parts,
 A pound, or piece, by their long counting Arts ;
 There's *Albins* sonne will say, subtrac, an ounce
 From the five ounces, wha, remaines ? pronounce
 A third of twelve, you may : foure ounces : Glad,
 47° He cryes, good boy, thou'l, keep thine owne : now adde
 An Ounce, wha, makes i, then ? the halfe pound just,
 Sixe ounces. O, when once the canker'd rust,
 And care of getting thus our minds hath stain'd,
 Thinke we, or hope, there can be verses feign'd
 475 In juyce of *Caedar* worthy to be steep'd,
 And in smooth *Cypresse* boxes to be keep'd ?
 Poets would either profit, or delight,
 Or mixing sweet, and fit, teach life the right.
 Be brieve in wha, them woulds, command, tha, so
 480 The docill mind may soon thy precepts know,
 And hold them faithfully ; for nothing rests,
 Bu, flowes out, tha, ore-swellet in full breasts.
 Le, wha, thou feign's, for pleasure sake, be neare
 The truth ; nor le, thy Fable think, wha, e're
 485 I, would, mus, be : les, i, alive would draw
 The child, when *Lamia*'ha.s din'd, ou, of her maw.
 The Poems vbyd of profit, our grave men
 Cas, ou, by voyces ; wan, they pleasure, then
 Our gallants give them none, bu, passe them by :
 49° Bu, he hath every suffrage can apply
 Sweet, mix'd with soure, to his reader, so
 As doctrine and deligh, together goe.
 This book will ge, the *Sosij* money ; this
 Will passe the Seas ; and long as Nature is,
 495 With honour make the far-known Author live.
 There are ye, faults, which we would well forgive,
 For, neither doth the string still yield tha, sound,
 The hand, and mind would ; bu, i, will rebound

461 No paragraph in D not F: tha, D wit 462 well compass'd
 405 divide 472 Ounces: 473 stain'd 481 rests
 482 ore swelleth 483 No paragraph in D 493 the *Sosij* F
 thee *Socij* D 494 is 496 No paragraph in D

Oft-times a sharp, when we require a fla,:
 Nor always doth the loosed bow hi, that 500
 Which i, doth threaten : Therefore, where I see
 Much in a Poem shine, I will no, be
 Offended with few spots, which negligence
 Hath shed, or humane frailty no, kep, thence.
 How then ? why, as a Scrivener, if he 'offend 505
 Still in the same, and warned, will no, mend,
 Deserves no pardon ; or who'd play and sing
 Is laugh, at, tha, still jarreth in one string :
 So he tha, flaggeth much, becomes to me
 A Chcerilus, in whom if I bu, see 510
 Twice, or thrice good, I wovnder : bu, am more
 Angry, if once I heare good *Homer* snore.
 Though I confesse, that, in a long work, sleep
 May, with some right, upon an Author creep.
 As Painting, so is Poesie : some mans hand 515
 Will take you more, the nearer tha, you stand ;
 As some the farther off : this loves the dark ;
 This, fearing no, the subtles, Judges mark,

Will in the light be view'd: this once the eyes delight. g h 520 D

Doth please, this ten times over will delight.
 You Sir, the elder brother, though you are
 Informed rightly, - by your Fathers care,
 And, of your selfe too, uvnderstand ; ye, mind
 This saying : to some things there is assign^d
 A meane, and tolleration, which doth well. 525
 There may a Lawyer be, may no, excell;
 Or rpleader, the Barre, tha, may comes h o r , C
Of eloquent *Messala's* powers in Court ;
 Or knowes no, wha, *Cassellius Aulus* can :
 Yet, there's a value given to this man. 530
 Bu, neither men, n o r gods, n o r Pillars m e a n , P o e
Poets should ever be indifferent.

As jarring Musick doth a, jolly feasts,
 Or thick grosse oyntment, bu, offend the guests,
 Poppy, with hony of *Sardus* ; 'cause without 535
 These, the glad Meal migh, have bin wel drawn ou,;

515 No paragraph in D. 517 dark. 518 mark 523 too
 525 well, 527 Barre ; 528 *Mesallas* 529 can 531 not
 Pillars 533 No paragraph in D 534 oyntmen, . . guests.
 536 Meal,

So any Poem fancy'd, or forth-brought, To bettering
To bettering of the mind of man in ought,

If ne're so little it departs the first,
 540 And highest; it sinketh to the lowest, and worst.
 He that knows the games, nor how to use
 The Armes in Mars his field, he doth refuse ;
 Or who's unskilfull at the Coyt, or Ball,
 Or trundling wheele, he can sit still from all:

545 Les, the throng'd rings should a free laughter take :
 Ye, who's most ignorant, dares Verses make.
 Why no,? being honest, and free-borne, doth hate
 Vice, and is knowne to have a Knights estate.

Thou, such thy judgements, is, thy knowledge too,
 550 Wil, nothing against Nature speak, or doe :
 But, if hereafter thou shalt write, no feare
 To send it, to be judg'd by *Metius* eare,
 And to your fathers, and to mine ; though, be
 Nine yeares kept, by, your papers in, y'are free
 555 To change, & mend, what you no, forth do set.
 The word, once out, never returned yet.

Orpheus, a Priest, and speaker for the gods,
 First, frighted men, that wildly liv'd in woods,
 From slaughters, and foule life ; and for the same
 560 Was Tygers said, and Lyons fierce, to tame.
Amphion too, that built the *Theban* towers,
 Was said to move the stones by his Lutes powers,
 And lead them with his soft songs, where he would.
 This was the wisdom that they had of old,

565 Things sacred from prophane to separate ;
 The publicke from the private ; to abate
 Wild ranging lusts, prescribe the marriage good,
 Build townes, and carve the lawes in leaves of wood.
 And thus, at first, an honour, and a name
 570 To divine Poets, and their verses came.

On edge the Muses spirits, and did what e
Their minds to wars, with rimes they did rehearse :

The Oracles too were given out in verse ;
 575 All way of life was shewn ; the grace of Kings
 Attempted by the Muses tunes, and strings :

541 No paragraph in D 542 Mars, 547 not; 554 by :
 556 word 560 fierce . .. tame : 563 would : 569 thus

Playes were found out; and rest, the end, & crowne
 Of their long labours, was in verse se,downe.
 Les,of the singer *Apollo*, and Muses fam'd
 Upon the Lyre, thou chance to be asham'd. 580

Tis now inquir'd which makes the nobler verse,
 Nature, or Art. My judgemen,will no,peirce
 Into the profits, wha,a meer rude braine
 Can, or all toyle, withou,a wealthy vaine :
 So doth the one, the others helpe require, 585
 And friendly should unto their end conspire.

He that's ambitious in the race to touch
 The wished Goale, both did and suffered much
 While he was young : he sweat, and freez'd again,
 And both from wine and women did abstaine. 590

Who now to sing the *Pythian* Rites is heard,
 Did learne them first, and once a Master feard.
 But, now, i,is enough to say, I make
 An admirable verse : the grea,Scab take
 Him tha,is last, I scorne to be behind, 595
 Or, of the things, tha,ne're came in my mind.

Once say I'me ignorant. Jus,as a Cryer,
 Tha,to the sale of wares calls every buyer,
 So doth the Poet, tha,is rich in Land,
 Or wealthy in monyes ou,a,use, command 600
 His praisers to their gaine : bu,say he can
 Make a greate Supper, or for some poore man

Will be easurety, or can helpe him, O fa
Of an intangling suit, or bring't about, 605
 I wovnder how this happy man should know,
 Whether his soothing friend speake truth, or no.

But, you, my *Piso*,carefully beware,
 Whether y'are given to, or giver are,
 You doe no,bring to judge your verses one
 With joy of wha,is given him over-gone : 610
 For he'll cry good, brave, better, excellent!

Look pale, distilladew was neverm, e, a, n, O u , a , h i s
Out at his friendly eyes, leap, beat the ground !
 As those tha,hir'd to weep a,funeralls sound.
 Cry, and doe more than the true mourners, so 615
 The scoffer, the true prayser doth out-goe.

577 and res,F : the res,D 581 No paragraph in D 597
 ignorant: just

- Grea,men are said with many cups to plye,
And rack with wine the man whom they would try,
If of their friendship he be worthy or no ;
- 620 When you make verses, with your judge doe so :
Looke through him, and be sure you take no mocks
For praises, where the mind harbours a Foxe.
- If to *Quinctilius* you recited ought,
He'd say, mend this my friend, and this, 'tis nought.
- 625 If you deny'd, you had no better straine,
And twice, or thrice assay'd it, bu,in vain ;
He'd bid blo,all; and to the Anvill bring
Those ill-torn'd verses to new hammering.
Then, if your faul,you rather had defend
- 630 Then change ; no word nor work more would he spend
In vaine, bu,you, and yours you should love still
Alone, withou,a rivall, a,your will.
- A good and wise man will crye open shame
On artlesse Verse ; the hard ones he will blame ;
- 635 Blo,ou,the carelesse with his turned pen ;
Cu,off superfluous ornaments ; and, when
They're dark, bid cleare 'hem ; al that's doubtful wrote
Dispute ; and wha,is to be changed, note ;
Become an *Aristarchus* : And, no,say,
- 640 Why should I grieve a friend this trifling way ?
These trifles into serious mischiefs lead
The man once mock'd, and suffered wrong to tread.
- Those tha,are wise, a furious Poe,feare,
And flye to touch him, as a man tha,were
- 645 Infected with the Leprosie, or had
The yellow jaundis, or were truely mad,
Uvnder the angry Moon. Bu,then the boys
They vexe, and carelesse follow him with noise.
This, while he belcheth lofty Verses out,
- 650 And stalketh, like a Fowler, round about,
Busie to catch a Black-bird ; if he fall
Into a pit, or hole, although he call
And crye aloud, Helpe, gentle Country-men ;
There's none will take the care to help him, then.
- 55 For, if one should, and with a rope make hast
To le,i,downe, who knowes, if he did cast

Himselfe there purposely, or no ; and would
 No, thence be sav'd, although indeed he could ?
 He tell you bu, the death, and the disease
 Of the *Sycilian* Poet, *Empedocles* ; 660
 He, while he labour'd to be though, a god
 Immortall, took a melancholick, odd
 Conceipt, and into burning *JEtna*, leap':
 Le, Poets perish tha, will no, be kept.
 He tha, preserves a man agains, his will, 665
 Doth the same thing with him tha, would him kill.
 Nor did he do this, once ; if ye, you can,
 Now, bring him backe, he'le be no more a man,
 Or love of this his famous death lay by.

Here's one makes verses, bu, there's none knows why : 670
 Whether h'hath pissed upon his Fathers grave :
 Or the sad thuvnder-strucken thing he have,
 Polluted, touch't: bu, certainly he's mad :
 And as a Beare, if he the strength bu, had
 To force the Grates tha, hold him in, would fright 675
 All; so this grievous writer puts to flight
 Learn'd, and unlearn'd ; holdeth whom once he takes ;
 And there an end of him with reading makes :
 No, letting goe the skin, where he drawes food,
 Till, horse-leech-like, he drop off, full of blood. 680

FINIS.

658 could ; 661 god, 667 can 670 No paragraph in D
 671 h hath 680 horse-leech like

UNGATHERED VERSE

THE TEXT

The following poems, arranged for the *mos, par, in* chronological order, were no, collected by Jonson or found among his papers after his death. The first, eleven of them were written before the date on which Stepneth entered the *Epigrams* on the Stationers¹ Register, 15 May 1612. With a writer so careful as Jonson was to preserve his work i, may cause surprise tha, some of these were no, printed in the Folio. Bu, a number of the omissions can be explained. Palmer's book of emblems (i) was never published. The epitaph on Cecilia Bulstrode (ix) would recall too glaringly the very differen, se, of verses which he had written on her in her lifetime (*Uvnderwood*, XLIX). Some of the poems were difficul, to reissue in a separate form—

the elinest o Breton(n), f o rinstante, thought h esneera. ⁴Nicholas Pasquils in *The Underwood*, XLIII. 77, suggests in

this case a personal reason also for suppressing the tribute ; the stately ode prefixed to Holland's *Pancharis* (vi), one of Jonson's fines, efforts of occasional verse, would have been ou, of place in the *Epigrams*, though, if a manuscrip, copy had survived, i, migh, well have been printed in *The Uvnderwood*; the two additional poems in Chester's *Love's Martyr* (iv, v) were wisely dropped, and of course so were the burlesque lines prefixed to Coryat's *Crudities* and *Crambe* (x-xn). How unintelligible a reprin, of this kind can be when torn from its original contex, may be seen from the reproduction in *The Uvnderwood*, xxiv, of the verses written for Raleigh's *History of the World* and describing the engraved title-page ; they were reprinted with no other clue than the vague heading '*The mind of the Frontispice to a Booke*'.

Bu, one omission is difficul, to explain. A place should certainly have been found for the fine tribute to *The Faithful*

Shepherdess (VIH), which was in print by the spring of 1610 ;

h a di, followed t h e p raise o f Beaumont, in *Epigram* L. V. i.
~~would have suggested with a fine felicity the union of three~~
 great dramatic names and preserved anew in English poetry
 the memory of the ' things done a, the Mermaid'.

Three poems in this section cannot, with certainty be
 claimed as Jonson's—the lines before James Warre's Pro-
 testant manual *The Touchstone of Truth* (xxvii) and the two
 emblematic poems on the Virgin Mary prefixed to Antony
 Stafford's *The Female Glory* (xli) ; but they have had a

place in the canon, and we do not feel the evidence against
~~them so decisive that we can remove them from the text.~~

We have printed all these poems in roman type : some
 are in italic in the original texts.

i.

From *The Sprite of Trees and Herbest* by Thomas Palmer.
1598-9.

When late (graue *Palmer*) these thy graffs and flowers
(so well dispos'd by thy auspicious hand)
weare made the obiects to my weaker powers ;
I could notbutin admiracon stand.
ffirst: thy successe did strike my sence with wovnder ; 5
thatmongstso manie plants transplanted hethert
notone butthriues ; in spite of stormes & thuvndert
Vnseason'd ffrostest or the mostenuyous weather.
Then I admir'dt the rare and prescious vse
Thy skill hath made of ranck dispised weedes ; 10
Whilstother soules conuertto base abuse
the sweetestsimplest and mostsoueraigne scedes.
Nextt thatwhich raptmeet was : I mightbehold

howlyketheCarbuncleinAaronsb r r e s t T h
The seauen-fold flower of Arct (more rich then gold) 15
did sparcle foorth in Center of the rest:

thusta sapovnderousthingci nwaterc a s t e x t e n d e t
extendeth circles into infinits,

stillmakingthatt hegreatestthatisl a s t t i l
till th one hath drown'd the other in our sightes, 20

So in my braine ; the stronge impression
of thy rich labors worlds of thoughts createdt
which thoughts being circumvol(v)d in gyerlyk mocion
wear spentwith wovnder as they weare delatedt
till giddie with amazementI fell downe 25
in a deepe trance;

When loe to crowne thy worth

In Add 6 : firstprinted by P. Simpson in *N. andQ.*t 28 September 1895.
The MS has: 7 thuvnder 20 sightes 22 created 24
delated

I struggled with this passion that did drowne
my abler faculties ; and thus brake forth

30 *Palmer thy traуayles well becum thy namet*
And thou in them shall line as longe as Fame.

Ben: Jhonson. gent.

Dignum laude virum Musa vetat mori.

II.

~~From Melancholike humours I nverse so fdiuersenaturest
drowne by Nica: Breton, Gent, London. ¶ Printed by Richard
Bradocke. 1600. On signature AS versot in italic type.~~

In Authorem.

THout that wouldst finde the habit of true passiont
And see a minde attir'd in perfect straines;
Not wearing moodest as gallants doe a fashiont
In these pide timest only to shewe their brainest

5 Looke here on *Bretons* worket the master print:
Wheret such perfections to the life doe rise.
If they seeme wryt to such as looke asquintt
The fault's not in the obiectt but their eyes.

Fort as one comming with a laterall viewet
10 Vnto a cunning piece wrought perspective
Wants facultie to make a censure true :
So with this Authors Readers will it thrive :

Which being eyed directlyt I diuinet
His prooffe their praiset will meetet as in this line.
BEN: IOHNSON.

III.

Fragments from *England Parnassus : Or The choyssest Flowers of our Moderne Poetst with their Poeticall comparisons. Descriptions of Bewtiest Personages. Castlest Pallacest Mountainest Groues. Seast Springst Riuerst St. Whereunto are annexed other various discoursest both pleasaunt and profitable. Imprinted at London for N. L. C. B. and T. H. [i.e. N. Lingt C. Burby T. Hayes] 1600. (=P.)*

P. 211

Murder.

Those that in blood such violent pleasure hauet
Seldome descend but bleeding to their graue.

B. Johnson.

Pp. 228-9

Peace.

Warres grea(t)est woest and miseries increaset
Flowes fr6 the surfets which we take in peace.

B. Iohn.

P. 258

Riches.

Gold is a sutort neuer tooke repulset 5
It carries Palme with itt (where e're it goes)
Respectt and obseruation ; it vn couers
The knottie heads of the most surly Groomest
Enforcing yron doores to yeeld it wayt
Were they as strong ram'd vp as Aetna gates. 10
It bends the hams of Gossip Vigilancet
And makes her supple feetet as swifto windc.
It thawes the frostiestt and most stiffe disdaine :
Muffles the cleannesse of Electiont
Straines fancie vnto foule Apostaciet 13
And strikes the quickest-sighted ludgement blinde.
Then why should we dispaire ? Dispairet away :
Where Gold's the Motiuet women haue no Nay.

B. Johnson.

iii. 1-2 Quoted anonymously in *Bodenham's 'Bcl-vcdq3rc'*, 1600t p. 111, with the readings 'a violent' and 'the graue'. 15 Apostacie. P
17 dispaire ? Away P

IV., V.

From *Loues Martyr* : ort *Rosalins Complaint*. Allegorically shadowing the truth of *Louet* in the constant Fate of the Phoenix and Turtle. A Poeme interlaced with much varietie and raritie ; now first translated out of the venerable Italian *Torquato Calianot* by *Robert Chester*. . . . To these are added some new compositionst of seuerall moderne Writers whose names are subscribed to their seuerall workest vpon the first Subiect: viz. the Phoenix and Turtle. Mar: — *Mutare dominum non potest liber notus*. London Imprinted for *E.B.* [i.e. *Edward Blount*]. 1601.

Atp. 165 is a separate title-page for the appendix as follows : Hereafter follow diuerse Poeticall Essaies on the former Subiect; viz . the Turtle and Phoenix. Done by the best and chiefest of our moderne writerst with their names subscribed to their particular workes : neuer before extant. And (now first) consecrated by them all generallyt to the loue and merit of the true-noble Knight Sir John *Sahsburie*. *Dignum laude virum Musa vetat mori*. [Device of *Richard Field*.] MDCI. On pp. 182-3.

The Phcenix Analysde.

N^Owt after allt letno man
 Receiue it for a *Fablet*
 If a *Bird* so amiablet
 Do turne into a Woman.

gi

Or (by our *Turtles* *Augure*)
 That *Natures* fairest *Creaturet*
 Proue of his *Mistris* *Featuret*
 But a bare *Type* and *Figure*.

Ode ἐν θουσιαστικῇ.

Splendor I O more then mortall,
 For other formes come short all
 Of her illustrate brightness,
 As farre as Sinne's from lightnesse.

iv, v. Text from the Bntwell copy, 'Ode' in RP3f. 20 b, 'To L: C: off: B ', i.e. 'To Lucy, Countess of Bedford'.
 v. i Splendor I O] Beautye. RP 3 illustrate] admyred RP

Her witas quicket and sprightfull 5
As fire ; and more delightful!
Then the stolne sports of *Louerst*
When nighttheir meeting couers.

Judgement(adornd with Learning)
Doth shine in her discerningt 10
Clearc as a naked vestall
Closde in an orbe of Christall.

Her breath for sweete exceeding
The *Phoenix* place of breedingt
Butmixtwith soundt transcending 15
All *Nature* of commending.

Alas : then whither wade It
In thoughtto praise this *Ladie* ;
When seeking her renowningt
My selfe am so neare drowning ? 20

Retiret and say ; Her *Graces*
Are deeper then their Faces :
Yetshee's nor nice to shew themt
Nor takes she pride to know them.

FINIS.

Ben: Johnson.

VI.

From *Pancharis* : *The firstBooke. Containing The Preparation
of the Loue betweene Owen Tydyrt and the Queenet Long since
intended to her Maiden Maiestie : And now dedicated To The
Invincible lamest Second and greater Monarch of greatBntainet
King of Englandt Scotlandt Francet and Irelandt with the Islands
adiacent. (By Hugh Holland.) Mar. Valerius Martialis. Victurus*

v. 8 meeting] meeting *RP*
trade *RP* 23 nor] not*RP*

13 for] farre *RP*

17 wade]

Genium debethabere liber. Printed at London by V.S. [i.e. Valentine Symmes] for Clement Knightt CID icin. Sig. A 7 verso-sig. A 10.

Ben: Iohnson.

Ode. oAAiyopiirq.

Who saith our Times nor hauet nor can
 Produce vs a blacke Swan ?
 Beholdt where one doth swim ;
 Whose Notet and Huet
 5 Besides the other Swannes admiring himt
 Betray ittrue :
 A gentler Birdt then thist
 Did neuer dintthe breastof *Tamisis*.

Market market butwhen his wing he takest
 10 How faire a flighthe makes !
 How vpwardt and direct!
 Whilstpleas'd *Apollo*
 Smiles in his Spheret to see the restaffectt
 In vaine to follow :
 15 This Swanne is onely hist
 And *Phoebus* loue cause of his blackenesse is.

He shew'd him firstthe hoofe-cleftSpringt
 Neere whicht the *Thespiad's* sing ;

20 The cleare *Dirce* & an F o u n t 2 0
 Where *Pindar* swamme ;

The pale *Pyrenet* and the forked *Mount*:
 Andt when they came
 To brookest and broader streamest
 From *Zephyr's* rape would close him with his beames.

25 This change'd his Downe ; till thist as white
 As the whole heard in sightt
 And still is in the Brest:
 Thatpartnor Windet

Nor Sunne could make to vary from the restt
Or alter kinde. 30

¹¹ So much doth Virtue hatet
¹¹ For stile of rareneset to degenerate.

Be then both Raret and Good ; and long
Continue thy sweete Song.
Nor letone Riuer boast 35
Thy tunes alone ;

Butproue the Aired and sailc from Coastto Coast:
Salute old *M6ne*,
Butfirstto *Cluid* stoope lowt
The Valet thatbred thee puret as her Hills Snow. 40

From thencet display thy wing againe
Ouer *lerna* mainet
To the *Eugenian* dale ;

Therecharmeth her. O. v. t. W. i. t. h. t. h. y. s. o. f. t. n. o. t. e. s.
With thy soft notes, and hold them within Pale 45
Thatlate were out.

¹⁴ Musicke hath power to drawt
¹¹ Where neither Force can bendt nor Feare can awe.

Be proofet the glory of his handt
(*Charles Montioy*) whose command 50
Hath all beene Harmony :
And more hath wonne

Vpon the *Kernet* and wildest*Irish*ryt
Then Time hath donnet
Whose strength is aboue strength ; 55
And conquers all thingst yea itselfet atlength.

Who euer siptat*Baphyre* riuert
Thatheard butSpightdeliuer
His farre-admired Actst
Andisnotrap't 60

With entheate raget to publish their brighttracts ?

(But this more a part, When he himself alone sings)
~~When him alone we sing)~~

Now must we plie our ayne ; our Swan's on wing.

65 Who (see) already hath ore-flowne

The *Hebrid* Islest and knowne

The scatter'd *Orcades* ;

From thence is gon

To vtmost *Thule*: whencet he backes the Seas

70 To *Caledont*

And ouer *Grampius* mountainet

To *Loumond* laket and *Twedes* blacke-springing fountaine.

Hastet Hastet sweete Singer : Nor to *Tinet*

Humbert or *Owset* decline ;

75 But ouer Land to *Trent*:

There coole thy Plumest

And vp againet in skiest and aire to vent

Their reeking fumes ;

Till thou at *Tames* alightt

80 From whose prowde bosomet thou began'st thy flight.

Tamest prowde of theet and of his Fate

In entertaining late

The choise of *Europes* pride ;

The nimble *French* ;

85 The *Dutch* whom Wealth (not Hatred) doth diuide ;

The *Danes* thatdrench

Their cares in wine ; with sure

Though slower *Spaine* ; and *Italy* mature.

All which when they butheare a straine

90 Of thinet shall thinke the *Maine*

Hath senther *Mermaides* int

To hold them here :

- Yett looking in thy facet they shall begin
 To loose thatfeare ;
 And (in the place) enuie 95
 So blacke a Birdt so brighta Qualitie.
- Butshould they know (as I) thatthist
 Who warbleth PANCHARIST
 Were CYCNVSt once high flying
 With *Cupids* wing ; 100
 Thought now by *Loue* transform'dt & dayly dying :
 (Which makes him sing
 With more delightt and grace)
 Or thoughttheyt *Leda's* white Adult'riers place
- Among the starres should be resign'd 105
 To himt and he there shrin'd ;
 Or *Tames* be rap'tfrom vs
 To dimme and drowne
 In heau'n the Signe of old *Eridanus*:
 How they would frowne ! no
 Butthese are Mysteries
 Conceal'd from all butcleare Propheticke eyes.
- Itis inought their grieve shall know
 Attheir returnet nor *Pot*
Iberust Tagust Rheinet "5
Scheldtt nor the *Maast*
 Slow *Arart* nor swift*Rhone* ; the *Loyret* nor *Seinet*
 With all the race
 Of *Europes* waters can
 Setouta liket or second to our Swan. 12o

VII.

From *The Passions of the minde in generall. Corrected, enlarged, and with sundry new discourses augmented. By Thomas Wright . . . London Printed by Valentine Simmes for Walter Burre, and are to be sold in Paules Churchyard at the signe of the Crane. Anno. 1604.* On signature a 2 verso in italic.

To the Author.

IN Picture, they which truly vnderstanu,
 Require (besides the likenesse of the thing)
 Light, Posture, Height'ning, Shadow, Cullinging,
 All which are parts commend the cunning hand ;
 5 And all your Booke (when it is throughly scan'd)
 Will well confesse ; presenting, limiting,
 Each subtlest Passion, with her source, and spring,
 So bold, as shewes your Art you can command.
 But now, your Worke is done, if they that view
 10 The seuerall figures, languish in suspence,
 To iudge which Passion's false, and which is true,
 Betweene the doubtfull sway of Reason¹, and sense ;
 Tis not your fault, if they shall sense preferre,
 Being tould there, Reason cannot, Sense may erre.
 B. I.

VIII.

From *The Faithful! Shepheardesse. By John Fletcher. Printed at London for R. Bonian and H. Valley, and are to be sold at the spred Eagle ouer against the great North dore of S. Paules. n.d.* On signature A 4.

To the worthy Author M.
Iohn Fletcher.

THe wise, and many-headed *Bench*, that sits
 Vpon the Life, and Death of *Playes*, and *Wits*,
 (Compos'd of *Gamester*, *Captaine*, *Knight*, *Knight's man*,
Lady, or *Pusil*, that weares maske, or fan,
 vii. 7 subt'lest] subject *edd.* 1620, 1621 12 Reason'.] Reason
 1620. 1621. 13 Tis] Tis Wr viii Preceded by verse of Field and
 Beaumont, followed by verse of Chapman.

Velvett or Taffata capt rank'd in the darke 5
 With the shops Foremant or some such braue sparket
 Thatmay iudge for his six-pence) hadt before
 They saw ithalfet damd thy whole playt and more ;
 Their motiues weret since ithad notto do
 With vices which they look'd fort and came to. 10
 It thatam gladt thy Innocence was thy Guiltt
 And wish thatall the Muses blood were spiltt
 In such a Martirdome ; To vexen their eyest
 Do crowne thy mured Poeme : which shall rise
 A glorified worke to Timet when Firet 15
 Or moathes shall eatet whatall these Fooles admire.

Ben: lonson.

IX.

Epitaph on Cecilia Bulstrode. 1609t sentwith a covering note
 "To my rightworthy Freind M^r. Geo: Garrard."

Epitaph.

Stayt view this stone : Andt if thou beestnotsucht
 Read here a littlet thatthou maystknow much.
 Itcouerst firstt a Virgin ; and thent one
 Thatdurstbe thatin Court: a vertu¹ alone
 To fill an Epitaph. Butshe had more. 5
 She mighthau claym'd t'have made the Graces foure ;
 TaughtPallas language ; Cynthia modesty ;
 As fitto haue encreas'd the harmony

viii. 8 moret Q 16 or Q

ix. From the holograph in the Widener Library atHarvard Colleet
 printed by P. Simpson in the 'tL.S 't 6 March 1930 the poem was printed
 in the second Report of the Historical MSS Commission't 1871t '79. as
 one of the Bromley-DavenportMSS atBagginton Hall In Ch. 2t p 162t
 'Epitaph' subscribed 'B. J ': printed in 'AT. and Q '. 1863. (The copy in
 AddiSf 33 notcollated.) In H4f 261 bt ' Epitaph ' ; Hsf 33 bt 'on the
 death of Mrs. Boulstred ' ; Ash 2t p 187t 'Vpon a Virgine w^h hued
 and died attCourte'; RP3f 36t' Epitaph ' ; RP5f 55 bt withoutheading.
 RPot f 25 bt ' On the death of Mistns Boulstearl ' t Ellesmere MS of
 Donne. ' On the death of MBoulstred ' (= L) O'Flaherty MS of
 Donne atHarvard ' Upon the same M" Boulstnd ' (= O'F). i if
 notin RPs beest] bee Ash 2 a notin H5 4 that] so t Asht
 RP? vertu'] vertue Cht H+t Hjt RPst 5. 9t Ash 5 had] hath Et O'F
 6 t'have made] to maket RPg made notin Ch foure] poore H5

Of Spheares,as lightof starres ; She was earthes Eye :
 10 The sole Religious house,and Votary,.
 W^h Rites notbound,butconscience. Wouldstthou All ?
 She was 'Sell Boulstred. In w^h name,I call
 it Vp so much truth,as could I itpursue
 Mightmake the Fable of *Good Women* true.

15 See whatthe obedience of freindship is,and the hazard
 itrunes. This I haue done,streightned w^h time (as yo^r
 Man knowes) to letyou know yo^r power in mee. If itbe
 well,as I thinke itis,for my invention hath notcooled so
 much to iudge,show it,though the greater Witts haue gone
 20 before. Ithath somwhatin it*moris antiqui*,and suggesting

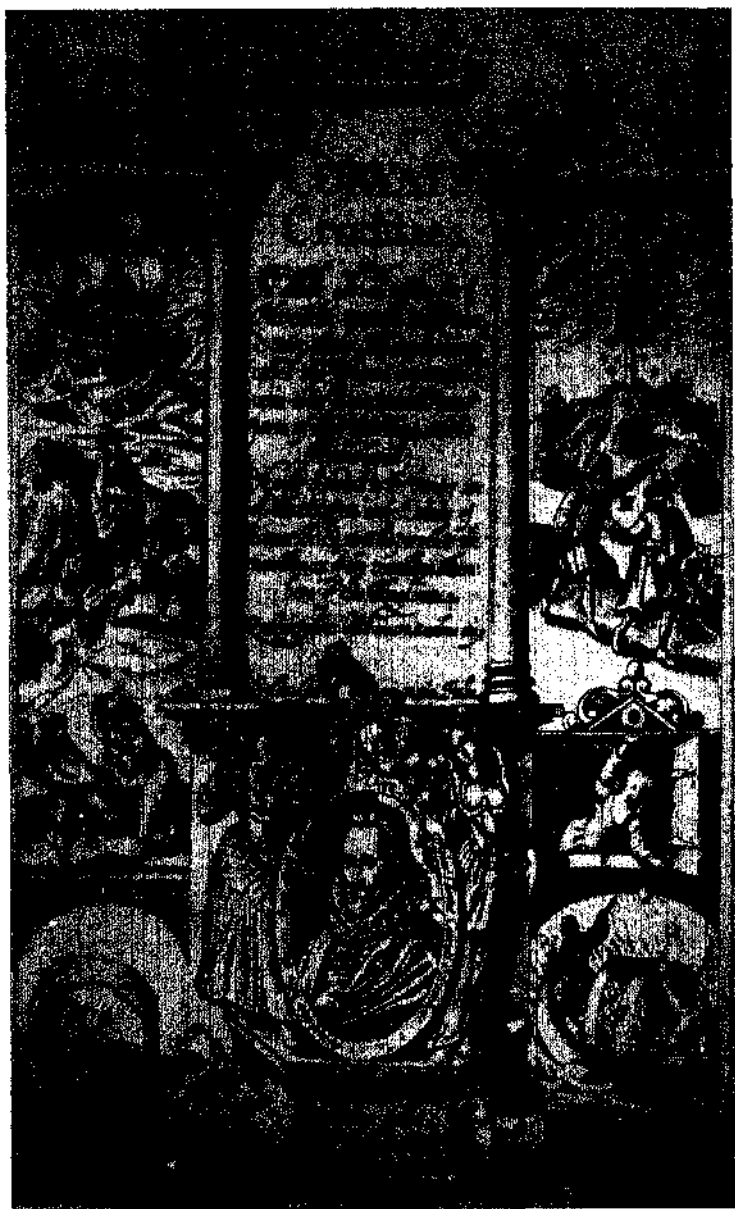
~~I was not so much acquainted with the sad argument,~~
 w^h both strooke me and keepes me a heauy man, Would
 God,I had scene her before thatsome y¹ liue mighthaue
 25 corrected some preiudices they haue had iniuriously of mee.
 By you^r nextcommodity,write me yo^r liking of it,and some
 newes ; I will answere itw^h yo^r other requestif I can for
 my businesse,w^h is now very waighty to mee,by reason
 of some embarquings.

30

Yo^r true Louer

Ben: Jonson

9 earthes] yearths *H5* 10 sole] best*Ash* Religious] religions *Ch*
 house] loue *RPj* and] the *H5* i With ... bound] Notbound by
 rites *HS,Ash,RPg. E. OF* 12 'Self] Sell *H4,RPj. OF* : Sill *Ch* :
 Sal. corrected in margin to Sil *E* : still *H4* : sett*HS,Ash,RP5* : set*RPg* :
 Anne *R P 5Boulstred....name*] Boulstredi nwitht h ewich*H*
RPp (reading 'rich') 13 it] it Jonson's marginal correction for here
 in his text: it*RP3,RP5* : yett*H4* : but*Hj. RPg* : here *Ash*



The engraved title-page of Coryat's *Crudities*, 1611

THREE CRUDE VEINES ARE PRESENTED IN

This B o o K E Following (besides the fore-
said C R V D I t l E s) no lclte flowing in the
body of the B o o K E, then the C n v D I t E C S
*themselues, two of Rhctorick and one
of P o B s I c.*

That is to fay, a mod elegant Oration, firft written
in the Latine tongue by HERMANN vs KIRCHNER Vs, a
*Citull Lawyer, Orstovr, Ct firea Poet, tnd profr flor of Eio-
qucnc and Antiquities in the famous Vmucrſi Lic
of M A R p v n c in the Langniat of Hafsia, in
praife of Trauccll in general!*

Now diftilld into Englifh Spirit through the O D c o M B i A N
Limbeck. *This precedeth the CRPDITIES. Another also com-
pofed by the Author of the former, in prnfe of Trauell of Germanic
in particular. fublmed and brought oner the Helme in
the Sullitorie of the ſaid Trauelling THOMAS.
Thur about the Ce, ttnor Kaue of the
CRPDITIES.*

Then in the Pofternc of them looke, and thou {hall find the
*Pofthumt Poemſ of the Authors Father, 9 commtg M mere
Kinſcoien to the worke, eing nxi of blood to the
Bookc, and yonger broihers to the
Author himſclfc.*

L O N D O N ,
Trinted by VV. S. Inno Vomim
id IT.

X,XI.

From *Coryats Crudities*. *Hastily gobled vp in fiue Moneths trauels in France,Sauoy,Italy,Rhetia commonly called the Orisons country,HeluetiaaliasSwitzerland,somepartsofhighG e r m and the Netherlands ; Newly digested in the hungry aive of Odcombe in the County of Somerset,6- now dispersed to the nourishmentof the traueilling Members of this Kingdome. Quadrigis,pedibus bene viuere, nauibus atq3.* [Title-page engraved by William Hole, with portrait. A second title-page follows, with summary of contents and the imprint.] *London, Printed by W. S. [i.e. William Stansby] Anno Domini 1611.* In Italic type in the Quarto.

CERTAINE OPENING AND DRAWING
DISTICHES

To be applyeda smollifving Cataplasme to the *T u m o r s , C a*
Carnosities, or difficult Pimples full of matter appearing
in the Authors Front, conflated of Stiptike and Glutinous
Vapours arising outof the Crudities : The heads whereof
5 are particularly pricked and pointed outby letters for the
Readers better vnderstanding. . . . [Verses by Laurence
Whitaker, sig. a.]

Here follow certaine other Verses, as *Charmes*, to
vnlocke the mystery of the *Crudities*.

A

10 T Tere. like *Arion*, our *Coryate* doth draw
-tl All sorts of fish with Musicke of his maw.

B

HEre, not vp *Holdborne*, but downe a steepe hill,
Hee's carried 'twixt *Montr ell* and *Abbeuile*.

C

AHorse here is sadled, but no *Tom* him to backe,
It should rather haue bene *Tom* that a horse did lack.

D

HEre, vp the *Alpes* (not so plaine as to *Dunstable*)
Hee's carried like a Cripple, from Constable to Con-
stable.

E

A *Punke* here pelts him with eggs. How so ?
For he did *butkisse* her, and so lether go.

F

Religiously here he bids, row from the stewes, 20
He will expiate this sinne with conuerting *the I ewes*.

G

A *'id* there, while he giues the zealous *Brauado*,
A *Rabbin* confutes him with the *Bastinado*.

H

Here, by a *Boore* too, hee's like, to be beaten 24
For Grapes he had gather'd before they were eaten.

I

Old Hat here, torne Hose, with Shoes full of grauell,
And louse-dropping Case, are the *Armes* of his trauell.

K

Here, finer then comming from his *Punke* you him see,
* F. shewes what he was, K. what he will bee.

L

Here *France*, and *Italy* both to him shed 30
Their homes, and *Germany* pukés on his head.

M

And here he disdained not, in a forraine land
To lie at *Liuary*, while the Horses did stand.

N

Bvt here, neither trusting his hands, nor his legs,
Beeing in feare to be robd, he most learnedly begs. 35

Ben. Ianson.

* Not meaning by F and K as the vulgar may peeuishly & wittingly mistake. but that he was then camming from his Courtesan, a Fresh-mail, and now haumg seene ilieir fashions, & written a description of them, He **Mill** shortly he reputed a Knowing, proper, & well traueld scholer, as by his starchd beard, and printed ruffe may be as properly insinuated.

THE CHARACTER

of the famous *Odcombian*, or rather
Polytopian Thomas the Coryate ; Tra-
 ueller, and Gentleman Author of
 these *Quinque-mestriall*
Crudities.

*Done by a charitable friend, that thinkes it necessary, by this
 time, you should understand the Maker, as well as the worke.*

HE is an Engine, wholly consisting of extremes, a Head,
 Fingers, and Toes. For what his industrious Toes
 haue trod, his ready Fingers haue written, his subtle head
 dictating. He was set a going for *Venice* the fourteenth of
 5 *May Anno 1608.* and returned home (of himselfe) the third
 of *October* following, being wound vp for fiue moneths, or
 thereabouts : his paises two for one. Since, by vertue of
 those weights he hath bene conueniently able to visite
 Towne and Countrie, Fayres and Mercats, to all places,
 10 and all societies a *Spectacle* grateful!, aboue that of *Niniueh*,
 or the Citie of *Norwich*; and he is now become the better
Motion, by hauing this his Booke his *Interpreter*: which
 yet hath exprest his purse more then him, as we the rest
 of his Commanders haue don, so vnmercifully charging the
 15 Presse with his *prayse*. But to that Gale, he sets vp all
 sayles. He will beare paper (which is cloth) enough. He
 hath euer since the first designe of printing hereof, bene a
Delicijs to the Court; but serued there in his owne cloathes,
 and at his owne costs : where he hath not bene costie of
 20 acquaintance to any, from the *Palatine* to the *Plebeian*;
 which popularity of his (it is thought by some of his
Odcombians) may hurt him. But he free from all other
Symptomes of aspiring, will easily outcary that; it being a
 motlie and no perfect ambition : the rather, because when
 23 he should haue beene taken vp for the place (though he
 hastily preuented it with a tender of himselfe) hee condi-
 tioned to haue no office of charge, or neerenesse cast vpon

THE CHARACTER begins at siq. b.

him, as the *Remora* of his future trauaile ; for to that he is irrecoverably addicted. The word *Trauaille* affectes him in a Waive-oxe, or Packe-horse. A Carrier will carry him 30 from any company that hath not beene abroad, because he is a *Species* of a Traueller. But a *Dutch-Post* doth rauish him. The meere superscription of a letter from *Zurich* sets him vp like a top : *Basil* or *Heidelberg* makes him spinne. And at seeing the word *Frankford*, or *Venice*, though but on the 35 title of a Booke, he is readie to breake doublet, cracke elbowes, and ouerflowe the roome with his murmure. Hee is a mad *Greeke*, no lesse then a merry: and will buy his * Egges, his Puddings, his Ginger-bread, yea cobble his Shoes in the *Atticke dialect*: and would make it a matter of Conscience to speake other, were he trusted alone in a roome with an *Andiron* of state. The greatest *Politick* that aduances into *Paides* he will quit, to go talke with the *Grecian* that begs there ; such is his humility; and doth grieve inwardly he was not borne that country man for that * purpose. You shall perceiue a veine or thred of *Greeke* runne through his whole discourse, and another of *Latine*, 47 but that is the courser. He is a great and bold *Carpenter* of words, or (to cxprsse him in one like his owne) a *Logodczdale*: which voyce when he heares, 'tis doubtfull whether he will more loue at the first, or enuy after, that it was not his owne. All his *Phrase* is the same with his manners and hauiour, such as if they were studied to make *Mourners* merry : but the body of his discourse able to brake *Impos-*
tures, remoue the stone, open the passage from the *Bladder*, 55 and vndoe the very knots of the *Gout*; to cure euen where *Physick* hath turnd her back, and *Nature* hung downe her head for shame; Being not only the *Antidote* to resist sadnes, but the *Preseruatiue* to keepe you in mirth, a *life and a day*. A man might vndo the *Colledge* that would 60 practise with onely *him*. And there is no man but to enioy his company, would neglect any thing but businesse. It is thought he liues more by letting * out of ayre, then drawing in; and feared, his belly wil exhibite a Bill in *Chauncery*;

I
meane
when he
trauelled.
A thing
that I
know he
scorned
to do
since he
came
home.

* Not
to beg,
but to
talke
Greeke
the better
with the
natural!
Grecians.

* I
meane in
the fore
parts, not
the
hinder.

65 againsthis Mouth for talking away his meales. He is alwaies
Tongue-Maior of the company, and if euer the perpetuall
 motion be to be hoped for, itis from thence. Hee will
 aske, *How you doe? Where you haue bene? How is it?*
If you haue trauelled? How you like his booke? with, what
 70 *newes?* and be guilty of a thousand such curteous imper-
 tinences in an howre, rather then want the humanity of
 vexing you. To conclude this ample Traueller in some
 bounds, you shall best know him by this: hee is f
 at all sorts of free tables, where though he might sit as a
 75 Guest, hee will rather be serued in as a Dish, and is loth
 to haue any thingo f himselfe kept cold against the
 day. To giue the *Non ultra* of him in a word, he is so *Sub-*
stantiue an Author as will stand by himselfe without the
 neede of his *Booke* to bee ioyned w(i)th him.

*Here endeth the Character, attended
 with a Character is me
 Acrostich.*

To the Right Noble *Tom, Tell-Troth* of
his trauailes, the Coryate of Odcombe
 and his *Booke* now going to
trauell

80 *trie* and trust *Roger*, was the word, but now
 Honest *Tom Tell-Troth* puts downe *Roger*, *How?*
 Of trauell he discourseth so at large
 Many he sets it out at his owne charge;
 And therein (which is worth his valour too)
 85 Shewes he dares more then *Paules Church-yard* durst do.
 Come forth thou bonnie bouncing booke then, daughter
 Of *Tom* of *Odcombe* that odde louiall A
 Rather his sonne, I should haue cal'd thee, why?
 Yes thou wert borne out of his traueilling thigh
 90 As well as from his braines, and claimest thereby
 to be his *Bacchus* as his *Pallas*: bee
 Euer his thighes *Male* then, and his braines *Shee*.

Ben. Jons on.

Title. Right MS. correction by Cory at for Right of text

XII.

From Coryats Crambe, or His Col wortTwise Sodden, And Now
serued in with other Macaronicke dishes, as the second course to his
Crudities. London Printed by William Stansby 1611. Sig. A 2-
sig. a 3.

CERTAINE VERSES WRITTEN VPON
CORYATS CRVDITIES

Which should Haue beene Printed with the other Pane-
gyricke lines, but then were vpon some occasions omitted
and now communicated to the World.

Incipit Ben. Ions.

To the London Reader, on the Odcombian writer, Polytopian
Polytopian Thomas the Traueller.

WH o CUL the he would write a Story
The height, let him learne of Mr. *Tom. Coryate*;
Who, because his matter is so small should be
To his strength, hath measur'd it out with his
feet.

And that, say Philosophers, is the best modell. 5
Yet who could haue hit on't but the wise noddell
Of our *Odcombian*, that literate Elfe?
To line out no stride, but pas'd by himselfe?
And allow you for each particular mile
By the scale of his booke, a yard of his stile? 10

Which vnto all Ages, for his will be k
Since he treads in no other Mans steps but his owne. S i n

To write it with the selfe same spirit he went, e n t
He sayes to the world, let any man mend it, 15
In fiew monthes he went it, in fiew monthes he pend it.
But who will beleue this, that chanceth to looke

France, Saoy, Italy, and Heluetia,
The Low-countries, Germany and Rhetia 20

xii. The running title is Encomiasticke verses vpon the former bookes
of Crudities.

There nam'd to be trauell'd ? For this our *Tom* saith :
 Pies on't,you haue his historicall faith.
 Each leafe of his iournall,and line doth vnlocke
 The truth of his heartthere,and tell's whata clocke

2 5H ewentoutateachplace,andatwhathecamei n ,
How long he did stay, at what signe he did Inne.

BesideshetriedShip, Cart,Waggon,andChayre, Horse, f
Horse, foote, and all but flying in the ayre :

And therefore how euer the traueilling nationt

30 Or builders of Story haue oftimputation
 Of lying,he feares so much the reproofe

~~What he dares to informe his rabut, but some what meticulous,~~ e , T
How scabbed, how ragged, and how pediculous

35 He was in his trauaile,how like to be beatent
 For grapes he had gather'd,before they were eaten.
 How faine for his venery he was to crie (*Tergum* 6)

Andlayin strawwiththehorsesa t B e r g a m o , H
How well, and how often his shoes too were mended,

40ThatsacredtoOdcombaretherenows u s p e n d e
I meane that one paire, wherewith he so hobbled

From Venice to Flushing,were notthey well cobled ?

Yes. And thajiks God in his Pistle or his Booke

How many learned men he haue drawne with his hooke

45 Of Latine and Greeke,to his friendship. And seuen
 He there doth protesthe saw of the eleuen.

Nay more in his wardrobe,if you will laugh ata

lest,he saies. *Item* one sute of blacke taffata

Excepta dublet,and boughtof the lewes :

5 0Sothenthenhis shabbleshe should hide, e w e
Or any thing else that another should hide,

Doth he once dissemble, but tels he did ride

In a CarttwixtMontrell and Abbeuile.

And being atFlushing enforced to feele

55 Some want,they say in a sorthe did craue :

I writhe onely his taile there did waue ;

23 vnlocke,C 27 Chayre C 33 meticulous C 55 writ] Query wit

Which he not denies. Now whereings of r e e , P o o r
Poore Tom haue we cause to suspect iust thee?

N o : a s I first said, who would write a story a t T
The height, let him learne of Mr. Tom Coryate. 60

Explicit Ben. Ionsen.

XIII.

From *lunii luuenahs et Auh Persii Flacci Satyra : Cum Annotatiombus ad marginem, qua obscurissima quicque dilucidare possint.* [Device and motto.] *Londini, Excudebat Richardus Field impensis Gulielmi Welby.* 1612. [The Dedication is signed 'Tho. Farnaby'.] On signature A 4 verso, in italic.

TEmporibus lux magna fuit luuenalis auitis,
 Moribus, ingenijs, diuitijs, vitijs.
 Tu lux es luci, Farnabi: operisque fugasti,
 Temporis & tenebras, ingenij radijs.
 Lux tua parua quidem mole est, sed magna vigore, 5
 Sensibus, & docti pondere iudicij.
 Macte : tuo scriptores, lectoresque labore
 Per te alij vigeant, per te alij videant.

Ben. Ionsenius.

XIV.

From *u/i Persii Flacci Satyr a sex.* ^x Vates. ² Vota. ³ ignauus.
⁴ princeps. ⁵ liber. ⁶ auarus. [Device and motto. A second title-page to the preceding, with the same imprint, p. 133.] On page 134, in italic.

CVm luuenale tuo, Farnabi, Persius exit,
 Atque affectatis eruitur tenebris.
 Quern legat, & quondam neglectum intellegat ille
 Qui Stridone satus, nomine sanctus erat.

B.I

XV.

From *L. & M. Annæi Senecæ atque aliorum Tragoedia. Animadversionibus et notis marginalibus fideliter emendate atque illustrate.* [Device and motto.] *Londini Excudebat Felix Kingstonius impensis Gulielmi Welby. 1613.* On Q 8, in italic. The Dedication is signed 'Thomas Farnaby'.

- C**Omccdias trusatilis Plauti mola
 Sermone festiuo dedit, quali velint
 Ipsae, Latine si velint, musae loqui.
 Tragoedias Farnabij ludi-mola
 5 Latias poliuit quas Camoenae exaudiant,
 Pronuncient Dij, vtiliter homines legant,
 Postquam lucerna illius his lucem dedit:
 Veri Cleanthis. Namque nocturnus lacus
 Exantlat, autores criticaque volumina
 10 Euoluit, vt valeat diurno munere
 Defungi. & illo functus has fundit notas
 Sagax acutus, fidus interpres, breuis.

5.7.

XVI.

*A speach presented vnto king James at a tyltng in the
 behalfe of the two noble Brothers s^r Robert £5? f Henrye
 Rich, now Earles of Warwick and Hollande.*

- T**wo noble knightes, whome true desire and zeale,
 hath armde att all poyntes ; charge mee humblye kneele
 vnto thee, king of men ; their noblest partes
 to tender thus, their Hues, their loues, their hartes !
 5 The elder of these two, riche hopes Increase,
 presentes a Royall Alter of fayre peace,
 And as an euer-lasting Sacrifice
 his life, his loue, his honour, which ne'r dyes,

xvi. In Ash 2 p. 103 3 thee,] thee Ash 5 two,] *The*
comma obliterated by the t of Alter, /. 6 Increase,] Increase Ash
 6 peace,] peace Ash 8 honour,] honour Ash ne'r dyes,] ner
 dyes Ash

hee freely bringes ; and on[e] this Alter layes
 As true oblations ; his Brothers Embleme sayest 10
 Exceptyour Gracious Eye as through a Glass
 made prospectiue, behould hym, hee mustpas(s)e
 still thatsame little poynte hee was ; butwhen
 your Royal Eye which still creat[t]les new men
 shall looke,& on hyme soe, then arte's a Iyer 15
 yf from a little sparke hee rise notfier.
 finis Ben Johnson.

XVII.

From *Cinthias Reuenge: or Mananders Extasie*.—*Pets. Ipse semi-paganus Ad sacra vatam carmen affero nostrum. Similia labia similes habent lactucas.* London, Printed for Roger Barnes, and are to be sold at his shop in Chancery-lane, ouer against the Rolles. 1613. On A 4, in italic. The Dedication is signed 'I. S.' i.e. John Stephens.

To his much and worthily esteemed
 friend the Author.

WHo takes thy volume to his vertuous hand,
 Must be intended still to vnderstand :
 Who bluntly doth but looke vpon the same,
 May aske, *what Author would conceale his name?*
 Who reads may roaue, and call the passage darke, 5
 Yet may as blind men sometimes hit the marke.
 Who reads, who roaues, who hopes to vnderstand,
 May take thy volume to his vertuous hand.
 Who cannot reade, but oftely doth desire
 To vnderstand, hee may at length admire. 10

B. I.

xvi. 10 Embleme saves,] Emblime sayes Ask 12 prospectme,]
 prerspectiue ; Ash: perspective, G 13 was;] was, Ash 15 artcs
 Ash 10 fier] fierAsh

XVIII.

To the most noble, and about his Titles[^]

Robert[^] Earle of Somerset.

- They are not those, are present wⁱ theyre face,
 And clothes, and guifts, that only do thee grace
 At these thy Nuptials; but, whose heart, and thought
 Do wayte vpon thee : and theyre Loue not bought.
 5 Such weare true wedding robes, and are true freindes,
 That bid, God giue thee ioy, and haue no endes.
 W^{ch} I do, early, vertuous Somerset,
 And pray, thy ioyes as lasting bee, as great.
 Not only this, but euery day of thine,
 10 W^h the same looke, or w^h a better, shine.
 May she, whome thou for spouse, to day, dost take,
 Out-bee y^l Wife, in worth, thy freind did make :
 And thou to her, that Husband, may exalt
 Hymens amends, to make it worth his fault.
 15 So, be there neuer discontent, or sorrow,
 To rise w^{ch} eyther of you, on the morrow.
 So, be yo^r Concord, still, as deepe, as mute ;
 And eue'ry ioy, in manage, turne a fruite.
 So, may those Manage-Pledges, comforts proue :
 20 And eu'ry birth encrease the heate of Loue.
 So, in theyr number, may (you) neuer see
 Mortality, till you (im)mortall bee.
 And when your yeares rise more, then would be told,
 Yet neyther of you seeme to th'other old.
 25 That all, ^{yt} view you then, and late ; may say,
 Sure, this glad payre were married, but this day.

Ben: Jonson.

xviii. From the holograph inserted in a British Museum copy of the 1640 Folio (pressmark C. 28. m. u). Preceded by a MS. note: "These Verses were made by the author of this booke, and were deliuered to the Earle of Somerset! vpon his lo:PP* wedding day ; they are written by his [a marginal note adds the aucthor's] owne hand :". First printed in ¹N. 6- Q.', 28 Feb. 1852. Title. Carr inserted after Robert in a later hand. 20 eu'ry] Perhaps eu'ery. There is a blot after the apostrophe which looks as if it were meant to cancel the unsounded letter. 21, 22 MS. defective, obliterating you and the first syllable of immortall. 25 you inserted above the line. 26 day MS.

XIX.

From *The Ghost of Richard The Third*. Expressing himself in
 these three Parts. { 1 His Character,
 2 His Legend. Containing more of him then
 3 His Tragedie.
hath been heretofore shewed ; either in Chronicles, PI ayes, or Poems.
Laurea Desiditz prtsbetur nulla. Printed by G. Eld : for L. Lisle :
and are to be sold in Paules Church-yard at the signs of the Tygers
head. 1614. On signature A 4 vtrso, in italic.

To his friend the Author vpon
 his *Richard*.

When these, and such, their voices haue employd ;
 What place is for my testimony void ?
 Or, to so many, and so *Broad-scales* had,
 What can one witnesse, and a weake one, add
 To such a worke, as could not need theirs ? Yet
 If Praises, when th'are full, heaping admit,
 My suffrage brings thee all increase, to crowne
 Thy *Richard*, rais'd in song, past pulling downe.

5

BEN: IONSON

XX.

From *The Husband*. A Poeme expressed In a Compleat Man.
Lonpedem rectus derideat Mthiopem albus: luv: sat: pn:
London Printed for Lawrence L'isle, dwelling at the Tygres head in
Paules Church-yard. 1614. On sig. A 5.

To the worthy Author on
 the *Husband*.

IT fits not onely him that makes a Booke,
 To see his worke be good ; but that he looke
 Who are his Test, and what their Judgement is :
 Least a false praise do make theyr dotage his.
 I do not feele that euer yet I had
 The art of vttring wares, if they were bad ;

5

xix. Title, shewed ;] shewed, ; in the text

Or skill of making matches in my life :

10 **That went before, on Husband to Shee, If I swear,**
Was worthy of a Good one ; And this, here,
 I know for such, as (if my word will waigh)
 Shee need not blush vpon the *Mariage-Day*.
Ben: Ionsen.

XXI.

From *Britannia's Pastorals. The second Booke. Horat. Carmine*
Dij superi placantur, carmine Manes. London : Printed by
 Thomas Snodham for George Norton, and are to be sold at the signe
 of the Red Bull without Temple-barre. 1616. [The dedicatory poem
 is signed W. Browne."] On signature A 5 verso, in italic.

To my truly-belou'd Freind,

M.^r. BROWNE :

on his *Pastorals*.

SOME men, of Bookes or Freinds not speaking right,
 May hurt them more with praise, then Foes with spight.
 But I haue scene thy worke, and I know thee :
 And, if thou list thy selfe, what thou canst bee.
 5 For, though but early in these pathes thou tread,
 I find thee write most worthy to be read.
 It must be thine owne Judgment, yet, that sends
 This thy worke forth : that iudgment mine commends.
 And, where the most reade bookes, on *Authors* fames,
 10 Or, like our Money-Brokers, take vp names
 On credit, and are cossen'd ; see, that thou
 By offring not more sureties, then inow,
 Hold thyne owne worth vnbroke : which is so good
 Vpon *Exchange of Letters*, as I wou'd
 15 More of our writers would like thee, not swell
 With the *how much* they set forth, but *Mkow well*.
 BEN. IONSON.

XXII.

Charles Cauendish to his posteritie.

Ben: Jonson.

Sonnes, seeke not me amonge these polish'd stones :
these only hide part of my flesh, and bones :
which, did they neere so neate, or proudly dwell,
will all turne dust, & may not make me swell.
Let such as iustly haue ouUliu'd all prayse, 5
trust in the tombes, their care#full freinds do rayse ;
I made my lyfe my monument, & yours :
to which there's no materiall that endures;
nor yet inscription like it. Write but that;
And teach your nephewes it to smulate : 10
it will be matter lowd inoughe to tell
not when I die'd, but how I liud. Farewell.

*His Posteritie of him to
strangers.*

*Charles Cauendish was a man
whome*

M^r:
Lukio a
Mathem^a
t(ic)iaD.

Knowledge, zeale, sinceritie	Religious :	
Experience, Discreation, Courage	made Valiant:	
Reading, Conference, Judgment	Learned :	
<i>Religion, valour, Learning</i>	made wise:	
Birth, Meritts, Fauour	Noble :	
Respect, Meanes, Charitie	made Bountifull:	20
Equitie, Conscience, Office	Just:	
<i>Nobilitie, Bouniie, Justice</i>	made Honorable :	
Counsell, Ayde, secrecie	A trustie Friend :	
Loue, Trust, Constancie	made A kinde Husband :	
Affection, Aduice, Care	A louing Father :	25
Friends, wife, sonnes	made Content:	
<i>Wisdome, Honour, Content</i>	made Happie:	

xxii. In Nf. 54 b. collated with the inscription on the monument at Bolsover (= M). Charles . . . posteritie N, First printed by G. / Sonnes.] Sonnes N, M 3 neere] neare N 4 turne] be M 5 Let] let A' 9 it Wnte B H Newdigate : it write M : it wntt N 10 nephewes M : nephues altered to nephwes N 12 die'd, M: died N liud. Farewell. M: liud farewell N 22 Honorable :] Honorable N

Ben: From which happines, he was translated to the better, on ye
Jonson. th of Aprill. 1619. yet not without the sad, & weeping remem-
brance of his sorrowfull Lady Katherine, (second daughter to
Cuthbert, late Lord Ogle, & sister to Jane Present Countesse
of Shrewsbury) who, of her pietie, with her two summing

So does all desire, in this humble, to be gathered to his dust,
35 expecting the happy howre of resurrection when these gar-
ments, here put of, shalbe put on glorified:

Charles Cauendish William Cauendish Charles Cauendish
Esquire Deceased. Knight Esquire summing.

XXIII.

From *The Georgicks of Hesiod*, By George Chapman ; Translated
Elaborately out of the Greek: Containing Doctrine of Husbandry, and
Moraine, and Piety: with a perpetual Calendar of Good and
Bad Daies; and Notsuperstitious, but necessane (as farre as naturall
Causes compell) for all Men to obserue, and difference in following
their affaires. Ne ecare tymbra Deo. [Device and Motto.]
Printed by H. L. [i.e. H. Lownes] for Miles Partrich, and are to be
solde at this Shop neare Saint Dunstons Church in Fleetstreet. 1618.
On signature A 4 verso, in italic.

To my worthy and honoured F r i e n d ,
Mr George Chapman, on his Tran-
slation of Hesiods Works, & Dayes.

W hose worke could this be, Chapman, to refine
Olde *Hesiods* Ore, and giue it vs: b u t h i n
Who hadst before wrought in rich Homers Mine?

What treasure hast thou brought vs ! and what store

Still, still, dost thou arriue with, at ours h o r e
To make thy honour, and our wealth the more !

Were I askt of thy Discouries, They must say,
To the Greeke coast thine onely knew the way.

Such Passage hast thou found, such Returnes made, 10
As, now, of all men, it is call'd thy Trade :
And who make thither else, rob, or inuade.

Ben: Ionsen.

XXIV.

From *The Rogue : or The Life of Guzman de Alfarache*. Written in Spanish by Matheo Aleman, Seruant to his Catholike Maiestie, and borne in Seuill. [Device and Motto.] London, Printed for Edward Blount. 1622. On sig. A 4 verso. The Dedication is signed 'Don Diego Puede-Ser', i.e. James Mabbe.

On the Author^ Worke^ and Translator,

Who tracks this Authors, or Translators Pen,
Shall finde, that either hath read Bookes, and Men :
To say but one, were single. Then it chimes,
When the old words doe strike on the new times,
As in this *Spanish Proteus*; who, though writ 5
But in one tongue, was form'd with the worlds wit :
And hath the noblest marke of a good Booke,
That an ill man dares not securely looke
Vpon it, but will loath, or let it passe, 10
As a deformed face doth a true glasse.
Such Bookes deserue Translators, of like coate
As was the *Genius* wherewith they were wrote ;
And this hath met that one, that may be stil'd
More then the Foster-father of this Child ;
For though *Spaine* gaue him his first ayre and Vogue, 15
He would be call'd, henceforth, the *English-Rogue*,
But that hee's too well suted, in a cloth,
Finer then was his *Spanish*, if my Oath
Will bee receiu'd in Court; If not, would I
Had cloath'd him so. Here's all I can supply 20
To your desert, who'haue done it, Friend. And this
Faire Emulation, and no Enuy is ;
When you behold me wish my selfe, the man
That would haue done, that, which you onely can.

Ben: Ionsen. 25

XXV.

From Mr. William Shakespeares Comedies, Histories, 6- Tragedies.
Published according to the True Originall Copies. [Portrait, inscribed 'Martin Droeshout sculpsit London.']} London Printed by Isaac Iaggard, and Ed. Blount. 1623. On sig. A i verso, fronting title-page.

To the Reader.

This Figure, that thou here seest put,
It was for gentle Shakespeare cut;
Wherein the Grauer had a strife
With Nature, to out-doo the life:
5 O, could he but haue drawne his wit
As well in brasse, as he hath hit
His face ; the Print Would then surpasse
All, that was euer writ in brasse.
10 But, since he cannot, Reader, looke
Not on his Picture, but his Booke.

B. I.

XXVI.

To the memory of my beloued,

The AVTHOR

MR. WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE :

AND

what he hath left vs.

TO draw no enuy (*Shakespeare*) on thy name,
• Am I thus ample to thy Booke, and Fame :
While I confesse thy writings to be such,
As neither *Man*, nor *Muse*, can praise too much.
5 Tis true, and all mens suffrage. But these wayes
Were not the paths I meant vnto thy praise :
For seeliest Ignorance on these may light,
Which, when it sounds at best, but eccho's right ;

Or blinde Affection, which doth ne're aduance
 The truth, but gropes, and vrgeth all by chance ; 10
 Or crafty Malice, might pretend this praise,
 And thinke to ruine, where it seem'd to raise.
 These are, as some infamous Baud, or Whore,
 Should praise a Matron. What could hurt her more ?
 But thou art prooffe against them, and indeed 15
 Aboue th'ill fortune of them, or the need.
 I, therefore will begin. Soule of the Age !
 The applause ! delight! the wonder of our Stage !
 My *Shakespeare*^ rise ; I will not lodge thee by
Chaucer', or *Spenser*, or bid *Beaumont* lye 20
 A little further, to make thee a roome :
 Thou art a Moniment, without a tombe,
 And art aliue still, while thy Booke doth Hue,
 And we haue wits to read, and praise to giue.
 That I not mixe thee so, my braine excuses ; 25
 I meane with great, but disproportion'd *Muses*:
 For, if I thought my iudgement were of yeeres,
 I should commit thee surely with thy peeres,
 And tell, how farre thou didst our *Lily* out-shine,
 Or sporting *Kid*, or *Marlowes* mighty line. 30
 And though thou hadst small *Latine*, and lesse *Greeke*,
 From thence to honour thee, I would not seeke
 For names ; but call forth thund'ring *sEschilus*,
Euripides, and *Sophocles* to vs,
Paccuius, *Accius*, him of *Cordoua* dead, 35
 To life againe, to heare thy Buskin tread,
 And shake a Stage : Or, when thy Sockes were on,
 Leauē thee alone, for the comparison
 Of all, that insolent *Greece*, or haughtie *Rome*
 Sent forth, or since did from their ashes come. 4°
 Triumph, my *Britaine*, thou hast one to showe,
 To whom all Scenes of *Europe* homage owe.
 He was not of an age, but for all time !
 And all the *Muses* still were in their prime,
 29 didst] didstst F 40 sent F

- 45 When like *Apollo* he came forth to warme
Our eares, or like a *Mercury* to charme !
Nature her selfe was proud of his designes,
And ioy'd to weare the dressing of his lines !
Which were so richly spun, and wouen so fit,
50 As, since, she will vouchsafe no other Wit.
The merry *Greeke*, tart *Aristophanes*,
Neat *Terence*, witty *Plautus*, now not please ;
But antiquated, and deserted lye
As they were not of Natures family.
55 Yet must I not giue Nature all: Thy Art,
My gentle *Shakespeare*, must enioy a part.
For though the *Poets* matter, Nature be,
His Art doth giue the fashion. And, that he,
Who casts to write a liuing line, must sweat,
60 (Such as thine are) and strike the second heat
Vpon the *Muses* anuile : turne the same,
(And himselfe with it) that he thinkes to frame ;
Or for the lawrell, he may gaine a scorne,
For a good *Poet's* made, as well as borne.
65 And such wert thou. Looke how the fathers face
Liues in his issue, euen so, the race
Of *Shakespeares* minde, and manners brightly shines
In his well torned, and true-filed lines :
In each of which, he seemes to shake a Lance,
70 As brandish't at the eyes of Ignorance.
Sweet Swan of *Auon* ! what a sight it were
To see thee in our waters yet appeare,
And make those flights vpon the bankes of *Thames*,
That so did take *Eliza*, and our *lames* !
75 But stay, I see thee in the *Hemisphere*
Aduanc'd, and made a Constellation there !
Shine forth, thou Starre of *Poets*, and with rage,
Or influence, chide, or cheere the drooping Stage;
Which, since thy flight from hence, hath mourn'd like night,
80 And despaires day, but for thy Volumes light.

BEN: IONSON.

XXVII.

From *The Touch-stone of Truth. Wherein Veritie, by Scripture is plainly confirmed, and Errour confuted. So that the meanest capacitie by helpe of this Booke, may bee able to argue with any Papist and confute him by Scripture*(.) [John v. 39 and Acts xvii. 11 quoted.] *The second Impression enlarged and corrected. Printed at London by Aug. Mathewes, and Io. Norton, and are to be sold by Thomas I ones, at the blacks Rauen, in the Strand. 1624.* The Dedication is signed 'Iames Warre '. On sig. A 4 verso. Reprinted 1630, 1634.

TRuth is the triall of it selfe,
 And needs no other touch.
 And purer then the purest Gold,
 Refine it neere so much.
 It is the life and light of loue, 5
 The Sunne that euer shineth,
 And spirit of that speciall Grace,
 That Faith and Loue defineth.
 It is the Warrant of the Word,
 That yeeld's a sent so sweete, 10
 As giues a power to faith, to tread
 All false-hood vnder feete.
 It is the Sword that doth diuide
 The Marrow from the Bone,
 And in effect of Heauenly loue 15
 Doth shew the Holy one.
 This, blessed Warre, thy blessed Booke
 Vnto the world doth proue.
 A worthy worke, and worthy well
 Of the most worthie loue. 20

B. I.

xxvii. *Text from the Bodleian copy.* 2 touch, 1634 3 Gold
 1624, 1630, 1634. 6 shineth,] shineth 1624. 7 that not in
 1624. 9 Warrant] warrant 1650, 1634: Warre 1624. 10 sweete,]
 sweete. 1624 13 diuide, 2624, 1630, 1634. 16 Holy-one. (?) 1624.
 17 This,] This 1624 19 well] will, 1624, 1630, 1634.

XXVIII.

To y^e memorye of that most honoured Ladie *Jane*,
 eldest Daughter, to *Cuthbert Lord Ogle* :
 and Countesse of *Shrewsbury* :—

- I** Could begin with that graue forme, *Here lies*,
 And pray thee *Reader*, bring thy weeping Eyes
 To see (who'it is ?) A noble *Countesse*, greate,
 In blood, in birth, by match, and by her seate ;
 5 Religious, wise, chaste, louing, gracious, good;
 And number Attributes vnto a flood :
 But euery *Table* in this *Church* can say,
 A list of Epithites : And prayse this way.
 No stone in any wall here, but can tell
 10 Such things, of euery body, and as well.
 Nay they will venter ones *Descent* to hitt,
 And Christian name too, with a *Heralds* witt.
 But, I would haue, thee, to know something new,
 Not vsuall in a *Lady* • and yet true :
 15 At least so *great* a *Lady*. She was *wife*
 But of one *Husband*; and since he left life,
 But *Sorrow*,,shc desir'd no other *ffriend*:
 And her, she made her Inmate, to the End,
 To call on *Sicknes* still, to be her Guest,
 20 Whom shee, with *Sorrow* first did lodge, then feast,
 Then entertaine, and as *Deaths* Harbinger ;
 So wood at last, that he was wonne to her
 Importune wish ; and by her lou'd *Lords* side
 To lay her here, inclos'd, his second *Bride*.
 25 Where spight of *Death*, next *Life*, for her Loues sake,
 This second marriage, will aeternall make.

xxviii. In N /. 54. The name ' Benjamin Johnson ' is placed by the
 side of the title in the top left-hand corner. First printed by G. i lies.]
 lies N 3 see (who'] see who' N 4 seate] state G 5 good ;]
 good, N 15 Lady. She] Lady, she AT 16 life,] life N 18
 End,] End N 25 sake,] sake N

XXIX.

From *Lucan's Pharsaha: or The Ciuill Warres of Rome, betweene Pompey the great, and luhus Casar. The whole ten Bookes. Englished, by Thomas May, Esquire. London Printed for Thomas I ones and lohn Marriott 7627.* [Engraved title-page, inscribed 'Fredericus Hulsius sculps:'.] On sig. a 7.

To my chosen Friend,
The learned Translator of LVCAN,
THOMAS MAY,
Esquire.

When, *Rome*, I reade thee in thy mighty paire,
And see both climing vp the slippery staire
Of Fortunes wheele by *Lucan* driu'n about,
And the world in it, I begin to doubt,
At euery line some pinn thereof should slacke 5
At least, if not the generall Engine cracke.
But when againe I veiue the parts so peiz'd,
And those in number so, and measure rais'd,
As neither *Pompey's* popularitie,
Casar's ambition, *Cato's* libertie, 10
Calme *Brutus* tenor start; but all along
Keepe due proportion in the ample song,
It makes me rauish'd with iust wonder, cry
What Muse, or rather God of harmony
Taught *Lucan* these true moodes ! Replies my sence 15
What godds but those of arts, and eloquence ?
Ph&bus, and *Hermes* ? They whose tongue, or pen
Are still th'interpreters twixt godds, and men !
But who hath them interpreted, and brought
Lucans whole frame vnto vs, and so wrought, 20
As not the smallest ioint, or gentlest word
In the great masse, or machine there is stirr'd ?
The selfe same *Genius* ! so the worke will say.
The *Sunne* translated, or the *Sonne* of *May*.
Your true freind in Judgement and Chaise 25

BEN: IONSON.

xxix. 15 Replies] replies May 17 Phabus] Phabus May

XXX.

From *The Battaile of Agincourt*. Fought by Henry the fift of that name, King of England, against the whole power of the French : vnder the Raigne of their Charles the sixt, Anno Dom. 1415. *The Miseries of Queene Margarite, the infortunate Wife, of that most infortunate King Henry the sixt. Nymphidia, the Court of Fayrie. The Quest of Cinthia. The Shepheards Sirena. The Moone-Calfe. Elegies vpon sundry occasions.* By Michaell Dray ton Esquire. London, Printed for William Lee, at the Turkes Head in Fleete-Streete, next to the Miter and Ph&nix. 1627. On sigs. a and a 2.

THE VISION OF
BEN. IONSON, ON THE
MUSES OF HIS FRIEND

M. DRAYTON.

- IT hath beene question'd, MICHAEL, if I bee
A Friend at all; or, if at all, to thee :
Because, who make the question, haue not seene
Those ambling visits, passe in verse, betweene
5 Thy Muse, and mine, as they expect. Tis true :
You haue not writ to me, nor I to you ;
And, though I now begin, 'tis not to rub
Hanch against Hanch, or raise a riming *Club*
About the towne : this reck'ning I will pay,
10 Without conferring symboles. This's my day.
It was no Dreame ! I was awake, and saw !
Lend me thy voyce, O FAME, that I may draw
Wonder to truth ! and haue my Vision hoorld,
Hot from thy trumpet, round, about the world.
15 I saw a Beauty from the Sea to rise,
That all Earth look'd on ; and that earth, all Eyes !
It cast a beame as when the chear*full Sun
Is fayre got vp, and day some houres begun !
And fill'd an Orbe as circular, as heauen !
20 The Orbe was cut forth into Regions seauen.
And those so sweet, and well proportion'd parts,
As it had beene the circle of the Arts !

When, by thy bright *Ideas* standing by,
 I found it pure, and perfect *Poesy*,
 There read I, streight, thy learned *Legends* three, 25
 Heard the soft ayres, between our *Swaynes* & thee,
 Which made me thinke, the old *Theocritus*,
 Or *Rurall Virgil* come, to pipe to vs !
 But then, thy'epistolar *Heroick* Songs,
 Their loues, their quarrels, iequalousies, and wrongs, 30
 Did all so strike me, as I cry'd, who can
 With vs be call'd, the *Naso*, but this man ?
 And looking vp, I saw *Mineruas* fowle,
 Peach'd ouer head, the wise *Athenian* Owle :
 I thought thee then our *Orpheus*, that wouldst try 35
 Like him, to make the ayre, one volary:
 And I had stil'd thee, *Orpheus*, but before
 My lippes could forme the voyce, I heard that Rore,
 And Rouze, the Marching of a mighty force,
 Drums against Drums, the neighing of the Horse, 40
 The Fights, the Cryes, and wondring at the larres
 I saw, and read, it was thy *Barons Warres!*
 O, how in those, dost thou instruct these times,
 That Rebells actions, are but valiant crimes !
 And caried, though with shoute, and noyse, confesse 45
 A wild, and an authoriz'd wickednesse I
 Sayst thou so, *Lucan* ? But thou scornst to stay
 Vnder one title. Thou hast made thy way
 And flight about the He, well neare, by this,
 In thy admired *Peritgesis*, 50
 Orvniuersall circumduction
 Of all that reade thy *Poly-Olbyon*.
 That reade it ? that are rauish'd ! such was I
 With euery song, I sweare, and so would dye :
 But that I heare, againe, thy Drum to beate 55
 A better cause, and strike the brauest heate
 That euer yet did fire the *English* blood I
 Our right in *France* I if ritely vnderstood.

- There, thou art *Homer*! Pray thee, vse the stile
 60 Thou hast deseru'd : And let me reade the while
 Thy Catalogue of Ships, exceeding his,
 Thy list of aydes, and force, for so it is :
 The Poets act I and for his Country's sake
 Braue are the Musters, that the Muse will make.
 65 And when he ships them where to vse their Armes,
 How do his trumpets breath ! What loud alarmes I
 Looke, how we read the Spartans were inflam'd
 With bold *Tyrt&us* verse, when thou art nam'd,
 So shall our *English* Youth vrge on, and cry
 70 An *Agincourt*, an *Agincourt*, or dye.
 This booke 1 it is a *Catechisme* to fight,
 And will be bought of euery Lord, and Knight,
 That can but reade ; who cannot, may in prose
 Get broken peeces, and fight well by those.
 75 The miseries of *Margaret* the Queene
 Of tender eyes will more be wept, then scene :
 I feele it by mine owne, that ouer flow,
 And stop my sight, in euery line I goe.
 But then refreshed, with thy *Fayerie Court*,
 80 I looke on *Cynthia*, and *Sirenas* sport,
 As, on two flowry Carpets, that did rise,
 And with their grassie greene restored mine eyes.
 Yet giue mee leaue, to wonder at the birth
 Of thy strange *Moon-Calfe*, both thy straine of mirth,
 85 And Gossip-got acquaintance, as, to vs
 Thou hadst brought *Lapland*, or old *Cobalus*,
Empusa, *Lamia*, or some Monster, more
 Then *Affrieke* knew, or the full *Grecian* store I
 I gratulate it to thee, and thy *Ends*,
 90 To all thy vertuous, and well chosen Friends,
 Onely my losse is, that I am not there :
 And, till I worthy am to wish I were,
 I call the world, that enuies mee, to see
 If I can be a Friend, and Friend to thee.

XXXI.

(Epitaph on Katherine, Lady Ogle.)

'O Zcvs Karcloc xpovios elf TO,? oi<f>6epas.

T'ls a Record in heaucn. You, that were
 Her Children, and Grandchildren, reed it heere !
 Transmitt it to your Nephewes, ffreinds, Allies,
 Tenants, and Seruants, haue they harts, and eyes,
 To veiw the truth and owne it. Doe but looke 5
 With pause vpon it; make this page your booke ;
 Your booke ? your volume ! Nay, the state, and story !
 Code, Digests, Pandects of all faemale glory !

Dip(h)thera louis :~

Shee was the light (without reflexe
 Vpon her selfe) to all her sexe ! 10
 The best of Woemen ! her whole life
 Was the example of a wife !
 Or of a parent! or a freind !
 All Circles had their spring and end
 In her ! and what could perfect bee, 15
 Or without angles, it was shee !
 All that was solid, in the name
 Of vertue, pretious in the frame :
 Or else Magnetique in the force,
 Or sweet, or various, in the course ! 20
 What was proportion, or could bee
 By warrant call'd iust Symetry,
 In number, measure, or degree
 Of weight, or fashion, it was shee.
 Her soule possest her fleshes state 25
 In faire freehould, not an Inmate ;

xxx. In N f. 55, headed 'Ben: Jonson :'. Hints of a design for a memorial tablet are faintly pencilled in round the epitaph. Above II. 1-8 are clouds ; from these two cherubs let down a scroll, the *Diphthera louis*, //, 9-32. First printed by G. Motto O . . . fa N I You] you N 4 eyes,] eyes N 5 Doe] doe N but] not originally N 7 Nay] Yea originally N 9 S'hee MS. 10 Vpon] vpon N

And when the flesh, here, shut vp day,
 Fames heate vpon the graue did stay ;
 And howrely brooding ore the same,
 30 Keeps warme the spice of her good name,
 Vntill the dust retorned bee
 Into a *Phoenix*, which is shee.

For this did Katharine, Ladie Ogle, die
 To gaine the Crowne Df immortalitye,
 35 Eternities great charter ; which became
 Her right, by gift, and purchase of the Lambe :
 Seal'd, and deliuer'd to her, in the sight
 Of Angells, and all witnesses of light,
 Both Saints, and Martyrs, by her loued Lord.
 40 And this a coppie is of the Record.

XXXII.

From *Bosworth-field : with a Taste of the Variety of other Poems, left by Sir John Beaumont, Baronet, deceased : Set forth by his Sonne, Sir John Beaumont, Baronet; And dedicated to the Kings most Excellent Maiestie. London, Printed by Felix Kyngston for Henry Seile, and are to be sold at the Tygers head in Saint Pauls Churchyard. 1629.* On sig. a verso, in italic.

On the honor'd Poems of his honored
 Friend, Sir *John Beaumont*, Baronet.

THis Booke will liue ; It hath a *Genius* : This
 Aboue his Reader, or his Prayser, is.
 Hence, then, prophane : Here needs no words expense
 In Bulwarkes, Rau'lins, Ramparts, for defense,
 5 Such, as the creeping common Pioners vse
 When they doe sweat to fortifie a Muse.
 Though I confesse a *Beaumonts* Booke to bee
 The Bound, and Frontire of our Poetrie ;
 And doth deserue all muniments of praise,
 10 That Art, or Ingive, on the strength can raise.

xxxi. 32 Phanix] Phznix N is] The copyist began to write ' was'

Yet, who dares offer a redoubt to reare ?
 To cut a Dike ? or sticke a Stake vp, here,
 Before this worke ? where Enuy hath not cast
 A Trench against it, nor a Batttry plac't ?
 Stay, till she make her vaine Approchcs. Then 15
 If, maymed, she come off, 'tis not of men
 This Fort of so impregnable accesse,
 But higher power, as spight could not make lesse,
 Nor flatt'ry ! but secur'd, by the Authors Name,
 Defies, what's crosse to Piety, or good Fame. 20
 And like a hallow'd Temple, free from taint
 Of Ethnicisme, makes his Muse a Saint.

Ben. Ionsen.

XXXIII.

From *French Court-Aires, With their Ditties Englished, Offoure andfiue Parts. Together with that of the Lute.* —*Si propius stes, Te capient magis, 6- decies repetita placebunt.* Collected, Translated, Published By Ed. Filmer, Gent- Dedicated to the Queene. —*Gratia Regum Pienjs tentata modis ; ne forte pudori Sit mihi Musa lyra solers, 6- cantor Apollo.* [Device and motto.] London, Printed by William Stansby. 1629. Cum Priuilegio. On sig. B.

To my worthy Friend, Master Edward Filmer,
 on his Worke published.

What charming Peales are these,
 That, while they bind the senses, doe so please ?
 They are the Mariage-rites
 Of two, the choicest Paire of Mans delights,
Musique and Poesie : 5
French Aire and English Verse here Wedded lie.
 Who did this Knot compose,
 Again hath brought the *Lillie* to the *Rose*;
 And, with their Chained dance,
 Recelebrates the ioyfull Match with *France.* 10

xxxii. 16 'tis] Tis Beaumont 20 what's] whats Beaumont

xxxiii. Reprinted in P2 as Epigram cxxix, with heading, ' To Edward Filmer, on his Muscally Work dedicated to the Queen. Anno 1629.'

6 Verse. F2.

They are a Schoole to win
 The faire *French* Daughter to learne *English* in ;
 And, graced with her song,
 To make the Language sweet vpon her tongue.

Ben: Jonson.

XXXIV.

An Expostulation w'h Inigo lones.

MR Suruey^r, you y^{fc} first begann
 From thirty pound in pipkins, to y^c Man
 you are ; from them leapt forth an Architect,
 Able to talk of Euclid, and correct
 5 Both him & Archimede ; damne Architas
 The noblest Ingenyre that cuer was !
 Controll Ctesibius : ouerbearing vs
 With mistooke Names out of Vitruuius !
 Drawnc Aristotle on vs ! & thence showne
 10 How much Architcctonice is your ownc !
 Whether y^e buylding of y^e Stage or Scene !
 Or making of y^e Propertyes it meanc ?
 Vizors or Anticks ? or it comp^rhend
 Something your Surship doth not yet intend !
 15 By all your Titles, & whole style at ones
 Of Tyre-man, Mounte-banck & Justice lones,
 I doe salute you ! Are you fitted yet ?
 Will any of these express yo^r place ? or witt ?

xxxiv. Text from Lord Ellesmere's copy of the holograph ; good copies in N f, 174 b, and in Vertue's MS. Add 20, p. 8190 (= V); a copy in Dobell MS. and in TCD p. 331. First printed by W from an inaccurate transcript of Vertue. 2 pound] pound. N, V : poundes Dobell, W pipkins,] pipkins : V 4 Euclide,] Euchde ! N. V 5 him . . . Archimede ;] him, .. Archimede I N, V Architas] Architas, V 6 Ingenyre] Inginiere, N : Engmere, TCD 7 Ctesibius :] Ctesibus ! N. V: Ctesippus W 8 Names] names, N. V 9 &] and. V 10 Architectonice] ARCHITECTONICS N, V n Stage] Stage, N, V 12 Propertyes] properties, N, V meane ?] meane \ N, V 13 Vizors] Vizors. N, V Anticks ?] Anticks ! N, V 14 Something] Some-thing, N. V 15 style] styles TCD ones] ones, N 17 you !] you : V fitted] fitted, N. V

Or are you soe ambitious 'boue your peers I
 you would be an Asinigo, by your ears ? 20
 Why much good doo't you ! Be what beast you will,
 you¹ be as Langley sayd, an Inigo still.

What makes your Wretchednes to bray soe loud
 In Towne & Court ? Are you growne rich ? & proud ?
 your Trappings will not change you. Change yo^r mynd. 25
 Noe veluet Sheath you weare, will alter kynde.

A wodden Dagger, is a Dagger of wood
 Though gold or luory haftes would make it good.
 What is y* cause you pompe it soe ? I aske,
 And all men eccho you haue made a Masque. 30

I chyme that too : And I haue mett w^h those
 That doe cry vp y^c Machine, & y^e Showes !
 The majesty of luno in y^B Cloudes,
 And peering forth of Iris in y^e Shrowdes !
 Th'ascent of Lady Fame which none could spy 35

Not they that sided her, Dame Poetry,
 Dame History, Dame Architecture too,
 And Goody Sculpture, brought w^h much adoe
 To hold her vp. O Showes ! Showes ! Mighty Showes !
 The Eloquence of Masques ! What need of prose 4°
 Or Verse, or Sense t'express Immortall you ?
 You are y^e Spectacles of State ! Tis true

19 Or] or, V ambitious] ambitious, N peers !] Peeres, N. V
 20 be an] be'an N Asinigo] As-Inigo TCD ears] years W 21
 Why] Why. N beast] part W will] will! V 22 you'l] You'
 will N: You will V: you shalbe Dobell bel bee, V Langley]
 LANGLEY N. V 23 loud] loud, N, V 24 Towne] Towne. N:
 town, V 25-8 these 4 might be as well out as in marginal note by
 Vertue 25 mynd.] mind. V 26 Sheath] sheath, N: suit W 27
 wood] wood, V: Wood N 28 Though . . . good] Though gold, or
 ivory hafts cant make it good V (with 'would' originally for 'cant'):
 Nor gold, nor ivory-haft can make it good W 29 aske,] aske ; N
 30 eccho] eccho, N Masque] Masque! V\ masque I N 31 too:
 And] too. And, V those] those. N. V 32 Machine,] Machine I
 N, V 33 luno] luno, N, V Cloudes,] Clouds I V: cloudes I N
 34 Iris] Iris, N 35 Th'] The N, V Fame] Fame I V« fame ! N
 spy] spy ; V: spie, N 36 they] those Dobell Poetry] Poetry N
 38 Goody] Good'y N: goodly Dobell brought] held in Dobell
 adoe] adoe, V: adoo, N 40 prose] prose, N. V 41 Verse,]
 verse ? Dobell Sense] sense. N. V: sence ? Dobell: prose W
 42 State] the state TCD Tis] Tis N

Court Hieroglyphicks ! & all Artes affoord
 In y^c mere perspective of an Inch board !
 45 You aske noe more then certeyne politique Eyes,
 Eyes y^l can pierce into y^e Misteryes
 Of many Coulors ! read them ! & reueale
 Mythology there painted on slit deale !
 Oh, to make Boardes to speake ! There is a taske
 50 Painting & Carpentry are y^e Soule of Masque.
 Pack wth your peddling Poetry to the Stage,
 This is y^e money-gett, Mechanick Age !
 To plant y^e Musick where noe eare can reach !
 Attyre y^e Persons as noe thought can teach
 55 Sense, what they are ! which by a specious fyne
 Terme of y^c Architects is called Designe !
 But in y^e practisd truth Destruction is
 Of any Art, besyde what he calls his !
 Whither ? oh whither will this Tire-man growe ?
 60 His name is ZKCVOTTOLOS wee all knowe,
 The maker of y^e Propertyes ! in summe
 The Scene ! the Engyne ! but he now is come
 To be y* Musick Master! Fabler too !
 He is, or would be y^e mayne Dominus doe
 65 All in y^e Wonke ! And soe shall still for Ben :

43 Hieroglyphicks !] Hiero-glyphicks, V: Hiero-gly-phicks ! N
 affoord] afford, N 44 Inch board] Inch-bord V 45 then] but
 Dobell Eyes,] eyes ! N, V 46 Eyes] Eyes, N. V can] will Dobell
 47 Coulors !] Colours, V 48 Mythology there] Mythologie, there,
 N, V : the deepe muthologie Dobell slit deale] sht-deale N 49
 Oh,] O V, N : Or W taske] tasque ! V : taske ! N 50 Painting]
 Painting, N, V Carpentry] Carpentry, AT Masque.] Masque ! N
 51 Poetry] poetry V : Poetry N 52 money-gett] money-got V, TCD
 Mechanick] inchantingTCD 53 Musick] Musique.N.F 54 Persons]
 persons, N,V 55 specious] specious, N 56 y* om. V : inserted
 above the line in N Architects] Architects, N, V called Designe]
 call'd DESIGNE N. V (call'd V) 57 But ... truth] But _____ truth,
 N Destruction] DESTRVCTION N. V 58 besyde] by side
 V, N: besides Dobell 59 Whither ? oh whither] wether, O
 wether V : Whether ? 6 whether N growe] goe Dobell bo
 Ztfcuoirotoff] ZVevoTTOios V : ZKTVOITOIOS Dobell. TCD, W 61 summe]
 summe, N, V 62 Scene] Scsne Dobell Engyne] Engine V :
 Ingine N : ensigne Dobell 63 Musick Master] Musique-Master N, V
 Fabler] Tabler V 64 is,] is N would be] would-bee, N : would-
 bee V Dominus doe] Dommus-doo V: Dominus doo- N 65 All]
 All, N in y^c] i'the N, V : the TCD still] still, N. V

Be Inigo, y^e Whistle, & his men !
 Hee's warme on his feet now he sayes, & can
 Swim wthout Corke ! Why, thank y^e good Queen Anne.
 I am too fat t'enuy him. He too leane
 To be worth Enuy. Henceforth I doe meane 70
 To pittie him, as smiling at his ffeat
 Of Lanterne-lerry : w^{*h} fuliginous heat
 Whirling his Whymseys, by a subtilty
 Suckt from y« Veynes of shop-philosophy.
 What would he doe now, gi'ng his mynde y^l waye 75
 In presentacōn of some puppet play !
 Should but y^e king his lustice-hood employ
 In setting forth of such a solemne Toye !
 How would he firke ? lyke Adam ouerdooe
 Vp & about ? Dyue into Cellars too 80
 Disguisd ? and thence drag forth Enormity ?
 Discouer Vice ? Commit Absurdity ?
 Vnder y^e Morall ? shewe he had a pate
 Moulded or stroakt vp to suruey a State !
 Oh wise Surueyo^r ! wyser Architect ! 85
 But wisest Inigo ! who can reflect
 On y^e new priming of thy old Signe postes
 Reuiuing wth fresh coulors y^e pale Ghosts
 Of thy dead Standards : or (w^h miracle) see
 Thy twice conceyud, thrice payd for Imagery ? 90

66 Not in TCD 67 feet now] feete, now V : feete, now, N sayes,]
 sayes : V : saies ! N & can] that hee Dobell 68 Corke !] corkes,
 TCD 69 fat] fatt, N t'enuy] to envy V : to'envy N him
 om. W leane] leane, N, V 70 Henceforth] Hence-forth N
 71 as] yet Dobell 72 heat] heate, N 73 Whymseys, by]
 Whimsey w^{*h} Dobell 74 shop-philosophy.] shop-phylosophy! N:
 shop Philosophy! V 75 doe] doo, N, V gi]g] giving V ffevmg
 Dobell waye] way, N 76 presentacon] presentation JV, V
 play 1] play ? V : -play ? N 78 solemne] serious N 79 lirke ?]
 nrke, N, V ouerdooe] over-doo ' V : ouer-doo N So Vp] vp,
 N: up, V about >] about' N Dyue .. Cellars] Diue ___cellars, V
 too] too, N 81 Disguisd * ... Enormity ?] Disguis'd ! ... enormitie I
 N thence] then TCD 82 Vice ? ... Absurdity ?] Vice ! ...
 absurdity ! N 83 Morall ?] moral! N 84 Moulded] Moulded,
 N, V 87 Signe postes] Signe-posts; V: signe-Postes; N 88
 Reuiuing] Reviueing, N coulors] colours, N 89 miracle] marvel
 W go payd for] paid-for N Imagery] Imag'rie N : imag'rye
 Dobell

And not fall downe before it ? and confess
 Allmighty Architecture ? who noe less
 A Goddess is, then paynted Cloth, Deal-boards,
 Vermilion, Lake, or Cinnopar affoards
 95 Expression for I w'h that vnbounded lyne
 Aymd at in thy omnipotent Designe I
 What Poesy ere was painted on a wall
 That might compare w'h thee ? what story shall
 Of all y^e Worthyes hope t'outlast thy one,
 100 Soe y^e Materialls be of Purbeck stone I
 Lyue long y^e ffeasting Roome. And ere thou burne
 Againe, thy Architect to ashes turne I
 Whom not ten fyres, nor a Parlyam* can
 W'h all Remonstrance make an honest man.

xxxv.

To Inigo Marquess Would be
 A Corollary.

But cause thou hearst y^e mighty k. of Spaine
 Hath made his Inigo Marquess, wouldst thou fayne
 Our Charles should make thee such ? Twill not become
 All kings to doe y^e self same deeds w'h some !
 5 Besydes, his Man may merit it, and be
 A Noble honest Soule I what's this to thee ?
 He may haue skill & iudgment to designe
 Cittyes & Temples ! thou a Caue for Wyne,

xxxiv. 91 fall] fayle *Dobell* 94 Cinnopar] crimson W 95
 lyne] line, N 96 Aymd at in] Produc'd by *Dobell* at] at. N
 Designe] DESIGNE V, N 97 Poesy] Poesy, N (*originally* Poetry) :
 poEsy, V ere] ere, V, N painted on] writt upon *Dobell* wall]
 wall, V : Wall, N 9* might] may N 99 Worthyes] worthies,
 N, V one,] pwne ? *Dobell*: own, W 100 be] bee, N 101 ere]
 ere V, *Dobell*: e're N 102 turne I] turne : V 103 can] can,
 N, V 104 Remonstrance] remonstrance, N man.] man I N, V
 xxxv. Text and collations as in xxxiv : also in HS f. 18 6, 'M':
 Johnson to Inigo Tonnes Marques Would-bee'. i cause] 'cause N
 hearst] hear'st, N 2 Hath] has *Dobell* 3 such] Such V
 4 kings] Kings, N self same] self-same N, V deeds] things H,
Dobell 5 Besydes] Beside N, V it,] it: V 7 skill] skill,
 N, V iudgment] iudgment, N, V 8 Cittyes] Citties, N, V

Or Ale I He build a pallace ! Thou a shopp
W^{ch} slyding windowes, & false Lights a top ! 10
He draw a Forum, w'h quadriuiall Streets !
Thou paint a Lane, where Thumb y^e Pygmy meets I
He some Colossus to bestryde y^e Seas,
From y^e fam'd pillars of old Hercules !
Thy Canuas Gyant, at some Channell aymes, 15
Or Dowgate Torrent falling into Thames,
And stradling shews y^e Boyes Brown paper fleet,
yearly set out there, to saylc downe y^e Street,
your workes thus differing, troth let soe yo^r style :
Content thee to be Pancridge Earle y^e whyle ; 20
An Earle of show : for all thy worke is showe :
But when thou turnst a Reall Inigo ;
Or canst of truth y^e least intrenchm* pitch,
Wee'll haue thee styld y^e Marquess of New-Ditch.

XXXVI.

To a ffreind an Epigram
Of him.

S^r Inigo doth feare it as I heare
(And labours to seem worthy of y^{fc} feare)
That I should wryte vpon him some sharp verse,
Able to eat into his bones & pierce

xxxv. 9 build] built H Thou] Thou, N, V a shopp] a shop, N: the
shop, W 10 windowes] wmd'o's V a top] a' top N: at top H, Dobell
ii draw] drewe H 12 Thou] then Dobell Thumb y⁸ Pygmy]
Thumbe, the Pypmy N: Thumbe. with Geffry V, TCD: Tom Thumb
Geffry W 13 some] a H, Dobell Colossus] Colossus, N 15
Canuas Gyant,] Canvas-Gyant A aymes] a'mes N 16 Torrent]
torrent, N: torrents W Thames,] Thames I N, V 17 And
stradling] And stradling, N: And, stradling. V: And stradle Dobell
Brown paper] browne-paper N 18 out] out, N, V Street,] street I
N: streete! V 19 differing,] differing; N troth let] troth, let
N, V: much less W: soe lett H 20 Pancridge Earle] Pancridg-
Earle N: Pancridge-Earle V 21 for] For, V worke] worth N
showe:] show ! N, V 22 turnst] prou'st Dobell Inigo ;] Inigo,
N, V 23 Or] And Dobell of] in Dobell truth] truth, N, V
24 styld] stil'd, N New-Ditch.] Town-Ditch I V. TCD: Tower-ditch G
xxxvi. Text and collations as in xxiv. xxv: also in Hsf. 19, 'An Epigram
vpon him to his freind'. i it... heare] it,... heare, N, V 2 y] y
this W: thy H: the TCD 3 should] would TCD 4 his] the H
bones] bones, N

- 5 The Marrow 1 Wretch, I quitt thec of thy paine
 Thou'rt too ambitious : and dost fear in vaine !
 The Lybian Lion hunts noe butter flies,
 He makes y^e Camell & dull Ass his prize.
 If thou be soe desyrus to be read,
 10 Seek out some hungry painter, y^l for bread
 W^h rotten chalk, or Cole vpon a wall,
 Will well designe thee, to be viewd of all
 That sit vpon y^e Comon Draught: or Strand !
 Thy Forehead is too narrow for my Brand.

Ben: Johnson:

XXXVII.

To my Detractor :~

- M**Y verses were commended, thou dar'st say,
 And they were very good : yet thou think'st nay.
 ffor thou obiectest (as thou hast been told)
 Th'enuy'd rturne, of forty pound in gold.
 5 ffoole, doe not rate my Rymes ; I'haue found thy Vice
 Is to make cheape, the Lord, the lines, the price.
 But bawle thou on ; I pittie thee, poore Curre,
 That thou hast lost thy noyse, thy foame, thy stirre,
 To be knowne what thou art, a blatant beast,
 10 By barking against mee. Thou look'st at least,

xxxvi. 5 Wretch,] wretch ! N paine] paine N. V 6 Thou'rt]
 Th'art V : th'art H. Dobell 7 noe] not H, Dobell butter flies,]
 butter-flies ! N : butterflies : V 8 He] but Dobell Camell]
 Camell, N prize.] prise ! N, V, TCD g desyrus] desirous, N
 read] read ; N: read, V 10 bread] bread, N. V n Cole] cole, N
 a] the H, Dobell. W wall,] Wall N : wall V 12 Will] can H.
 Dobell thee,] thee ; N viewd] read H, Dobell 13 Draught :
 or Strand I] draught; or Strand ; N 14 narrow] narrow, N

xxxvii. Text from N f. 173 b. 'Ben: Jonson' : in Ash 2 p. 82, 'Ben
 Johnson to his Detractor J. E.'. First printed in D, Q. The detractor was
 John Eliot. i dar'st] didst D, Q : dost Ash 2 thou think'st]
 thmkest Ash 3 thou hast] I haue Ash 4 Th'enuy'd returne,]
 Their vide*returne, Ash poundes Ash 5 not inserted in the MS.
 in a later hand. Rymes] lines Ash I have D, Q 7 bawle]
 barke D : bark Q on] one Ash Curre.] Curre. N : Cur, D, Q
 8 hast lost] shouldst lose D, Q. Ash foame,] fame, Ash stur, D, Q
 9 a] yee Ash : thou D. Q beast,] beast: D : beast; Q 10 By
 . . . least] But writing against me, thou thinkst at least D, Q : so Ash
 which retains ' By '

I now would write on thee ? No, wretch ; thy name
 Shall not worke out vnto it, such a fame.
 Thou art not worth it. Who will care to knowe
 If such a Tyke as thou, er'e wer't, or noe ?
 A Mungrel Curre ? Thou should*st stinck forth, and dye 15
 Nameless, and noysome, as thy infamy !
 No man will tarry by thee, as hee goes,
 To aske thy name, if he haue half his Nose !
 But fly thee, like the Pest! Walke not the street
 Out in the Dog-daies, least the killer mcete 20
 Thy Noddle, with his clubb ; and dashing forth
 Thy Dirty braines, Men smell thy want of worth.

XXXVIII.

From *The Northern Lasse, A Comodie.* As it hath beene often
 Acted with good Applause, at the Globe, and Black-Fryers. By his
 Maiesties Servants. Written by Richard Brome. *Hie totus volo*
rideat Libellus. Mart. [Ornament.] London : Printed by Aug.
 Mathewes, and are to be sold by Nicholas Vavasour, dwelling at the
 little South dore of S^t. Pauls Church. 1632. On sig. A 3, in italic.

To my old Faithfull Seruant : and (by
 his continu'd Vertue) my louing Friend :
 the Author of this Work, M. RICH. BROME.

I Had you for a Seruant, once, *Dick Brome* ;
 And you perform'd a Seruants faithfull parts :
 Now, you are got into a nearer roome,
 Of Fellowship, professing my old Arts.
 And you doe doe them well, with good applause, 5
 Which you haue iustly gained from the Stage,
 By obseruation of those Comick Lawes
 Which I, your Master, first did teach the Age.

xxxvii. ii thee? No, wretch;] thee: no wretch, D, Q 12 Shall
 not] Cannot D, Q. Ash out] On, Ash fame] fame : D : Fame : Q
 13-16 not in D, Q 15 A] Ah, Ash should'st] shalt Ash 17 thee]
 thee D, Q goes,] goes N, D, Q 18 haue] hath A sh his] a. D, Q
 ig Walke Q: Walk D: walke N 22 smell] see D, Q, Ash want
 of] little Ash

xxxviii Reprinted in the edition of 1663 and in 'Five new Playes',
 1659 (= P) 4 Of Brome 8 the] this P

- You learn'd it well; and for it, seru'd your time
 10 A Prentise-ship : which few doe now a dayes.
 Now each Court-Hobby-horse will wince in rime ;
 Both learned, and vnlearned, all write *Playes*.
 It was not so of old : Men tooke vp trades
 That knew the Crafts they had bin bred in, right:
 15 An honest *Bilbo-Smith* would make good blades,
 And the *Physician* teach men spue, or shite ;
 The *Cabler* kept him to his nail; but, now
 Hee'll be a *Pilot*, scarce can guide a Plough.
 BEN. IONSON.

XXXIX.

(An Answer to Alexander Gill.)

- S**hall the prosperity of a Pardon still
 Secure thy railing Rhymes, infamous *Gill*,
 At libelling ? Shall no *Star-Chamber* Peers,
 Pillory nor Whip, nor want of Ears,
 5 All which thou hast incurr'd deseruedly :
 Nor Degradation from the Ministry,
 To be the *Denis* of thy Father's School,
 Keep in thy barking Wit, thou bawling Fool P
 Thinking to stir me, thou hast lost thy End,
 10 I'll laugh at thee poor wretched Tike, go send

xxxviii. 16 or shite ;] and . . . P 17 nail;] Awll, P
 xxxix. First printed in ' Wit & Drollery '. 1656, p. 7 ; in *Langbaine*,
 'An Account of the English Dramatic Poets ', 1691, p. 292; in W. R.
 Chetwood, 'Life of Jonson', 1756, p. 28; by J. P. Collier in 'The
 Athenaeum', no. 1957, p. 588 (29 April 1865), from 'a MS. volume
 belonging to the late Mr. Heber, from which, thirty or forty years ago,
 I copied two documents' (= Ci). and again in 'An Old Man's Diary',
 1871, part ii, p. 13, from a seventeenth-century MS of his own, headed
 'To Alexander Gill' (= €2). In *Dobell MS* (= D). Text mainly from
Langbaine. In *italic* in *Langbaine*. i Shall] Doth D, €2 2
 Rhymes] Rythmes D infamous Gill,] (infamous Gill) D. Ci, €2 3
 Shall no] Will not D, Ci 4 Pillory nor] The pillory, the D, Ci, €2
 nor want] nor losse Ci, Cz : no loss D 5 hast incurr'd] hadst from
 thence Ci: heardst from thence D 7 To be the *Denis*] Unto the den
 D, Ci - thy] thine ownc D, Ci 8 barking D. Ci: bawling
Langbaine, €2 Fool ?] Fool. *Langbaine* 9 Thinking] For thinking
 D. Cz thou hast] th'ast D : thou'st Ci 10 I'll] I D, Ci
 wretched not in D, Ci Tike, go] Tike ; go now and D. Ci

Thy blatant Muse abroad, and teach it rather
 A Tune to drown the Ballads of thy Father :
 For thou hast nought (in thee) to cure his Fame,
 But Tune and Noise the Eccho of thy Shame.
 A Rogue by Statute, censur'd to be whipt, 13
 Cropt, branded, slit, neck-stockt; go, you are stript.

XL.

From Meditation of Man's Mortalitie. Or, A Way to True Blessednesse. Written By M^r. Alice Sutcliffe wife of Iohn Sutcliffe Esquire, Groome of his Maiesties most Honourable Privie Chamber. The Second Edition, enlarged Rom. 6. The wages of Sinne is Death, but the gift of God, is Etemall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord. London Printed by B. A. and T. F. [i.e. Bernard Alsop and Thomas Fawcett] for Henry Seyle at the Tygers head in St. Pauls Church-yard. 1634. On sig. a 4 verso-a 5, in italic.

To

Mrs. Alice Sutcliffe[^] on
 her divine Medita-
 tions.

When I had read
 your holy Meditations,
 And in them view'd
 th¹ "uncertainty of Life,
 The motives, and true Spurres 5
 to all good Nations.
 The Peace of Conscience,
 and the Godly¹'s strife,
 The Danger of delaying
 to Repent, 10
 And the deceit of pleasures,
 by Consent.
 The comfort of weake Christians,
 with their warning,

xxxix. ii blatant] blotant Langbaine 13 nought in thee €2 :
 got him nought Chetwood: nothing left D, Ci: nought Langbaine
 Fame] name Dobell, Ci 14 thy D, Ci: his Langbaine 15 A]
 Oh Ci, C2 16 you are] y'are D : you're Ci: thou'art Ca

- 15 From fearefull *back-slides* ;
 And the debt we're in,
 To follow *Goodnesse*,
 by our owne discerning
 Our great *reward*,
 20 *th'aternall Crown* to win.
 I sayd, who'had supp'd so deepe
 of this sweet *Chalice*,
 Must CELIA bee,'
 the *Anagram* of ALICE.
 Ben. Ions on.

XLI.

From *The Femall Glory : or. The Life, and Death of our Blessed Lady, the holy Virgin Mary, Gods owne immaculate Mother : To whose sacred Memory the Author dedicates these his humble Endeavours. A Treatise worthy the reading, and meditation of all modest women, who live under the Government of Vertue, and are obedient to her Lawes. By Anth. Stafford, Gent. London, Printed by Thomas Harper, for Iohn Water son, and are to be sold at his Shop in Pauls Church-yard, at the signe of the Crowne. 1635. (=S.)*
 On signatures c 7, 8, in italic.

THE GHYRLOND
 of the blessed Virgin
 MARIE.

- H**ere, are five letters in this blessed Name,
 Which, chang'd, a five-fold mysterie designe,
 The M. the Myrtle, A. the Almonds clame,
 R. /?ose, / . /vy, E. sweet Eglantine.
- 5 These forme thy Ghyrlond. Wherof *Myrtle* green,
 The gladdest ground to all the numbred-five,
 Is so implexed, and laid in, between,
 As Love, here studied to keep Grace alive.
- The second string is the sweet *Almond* bloome
 10 Ymounted high upon *Selinis* crest:
 As it, alone, (and onely it) had roome,
 To knit thy Crowne, and glorifie the rest.

The third, is from the garden cull'd, the *Rose*,
 The Eye of flowers, worthy, for his scent,
 To top the fairest Lillie, now, that growes, 15
 With wonder on the thorny regiment.

The fourth is humble *Ivy*, intersert,
 But lowlie laid, as on the earth asleep,
 Preserved, in her antique bed of *Vert*,
 No faith's more firme, or flat, then where't doth creep. 20

But, that which summes all, is the *Eglantine*,
 Which, of the field is clep'd the sweetest brier,
 Inflam'd with ardor to that mystick Shine,
 In *Moses* bush, un-wasted in the fire.

Thus, Love, and Hope, and burning Charitie, 25
 (Divinest graces) are so entermixt,
 With od'rous sweets and soft humilitie,
 As if they¹ ador'd the Head, wheron th'are fixt.

THE REVERSE

on the backe side.

THese Mysteries do point to three more great,
 On the reverse of this your circling crowne, 30
 All, pouring their full showre of graces downe,
 The glorious *Trinity* in *Vnion* met.

Daughter, and Mother, and the Spouse of GOD,
 Alike of kin, to that most blessed *Trine*,
 Of Persons, yet in *Vnion* (ONE) divine. 35
 How are thy gifts, and graces blaz'd abroad !

Most holy, & pure Virgin, blessed Mayd,
 Sweet Tree of Life, King *Davids* Strength and Tower,
 The House of gold, the Gate of heavens power,
 The Morning-star, whose light our Fal hath stay'd. 40

xh. 13 cull'd, the W. T. Brooke : call'd the S 20 then] then, S
 40 stay'd.] stay'd S

Great Queen of Queens, most mild, most meek, most wise,
Most venerable. Cause of all our ioy.

Whose chearfull look our sadnesse doth destroy,
And art the spotlesse Mirrour to Mans eyes.

45 The Seat of Sapience, the most lovely Mother,
And most to be admired of thy Sexe,
Who mad'st us happy all, in thy reflexe,
By bringing forth GOD's onely Son, no other.

Thou Throne of glory, beauteous as the Moone,
50 The rosie Morning, or the rising Sun,
Who like a Giant hasts his course to run,
Till he hath reach'd his two-fold point of Noone.

How are thy gifts and graces blaz'd abro'd,
Through all the lines of this circumference,
55 T^limprint in all purg'd hearts this virgin sence,
Of being Daughter, Mother, Spouse of GOD !

B. I.

XLII.

From *The Shepheards Holy-day*. A *Pastorall Tragi-Comadie*.
Acted Before Both Their Maiesties At White-Hall, by the Queenes
Servants. With an *Elegie on the Death of the most noble Lady,*
the Lady Venetiq Digby. Vir. *Nee erubuit Sylvas habitare Thalia*.
Written by J. R. London : Printed by N. and I. Okes. for Iohn
Benson, and are to be sold at his shop in St. Dunstons Church-yard
in Fleetstreet. J6j5- On sig. A 3. The dedication to Sir Kenelm
Digby is signed 'Jos. Rutter.'

To my deare Sonne[^] and right-learned Friend[^]
Master JOSEPH RVTTER. .

YOU looke, my *Joseph*, I should something say
Unto the world, in praise of your first Play :
And truely, so I would, could I be heard.
You know, I never was of Truth afeard,
5 And lesse asham'd ; not when I told the crowd
How well I lov'd *Truth* : I was scarce allow'd
By those deepe-grounded, understanding men,
That sit to censure *Playes*, yet know not when,

Or why to like ; they found, it all was new,
 And newer, then could please them, by-cause trew. 10
 Such men I met withall, and so have you.
 Now, for mine owne part, and it is but due,
 (You have deserv'd it from me) I have read,
 And weigh'd your *Play* : untwisted ev'ry thread,
 And know the woofe, and warpe thereof; can tell 15
 Where it runs round, and even : where so well,
 So soft, and smooth it handles, the whole piece,
 As it were spun by nature, off the fleece :
 This is my censure. Now there is a new
 Office of Wit, a Mint, and (this is true) 20
 Cry'd up of late : Whereto there must be first
 A *Muster-worker* call'd, th'old standerd burst
 Of wit, and a new made : a *Warden* then,
 And a *Comptroller*, two most rigid men
 For order, and for governing the pixe, 25
 A *Say-master*, hath studied all the tricks
 Of *Finenesse*, and *alloy* : follow his hint,
 Yo'have all the *Mysteries* of *Wits new Mint*,
 The *valuations*, *mixtures*, and the same
 Concluded from a *Carract* to a *dramme*. 30

Ben. Ions.

XLIII.

From *Annaha Dubrensia*. Vpon the yeercly celebration of *M^r*.
Robert Dovers Ohmpick Games vpon Cotswold-Hills. Written by . . .
Ben: Johnson [and thirty-two other contributors]. London, Printed
 by Robert Raworth, for Mathewe IValbancke. 1636. On sig. D 2.

AN EPIGRAM TO MY IOVIALL
 Good Freind *M^r. Robert Dover*, on his great
 Installation of his Hunting, and Dauncing
 At *Cotswold*.

I Cannot bring my *Muse* to dropp (her) *Vies*
 Twixt *Cotswold*, and the *Olimpicke* exercise :
 But I can tell thee, *Dover*, how thy *Games*
 Renew the Glories of our blessed *leames* :

xliii. i dropp] double A. C. Swinburne conj. her] Anon.conj.in
 Macmillan's Magazine, xcii, p. 455 (October 1905) 3 thee,] thee Dover

- 5 How they doe keepe alive his memorie ;
 With the *Glad Countrey*, and *Posteritie* :
 How they advance true Love, and neighbourhood,
 And doe both *Church*, and Common-wealth the good,
 In spite of *Hipocrites*, who are the worst
 10 Of Subiects ; Let such envie, till they burst.
Ben. Iohnson.

XLIV.

(A SONG OF WELCOME TO KING CHARLES.)

- F**resh as the Day, and new as are the Howers,
 Our first of fruits, that is the prime of flowers
 Bred by your breath, on this low bancke of ours ;
 Now, in a garland by the graces knit:
 5 Vpon this obeliske, advanc'd for it,
 We offer as a Circle the most fit
 To Crowne the years, which you begin, great king,
 And you, with them, as Father of our spring.

XLV.

(A SONG OF THE MOON.)

- T**O the wonders of the Peake,
 I am come to Add, and speake,
 or as some would say to breake
 my mind vnto you,
 5 And I sweare by all the light
 at my back, I am no spright,
 but a very merry wight
 preste in to se you.

xl.iii. 7 advance] advance. *Dover*
 xlv. In *N* f. 52 *b* where it follows the 'Entertainment at the Black-
 friars'. The page is headed 'Beniamin Johnson': First printed by *G* as
 the concluding song of the *Blachfriars Entertainment*. i Howers,]
 Howers. *N* 2 Our] our *N* 5 Vpon] vpon *N* 6 We] we *N*
 7 begin.] begin *N*
 xlv. In *N* f. 53 : the verso containing II. 29-44 is headed 'Beniamin
 Johnson'. Tit. A SONG .. MOON. *G*, who first printed it. i Peake]
 peake *N* (so 23) *B* in to] into *N*

I had somewhat else to say,
but haue lost it by the way, 10
I shall think on't ere't be day.

The Moone comends hir
To the merry beards in Hall,
those turnd vp, and those that fall,
morts, and mirkins that wagg all, 15
Tough, foule, or Tender.

And as either newes or mirth
rise or fall vppon the earth,
she desires of euery birth
some tast to send hir. 20

Specially the newes of Darby ;
for if there, or peace or warr be,
to the Peake it is so hard-by,
shee soone will heare it.

If there be a Coockold Maior, 25
that the wife heades for a wager
as the standerd shall engage hir,
the Moone will beare it.

Though shee chainge as oft as shee,
and of Circle be as free, 30
or hir quarters lighter bee,
yet doe not feare it.

Or if any strife bety'de
for the breeches with the bride,
'tis but the next neighbour ride 35
and she is pleased.

Or ift be the Gossipps happ
each to pawne hir husbands capp,
at Pern Wakers good ale Tapp,
hir minde is eased. 40

9 say,] say N 10 way,] way N 11 day,] day N 14 turnd]
turne -V 19 euery] every N 20 hir,] hir N 21 Darby]
darby N 22 be,] be N 23 hard-by,] hard-by N 24 it,]
it N 28 the] The N it] it N 29 as shee,] as shee N
30 free,] free N 31 bee,] bee N 34 bride,] bride N 35 'tis]
Tis N 36 and ... pleased.] And . . . pleased N 37 ift] it N
39 Pern Wakers] pern wakers N Tapp,] Tapp N 40 eased,] eased N

Or by chance if in their grease
 or theire Ale, they break the peace,
 forfeitinge their drinking lease,
 shee will not seise it.

XLVI.

To M^r Ben: Johnson in his Journey
 by M^r Crauen.

WHen witt, and learninge are so hardly sett
 That from their needfull meanes they must be bard,
 vnless by going harde they mayntnace gett,
 Well maye Ben: Johnson say the world goes hard.

This was M^r Ben: Johnsons Answer of
 the suddayne.

- 5 **I**L may Ben Johnson slander so his feete,
 for when the profitt with the payne doth meete,
 Although the gate were hard, the gayne is sweete.

XLVII.

A Grace by *Ben: Johnson*, extempore, before King
 James.

OUr King and Queen the Lord-God blesse,
 The Paltzgrave, and the Lady Besse,
 And God blesse every living thing,
 That lives, and breath's, and loves the King.

xlvi. 42 peace,] peace N 43 lease,] lease N
 xlvii. In Nf. 47 b. 2 bard,] bard N 3 gett,] gett N 4
 hard.] hard N 6 meete,] meete N 7 hard.] hard N
 xlvii. In Aub 2f, 55: shorter copies in Ash 2 p. 117, 'Ben Johnsons
 grace before kinge James ', and RPq /. 175 6, 'Ben Jonsons grace':
 i Our Royall king & Queene, God Bless Ash: God blesse the king, the
 queene, God blesse RP 3, 4 not in Ash, RP

God blesse the Councell of Estate, 5
 And Buckingham the fortunate.
 God blesse them all, and keepe them safe :
 And God blesse me, and God blesse Raph.

Another version, perhaps at Lady Bedford's table, inRP2f. i b.

A forme of a Grace.
 The Kinge, y^e Queene, the Prince god blesse :
 The Palsgraue and the Lady Besse.
 God blesse the Counsell and the State,
 And Buckingham the fortunate. 1613.
 God blesse euery liuinge thinge, 5
 That the Kinge loues, & loues the Kinge.
 God bless vs all, *Bedford keepe safe : * Coun-
 God blesse mee, and God blesse Rafe. tesse of
 Bedford.

XLVIII.

Ode:

Y^{Ff} Men, and tymes were nowe
 Of that true fface
 As when they both were greate, and both knewe howe
 that ffortune to imbrace,
 By Cherisseinge the Spirritf y^l gaue their greatnesse grace: 5
 I then could rayse my notes
 Lowd to the wondringe thronge
 And better Blason them, then all their Coates,
 That were the happie subiect of my songe.

xlvi. 5 God bless pembroke, and the state Ash: God blesse the
 Counsell and the state RP 7 God bless the Counsell & keep them
 saue Ash 7, 8 God blesse me, and god blesse Raphe, | And then the
 kingdome shall be safe! RP

Malf 138 b has A Grace said before the King by a Jester. | The King,
 the Queene, the Prince god blesse, | Count Palatine, & Lady Bes, | The
 privy Counsell & the state, | And Buckingham the fortunate | God
 (blesse) me & god blesse Raph. | God blesse vs all, & keepe vs safe. | God
 blesse vs all & euery thing | That the King loues, or loues the Kinge.

xlvi. Text from RPj l. 8 b : inH[^] f. 237. First printed and claimed
 for Jonson by W. D. Bnggs in 'The Athenaeum', no. 4520 (13 June 1914).
 2 Of] of RP 4 imbrace,] imbrace : RP 5 grace :] grace, RP
 6 could] would H 8 Coates,] Coates RP 9 That[that RP

t The
 Coun-
 tesses'
 man who
 wonne
 ye race

- 10 Butt, Clownishe pride hath gott
 soe much the starte
 Of Civill virtue, that hee now is not
 nor can be of desert,
 That hath not Countrie impudence enough to laughe att
 Arte,
 15 Whilest lyke a blaze of strawe,
 Hee dyes wth an III sent,
 To every sence, and scorne to those that sawe
 howe soone w^h a selfe ticklinge hee was spent.

- Breake then thie quills, blott out
 20 Thie long watch'(d) verse
 And rather to the ffyre, then to the Rowte
 Their labour¹d tunes reherse,
 Whose ayre will sooner Hell, then their dull senses peirce,
 Thou that doest spend thie dayes
 25 to gett the(e) a leane fface,
 And come fforth worthie Ivye, or the Bayes,
 And in this Age, canst hope no (other) grace.

- Yett: since the bright, and wyse,
 Mynerva deignes
 30 Vppon soe humbled earth to cast hir eyes :
 V/ee'l rip our Richest veynes
 And once more stryke the eare of tyme w^h those ffresh
 straynes:
 As shall besides delyght
 And Cunninge of their grownde
 35 Give cause to some of wonnder, some despite,
 But vnto more dispayre to Imitate their sounde.

14 Countrie] Courtly *H* 15 Whilest] whilst *RP* 20 watch'd
H : watch *RP* 22 Their] their *RP* labour'd *H* : laboured *RP*
tunes *H* : times *RP* 25 thee *H* 26 Bayes, J Bayes *RP*
27 other *H* 31 rip *H* : ript *RP* 35 despite,] despite *RP*
36 sounde.] sound. *H* : sounde *RP*

Throwe, Holye Virgin, then
 Thie Chrystall sheild
 Aboute this Isle, and Charme the rounde, as when
 Thou mad'st in open ffeild 40
 The Rebell Gyantf stoope, and Gorgon Envye yeild,
 Cause Reverence, yf not ffeare,
 Throughout their generall breast^,
 And by their takeinge, lett it once appeare
 Whoe worthie wine, whoe not, to bee wyse Pallas guests. 45

XLIX.

(An Epistle to a Friend.)

Censure, not sharplye then, but mee advise
 before, I wryte more verse, to bee more wyse.

Soc ended yo^r Epistle, myne beginns
 Hee that soe Censureth, or adviseth synns,
 The emptye Carper, scorne, not Creditt wynns. 5

I haue, w^h strict advantage of ffrec tyme
 O're read, examin'd, try'd, and prou'd yo^r: Ryme
 As Clearc, and distant, as yo^r: selfe from Cryme ;

And though yo^r: virtue (as becomes it) still
 deignes myne the power to ffinde, yctt want I will 10
 or Malyce to make ffaultes, w^ch nowe is skill.

Little knowc they that prof[f]esse Amitye
 and sceke to scant her comelye Libertye,
 Howe much they lame hir, in hir propertye :

xlvi. 37 Throwe, . . . Virgin.] Throwe: Holye virgin RP 39 Isle]
 He H 40 Thou] thou RP in] it H 42 Cause] Canst H
 43 Throughout] throughout RP 45 wine] come H wyse Pallas]
 witts Pallace H guests] guest H: guesse RP
 xlix. Anonymous in RP3 f. 23 6: an inferior copy subscribed 'B: J:
 ffinis.' in EP2 p. 12. i mee] wee EP 2 wyse.] wyse, RP, EP
 4 adviseth] deuiseth EP synns.] synns RP 5 wynns.] wynns, RP
 6 w^h strict] first EP 7 try'd, not in EP 9 still] still, RP
 10 ffinde.] finde RP: find; EP 12-26 See Und. xxxvii 19-33
 13 scant] scant, RP: hurt EP Libertye] Libertye RP

15 And lesse they knowe, that being ffree to vse
 That ffrindshipp, w^h noe Chaunce, but Love did Chuse,
 Will vnto Lycence, that ffree Leave Abuse : *

It is an Acte of Tyranye, not Loue,
 in Course of ffrindshipp, wholie to reprove :
 20 And fflatterye, w^h ffrindes humo": still to move.

ffrom each of w^h, I labor to (be) ffree,
 yett, yf w^h eythers vyce, I tainted bee,
 ffgive it as my ffrayltie, and not mee.

ffor noe Man Lyves, soe out of passions swaye,
 25 But sometymes shall bee tempted to obaye
 hir ffurye, though noe ffrindshipp hee betraye.

L.

A speech out of Lucane.

Just and fit actions *Ptolemey* (he saith)
 make many, hurt themselues ; a praysed faith
 Is her owne scourge, when it sustaines their states
 whom fortune hath deprest; come nere the fates
 5 and the immortall gods ; loue only those
 whom thou seest happy ; wretches flee as foes:
 Looke how the starres from earth, or seas from flames
 are distant, so is proffitt from iust aymes.
 The mayne comaund of scepters, soone doth perishe
 10 if it begyn religious thoughts to cherish ;

xlix. 15 knowe,] knowe RP being EP : blessinge RP 16 ffrind-
 shipp,] ffrindshipp: RP 17 ffree] fair EP 18 'an Acte] a Cutt EP
 Loue,] Loue RP 19 ffrindshipp,] ffrindshipp: RP reprove :] reprove
 RP: approue EP 20 And] w^h EP w^h] else EP move.]
 move RP 21 each] oath EP (for' both') be EP ffree,] fine
 RP: free. EP 22 eythers] eyther EP bee,] bee -RP 23 mee.]
 mee RP 24 Man] mans EP swaye.] swaye RP

1. In H8 f. 243; RPj f. 18. 'A Speech Out off Lucan'. First
 printed and ascribed to Jonson by W. D. Briggs in 'Anglia', xxxix,
 pp. 247-8. 2 themselues] himselfe RP 3 states] stats H 4
 whom] whom, yf RP 6 wretches flee] wretches, shun, RP foes.]
 foes H, RP 8 proffitt] proffitt. RP

whole armyes fall, swayd by 'those nyce respects.

It is a lycense to doe ill, protectes

Eiien states most hated, when no lawes resist

the sword, but that it acteth what it list.

Yet ware ; thou mayst do all things cruellie : 15

not safe ; but when tho^u dost them thoroughlie:

he that will honest be, may quitt the Court,

Virtue, and Soveraigntie, they not consort./

That prince that shames a tyrants name to beare,

shall never dare do any thing but feare./ 20

ii fall, . . . respects.] fall... respects *H* 12 a lycense] *sly cense H*
 protectes] protectes, *H* 14 sword,] sword *H* 17 be,] be *H*
 19 beare,] beare *H* 20 dare] dare, *RP*

APPENDIX XVI

POEMS ASCRIBED TO JONSON

Nothing in this heterogeneous collection has any serious claim to be considered the authentic work of Jonson, but poems i, n, ix, xi, and xxi have been questionably claimed for him. A certain interest attaches to the group of poems xn to xvm which show the tendency to father on a great name what Jonson was believed to have written about places which he visited; at any rate local tradition preserved them. Thus Jonson may have made the joke about Lord Zouch's wine-vault and Haningworth church (xm), and then some wit hitched it into verse. These we have given fully, but we have not printed pieces of fatuous doggerel which Jonson was obviously incapable of writing.¹ It is possible to show how some of them were fabricated. In *Ben Johnson's Jests : or the Wit's Pocket Companion* (6th edition, 1760) there is this: '*Another time the Archbishop sent him an excellent dish of Fish from his table, without any Drink, so he made these Verses :*

In a Dish came Fish
From the Arch Bish . . .
Hop was not there,
Because there was no Beer.¹

This is taken from the first scene of ShadwelTs *Bury-Fair*, 1689, page 7, where it is a translation by the leading fool in Bury, Oldwit, of a Latin couplet,

Mittitur in disco mihi Piscis ab Archiepisco
Po, non ponatur quia potus non mihi datur.
*I sent a Fish*²
In a great Dish
To the Archbish.
Hop was not there,
Because he gave me no Beer.

In ShadwelTs play the lines are amusing, and in keeping with Oldwit's character; he has just been boasting that he was

¹ For instance, Jonson's answer to 'Scotch verses highly commended by King James' in RP2 f. 162 b, and the quatrain 'On y« Birth of y* Lady Mary' in RPi2 f. 58.

« It should be 'I was sent a Fish . . . By the Archbish'. but the rendering may pass for Oldwit.

made Jonson's son in the Apollo, and intimate with Fletcher, whose maid Joan he had kissed.

Another specimen from the same collection runs : ' Ben Johnson owing a Vintner some money, refrained his house ; the Vintner meeting him by chance, asked him for his money; and also told him if he would come to his house, and answer him four questions, he would forgive him his debt.' Ben duly appeared, called for a bottle of claret, and drank the vintner's health, praising the wine. 'Says the Vintner, This is not our business, Mr Johnson ; answer me my four questions, or else you must pay me my money, or go to jail, in short'. Two bailiffs were waiting at the door. The questions were, ' First, what pleases God ? Secondly, what pleases the Devil. Thirdly, what pleases the World ? And Lastly, what best pleases me : Well, says Ben,

God is best pleas'd when Man forsakes his sin ;
 The Devil's best pleas'd, when Men persist therein ;
 The World's best pleas'd when you do draw good Wine ;
 And you'll be pleas'd when I do pay for mine.'

With this the poet got off. But in a Rawlinson manuscript (RP2, p. 164) this is worked up as

BenjiL Johnson, vpon his freind m^r Calvin.

If heaven be pleased when man doth cease to sin,
 If hel be pleas'd when it a soule doth winn,
 If the Earth be pleas'd when 'tis red of a knave,
 Then all be pleas'd, for Calvin is in his grave.

As if this were not sufficiently self-condemned, there is a version in Ashmole 2, p. 170, headed ' Vppon H. Graunt', and in Additional MS. n an epitaph ' upon I know not whom'.

Where manuscript attributions were obviously wrong or absurd, we have not printed the poems ; for example, William Strode's lines on a gentlewoman singing and playing on the lute, ' Be silent, you still music of the spheres ', headed ' B: John: On a Fair Gent: Voice¹ in Ash 3, f. 92 b ; Harington's epigram on oaths, ' In other time an ancient custom was', subscribed ' Authore Ben: Jonsonio ' in Bodleian MS. Additions 697, f. 39; ' If shadows be a picture's excellence', ascribed to Jonson in HS, f. 9 b and Add. 8, f. 109 b and also unconvincingly to Donne ; and Jonson's epitaph ' on his Brother William', ending ' William Johnson hie mentitur' in RP2, p. 162.

A drinking song 'Bacchus lacchus fill our brains' is attributed to Jonson in *Wit and Mirth. An Antidote against Melancholy*, 1682, p. 100, and in D'Urfey's *Wit and Mirth : or Pitts to Purge Melancholy*, 1707, vol. iii, pp. 228-9,^{an} in the editions of 1712 and 1719, as well as in D'Urfey's *Songs Cornpleat . . . by John Blow, H. Purcell etc*, vol. v, pp. 144-5. It is attributed to Aurelian Townshend in H. Lawes's *Ayres and Dialogues*, 1653, vol. i, p. 9, and is printed as his in Sir E. K. Chambers's edition of Townshend's *Poems and Masks*, pp. 7-8, with a critical discussion in the note on pp. 104-5.

Percy in his *Reliques of Ancient English Poetry*, vol. iii, 1765, pp. 201-60, printed the beautiful song of Robin Goodfellow,

From Oberon, in fairye land,
The king of ghosts and shadowes there,
Mad Robin I, at his command,
Am sent to viewe the night-sports here.

with the comment that Peck attributed the song to Jonson, 'tho' it is not found among his works'. He added that it seemed 'to have been originally intended for some Masque' in which Robin was a kind of presenter. The attribution, which is impossible, can only have been suggested by *The Masque of Oberon*.

A more serious error is the attribution to Jonson of the closing lines of Francis Beaumont's *Elegy on the Lady Markham*, 1609, printed in Beaumont's *Poems*, 1640, H2 verso, 'As unthrifts groan in straw for their pawn'd beds'. The opening lines are bad enough :

now I know
Where I can find my mistress, and can go
Unto her trimm'd bed, and can lift away
Her grass-green mantle, and her sheet display,
And touch her naked.

The passage foisted upon Jonson is the concluding appeal to 'You worms, my rivals', when they taste her tender body, to make a pair of holes in her ear-tips and hang there as jewels, and to nibble a cross on her breast and grave an epitaph on her iorehead. Apparently the poem was intended for a satire or a joke.

Mr. H. A. Bright in *Notes and Queries*, series I, iii, p. 367, printed the fragment, under the mistaken impression that it was autograph, as one of a number of 'Poems discovered among

the papers of Sir Kenelm Digby'. Mr. W. J. Bernard Smith pointed out at once (ibid. p. 482) that it was part of the Markham elegy. Swinburne in *A Study of Ben Jonson*, page 122, also exposed the attribution, describing the lines as 'probably the most hideous nonsense ever written on the desecrated subject of death and decay'. But, in spite of this exposure, Professor Gregory Smith in his *Ben Jonson*, page 221, revived the false ascription and remarked that if *Eupheme* 'will be remembered, it will be for this gruesome sketch'.

Jonson read to Drummond 'a Satyre telling there was no abuses to writte a Satyre of and (in) which he repeateth all the abuses In England and the world'. It is a strange coincidence that there is 'A Satir against Satires' in Harley MS. 393 ff. 12-14—an unsigned seventeenth-century poem vaguely corresponding to this description, but without a trace of Jonson's style, without any verbal echoes or repetitions of his authentic work, and without any borrowings from classical satire which Jonson could hardly have escaped in handling such a theme. We have not printed the poem.

I.

Another (Epigram) on the Birth of the Prince.

ANother Phoenix, though the first is dead,
 A second's flowne from his Immortall bed,
 To make this our *Arabia* to be
 The nest of an eternal progeny.
 Choise Nature fram'd the former, but to find, 5
 What error might be mended in Man-kind :
 Like some industrious workmen, which affect
 Their first endeavours onely to correct:
 So this the building, that the Modell was,
 The type of all that now is come to passe : 10
 That but the shadow, this the substance is,
 All that was but the prophesie of this:

¹ *Conversations*, 11. 105-7.

I. In D, Q, following 'An Epigram On the Princes birth' (Und. Ixy) :
 text from D. In H\$*f*. 20 6, 'On the Auspicious birth of Prince Charles',
 subscribed 'Ben Johnson'. i is] be H 7 workmen] work-
 man Q ii the shadow] a shadow H

- And when it did this after-birth fore-runne,
 Twas but the morning starre unto this Sunne ;
- 15 The dawning of this day, when *Sol* did thinke,
 We having such a light, that he might winke,
 And we ne're misse his lustre : nay so soone
 As *Charles* was borne, he, and the pale-fac'd Moone,
 With envy then did copulate, to try
- 20 If such a birth might be produc'd ith sky.
 What heavenly favour made a starre appeare,
 To bid wise Kings to doe their homage here,
 And prove him truely Christian ? Long remaine
 On Earth, sweet *Prince*, that when great *Charles* shall reigne
- ²5 In heaven above, our little *Charles* may be
 As great on earth, because as good as he.

Possibly by Jonson, but we hesitate to include it in the canon. The main argument for its inclusion is that the Quarto and Duodecimo, which print no other spurious poems, include this and no. 11. But it is not in the Folio or in the Newcastle MS. Gifford printed the first fourteen lines with the comment that they have 'some remote resemblance of Jonson's style ; but the concluding part is of a different character, and could only have proceeded from some wretched imitator of Donne'. Professor Briggs (*Anglia*, xxxviii, pp. 109, no, 118, 120; xxxix, p. 252) hesitates as we do : 'we must suspend judgement.' He refers for a parallel to the conceit of the sun and moon in 11. 15-20 to Plutarch, *Amptorius*, 770 A, *ovrw yap Epdv p,Ev opftrov yalav ol TToiTjral Ae'youai KOL yfjs ovpavov, epdv S* rjXiov crcXyrviv ot tfrvaiKol Kai avyylvcaOai /cat KvctvOcu*. He notes that the thought of the concluding couplet is common in Jonson, but it is not so subtle that, in a complimentary poem of this nature, it might not have occurred to others. For the eclipse see *Und*. Ixv.

If this and the two following pieces are Jonson's, he wrote a total of five poems on the birth of Prince Charles—a heavy output of gratitude even in view of the fact that the King had the year before sent him a gift of one hundred pounds in his sickness.

13 after-birth]	after birth D,Q	16 winke]	sinke H	17 misse]	
want H	18 the]	that H	pale-fac'd]	pale fac'd D	20 i th]
ith'D;inH	21 favour]	favours H	22 here]	there H	23 Long]
longD					

ii.

A Parallel! of the Prince to the King.

SO *Peleus*, when he faire *Thetis* got,
 As thou thy *Sea Queen* ; so to him she brought
 A blessed Babe, as thine hath done to thee :
 His worthiest prov'd of those times, ours may be
 Of these ; his had a *Pallas* for his guide, 5
 Thy wisdom will as well for ours provide :
 His conquer'd Countries, Cities, Castles, Towers,
 A worthy foe ; hereafter so may ours.
 His all his time but one *Patroclus* finds,
 But this of ours a world of faithful! friends : 10
 His vulnerable in no place but one,
 And this of ours (we hope) be hurt in none.
 His had his *Phoenix*, ours no teacher needs,
 But the example of thy life and deeds.
 His *Nestor* knew, in armes his fellow was, 15
 But not in yeares, (too soone runne out his glasse)
 Ours, though not *Nestor* knew, we trust, shall bee
 As wise in Armes, as old in yeares as he.
 His, after death, had *Homer* his reviver :
 And ours may better merit to live ever, 20
 By Deeds farre-passing : but (oh sad dispaire)
 No hope of *Homer*, his wit left no heire.

Probably by Thomas Freeman. In Add. 5, as Professor Briggs has pointed out, this is the fourth of a set of eight odes on the birth of Prince Charles, *Carmina illustrissimi Principis Caroli nativitatem celebrantia*, ascribed to 'Thorn: Freeman'. The first of these odes is the third poem of this appendix.

Gifford dismissed the poem as 'utterly unworthy of notice' and so did not quote it.

The elaborate comparison of the infant Prince with Achilles works out rather badly in the opening lines : Henrietta Maria's sole claim to be dubbed a 'Sea Queen' was that she crossed to

II. In D, Q after the preceding poem; text from D. Not in F or N. In HS /• 21 subscribed 'Ben Johnson'; in Add 5 7.46 attributed to Thomas Freeman. 6 ours] us H 7 conquer'd] conquered D 8 ours] yours H. 9 one] once D, Q n His Add, H : He 's D, Q 12 in Add : of D, Q, H 13 Phcenix] Phoenix D 17 knew,] knowes. Add 19 His] Hee Add 21 farre-passing] surpassing Add

Dover to marry Charles I. 'PelSus' as three syllables in line i would not have been written by Jonson, who has the correct quantity in *A.P.* 136,147. Phoenix (1.13) was the son of Amyntor, sent by Peleus to accompany Achilles to the Trojan war.

III.

On the Birthday of Prince Charles.

Ode : i^a: Natalis Dies Maij 29. 1630.

- T**He Gods deare issue, Our great loues increase,
 An Infant Embleme of his Grandsires peace,
 A Prince th'happie Mothers pretty smiler,
 The Fathers & the Vncles reconciler,
 5 In whom th'high blood to sovereignty design'd
 of Brittain, Fraunce, & Florence are combin'd
 Of Burbons, Medices, blest Stewards stemm,
 Destin'd to weare a triple Diadem,
 And where the Rose & Lilly rarely mixt
 10 Haue made both Vnion & Succession fixt.
 Hee whom th'Earth shall honour, Heav'n shall blesse,
 Th'Impruoued hope of future happines,
 The Joy of other states, the fruit of ours,
 Is borne this Day, this noone, this month of flowers.

Probably by Thomas Freeman: text from Add 5 f. 46. See the note on the preceding poem. In H5 f. 19 *b* subscribed 'Ben Johnson'. The superiority of the Add 5 text is shown in the opening line which translates Virgil's 'Cara deum suboles, magni lovis incrementum', and by the reference to 'noone' in the last line: the star on the prince's birthday was seen at noon (see *Und.* Ixv note).

in. i deare] greate *H* great loues] Joves greate *H* 3 smiler,
smUei Add 6 Brittain,] Bhtaine *Add* 7 Burbons] Burbone
H 8 Destin'd] design'd *H* 9 Rose] rose *Add* 10 fixt.]
 fixt *Add*: fix'd. *H* n Hee] Him *H* th'Earth] the yearth *H*
 blesse,] blesse *Add* 12 happines,] happines *Add* 14 noone]
 moone *H*.

IV.

A Petition of the Infant Prince Charles.

The Princes verses for one of his Rockers.

REade Royall ffather, mighty Kinge,
 what my Little hands doe bringe,
 (I, whose happy birth imparts
 Joy to all good subjects harts,)
 though an Infante, doe not breake
 natures Lawes, whi^tst thus I speake
 by this interpreter for one
 whose face doth blush, whose hart doth groane,
 for her acknowledged offence,
 and onely hath my Innocence
 to gaine her Mercy. Though thus bould,
 yett some proportion it may houlde,
 that to the ffather shee may runne,
 through mediation of the Sonne.
 Yf therefore nowe, oh Royall S^t,
 my first request may purchase her
 restoreinge unto grace, to mee
 (though prince) it will an honor bee,

iv. Text from Add 13 f. 154 ft; mAddijf. 1376, 'A Petition delivered by the Prince in behalfe of his nurse'; subscribed 'Ben Jonson' in H⁵ f. 21 b, 'A Petition of Prince Charles'; SI 4 f. 128 fe^t 'To the King'; Ash i f. 173, 'A PetiCon to y^e* King put into y^e° Younge Princes hand, by one of y^e« Nurses, whoe had lost her place'; RP13 f. 23, 'A Petition putt into y^e hands of y^e« young Prince Charles by M^{ra} S. one of y^e« nurses hauing lost her place'. 2 what] what here SI: what ere Add 17 2 hands doe] hand doth H, SI, RP 3, 4 in Add 17, H, Ash, RP 4 good] true SI 5 though] who though Add 13 6 natures Lawes,] The, lawes of Nature Ash.RP whilst thus] while Ash.RP: nowe if H: if now Add 17, SI 7 interpreter] enterprize H 8 whose hart] and hart H g acknowledged] knowledged Ash 10 and onely hath] that only found H, SI. Add 17: Hath only found RP: And only found Ash my] myne Ash n Mercy. Though . . . bould,] Mercy, though . . . bould Add 13: mercy, shee is bould H, Add 17, SI 12 yett . . . may] Yet may it some proportion Ash, RP: oh may itt some proportion H: Oh let it some proportion Add 17, SI 13 that] if H, Add 17, SI may] doth H, Add 17, SI, Ash, RP 14 through] By H. Add 17. SI, Ash, RP 15 Yf . . . nowe, . . . Sr,] yf . . . nowe . . . S^t Add 13: if therefore (oh my Royall S^h) H, Add 17, SI 17 unto] to yo^e* H, Add 17, SI: into Ash. RP grace, to mee] grace to mee, Add 13 18 it will] it shall Ash, RP, SI: yett shall H

20 that in my Cradle t'will be sayd
 I Master of Requests was made.

Prince Charles (the future Charles II) was born on 29 May 1630, and this charming lyric is unlike any work of Jonson's at that date, when his powers showed symptoms of decline. It is in the sharpest contrast to the official poems in which he celebrated the Prince's birth (*Und.* Ixv, bcvi).

The one manuscript which ascribes the lines to Jonson, Harley MS. 6057 (H5), is mainly in the handwriting of Thomas Crosse, who opens the collection with 'An Acrostiche vpon my name' and inserts a trivial thing of his own on folio 45. Eleven of Jonson's printed poems are in the manuscript, but there is also attributed to him on folio 9 the poem 'Vpon blacke haire', beginning 'If shaddowes be a pictures excellence', noted on page 425-

V.

Epitaph on Prince Henry.

From *Remaines, concerning Britaine: But especially England, and the Inhabitants thereof*. . . . Printed at London by John Legatt for Simon Waterson. 1614. The dedication to Sir Robert Cotton signed 'M. N.'_f i.e. the last letters of the name William Camden. On page 381, in italic.

For Prince Henry ... of whose worth England seemed vnworthy_v many excellent Epitaphs were composed euery where extant, but this haue I selected.

5 **R**eader, wonder thinke it none
 Though I speake and am a stone.
 Here is shrinde cslestiall dust,
 And I keepe it but in trust.
 Should I not my Treasure tell,
 Wonder then you might as well,
 How this stone could choose but breake,
 If it had not learnt to speake.
 Hence amazd, and aske not mee,
 10 Whose these sacred ashes bee.
 Purposely it is conceald.
 For if that should be reueald,

All that reade would by and by,
Melt themselues to teares, and dy.

Within this marble casket lies, 15
A matchlesse iewell of rich prize,
Whom Nature in the worlds disdaine,
But shewd, and then put vp againe.

Manuscript copies of the epitaph are frequent, but they are all anonymous. The last four lines ate a separate epitaph on a child which the printer has inadvertently added to the preceding poem. They spoil the climax of the fourteenth line. 'Marble casket' clearly means a tomb, and no monument was erected over Prince Henry's grave in the Abbey: this is the point of lines 10 and n. In RP6 ff. 183 6 and 268 6 the last four lines are a separate epitaph; in Add 5, Ash 2. Ash 3, Ash 5, EPi, and RPg the epitaph is without this addition. The poem was first printed in *Witt's Recreations Augmented*, 1641, Epitaph 157. The ascription to Jonson was made by W. R. Chetwood, a worthless authority, in his *Memoirs of Ben. Jonson. Esq;* 1756, p. 40. Professor W. D. Briggs (*Anglia*, xxxix, pp. 36-41) has disproved the attribution by pointing out that the line's are a translation of Giles Fletcher's epitaph in *Epicedium Cantdbrigiense, In obitum immaturum, semperq; dcflendum Henri ci, Illustrissimi Principis W allies, &c.*, 1612, PP- 13. 14-

Carmen Sepulchrale.

Miraris qui Saxa loqui didicere, Viator ?
Cceli depositum conditur hoc tumulo :
Cujus si famam, tacuissent saxa, putares
Hoc tibi mirandum, non didicisse loqui.
Si sapis, attonitus sacro decede sepulchre,
Nee cineri quae sunt nomina quaere novo.
Prudens celavit sculptor ; nam quisque rescivit,
Protinus in lacrimas solvitur, et moritur.

VI.

On the Countesse Dowager of Pembroke.

VNDERneath this sable Herse
Lyes the subiect of all verse,
Sydneyes Sister, Pembrokes mother.
Death, ere thou hast slaine another
ffaire & Learn'd & good as she,
Tyme shall throw a Dart at thee.

5

10

Marble Pyles let no man raise
 To her Name for after dayes.
 Some kind woman borne as she,
 Reading this, like Niobe
 Shall turne Marble & become
 Both her Mourner & her Tombe.

By William Browne of Tavistock. Text from his autograph in British Museum Lansdowne MS. 777, 43 6 : punctuation, which is entirely missing in the manuscript, has been supplied. First printed anonymously, in the third edition of Camden's *Remaines, Concerning Britaine*, 1623, p. 340. The Countess died on 25 September 1621.

Whalley first printed the poem as Jonson's on the ground that it was 'universally assigned' to him. This ascription is not in any manuscript. The autograph copy is decisive for Browne's authorship ; it appears in a collection of his minor poems. The epitaph is attributed to Browne in MS. TCD p. 487, and in RPQ f. 27. Aubrey, who knew the Herbert family, quotes the epitaph in his manuscript *Memoires of naturall remarques in Wilts* (see N. 6* Q. i. iii. 262) and says it was 'made by Mr William Browne, who wrote the Pastoralls'; he repeats the statement, quoting the poem, in *Brief Lives*, ed. Clark, i. 312. Browne himself refers to it in his epitaph on Charles, Lord Herbert of Cardiff and Shurland, grandson of the Countess, 1635 (Lansdowne MS. 777 f-54&).

O let my priuate griefe haue roome
 Dear Lord to wayte vpon thy Toombe
 And since my weake & saddest verse
 Was worthy thought thy Grandams Herse
 Accept of this!

Manuscript copies are frequent. The chief variation is that the first stanza is found as the complete epitaph—a far finer form. There is no monument over the Countess's grave in Salisbury Cathedral, so that 'sable hearse' refers to the custom of pinning memorial lines on the pall at the time of burial.

VII.

Epitaph on Michael Drayton.

Michaell Draiton Esq^r. a memorable Poet of this Age,
Exchanged his Laurell for a crowne of Glorye A^o: 1631.

DOe pious Marble Let thy Readers Knowe
What they and what their children owe
To DRAITONS name : whose sacred dust
Wee recommend vnto thy TRVST :
Protect his Mem'ry, and Preserve his Storye : 5
Remaine a lastinge Monument of his Glorye :
And when thy Ruines shall disclame
To be the Treas'rer of his NAME ;
His Name, that cannot fade, shall be
An everlasting MONVMENT to thee. 10

Probably by Francis Quarles. Text from the monument in Westminster Abbey, originally under the north wall, now in Poets' Corner. The Countess of Dorset, Drayton's patroness, erected the monument. 'Mr. Marshall, the stone-cutter, of Fetter-lane', told Aubrey this (*Letters*, 11, p. 336), and also that 'these verses were made by Mr. Francis Quarles, who was his great friend, and whose head he wrought curiously in playster, and valued for his sake'. The Countess was a patroness of both Drayton and Quarles.

Winstanley, *Lives of the Poets*, 1687, p. 107, attributed the epitaph to Jonson, and Oldys in the *Biographia Britannica*, 1750, s.v. 'Drayton', p. 1749, said it was 'ascribed to Ben Jonson'. Whalley printed it in his edition. In Ash 2, p. 184, attributed to 'Tho: Randall', i.e. Thomas Randolph : in l. 4 it reads 'I recommend'. First printed, anonymously, in *Witt's Recreations Augmented*, 1641, epitaph 143, *On Michael Drayton buried in Westminster* : in l. 3 it reads 'To Drayton's sacred name whose dust'; in l. 6 'And a lasting monument'; in l. 8 'Treasury'. Also in *Poems by F. Beaumont*, 1653, sig. M 2 recto.

VIII.

To Lord Bacon.

To my L^d. Chancellor,
the day of his sentence, the 3^d of May 1621.

S^f: nowe all troopes haue left you, none attend
and when y^r fortunes ceased, those tooke end :
like to our swallowes w^{ch} come here in May,
and att the first cold blast hence flye away.

- 5 though you vnhappy seeme, and some may thinke
you had bin happier if the court had wink'd
on y^r confessed crimes, and that the scale
of their iust censures had not struck the saile
of y^r maine top, but still haue lett the floud
10 borne you in all y^{*r} trim, as when you're good
itt did without impeachment: I thinke they'ue hurld
you, from this bad into a better world.
And good s^r. thinke not that I take delight
to make y^r miseries my theame to write ;
15 or that in this I would make any breach
of charitye, I come but as a leach
to bring some medicine, and for to apply
some salues vnto y^r wounds before you dye;
w^{ch} you must help vnto, or else I loose
20 my labour, you y^r health if you refuse :
S^r. you have reason great nowe to discern
that meane things are most safe, and for to learne
y^l all the vadeing honours that accrue
the world dispenses for her selfe ; not you,
25 for her owne proffit; for she doth by these
hudwinke the inward sence, the outward please,
couering all bracks like varnish vppon wood
to hide her wormeholes, least being vnderstood
all men-would flye her ; and she should appeare
30 vggly and sordid as if her end grewe neare :
howe glad is he that hath escaped the bite
of any venomd worme ; wth what delight
tells hee his danger past, relates the feare,
suspition, hassard, And the anxious care
35 hee had in his auoydment ?' 6 howe true
and iust this glorye may bee sung by you.
you nowe discouer all, and are past o're
halfe of this dangerous sea, and to the shore
of peace direct y^r course ; you nowe descrye
40 the shelve Ambition ; quicksand vanity ;
howe many tall ships as high built as yours,
oft pittyouis wracks vppon these two indures ;
God only lett you touch them ; spring a leake ?
when many on them doe in shiuers breake.

since you haue scap'd the wrack, bee('t) donn by you 45
as by the marchant, w^{ch} doth straight renewe
his weatherbeaten boate ; least want of care
hassard the loss eternall of his fare :
heere in this vale of life, none doth possess
true happines but them whom God doth bless 50
with some affliction ; therefore now (my Lord)
vppon (you) God more fauours doth afford,
then when the King (his image) did confer
the title and office of his Chancellor.
fame doth report, that euen vppon that hill 55
where Diocles did holy Alban kill
hee by whose hand the holy martyr dyes
as hee struck of his head lost his owne eyes ?
but you, whose honour from that place doth growe,
you doe recouer sight by y^r last blowe, 60
for nowe you clearly see, before, y sight
was either mainlye dim'd, or extinct quite ;
or else y^r wisdom surely could not err
so much, as to permit you to prefer
the world so much, w^{ch} (if I doe speake true) 65
was most aparantly beheld in you :
since that y^r high built house doth stand no more
rebuild itt on the rock, not on the shore
w^{ch} is in danger each houre of each day
either for to bee blowne or wash't away : 70
from the lowe place that nowe you doe rest in
looke vpp vnto the hight where you haue bin ;
and thinke yo^r selfe most happy, that you see
that place of danger, and yo^r selfe so free ?
the glorious sun, wth equall heat doth shine 75
as well on the ground luye, as the pine ?
shrubs allwayes liue, and keep themselues vnwasted,
when by the winds the statliest trees are blasted :
Returne (my L^d) to God ; hee not away
will pull his head from you, though you might stray 80
something from him ; knock, knock with all y force,
cry vehemently, cry though y^r throat bee horse
pray him to order by his high decree
that when you shall of this frayle flesh bee free,

- 85 y^{*} hee would pardon all those faulty acts,
 w^{ch} fraylty married to our flesh contracts,
 and that y^r spirit refin'd may bee as good
 as when itt was first watred by his blood.
Johnson.

In Bodleian MS. Dodsworth 61 f. 70. This pious homily on the text ' Sweet are the uses of adversity ' cannot be by Jonson. In the *Discoveries*, 943-5, he later said of Bacon : ' In his adversity I ever prayed, that *God* would give him strength : for *Greatnesse* hee could not want.' If Jonson had counselled him at such a moment, the poem would have been of a stoical rather than of a religious cast.

IX.

Ode.

- S**orne, or some humbler ffate
 light thicke, and longe endure
 On the Ridiculous state
 of our pyed Courtlinges, and secure
 5 Race, of selfe loovinge Lordes
 that wallowe in the ffloude
 of their greate Birth, and bloode,
 Whiles their whole lyfe affoordes
 noe other graces
 10 but pryde, Lust, Oathes, and ffaces,
 And yett would haue mee deeme
 of them, att that highe Rate
 As they themselves esteeme.
 Perishe such Surquedrye
 15 Ore whelnTd w^kh dust,
 J^tys onely virtue must
 Blason nobillitye.

Professor Briggs cautiously suggests that these lines, both in style and thought, suggest Jonson's authorship (*Anglia*, xxxix, p. 250). 'ffaces' in l. 10 recalls the satire in *C.R.*: e.g. the pantomime of facial expression in n. iii, especially 11.36 foil., 'your face of faces, or courtiers face, tis of three sorts . . . elementarie.

Text from JZP] f.gb: also in H+ f. 238. First printed from H and
conjecturally ascribed to Jonson by W. D. Briggs. I some] some.
RP humbler] humble H 4 Courtinges] courlings H 8
Whiles] while H 13 esteeme.] esteeme RP, H 16 v[ts]
ty'sRP: tis/f

practique, and theoziqne'; ibid. 89, 90 'all his behauiors are printed, his face is another volume of essayes'; and v. ii. 65 foil. 'the Reverse in face, or wry-mouth . . . this Sanna, or Storke-bill'. Lines 16, 17 echo Juvenal's 'nobilitas sola est atque unica virtus' (*Sat.* viii. 20), which Jonson also cited in *Cynthia's Revels*, v. i. 30, 31 'The better race in court That haue the true nobilitie, call'd vertue', and *Und.* Ixxxiv (8) 21 'Tis Vertue alone, is true Nobilitie'.

X.

Epigram on Richard Burbage.

Epi: B: Jo:

TELL me who can when a player dies
In w^{ch} of his shapes againe hee shall rise?
What need hee stand at the iudgment throne
Who hath a heaven and a hell of his owne?
Then feare not, Burbage, heavens angry rodd, 5
When thy fellows are angells & old Hemmings is God.

First printed by H. J. C. Grierson in *The Poems of John Donne*, vol. i, p. 443, from the MS. at Burley-on-the-Hill which was lost in the fire there. 'Epi: ' = Epigram, rather than epitaph, as W. D. Briggs suggests. For a serious reference to Burbage see *B.F.* v. iii. 86; to ^sold Mr Hemings \ *Christmas.* 136-7.

XI.

Master Jonson's Answer to Master Withers.

(¹"Epigrams.

From A Description of Love. With certtne-i f^h*" And

¹[^Sonnets.

Also Mast. Johnsons Answere to Master Withers. With the Crie of Ludgate, and the Song of the Begger. The fifth Edition. London Printed by W. S. [i.e. William Stansby] for Thomas Dewe, and are to be sold at his Shop in S. Dunstons Church-yard in Fleete-streete. 7625. On signatures D 4, D 5.

Master Johnsons answer to
Master Withers.

Withers.

SHall I wasting in despaire,
Die because a womans faire,
Or my cheekes make pale with care,
Cause anothers Rosie are?

5 Be she fairer then the day,
 Or the flowiy Meades in May,
 If she be not so to me,
 What care I how fait'e she be ?

Johnson.

10 Shall I mine affections slacke,
 Cause I see a womans blacke,
 Or my selfe with care cast downe,
 Cause I see a woman browne ?
 Be she blacker then the night,
 Or the blackest let in sight.
 15 // *she bee not so to mee,*
 What care I how blacke shee bee ?

Withers.

 Shall my foolish heart be pinde,
 'Cause I see a womans kinde,
 Or a well disposed nature
 20 loyned in a comely feature ?
 Be shee kinde or meeker than
 Turtle-Doue or Pelican ;
 // *shee be not so to me,*
 What care I how kind shee be ?

Johnson.

25 Shall my foolish heart be burst,
 Cause I see a woman's curst,
 Or a thwarting hoggish nature
 loyned in as bad a feature ?
 Be she curst or fiercer then
 30 Brutish Beast, or sauage Men :
 // *shee be not so to me,*
 What-care I how curst shee be ?

Withers.

 Shall a womans vertues make
 Me to perish for her sake,
 35 Or her merits value knowne,
 Make me quite forget my owne ?

Be she with that goodnesse blest,
That may merit name of best:
// shee seeme not so to me,
What care I how good shee be P 40

Johnson.

Shall a womans vices make
Me her vices quite forsake,
Or her faults to me made knowne,
Make me thinke that I haue none ?
Be she of the most accurst, 45
And deserue the name of worst:
// she be not so to me,
What care I how bad she be ?

Withers.

'Cause her fortunes seeme too high,
Should I play the foole and die ? 50
He that beares a noble mind,
If not outward helpe hee find,
Think what with them he would do,
That without them dares to woo.
And vnlesse that mind I see, 55
What care I how great she bee ?

Johnson.

'Cause her fortunes seemes too low,
Shall I therefore let her goe ?
He that beares an humble mind,
And with riches can be kind, 60
Think how kind a heart he'd haue,
If he were some seruile slaue.
And if that same minde I see,
What care I how poore she bee ?

Withers.

Great, or good, or kind, or faire 65
I will ne'r the more despaire,
If shee loue me, then beleeeue
I will die, ere she shall gzieue :

- 70 If she slight me, when I woo,
 I can slight and bid her go :
 // she be not fit for me,
 What care I for whom shee be P

Johnson.

- 75 Poor, or bad, or curst, or blacke,
 I will ne'r the more be slacke,
 If she hate me, then beleuee,
 She shall die, ere I will grieue :
 If she like me when I woo,
 I can like and love her too :
 If that she be fit forme,
 What care I what others be ?

80

Probably by Richard Johnson, as Mr. Frank Sidgwick suggested (*The Poetry of George Wither*, vol. i, p. 198), but the authorship is difficult to determine. Wither's song appeared in a first form at the end of his *Fidelia*, 1615, 'The Author's Resolution in a Sonnet'; he revised it in the editions of 1619 and 1620. In 1620¹ 'Master Johnson's Answer' was printed with it. It had been entered on the Stationers' Register on 14 June 1618 to Michael Sparkes, 'A Booke called A discourse of loue or songes sonettes and Elegies, betwixt Withers and Johnson' (Arber, *Transcript*, iii. 627); Sparkes transferred the copyright to Thomas Dewe on 9 June 1621, 'A booke called The Discription of loue. written by Master Johnson' (ibid. iv. 55); a final transfer on 21 May 1628 to Miles Flesher from William Washington of twelve books assigned to him by Anne Helme includes 'Johnsons Discription of love' (ibid. 197). Entries of Jonson's books on the Register usually have his Christian name prefixed; 'Master Johnson' is correctly copied from the title-page of the edition and the heading of the poem. Richard Johnson was the editor of *A Crown Garland of Golden Roses*, 1612 (and later); in *The Golden Garland of Princely Pleasures and Delicate Delight, in Two Parts*, the third edition of 1620 enlarged and corrected by Richard Johnson, there appeared an adaptation of Wither's poem entitled 'The Shepherd's Resolution, to the Tune of the Young-man's Opinion'; consisting of verses 1, 3, and 5, from the 1615 edition, with five additional verses, inferior in quality, which are probably the editor's, as Mr. Sidgwick suggests. There are also adaptations of Wither's poem in Thomas Heywood's *FvvaiKCLov*, 1624, book vi, pp. 288-9, and in Thomas Beedome's *Poems Divine and Humane*, 1641, F verso. In view of Jonson's stormy relations with Wither, discussed in the introduction

to *Time Vindicated*, we feel that the parody is too playful and kindly to have come from his pen.

The fifth edition, 1625, is in the Bodleian, the sixth edition, 1629, in the British Museum, and the ninth edition, 1638, is also in the Bodleian. No earlier text appears to have survived.

XII.

On the Steeple of St. Mary's Church, Newcastle.

From *Chorographia, or A Survey of Newcastle Upon Tine*. . . . London, Printed by J. B. 1649. On pages 9, 10, in italic. The dedication and preface are signed W. G., i.e. W. Gray.

The Churches in Newcastle.

There is foure Churches and Parishes in this Towne. The first is Saint *Nicholas*, in the mid'st of the Towne; a long faire, and high Church, having a stately high Stone Steeple, with many Pinakles; a stately Stone Lanterne, standing upon foure Stone Arches, builded by *Robert de Rhodes*, Lord Priour of *Tinemouth*, in *Henry 6.* dayes : It lifteth up a head of Majesty, as high above the rest, as the Cypresse Tree above the low Shrubs.

Ben. Johnson.

MY Altitude high, my Body foure square,
My Foot in the Grave, my Head in the Ayre,
My Eyes in my sides, five Tongues in my Wombe,
Thirteen Heads upon my Body, foure Images alone ;
I can direct you where the Winde doth stay,
And I Tune Gods Precepts thrice a Day.
I am seen where I am not, I am heard where eye is not,
Tell me now what I am, and see that you misse not.

5

xII. 7 ' eye ' is *misprinted* ' I '

XIII.

On the Family Vault of Lord Zouche at
Harringworth.

From *The History of Northamptonshire*, 1791, vol. ii. p. 320, by John Bridges.

At the bottom of the north wall is a small hole communicating with the cellar of the house, which, according to tradition, gave occasion to the following verses of *Ben Jonson*, who is said to have been well acquainted with Lord *Zouche* ;

*W*henever I dye-, let this be my fate,
To lye by my good Lord Zouche ;
That when I'm a-dry, to the tap I may hie,
And so back again to my Couch.

XIV.

Epitaph on an Honest Lawyer.

From *The Life and Errors of John Dunton*, 1705, p. 213.

This refreshes my memory with a Story o/Ben. Johnson, who, as he was walking through a Church in Suny, saw a Company of Poor People weeping over a Grave ; Ben. ask'd one of the Women what the occasion shou'd be ? She answer'd, ah, Alas !
5 *Sir, we have lost our pretious good Lawyer Justice Randal, he kept us all-in Peace, and from going to Law, certainly he was the best Man that ever liv'd. Well, said Ben, I'll send you an Epitaph for his Tombstone, which was,*

10 *God works wonders now and than,
Here lies a Lawyer an Honest Man.*

Quoted in *The Weekly Register*, 12 July 1735, ' Epigram made by Ben Johnson on a Lawyer ', reading ' then ' (l. i), ' and an honest Man ' (l. 2). In Malone MS. 19 f. 41, ' Vppon a Tailour '.

I tell you a wond^l*, deny it if you can :
Here lyes a Tailor, & an honest man.

xv.

A Highway Robbery.

From the life of William Tracey in *A General History of the Lives and Adventures of the Most Famous Highwaymen, Murderers, Street-Robbers*, 6-c. To which is added, *A Genuine Account of the Voyages and Plunders of the most Notorious Pyrates*. By Captain Charles Johnson. 1734. Page 41.

Ben Johnson had been down in *Buckingham-shire* to transact some Business, but in returning to *London* happened to meet with *Tracey*, who knowing the Poet, bad him stand and deliver his Money. But *Ben* putting on a courageous Look, spoke to him thus: 5

*Fly Villain hence, or by thy Coat of Steel,
I'll make thy Heart my leaden Bullet feel,
And send that thrice as thievish Soul of thine
To Hell, to wean the Devils Valentine.*

Upon which *Tracey* made this Answer :

i°

*Art thou, great Ben ? or the revived Ghost
Offamous Shakespear ? or some drunken Host ?
Who being tipsy with thy muddy Beer,
Dost think thy Rhimes will daunt my Soul with Fear ;
Nay, know, base Slave, that I am one of those,
Can take a Purse, as well in Verse, as Prose,
And when thou art dead, write this upon thy Herse,
Here lies a Poet who was robb'd in Verse.*

15

These Words alarmed *Johnson*, who found he had met with a resolute Fellow ; he endeavoured to save his Money, but to no 20 purpose, and was obliged to give our Adventurer ten Jacobus's. But the Loss of these was not the only Misfortune he met with in this Journey; for coming within two or three miles of *London*, it was his ill Chance to fall into the Hands of worse Rogues, who knock'd him off his Horse, stript him, and tied 25 him Neck and Heels in a Field, wherein some other Passengers were enduring the same hard Fate, having been also robb'd. One of them crying out, that he, his Wife and Children were all undone, while another, who was bound, over-hearing, said, pray, if you are all of you undone, come and undo me. This 3° made *Ben* though under his Misfortunes, burst out into a loud

Laugh, who being delivered in the Morning from his Bands by some Reapers, made the following Verses:

- 35 *Both robb'd and bound, as I one Night did ride,
 With two Men more, their Arms behind them ty'd,
 The one lamenting what did them befall,
 Cry'd, I'm undone, my Wife, and Children all ;
 The other hearing it, aloud did cry,
 Undo me then, let me no longer lie ;*
- 4° *But to be plain, those Men laid on the Ground,
 Were both undone, indeed, but both fast bound.*

The first two efforts in verse were printed in *Witts Recreations*, 1640, D 2 verso, with the titles 'B. J. answer to a thiefe bidding him stand' and 'The Theefs reply', with the correct readings 'be' for 'by' in 1. 6 and 'weare' for 'wean' in 1. 9. The third piece was one of the epigrams appended to Wither's *A Description of Love*, 1625, sig. B 3 recto, with the extraordinary title '*Of a Legacie not an Ambassadour*', and a few variations of reading : the opening lines were

As twas my fortune by a wood to ride,
 I saw two men, their armes behinde them tide.

Tracey was hanged at Winchester for robbing the Duke of Buckingham.

XVI.

The Half-Moon Tavern in Aldersgate Street.

From William Winstanley's *The Lives of the most Famous English Poets*, 1687, p. 124.

He used very much to frequent the Half-Moon-Tavern in Aldersgate-street, through which was a common *Thoroughfare* ; he coming late that way, one night, was denied passage, whereupon going through the Sim-Tavern a little after, he said,

- 5 *Since that the Moon was so unkind to make me go about,
 The Sun henceforth shall take my Coin, the Moon shall go
 without.*

XVII.

An Impromptu to Sir William Noye.

Ben. Johnson to Noy y Lawyer.

When the world was drown'd
 No venison was found
 For yⁿ y*™ was neuer a Parke
 And now here wee sitt
 And haue neuer a bitt
 For Noy hath all in his Arke.

5

Hardly intelligible without Plume's explanation that Noye was at his commencement dinner for his degree of Serjeant at law and Jonson, waiting without, sent in these verses. 'Noy' in 1. 6 = Noah. See the notes in vol. i, p. 187.

XVIII.

The Crown Inn at Basingstoke.

From The Merry-Thought, or, The Glass-Window and Bog-House Miscellany. . . . Published by Hurlo Thrumbo. Third edition, c. 1730. Page 21.

From the Crown at Basingstoke, which was, in Ben Johnson's Time, the Sign of the Angel, and then inhabited by Mrs. Hope, and her Daughter Prudence. As Tradition informs us, Ben Johnson was acquainted with the House; and in some Time, when he found strange People there, and the Sign changed, he wrote the following Lines.

When Hope and Prudence kept this House,
 The Angel kept the Door ;
 Now Hope is dead,
 And the Angel fled,
 And Prudence turn'd a Whore.

Located in Oxford in RPi2 f. 158 b 'Of the Angell at Oxford where Virtue and Grace were servants¹: the text varies.

xvii. Text from RP8 p. 88 : in RPi2f. 68 b, headed ' Omnia iam fuerant Pontus, dama nulla reperta est' and subscribed ' Beniamine Johnson ' : in Plume MS. 30 f. 6 b, printed in vol. i, p. 185. 3 For yⁿ . . . neuer
 a] because . . . no Plume 4 And now not in Plume 5 haue]
 get Plume 6 For . . . hath] because . . . has Plume

XIX.

On the Good Wives Ale

T:R:

- W**hen shall wee meete againe and have a tas,
Of that transcendent liquor wee dranke last ?
 Wha,wild ingredients did your woman use
 To mad her drinke witjiall ? I,made mee loose
 5 My witts before I quench',my thirst. There came
 Such whymzyes int' my head, and such a fflame
 Of ffiery drunkennesse had sing'd my nose,
 My Beard shrunke in for ffeare, and there were those
 Tha,tooke me ffor a meteor : some, more ffarre
 10 Remote, suppos'd I was a blazing starre.
 Theearth,Ithought,jus,asIrose,i , w e n , R o u
Round in a whirling course of merriment ;
 My head was ever stooping, and my nose
 Offerd to be a suter to my toes ;
 15 My mouth did stand a wrye, jus,as i,were
 Labouring to whisper something in my eare ;

xix. Text, revised, from Ash 3 f. 92. 'T: R:^f = Thomas Randolph. Ascribed to Jonson in Hy f. 12, 51 if. 3, and Dobell MS (= D) printed in 'The Athenaeum' 1 October 1904. Ascribed to 'Th. Jay' in Ash 2 f. 13. Anonymous in Add 17 f. 158, Ash 2 p. 13, SI 4 f. 94 b (Copies in Hf and Eg. 4 f. 2 no, collated.) Printed anonymously in 'Witts Recreations Augmented', 1641, sig. Y 5, 'A Drunkard' (= WR), and Francis Beaumont's 'Poems'. 1653. sig. M 8 verso, 'The Good Fellow' (= B). i When] S^f SI i and] to WR, B 2 liquor wee dranke] Ale we dranke of Add 17, Ash 2. SI i, SI 4, D, WR, B 3 your] ihe Add 17. Ash 2, SI i, D, WR, B: y*SI 4 use] choose SI i 4 mad] make Ash 2, B 5 There] then Add 17 6 Such whymzyes int'] Such whimseys in Add 17, D, SI i, SI 4: So manye whimses Ash 2 head] brayn Ash 2, WR, B 7 had sing'd] besingd Ash 2 8 and there were] Ther were oi Add 17, SI i, SI 4, D, WR, B: ther was of Ash 2 9 meteor] Comet Add 17, Ash 2, SI i, SI 4, D, WR, B g, 10 some, . . . suppos'd I was] some a far distance remote though, me SI i, D: some a farr distan, remote though, me Add 17, Ash 2, WR, B: some a fazre Distan, tooke me for SI 4 "I] me Ash 2, D jus, as I rose] jus, as i, was Add 17, SI i, SI 4, D, WR, B: Jus, at, was Ash 2 12 whirling] wheeling Add if. Ash 2, SI i, SI 4. D, WR, B 13 stooping] drooping Add 17, SI i, SI 4, D, WR: dropping Ash 2 14 Offerd] Offering Add 17. Ash 2, SI i, SI 2, D, WR, B 15 did stand] was growne WR, B 15-16 After 20 in B. 15-20 Replaced in Ash 2 by My Guttf weare mines of sulpher and my set, of parchet, teeth strooke fier when they mee, my Eyes did shine like Torch, and the night, As Darke as hell before, by them grew light. The firs, couple, My Guts... m e this point in WR, B 16 whisper something] whisper somewhat D: reach the whisper WR, B my] mine SI i, D

My Pockhol'd fface (they say) appear'd to some
 Much like a drye and drayned Honnycombe ;
 My tongue did swimme in ale, and joy'd to boast
 Himselfe a better seaman, then the toast; 20
 Each brewer tha,I me,I kist, and made
 Suite to become a prentice to the trade ;
 One did approve the motion when hee saw
 Tha,mine owne leggs would the indenture draw.
 Well, Sir, I grew starke mad, as you may see 25
 By this adventure uppon Poetrye.
 This you may guesse, I amjio,quite
 Growne sober yet, by these poor lines I write.
 I only doo',for this, tha,you may see
 Although I pay'd ffor ale, ye,i,pay'd mee. 30

No,likely to have been written by Jonson, drunk or sober. The allusions to beard, mouth, and pock-holed face recall the gibes in Dekker's *Satiromastix* (1602, L 4), 'your face full of pockey-holes a n dpimples', 'thou has,such a terrible moutht h
thy beard's afraide to peepe out', and the 'face puncht full of
 Oylet-holes, like the couer of a warming-pan'. This may have suggested the attribution. Nor would Jonson have written the admission in lines 25-8 of the worthless quality of the verse.

The heading 'T:R:' in Ashmole 3 was intended to suggest
Thomas Randolph, and G. C. Moore Smith printed the poem as his
 in *Palaestra*, 148, pp. 252-3. It is a possible attribution. Incidentally the allusion to the pock-holed face would suit him.

My Physiognomic two years agoe
 By the small Pox was mar'd

he wrote in his *Apology* for making a false prediction in 1628 or 1629 (*Poems*, ed. Thorn-Drury, p. 68).

17 Pockhol'd] pock-hole B 18 Much] Just B drayned] burned
 Add 17. SI 4 : burning Ash 2. SI I. D, B 20 Himselfe a better]
 I, selfe a greater B 22 Suite . . . prentice] Suter to bee apprentice
 Ash 2, 5 I I, D : Sui, to be bound apprentice WR, B 24 mine] my
 Ash 2, B would] Could Ash 2, B: did SI i indenture] indentures
 Ash 2, D, B After 24 Ash 2 adds Nay when I pis, my urine was soe
 hot,] yt, burn, a hole quite through the Chamber pott: lines 3 and 4
 are added after 15 in Ash 2 25 as] tha, D, SI I. WR 27 This
 you may guesse] You easily may guesse SI I, SI 4, D, Ash 2, B
 28 poor] weake WR 29 tha, you may] to le, you Ash 2, WR, B
 30 Although I pay'd] H o w though y o u paid Add 17, SI 4, D: T h
though y^a paid SI r: Who s'ere paid WR, B for ale] for th' Ale SI r:
 for the ale Ash a: for ale Add ye, it] I'm sure', WR, B

XX.

An Oracle of Heliodorus.

Inevitable fate to shun
 Thou tak's a world of toil:
 For this you lef, your native home
 And Nile's unrivalled soil.
 5 Take courage, friend, for I will give
 Th'Egyptian fields again
 To thy despairing eyes ; till then
 Our gues, thou shal, remain.

Printed in Willis's *Curren, Notes for September 1851*, vol. i, p. 68, by 'A. F. W.' who stated tha, he had bough, from Mr. Willis Jonson's own copy of Underdowne's translation of Heliodorus, 'on the title-page of which was the autograph of " Ben Jonson, tanquam explorator " ', and tha, the above rendering, also autograph, was Jonson's revision of the oracle to Casiliris. The date of the translation was no, given, and the alleged signature on the title-page runs together the motto which Jonson usually pu, a, the top right-hand corner and the signature which was invariably in Latin, ' Sum Ben. Jonsonij '.

The oracle is in the second book of Heliodorus' *Aethiopica*, ch. xxvi in the Greek text, Book II, f. 33 in Underdowne's rendering of 1569. Underdowne has

Apolloes answeare to Casiliris.
 "To shunne the destinies sure decree
 thou takes, all this toyle ;
 And therefore leaus, the fruitfull coast
 of *Nilus* fertile soyle.
 Haue a good harte, for I will geue,
 the blakish fieldes againe :
 Of *JEgypt*, vnto thee, till then,
 our friende thou shal, remaine.

The Greek original is

"lyyos dcipdfLēi>o\$ dir⁹ cucrrdxvof Trapd NeiAov,
<f>εvyas poipdutv vrijfLar' cpujdevcvv.
TtrXaQi, aol yap eyco KvavavXaKos Avyuirroto
abfia TTe.oov Btaaat. Nvv o" cfios croo <f>Llos.*

The lax paraphrase attributed to Jonson could only be authenticated i fw eweresurei, wasi nh i shandwriting. H ewouldn
have slurred the epithets ' Nile fertile in corn ' and ' dark-furrowed Egypt '. 0

XXI.

Horace, Odes II. iii.

jEquam memento rebus in arduis
Servare mentem.

From *Certain Selected Odes of Horace, Englished ; and their Arguments annexed.* . . . London, Printed by H. L. [i.e. Henry Lownes] for Richard Moore ; and are to be solde a, his Shop in Sain, Dunstans Church-yard in Fleet-street. 1621. On pages 22, 23. The translator was John Ashmore.

This Ode following, came unto my hands under the name of M^r. *Ben. Iohnson* : which (for the happy imitation of *Horace*) I have also published.

Ad Author em.

*Till his Sire true doe claim his due,
This-Infan, I doe cherish :
Though withou, name, i, were a shame
I, should in darknes perish.*

REmember, when blinde Fortune knits her brow, 5
Thy minde be no, deieted over-lowe :
Nor le, thy thoughts too insolently swell,
Though all thy hopes doe prosper ne'r so well.
For, drink thy teares, with sorrow still opprest, 10
Or taste pure vine, secure and ever blest,
In those remote and pleasan, shady fields
Where stately Pine and Poplar shadow yeelds,
Or circling streames tha, warble, passing by ;
All will no, help, swee, friend : For, thou mus, die. 15
The house, thou hast, thou once mus, leave behind thee,
And those swee, babes thou often kisses, kindly:

A loose paraphrase completely a, variance with Jonsen's theory and practice of translation, bu, there is this external evidence for the attribution. The strange fac, is tha, i, appeared in Jonsen's lifetime. On page 74 is an epigram 'Ad Insignem PoStam, D. *Ben. Iohnson*'.

Notice tha, Ashmore found the poem anonymous (1. 3). The tone of the rendering is as far removed as possible from the dignity, the terse, clear-cu, style, and the exquisite technique of Horace. Jonson would no, have wandered from the original in this way; see his renderings in *The Underwood*, Ixxxv-vii.

- And when th'has,gotten all the wealth thou can,
 Thy paines is taken for another man.
 20 Alas ! wha,poor advantage doth i,bring,
 To boaste thy selfe descended of a King !
 When those, tha,have no house to hide their heads,
 Finde in their grave as warm and easie beds.

XXII.

From Thomas Jordan's *Poeticall Varieties*, 1637.

On my "Friend and adopted sonne M^r. *Thomas
 Jordan the Infant-Poe,of our Age.*

- T7Rom smalles,Springs, arise the greatest,streames,
 r Thou has,begun well; who dares hinder thee
 Still to goe forward, and dilate thy beames,
 T'acquain,the world with thy sweete Poetry ?
 5 Speake still in *tune*, hide not.thy worth bu,shew it,
 Tha,*men* may say, th'ar,*borne* no,*made* a Poet.
 And he tha,fayles thy growing Muse to cherish,
 May his fix,hopes in expectation perish.
 Thine (sance Complement) J. B.

Professor W. D. Briggs inclines to accep,this (*Anglia*, **xxxix**,
 pp. 242-3), bu,there is no evidence of its genuineness. The
 inverted initials ' J. B.' were never used by Jonson, and why
 should Jordan disguise the honour of a contribution from him ?
 Jordan is never recorded as one of the sons of Ben.

THE ENGLISH GRAMMAR

THE TEXT

The English Grammar was first printed in the 1640 Folio. It is the second piece in the section containing Jonson's translation of the *Ars Poetica* and the *Discoveries*. The collation is D4, E-K⁴, L², pages 31-84, with the title-page on D4 recto, four aphorisms of Latin grammarians a, the foo, of D4 verso, the preface on E1 recto, and the text, from E1 verso to L2 verso. The running title is *The English Grammar*, with 'Grammatica Anglicana' on the pages which contain the Latin notes.

The *Grammar* is the worst printed of all Jonson's texts; its technical form baffled the compositor. There are a few press corrections, but they are obvious. In Bk. I, ch. iv,

1.1 2.4 the printer, first, followed up N' with O', but saw his mistake and corrected it to P': 'Latines' in the Latin note on B in this chapter is corrected to 'Latinis'. Indeed, the only correction of a mistake which affects the sense—and this, no, very seriously—is in note (r) on 'E' in ch. iii, 1. 55: Jonson, noticing the interchange of 'e' and 'i', instanced 'enduce, for induce: endite, for indite; her, hir', and the compositor a, first, put a third ' for ' before 'hir'. 'Hir' had ceased to be an alternative form in Jonson's day.

A good example of the confusion in the text is in the account of the letter 'V' (I, ch. iii, 11.124-7). 'When i, leadeth a sounding Vowell in the Syllabe, i, is a Consonant: as in save. reve. prove, love, etc.'¹ The editor of 1692 emended 'When i, followeth the sounding Vowell'; Francis Cunningham preferred 'When i, leadeth the silent vowel'. I, did not, occur to either editor that there was a lacuna in the text. The printer tripped over a o/foioTcAevroi/. Jonson in this passage is borrowing, without acknowledgement, from Mulcaster's *Elementarie*. From this source we can recover the sense conjecturally, thus: 'i, is a Consonant, as in (vantage, revive, deliver. And when i, leadeth

a qualifying *e.* in the end Syllabe : as in) *save. reve. prove, love, etc.*¹

The misquotations of Latin grammarians in the first book of the *Grammar* and of English poets in the second book are serious. It is a delicate question how far Jonson himself shares the responsibility for these along with the printer. We have traced nearly all the originals, and as Jonson told Prince Henry, when the Prince commanded him to cite the ancient authorities on witchcraft, drawn upon in *The Masque of Queens*, * *i, hath prou'd a worke of some difficulty*^f to¹ retrieve^f them.

The Latin note on 'Q' (I, ch. iv, 1. 127) is a curiosity. Terentianus Maurus is accused of saying 'Q. *prcemisd semper u. simul mugi, sibi* \ ' Q, with *u* always in front of it, sets up a howl for itself—as well *i, might!* The true reading is 'Q *prcemissd semper u simul iungi, sibi* \ ' Q in front, always couples *u* with it'. This is an error in the minim letters 'iun-' and 'mu-'. We were on the point of putting the correct reading in the text, when we discovered that **h a , m** **was an error of Ramus's printer, and that Jonson blindly copied it.** Another atrocious blunder is in note (z) on long and short, o, in ch. iii, 1. 95, '*qua gremium minstre, usum*': 'gremium'^f should be '*geminum*'—the 'double use' of the long and short sounds. Here Jonson was not responsible.

Our old poets fare equally badly in the second book. We have, of course, to remember that Jonson was using the black-letter texts of Chaucer, Gower, and Lydgate. He owned a copy of Thomas Speght's edition of Chaucer, 1602.¹ For Gower's *Confessio Amantis* he probably had one of the two editions printed by Berthelette in 1532 or 1554; for Lydgate's *The Fall of Princes* probably Tottell's edition of 1554. In the following lines² Jonson misquoted Speght's text:

Under a Shepherd false, and negligen, (II, ch. iii, 1. 37) :
¹ false ' should be ' soft'.

¹ See vol. i, p. 263.

² Collected by Miss E. B. Gebhard, in *Modern Language Notes*, vol. xlix, pp. 452-4.

That blacker then the Divell was (II, ch. iv, 1. 13) :
¹ blacker ' should be ' fouler '.

Such things as fraile man purposeth (II, ch. vii, 1. 25) :
¹ fraile men ' should be ' man's frail wit '.

As greata praise is to keepe well, as win (II, ch. vii, 1. 35):
¹ praise ' should be ' craft '.

But the following are clearly printer's blunders :

And Troylus he found alone in bed (II, ch. iii, 1. 75). As Jonson is illustrating the prepositional use of *a* in words like ' aboard^f, ' alive^f, he certainly wrote ' a bed '.

So, too, in the description of Thisbe from *The Legend of Good Woment*

And in cave with dreadfull fate she start (II, ch. v, 1. 47)—
 he must have given the correct reading ' and in a cave with dreadfull foote she start '.

This makes one wonder whether in 1. 64

Forsake sinne, ere sinne you forsake—

he did not write the Chaucerian imperative ' Forsaketh '. If so, the printer, taking *itto* to be a third person singular indicative, miscorrected *itto* ' Forsake ', the only imperative he knew, and left the line a syllable short. Speghthas¹ To forsake', so that Jonson made some alteration.
¹ Their ' for Chaucer's ' Ther ' (II, ch. iii, 1. 85) and ' This merchants^f o r ' This ' (I, ch. xix, 1. 48) we also find u s p
to be compositor's misreadings.

The printer's worst mistakes are with the text of Gower.

~~And sayth, that in thys his fall,~~ l A n dsa
Th' end of the world. (II, ch. iii, ll. 91-3.)

Gower—and for once the 1692 text—have ' upon us is fall Th' end ', which Jonson must have written.

Right so, without ayre, or livet
No man, ne beast, might thrive. (II, ch. viii, 11. 35-6.)

Gower's text has ' withouten ayre on live[?], and ' on ' is a certain correction of ' or '.

The most senseless misprint in the Grammar is the
quotation in chapter viii, ll. 77-9 :

~~Or, whether that he friez or not,~~ w e a t , O
He will be idle all about.

Gower's text has 'Or he be in or he be out' and Jonson evidently wrote 'He' with a capital letter, which the printer twisted into a double *t* with the apostrophe.

A bad blunder in a Lydgate quotation occurs a little earlier, ll. 63-4 :

But it may fall a Drewry in his i g h t , T
To outrage a Giant for all his great might.

Drewry should be 'Dewry' (dwarf)—Lydgate's text has 'dwery'—and 'outrage' should be 'outraye' (vanquish).

The commonest misspellings of the printer are 'dip-

the forms which Jonson always used. In Bk. I, ch. iii,
 l. 19 the printer himself altered the spelling to 'Syllables',
 but left it unchanged on the same page in line 48.
 The spelling 'Preposition' survives, fossil-like, in
of the parts of speech in the ninth chapter. Jonson
 probably used it throughout the *Grammar*, but the Folio
 never prints it elsewhere.

Such errors as wrong paragraphing and mis-spacing are found on every page.

The English Grammar was next printed in the Folio of 1692. It is a remarkable attempt by a competent scholar to bring the grammar up to date. The revision was fully discussed in our introductory essay.¹ The changes, which sometimes amount to a complete rewriting, are recorded in the critical apparatus. Only in a few passages has the reviser misunderstood the original. His one grave error is in Bk. I, ch. xiii, ll. 12-16, where he did not see that

¹ See vol. ii, pp. 424-8.

was a misprint for *silente*, and he printed sheer nonsense which has been faithfully reproduced by all later editors.

This rewriting of the *Grammar* has had serious consequences. The 'Booksellers' edition of 1716, which was

~~naturally reprinted the text of a copy without submitting it to a critical scrutiny. But Whalley in 1756 and Gifford in 1816, who at any rate professed to edit, also reissued it, though both of them show incidentally that they had glanced at the text of 1640. Whalley in the account of the superfluous second / in such words as 'hell, bell, kill' (I, ch. iv, 11. 104 foil.) prints the text of 1692, 'And even in these Custom rather than Necessity obliges us to use a Double /t' with the remark, 'It is thus expressed in the folio of 1640 : " And even in these, it is rather the haste and superfluity of the pen, that cannot stop itself upon the single /, than any necessity we have to use it."¹ From whence this, and other variations so far as slight alterations proceeded, I know not; whether from the fancy of the editor, or from any different copy than what I have happened to see.¹ The copy he 'happened to see' was the 1716 edition, from which he set up his own text. It did not occur to him that the first edition, published within three years of the author's death, must have been set up from his own manuscript. A change of one word in I, ch. xvi, 1. 37—¹ sometime (1640) for 'commonly' (1692)—is the solitary instance in which he went back to the genuine text, and then he printed 'sometimes'. Of his own blunders it is useful to cite 'useful' for 'usual' at the beginning of the eighteenth chapter of the first book.~~

Gifford was little better. In the thirteenth chapter of the first book he silently inserted the genuine text of 11. 22-9, which were completely rewritten in the 1692

Folio, without clearing up the bewildering singular of 'prince' should be 'princis', and

in chapter xviii, 11. 67-8, he inserted Jonson's reference to the archaic form of 'help' — 'but holpe, is seldom used' — **save with the Poets — which had been dropped from the** text of 1692. Gifford set up his text from a corrected copy of Whalley's edition. For the text of the plays he had consulted the old Folios and Quartos, but he had grown weary of his long task. Even if Horace was right in pleading for an author, *Verum operi longo fas est obrepere somnum*, the excuse will not cover the lapses of an editor.

In 1875 Gifford's edition was reissued at the Chiswick Press in nine handsome volumes, with introduction and appendices by Lieut. Col. F. Cunningham. Cunningham supplied additional notes, mostly corrections of Gifford's text. But of the *Grammar* he said, 'The want of general interest in the subject prevents my going into the text of the *Grammar* with the same pains I have bestowed upon the *Discoveries*', though he admitted that the Folio of 1640 had been 'badly treated'. It says little for Cunningham that, knowing this, he left the Folio in the lurch. He made only one correction, to supply an accidentally omitted note of Jonson's. He woke up, however, when he edited for the firm of Hotten the smaller three-volume edition still in use in the reissue by Messrs. Chatto and Windus. He went back to the 1640 text, remarking that Gifford has taken innumerable liberties with the text of the *Grammar*, and he printed in parallel columns the account of the letters 'Z' and 'H' in the third chapter of the first book and the changes in the last chapter of the second book on the subject of punctuation, though in this last he got the examplest, he wronged a round and called Gifford's **the Folio's and the Folio text Gifford's. He accepted a** number of minor changes from the 1692 Folio in blind ignorance of their origin, supposing Gifford to have made them.

In 1909 Miss A. V. Waite edited a reprint of the *Grammar* from Cunningham's revision of Gifford after collating it **with the Harvard University copy of the 1640 Folio. She**

modernized the text and translated the Latin notes, n
always happily.¹ She never mentions the 1692 Folio.

The only trustworthy reprint of the *Grammar* is Mr. Strickland Gibson's edition of 1928, beautifully printed by Mr. Stanley Morison at the Lanston Monotype press. It is a *verbatim* reprint omitting the Latin notes and adding in an appendix all variant readings of any importance in the 1692 edition. It is the only text which the student can confidently use.

The present edition attempts a critical recension of the original text in the 1640 Folio. Where we have corrected misquotations, then the name of the original author, as 'Ramus', ¹Chaucer
'Chaucer', is given in the critical apparatus. Where this
 authority is not clear from the context, the correction is

given as 'Editor from Mulcaster'. Insertions in the text
are enclosed in conical brackets, words which we propose
 to omit in square brackets. We hope that the text is now
 intelligible. It is pathetic that this 'painfull churning' of
 the '*elementarily senex*', as he modestly described himself
 and his working method, should have been left in chaos for
 three hundred years.

¹ For instance, *quae gremium ministretusum*, 'which keeps its customary position' (p. 16); '*V. vade, vem, refer*; *teneto vultum*' '*V* in *vade, vem. refer*; except *vultum*' (p. 34), which should be '*adduce vade, veni*, and be sure to have '*i.e.* not omitting, '*vultum*' ; *praece-dente-*, 'following' (p. 49); *patitur*, 'it is allowed' (p. 60).

THE ENGLISH GRAMMAR.

MADE

BY

BEN. JOHNSON.

**For the benefit of all Strangers, out of his obser-
vation of the English Language now
spoken, and in use.**

*Confessando, certissime loquendi Magistra, utendumq;
placit foret, ut nuncius per publicum
sternat. Quind.*

Printed M.DC.XL.

*Printed M.DC.XL. om. F3, which appends to the motto from Quintilian
the four citations printed in F on the back of the title-page*

*Non obstantia disciplines per illas euntibus sed circa illas
harentibus. Quinct.*

*Major adhuc restat labor, sed sank sitcum venid, si gratid
carebit: Boni enim artificis partes sunt, quam paucissima
5 possitemittere.*

Scalig. lib. I. c. 25.

*Neq₃ enim optimi artificis est, omnia persequi.
Gallenus.*

*Expedire Grammatico, etiam, si qucedam nesciat.
Quinctil.*

3 gratia F₃: gratid F

THE PREFACE.

THe profit of *Grammar* is great to Strangers, who are
 it is ~~honourable to our selves. For, by it we communicate~~
 all our labours, studies, profits, without an Interpreter.

We free our Language from the opinion of Rudenesse, 5
 and Barbarisme, wherewith it is mistaken to be diseas'd;
 We shew the Copie of it, and Matchableness, with other
 tongues; we ripen the wits of our owne Children, and
 Youth sooner by it, and advance their knowledge.

Confusion of Language, a Curse. 20

Experience *breedeth* Art: *Locke* of Experience, Chance.

Experience, Observation, Sense, Induction, are the fower
 Tryers of Arts. It is ridiculous to teach any thing for un-
 doubted Truth, that Sense, and Experience, can confute.
 So *Zeno* disputing of *Quies*, was confuted by *Diogenes*, 15
 rising up and walking.

In Grammar, not, so much the Invention, as the Disposi-
 tion is to be commended: Yet we must remember, that the
 most excellent creatures are not ever borne perfect; to
 leave Beares, and Whelps, and other failings of Nature. 20

12 fower] four F_3 17 Grammar] Crammer F

“**T**UL. Caesar Scaliger. *de cans. ling. Lot. Grammatici unus finis est recte loqui. Neq₃ necesse habet scribere. Accidit enim Scriptura voci, neq₃ aliter scribere debemus, quam loquamur.*

Ramus in *definit.* pag. 30. *Grammatica est ars bene loquendi.*

(b) *Veteres, ut Varro, Cicero, Quintilianus, Etymologiam in notatione vocum statuere. (Ramus.)*

(c) *Dictionis natura prior est, posterior orationis. Ex usu veterum Latinorum, Vox, pro dictione scripta accipitur: quoniam vox esse possit. Est articulata, qua scripto excipi, atq₃ exprimi valeat: inarticulata, qua non.*

Articulate, vox dicitur, qua genus humanum utitur, distinctim a ceteris animalibus, qua muta vocantur: non, quod sonum non edant; sed quia soni eorum nullis exprimantur proprii litterarum notis. Smithus de recta, & emend. L. Ang. script.

(d) *Syllaba est elementum sub accentu. Scalig. lib. 2.*

(e) *Litera est pars dictionis indivisibilis. Nam, quamquam sunt litterae quaedam duplices, una tamen tantum littera est, sibi quaeque sonum junum certum servans. Scalig. Et Smithus, ibid. Litera pars minima vocis articulata.*

(f) *Natura litterae tribus modis intelligitur; nomine, quo pronunciatur; potestate, quod valet; figura, quod scribitur. At potestas est sonus ille, quo pronunciatur, quern etiam figura debet imitari, ut hic Prosodiam, Orihographia sequatur. Asper. (Ramus.)*

(g) *Prosodia autem, 6- Orihographia partes non sunt; sed, ut sanguis, & spiritus per corpus universum fust. Seal, ut supra. Ramus, pag. 31.*

(h) *Litera, a lineando; unde, linere, lineatura, littera, & littera. Neque enim a litteris littera quia delebantur; prius enim*

(c) 5 *utitur, distinctim] utitur distinctim, F 8 emend. W: amend. F L. Ang.] L. Latin. F (d) lib] lib. F*

(f) 3 *pronuntiatur Ramus: pronunciari F 4 imitari, ut hic Ramus: imitari; ut hic F.*

(The first Booke: Of Etymologic.)

CHAPTER I.

Of Grammar, and the Parts.

Grammar is the art of true, and well speaking a Language : the writing is but an Accident.

^w The parts of Grammar are

Etymologic	}	{	the true notation of words.	5
Syntaxe,			the right ordering of them.	

(c) A Word, is a part of speech, or note, whereby a thing is knowne, or called : and consisteth of one, or more Syllabes.

^(d) A Syllabe is a perfect sound in a word, and consisteth of one, or more Letters. 10

W A Letter is an indivisible part of a Syllabe, (f) whose Prosody, or right sounding is perceiv'd by the power; the Orthography, or right writing by the forme.

W Prosodie, and Orthography, are not parts of Grammar, but diffus'd, like the blood, and spirits through the whole. 15

CHAPTER II.

(h) Of Letters, and their powers.

IN our Language we use these twentie, and foure Letters. A.B.C.D.E.F.G.H.I.K.L.M.N.O.P.Q.R.S.T.V.W.X.Y.Z. a. b. c. d. e. f. g. h. i. k. l. m. n. o. p. q. r. s. t. v. w. x. y. z. The great Letters serve to begin Sentences, with us, to lead proper names, and expresse numbers. The lesse make the fabricke 5 of speech.

Ch. i. 8, 9 Syllabes . . . Syllabe] Syllables . . . Syllable F₃ (and so throughout)

Our numerall Letters aret

	I.	I.
	V.	5.
10	X.	10.
	L.	50.
	C.	100.
	D.	500.
	M.	1000.

15 ^(l) All *Letters* are either *Vowells*, or *Consonants*: and,
^(A) are principally knowne by their powers. The *Figure* is
 an *Accident*.

(^c) A *Vawell* will be pronounced by it selfe : A *Consonant*,
 not without the helpe of a *Vowell*, either before, or after.

20 *The received Vowells in our tongue, are*
a. e. i. o. u.

(m) *Consonants* be either *Mutes*, and close the sound, as
b. c. d. g. k. p. q. t. Or, *HaLfe Vowells*, and open it, as
/ . / . m. n. r. s. x. z.

25 *H.* is rarely other then an *aspiration* in power, though a
Letter in forme.

W. and *Y.* have shifting, and uncertain seates, as shall
 bee showne in their places.

CHAP. III.

Of the Vowells.

All our(m) *Vowells* are sounded doubtfully. In quantitie,
 (which is Time) long, or short. Or, in accent, (which
 is Tune) sharp, or, flat.

Long in these words, and their like : *Debating, congeling.*
 5 *expiring, opposing, enduring.*

Short, in these: *Stomaching, severing, vanquishing, ran-*
stoning, picturing.

Sharpe, in these : *Hdte. mite. bite. ndte. pule.*

Flat, in these : *Hat. met. bit. not. pul.*

factce,quamdeletesunt.Atformespotius,atEovatasr a t i o
quàm interitús, habeamus. Scal. ibid.

(i.) Litera genus quoddam est, cuius species primariæ ^{d u a}
vocalis, & consonans, quarum natura, & constitutio non , v
 potest percipi, nisi prius cognoscantur differentiæ ^{o r m a t}
quibus factum est, ut inter se non convenirent. Scal. ibid.

(k) Litera differentia generica est potestas, quam nimis rudi
 consilio veteres, Accidens appellavunt. Est enim forma quædam
 ipse flexus in voce, quasi in materia, propter quæ flexum fit, ut vocalis per se
ut vocalis per se possit pronunciari: Muta, non possit. Figura
 autem est accidens ab arte institutum; potestque attributa mutari.
 lul. Caes. Seal, ibidem. De vi, ac potestate literarum tam
 accurate scripserunt Antiqui, quam de quavis alia succe
 professionis parte. Elaboravunt in hoc argumento Varro, Pris
 cianus, Appian, Ille, cui cymbalum dicebatur mundi: & inter
 rhetores non postremi iudicii, Dionysius H a l i c a r n a s s
Caius quoque Cæsar, & Octavius Augustus. Smith, ibid.

(l) Literæ, quæ per se ipsas possint pronunciari, vacantes
 sunt; quæ non, nisi cum aliis, consonantes. Vocalium
 nomina simplici sono nee differente a potestate, proferuntur.
 Consonantes, additis vocalibus, quibusdam praposis; aliis
 postpositis. (Scaliger.)

(m) Ex consonantibus, quarum nomen incipit a C o n s o n
Muta sunt; quarum à vocali, semivocales: Mutas non inde
 appellatas, quod parum sonarent, sed quod nihil.

(n) Omnes Vocales ancipites sunt (i.e.) modo longæ; modo
 breves: eodem tamen modo semper depictæ, (nam scriptura
 est imitatio sermonis, ut pictura corporis. Scriptio vocum
 pictura.) & eodem sono pronunciata. Nisi, quod vocalis longa
 bis tantum temporis in effando retinet, quam brevis. Utræque
 cecinitille de Vocalibus.

Temporis unius brevis est, ut longa duorum. (Smithus.)

(i) 2 consonans] Consonans F <k>i Literæ .. est] Litera .. est.
 Scaliger 3 fitt~\ fit; F 6 tarn Smith, Fj : turn F 10
 Halicarnasseyus] Halicarnasseyus Smith

(1) 3 differente a potestate. Fa : differente. d potestate F proferun
 tur] proferantur F

(m) i quarum] quorum F 3 sed] Sed F

(n) 4 pictura.)] pictura. (Smithus) F

At

(o) *Litterce hujus sonus est omnium Gentium feré communis. Nomen autem, S-figura multis nationibus est diversa.* Scalig. & Ramus.

Dionysius *aita. esse evtfixitvorarov ex plenitudine vocis.*

(p)

Teren. Maurus.

A, primalocum litteras i c a b o r e s u m i t , I m m u n i a , r
Immunia, rictu patulo, tenere labra ;

Ut quis in eam esalepocubite vocis, d u c i t , U t
Nec partibus ullis aliquos ferire dentes.

(q)

Et

Triplicem differentiam habet: primam, mediocris rictus:

secundam, lingue, eam duplicem; altera m interiori
nempe inflexa ad interius cælum palati ; alteram genuinos
prementis.' Tertia est labri inferioris. Ramus, lib. 2.

Duos primas Terentianus notavit; tertiam tacuit.

Tereptianus I.

E, qui B sequitur, vocula dissona est priori :

Qui de primita lūm modico tenor er i c t u m , E t (l i n g
Et (lingua) remotos premit hinc, & hinc molares.

(o) I estomnium] c stomnium F 4 ftyawararov] Jv+utvErarov F
 (q) 8-10 Prose in F 9 Quid] quia F 10 Et lingua Maurus : & F

10

art. act. apple, ancient.

al. smal. gal. fal. tal. col.

Salt. malt, balme. calme.

20

Et

Where it endeth, and soundeth obscure, and serves as an accent, to produce the Vowel preceding: as *30*
in made, steme, stripe, 6re, cure, which else would
mad. stem. strip. or. cur.

which else would sound *henc.* *Swinge*, to make it differ
from *swing*. Use, to distinguish it from *us*. 35

Whistle,gristle,bride,fickle,thimble,&c.

love, glove, move, redresse. crosse. losse.

40

15 French] French F 18 al. . . . col.] all. small,gall,fall,tallt
call. FS 19 Syllables F originally,miscorrected to Syllables 38
britle] bristle FS 39 or double ss. om. F3 40 redresse . . .
losse om. F3

Where it ends the former Syllable, its sound is *long* *is* *h*
but flat : as in

derive, prepare, resolve.

Exceptin *Derivatives*,or Compounds of the sharp e_i and
45 then it answers the *primitive* e or *simple* in the first sound ;
as

Agreeing, of agree: fare-seeing, of fore-see: being, of bee.

Where itendeth a lastSyllabe,with one,or mo *Conso-*
nants after it,iteither soundeth flat,and full: as in
 5° *Descent,intent,amend..offend,rest. best.*

Or, it passeth away obscur'd, like the faint light, as it is, *Written, gone, Written, gotten, open, said, &c.*

^(f) Which two letters *e.* and *i.* have such a neerenesse in our
tongue,as often times they enterchange places : as in
55 *enduce*,for *induce*: *endite*,for *indite*: *her*,*hir*.

W /t

Is of a narrower sound then *e*, and uttered with a lesse opening of the mouth; the tongue brought backe to the palate, and striking the teeth next the cheeke-teeth.

⁶⁰ **J**tis a Letter of a double power.

As a *Vowell* in the former, or single Syllables, it hath sometimes the sharpe accent; as in

binding, minding, pining, whining, wiving, thriving, mine, thine.
~~thine.~~

⁶⁵ Or, all words of one Syllable qualified by *e*. But, the flatin more, as in these, *bill, bitter, giddy, little, Incident*, and the like.

In the Derivatives of sharpe Primitives,itkeepeth the
sound,though itdeliver over the Primitive *Consonant*to
TOthe nextSyllabe; as in

divi-ning.requi-ring.repl-ning.

41 Syllable] Syllable *F* (so 48)
saieth F *diuel om. Fa*
 miscorrected in *F* : *om. Fy*

48 mo] more Fj 52 *saieth.*']
55 *her,hir* F originally : *her,for hir*
63 *thriving]* *thriving* F

(r) Apud Latinos, e. latins sonai in Adverbio benfc, quam in Adverbio here: *kujus enim posteriorem vocalem exilius pro-*

heri *ad quid, latius in multis quod, prae* **Ut ab Eo, verbo,**
deductum, ire : iis, & eis : Diis, & Deis : Febrem, febrim :
 Turrem, turrim : Priore, <£ priori. Ram. <£ Scalig.

Et propter hanc vicinitatem (ait Quint.) e. quo loco i. fuit:
ut Menerva. leber. Magester : pro Minerva, liber, Magister.
 (Ramus.)

W

i-

Porrigitictum genuino(s) propi ad ipsos
Minimum é renidet supero tenus labello.

Terent.

I. Vocalis sonos habet res: suum, exilem: a l t e r u m ,
latiorem prop[ri]oremq[ue] ipsi e; & tertium, obscuriorem ipsius
u ; inter qua duo Y Graece vocalis sonus continetur: ut non
inconsulto Victorinus ambigua millam quama d d u x i m u
per Y scribendam esse putarit, Optimus. Scalig.

Ante Consonantem I. semper est Vocalis.

(r) z Latinos} latinos F
 (s) 2 genuinos Maurus: genuine F. F\$ 5 propiorem Scaliger
 6 u;] u. F 7 Graca] graca F 9 putdrif] putdrit. F

(t) *Ante Vocalem ejusdem syllable Consonans.*

(u) *Apud Hebrtzos I. perpetud est Consonans; ut apud Gr&cos Vocalis.*

(w) *Utin Giacente. Giesu. Gioconda. Giustitia.*

O.

(x) *O Pronunciatur rotunda ore, lingud ad radices Hypoglossis reducta. (Ramus.) d iucpov, & w peya, unica tantum nota, sono differenti.*

(y) *Profertur, ut cu.*

(z) *Utoo. vel ou. Gallicum.*

*Un aquoniqmsathabitum est notare f o r m a ,
Pro temporibus quæ geminum ministret usum.*

*Retrorsus adactam modicè teneto linguam,
Igitur sonitum reddere (cum) voles m i n o r i , R e t r o
Rictu neq̃ magno sat erit patere labra,*

At longior alto tragicum sub oris antro

Molita, rotundis acuit sonum labellis.

Terent.

Differentiam o. parvi (et magni) valdi distinctam Franci tenent: sed scriptura valdi confundunt. O, scribunt per indi ut proferunt. At w scribunt modo per au. modo per ao. quæ sonum talem minimi sonant, qui simplici, & rotundo motu oris proferri debet. (Ramus.)

(x) z rotundo } mundo F\$
(c) 3 geminum Maurus: gremium F, Fj 4c u m Maurus 1 0t
magni Ramus

For, a Consonant falling between two Vowels is not new
will be spell'd with the latter.

In Syllables, and words, composed of the same Elements
it varieth the sound, now sharpe, now flat: as in 75
give, give, alive, live, drive, driven, title, Me.

But these, use of speaking, and acquaintance in
will teach, rather than rule.

^w I. in the other power is meerely another Letter, and
would aske to enjoy an other Character. For, where it
leadsthe sounding Vowell, and beginneth the Syllable
it is ever a Consonant: as in

James. John. jest. jump, conjurer, perjured.

And before Dip(h)thongs: as Jay. joy. juyce. [ast] having the
force of the Hebrewes^(M) Jod, and the Italians^(ID) Gi. 85

Ot

<*> Is pronounced with a round mouth, the tongue drawne
back to the root: and is a Letter of much change, and
uncertaintie with us.

In the long time it naturally soundeth sharp, and high: 90
as in

*W chdsen. hdsen. h6ly. fdly.
6pen. 6ver. ndte. thrdte.*

In the short time more flat, and a kin to u. as

^(l) *cosen. dosen. mdther.* 95
brother, love, prove.

In the Dip(h)thong, sometimes it soundeth out: as

*Aught, sdught. ndught.
wrought, mow. sow.*

But oftner upon the u: as in *sdund. bound, hdw. ndw.* 100
thdu. cow.

76 *title, title} title, title F: om. ¥3* 84 *Diphthongs F₃ (so 97)*
as om. JFj 85 *Hebrews . . . Italians] Hebrew . . . Italian F\$* 89e
uncertain Fj 92 *hdsen om. ¥3 fdly om. F\$*
93 *thrdte om. Fa* 94 *a kin] a-lrin Fj* 95 *cdsen. ddsen. om. F\$*
97 *itsoundeth out] the o is sounded Fj* 100 *But. . . u:] Butu*
of tner; Fj

In the last Syllables before *n.* and *w.* it frequently looseth :
as in

person, action, will dw. billow.

105 It holds up, and is sharpe, when it ends the word, or
Syllable: as in

g6. frd. s6. nd.

except in *to*, the Preposition. *Two*, the numerall. *Do*, the
Verbe, and the compounds of it; as *undo* : and the Deriva-
tives; as *Doing*.

It varieth the sound in Syllables of the same Class *h a r a*
and proportion : as in

shdve. sh(r)6ve. glove, grdve.

Which double sound it hath from the *Latine*: as

115 ^(fl) *Voltus, vultus. vultis, voltis.*

Vt

<*> Is sounded with a narrower, and meane compasse, and
some depression of the middle of the tongue, and is like our *i.*
a letter of a double power. As a Vowell it soundeth thin
120 and sharpe, as in *use* ; thicke and flat, as in *its*.

It never endeth any word for the nakednesse, but yeeldeth
to the termination of the Diphthong *ew*, as in *new, &c.* or the qualifying *e.* as in *sue. due ;* and the like.

102 looseth] looseth its sound Fj 105 holds up] keeps its sound
-Fj 108 in/d] intf A. V. Waite HI varieth] sometimes
varieth Fj 113 shdve. shrdve. Mark Hunter conj.: prdve. strdvc. F\$
120 us/ us F 122 trew. om. Fj 123 due ;] due, true. ¥3

~~Papyriano notum fuit. Quid enim de quinque permulata invicem,~~
~~ut Hecobe, & Notrix, Culchides, & Pulixena, scriberentur?~~
 Sic nostri pceptores, Cervom, Servomq; u. 6- o. litteris
 scripserunt; sic dederont, probaveront, Romanis olim fu&re.

~~Aliquot Italiae Civitates olim habebant; sed loco ejus ponebant,~~
~~u. & maxime Umbri, & Tusci. Atq; u. contrâ, teste apud~~
 eundem Papyriano, multis Italia populis, in usu non erat;
 sed utebantur o. unde Romanorum quo& vetustiss(i)mi in
 multis dictionibus, loco ejus, o. posuSrunt: ut publicum, pro
 publicum; polcrum, pro pulcrum; colpam, pro culpam.
 (Ramus.)

vt

(b) Quantscribere Graius, nisi jungat Y. nequibit.

~~Hanc edere vocem quod ille paramuso~~ r e , N i t a m
~~Nitatur ut U. dicere, sic citebatur ortus.~~

Productius autem coeuntibus labellis

Natura soni pressi altius meabit. Terentian.

Etalibi.

~~Græcadip(h)thongusc v, literistamennostris v~~ a c a t
~~Sola vocalis quod u. complet hunc satis sonum.~~

Utin titulis, fabulis Terentii pcepositis. Græca Menandru :

~~Græca Apollodori, pro Mcvay&pov, & 'A m t o o S w p o v , S '~~
~~ne quis de polestale vocalis hujus addubitare possit, etiâ~~
 & mutis animalibus testimonium Plautus nobis exhibuit
 Peniculo Menechmi.

~~Me. Egon' dedi? Pe. tu tu inquam, viriafferin~~ o c t u
~~Quæ tu, tu, usq; dicat tibi : nam nos, jam nos defessi sumus.~~

(a) 3 Hecobet] Hecobe. F 4 Sic] sic F 5 sic] Sic F
 dederont] dedéront F 6 Plinio . . . Priscianum, F\$: Plinio. . .
 Priscianum F n ejus. lejus F 11-12 publicum . . . publicum ;
 polcrum . . . pulcrum ; colpam . . . culpam Fj : italic type in F
 i nequibit.] nequibit F 3 dicere, F3 : dicere F 7 diphthon-
 gus F3 9 in titulis] intitulis F 10 ^B ei ro AAo&6pou] Ano Mo Mpov F
 14 Me.] ME. F: Ma<trona> Plautus Egon¹ . . . noctuam. prose in F
 15 tu. tu F3 : tu, tu F

478 Grammatica Anglicana.

Ergo ut ovium balatus jra liter & sonum: sic noctuarum cantus, &• cuculi apud Aristophanem sonum hujus vocalis vindicabit. Nam, quando u. liquescit, ut in quis, 6- sanguis, habet sonum communem cum Y gracd, \ wm>0 6 KOKKVE etmn KOKKV. Et quando Coccyx dixerit Coccy. (Ramus.)*

(c) *Consonans ut u. Gallicum, vel Digamma profertur.*

Hanc & modd quam diximus J. sirrnd jugatas

Verum est spacium sumere, vimq Consonantum,

Ut quaque tamen constiterit loco priore :

Nam si juga quis nominet J. consona fiet.

Versa vice (si) sit prior V. sequatur ilia, Terent.

ut in vide.

W,

(d) *Ut Itali proferunt Edoardo in Edouardo, 6- Galli, ou-y.*

Suavis, suadeo, etiam Latini, ut sov-avis, &c. At quid attinet duplicare, quod simplex queat sufficere ? Proinde W. pro copid Charact&rum non reprehendo, pro novd literd eerie non agnosco. Veteres& Anglo-Saxones pro ed, quando nos W. solemus uti, figuram istius modi p. solebant conscribere, qua non mult&m differt ab ed, qud 6- hodie utimur t. simplici, dum verbum inchoet.

Smithus de red. & emend. L.A. Script.

(b) 18 sanguist] sanguis F

(c) i profertur.] profertur F
6 5i Editor from Maunis

(d) 8 *] Fj has a turned italic 'a'.
amend. F

5,6 Nam 51 . . . ilia,prose in F

10 de rect.] drect. F emend.}

« When it leadeth a sounding Vowell in the Syllabe, it is a Consonant: as in (*vantage, revive, deliver.* And when it leadeth a qualifying e. in the end Syllabe : as in) *save. reve. prove, love. &c.*

Which double force is not the unstedfastnesse of our Latine. 130

wt

(^d) I shut the V. geminated into the full sound, and though it have the seat of a Consonant with us, the power is always Vowellish, even where it leads the Vowell in any Syllabe : as if you marke it, pronounce the two uu. like ov. quicke in passage, and these words :

au-ine. ov-ant. ov-ood. ovast. sou-ing, sou-am.

will sound, *Wine, want. wood. wast, swing, swam.*

So put the aspiration afore, and these words :

hou-at. hou-ich. hou-eele. hov-ether. 140

will be *What, which, wheele. whether.*

Into the Dip(h)thong there will be no doubt: as in *straw. saw. know.*

Nor in Derivatives: as *knowing, sowing, drawing.* where the double w. is of necessity used, rather than the single u. lest it might alter the sound, and be pronounced *knoving. saving, draving.* as in *saving, having.*

Yt

Is also meere Vowellish in our tongue, and hath only the power of an i. even where it obtains the seat of a Consonant: as in *Young. Younker.* which the Dutch, whose Primitive it is, write *lunk. Junker.*

124 sounding] silent F. Cunningham the Syllabe] a Syllabe Fj
 126 leadeth] followeth Fj 125-6 vantage ... as in Editor from
 Afulcaster 126 save, reve.] save. give. FS After 130 Fj adds
 1 When it begins a Word or Syllabe (a Vowel following it) it always has
 the force of a Consonant- as Jade, Jove, Judge, Ac.' 135 like ou]
 like the Greek ou F₃ 138 will] Will F (so 141) want.] want F
 140 hov-ich] hov-itch F₃ 142 Diphthongs FS 145 where Fj :
 Whether F 147 as] As F 150 seat] Seat F 151 which]
 Which F (so 161)

And so mightwe write

louth. ies. ioke. tender,iard. ielke.

155 (for) *Youth,yes. yoke,yonder,yard,yelke.*

butthatwe choose y. to distinguish from; . *Consonant.*

In the *Dip(h)thong* itsounds always i. as in

may. say. way. joy. toy. they.

And in the ends of words : as in

160 *deny,reply,defy. cry.*

which sometimes are written by i. butqualified by e.

Butwhere two ii. are sounded,the firstwill be ever a y.
as in Derivatives:

denying,replying,defying.

165 V> Only in the words received by us from the Greeke,as
Syllabe,Tyran,andt h elike,itkeepest h esoundo ft h et h
and sharpe u. in some proportion. And this we had to say
of the Vowells.

CHAP. IIIL

Ofthe Consonants.

B

H A tththesamesoundwithus,asithathwiththeL a t i n
always one, and is utter d with e closing of the lips.

C

5 U) Is a letter,which our Fore-fathers mightvery well
havespar'di no u r tongue:butsinceithathobtainedp l a
both in our Writing, and Language, we are not now to
quarrell *Orthographie*,or *Custome* ; butto note the powers.

Before a. u. and o. itplainly sounds k. *Chi.* or *Kappa*,as in
10 *cable,coble,cudgett.*

ch. ill. 155 *yoke.] yoke F* 156 *but] ButF* to distinguish . ..
Consonant. 'f o r distinctionsake; a sw e usually difference t o l y e o r f e i
from to his along. &c. F3 157 *Diphthong F3* 161 *by e.] by e ;*
as, *justifie*, Ac. *FS* 162 «. *ji. i. F* 166 *Syllabe, Tyran] Syllable.*
TyrantFj 167 *proportion. Fj : proportion ; F.* There is no note
(e) in this chapter.

ch. iv. 8 *quarrell] quarrel with W*

(f) *fi quidem eandem (literam) pro u. Græco retine(n)t: certi alium, quam i. omni in loco reddere debebat sonum. (Smithus).*

B

(g) *Nobis cum Latinis communis. Smith.*

Nam mutajubetcomprimil o b e . l . i a V o c a l i satin
Vocalis at intus locus exitum ministrat. Terent.

B. *Labris per spiritus impetum reclusis edicimus. Mart. Cap.*

C

(h) *Litera Androgyne naturd, nee mas, nee faemina, & utrum& et neutrum. Monstrum liter<?, non liter a ; 1 guaranteee specimen, non artis. Smithus.*

Quomodonuncutimur vulgd, aut nullas, aut nimirum
vires: nam, modo k. sonat, modo s. At si litera sit à k. & s.
diversa, suum debet habere sonum. Sed nescio quod man-
strum, aut Empusa sit, qua modd mas, modo fcemina, modo

serpens, modd cornix, appareat; & p e re j us modii
pro suo arbitrio, tam s. quam k. exiga ædibus, & fundis suis:

ut iure possint & duce literæ B contenderc u mc p e re
Vnde vi: Neg dubito quin, ubi sit Prætor æquus, facile c. cadet
caussa. (Smithus.)

(f) *i retinent Smith.*

(g) *i Latinis corr. F: Latines F originally 4 Cap.] cap. F*

(h) *i Androgyne naturd>] Androgyne, naturd F 2 et neutrum Smith:*
est neutrum F 7 Empusa] empusa Smith: Empusa F. Fj 8
modd cornix] modo cornix F imposturas] impostor as F 9 quam]
qudm corr. F: quam F originally 11 Vnde] vnde F aquust] aquus F

(i) *Apud Latinos c. eandem habuit formam, & Characterem; quem Eÿp̃a apud Græcos veteres. An hæc fuit occasio, quòd ignorantia, confusioq̃ eundem, apud imperitos, dederit sonum C. quem S. nolo affirmare.* (Smithus.)

(k) *Vetustæ illius Anglo-Saxonicæ linguæ, & scriptionis peritiores contendunt, apud illos atavos nostros Anglo-Saxones, C. literam, maximè ante e. & i. eum habuisse sonum, quem et (nos) pro tenui roũ Chi. sono agnoscimus: & Itali, maximè Hetrusci, ante e. & i. hodiè usurpant. Idem ibidè.*

(l) *C. molaribus super linguæ extrema appulsis exprimitur.*
Mart. Cap.

Terentianus.

*C. pressius urget; sed, & hinc, hincq̃ remittit,
Quo vocis adhærens sonus explicetur ore.*

D.

D appulsu linguæ circa dentes superiores innascitur.
(Mart. Cap.)

Terentianus.

(m) *At portio dentes quotiens suprema linguæ
Pulsaverit imos, modiceq̃ curva summos,
Tunc D. sonitum perficit, explicatq̃ vocem.*

F.

(n) *Literæ à Græcâ φ. recedit lenis, & hebes sonus. Idem.*

(i) 3 *eundem, apud Smith, F3: eundem, quod F* *imperitos.] im-*
peritos F

(k) 4 *quem est quem, & F* *nos Smith* *tenuis] vero Smith*

(l) 7 *appulsu] Appulsu F* *superiores should be inferiores*

(m) 2 *summos] summas F*

(n) 1 *Literæ] Litera F* *Græcâ] græcâ F*

Or before the *Liquids*. I. and r. as in
clod, crust.

Or, when it tends a former Syllabe before a *Consonant*:
as in

acquaintance, acknowledgement, action. 15

in all which itsounds strong.

^{U)} Before *e . a n d i . i t h a t h a w e a k e s o u n d , a n d h i s s e t*
like s. as in

certaine, center, civill, citizen, whence, Or, b
Or, before the Dip(h)thongs: as in 20
cease, deceive.

^(fc) Among the *English-Saxons* it obtain'd the weaker force
of *Chi.* or the *Italians* C. as in

Capel. cane. did. cyrce.

which were pronounced 25

Chapel, chance, child, church.

^{a)} It is sounded with the top of the tongue, striking the
upper teeth, and rebounding against the Palate.

D

Hath the same sound, both before, and after a *Vowell* with 30
us, as it hath with the *Latines*: *a n d i s p r o n o u n c ' d s o f t*
the tongue a little affecting the teeth, but the nether
teeth most.

F

Is a Letter of two forces with us: and in them both 35
sounded with the nether-lip rounded, and a kind of blowing
out: but gentler in the one, then the other.

The more generall sound is the softest; ⁽ⁿ⁾ and expresseth
the *Greeke é* as in

Faith, field, feight. force. 40

where itsounds *ef*.

15 *acquaintance, acknowledgement.* } *ac-quaintance, ac-hnowledgement.*
F3 *action, om. F3* 16 in] In F 20-1 before . . . *deceive.*]
before *Dipthongs*, whose first *Vowel* is 0 or i; as in *e a s e , d e c e i v*
ceiling. F3 23 of *corr. F: om. originally Italian]* *Italian F3*
24 *cane.*] *cans. Smith* 25 which] Which F 40 *f eight]* *flight*
Mark Hunter conj. 41 where] Where F

^(o) The other is eu, or *vau*. the *Digamma* of *Claudius* : as
in

cleft, of *cleave*, *left*, of *leave*.

45 The difference will **best** be found in the word *of*, which
as a preposition sounds

ou. 0/him.

As the Adverbe of Distance.

off, *farre* *off*.

5°

G

(& Is likewise of double force in our tongue, and is sounded
with an impression made on the mid'st of the palate.

Before *a*. *o*. and *u*. strong ; as in these

gate. *got*. *gut*.

55 Or, before the *Aspirate h*. or, *Liquids I*. and *r*. as in

ghost, *glad*, *grant*.

Or in the ends of words : as in

long. *song*. *ring*, *swing*, *eg*. *leg*. *lug*. *dug*.

***eg*. *leg*. *lug*. *dug*.**

60 Except the qualifying *e*. follow; and then the sound is
ever weaker ; as in

age. *stage*. *hedg*. *sledge*. *judg*. *drudge*.
***sledge*. *judg*. *drudge*.**

Before *u*. the force is double : as in

65 *guile*, *guide*, *guest*, *guise*.

where its soundeth like the *French gu*. And in

Guin. *guerdon*, *languish*, *anguish*.

where itspeakes the *Italian gu*.

42 cv F3 : k F 44 cleft.] cleft. F 47 ou F3 : ov F him.]
speaking of a Person or Thing. Fj 55 Aspirate] Aspate F 59
eg. om. Fj 66, 68 where] Where F 67 Guin Editor from
Mulcaster : *guin* F: om. F3

(o) Vau consona Varrone, & Didymo, testibus, nominata est J. figura a Claudio Cesare facia etiam est. Vis ejus, & potestas eadem, quae Digamma Aeolici, ut ostendit Terentianus in v. consona.

V. vade, veni, (vota) refer; teneto vultum:

Crevisse sonum perspicis, & coissec r a s s u m ,
Unde Aeoliis litera fingitur Digammos.

J. quasi cv. contrarium F. qua sonatē. (Ramus.)

G.

(p) Spiritus cum palato. Mart. Cap.

De sono quidem hujus literae satis constat: sed distinctionis causa Characterem illi dedunt aliqui hunc). ut discernatur a

G. N a mut Graecii, nsecundd Conjugatione tres habent litera
κ. γ. χ. tenuem, mediam, densam; Angli quatuor habent, ratā
 proportionem sibi respondentem, ka. ga. ce. }*. Illae simplices, 6-
 aperte; hae stridulce, & compresses: illa media lingua, officio
 sonantur; hae summae linguae ad interiores illarum superiorum
 dentium gingivae efflantur. Quod & est ka. ad ga. idem est ce.
 ad). Smithus, ibid.

Voces tamen pleraque, quas Meridionales Angli per hunc
 sonum TOU). pronunciamus in fine: Boreales, per G. pro-
 ferunt: ut in voce Pons, nos bri): illi brig. In ruptura, brek :
 illi brek. Maturam avem ad volandum, nos fiiij : illi flig.
 Ibid.

Apud Latinos proximum ipsi C. est G. Ita ē. Cneum, \$ <
 Gneum, dicebant: Sic Curculionem, & Gurgulionem :

{o} i Didymo] Dydimō F, Fj 5 vota Maurus 8 cv -F3 • **^F
 {p} 4 literas] H Uras indices Smith 8 illis] illisa. F 9 Q} **
 coir. F: Qoudq F originally idemesf] idtmetf 15 Ibid.] ibi. r'

appulsdenimadpalatumlingud,modicello relictoi n t e r v a
spiritu tota pronunciatur. Scal. de caus. L. L.

Et Terentianus.

Sic amurca(m), quae vetustis cept per c. s c r i b i t u
Esse per g. proferendam crediderunt plurimi:

Quando apopyri Graeca vox est; ya/x/xa origo pceferat.

Apud Germanos semper profertur y.

K.

(q) Cum Kalends Græcam habebant diductionem & s o . n u
~~*nam Græcam sunt mutuati literam Romani, ut eas expri-*~~
merent. Et credo tamen, fecit runcted forma, ut < §. C. Romanum
efformarent, quod haberet adjunctum, quasi retro b a c i l l u
ut robur ei adderent istā formā IC. Nam C. Romanum
stridulum quiddam, < 5- mollius sonat, quam K. Græcum.

Est & hæc litera Gallis plane supervacanea, aut eerie qu.
est. Nam, qui. quae. quod. q u i d , n u l l d p r o m m c i a n t d i f f e r e
ne minimā quidem à ki. ke. kod. kid. (Smithus.)

Faucibus, palato% formatur. Capel.

Romani in sud serie non habebant.

L

(r) Lingud, palato fa didcescit. M. Cap.

Etsic Dionysius yAu/fimn-oy, dulcissimam literam nominal.
(Ramus.)

Qui nescit, quid sitesse Semi-vocalem, ex nostrd lingud
facile poterit discere: ipsa enim litera L quandam, quasi
Vocalem, in se videtur continere, ita ut juncta Mutae sine
Vocali sonum faciat; ut

abl. stabl. fabl. &c.

¹ (p) 21 amnr catn Ramus 22 proferendam Ramus: proferendum F
 plurim.] plurimi F

(q) i Kalends] Kalends, F 5 uf] ut. F 1C Editor from Smith :
 Kf Nam] nam F 8 qui.] qui F 10 Fauci bus] faucibus
 F, continuing the previous sentence. u habebant] habebunt F

(r) 6 juncta Smith : juncta F

Likewise, before *e.* and *i.* the powers are confus'd ; and utter'd, now strong, now weake : as in 70

*get. geld. give. }
gitterne. finger. J } strong.*

In

*genet, gentle, gin. } éé
gibe, ginger. J .* 75

But this use must teach : the one sound being warranted to our Letter, from the *Greeke* : the other from the *Latine* throughout.

Wee will leave *H.* in this place ; and come to

Kt 80

Which is a Letter the *Latines* never a c k n o w l e d g e d
only borrow'd in the word *Kalende*. They used *qu.* for it.
Wee found it as the *Greeke** . a n d a s n e c e s s a r i e L e t t e r i t p r e c e d e s
precedes, and followes all Vowells with us.

It goes before no Consonants but *n.* as in 85

knave, knel. knot. &c.

and */.* with the quiete. after : as in

mickle. pickle, trickle, fickle.

Which were better written without the *c.* if that which wee have received for *Orthographic*, would yet be contented to 90

be altered. But that is a *reformation*, rather to be desired than hoped for, after so long a reign of *ill-custome* amongst us.

It followeth the *s.* in many words : as in

skape. skoure. skirt. 95

skirmish, skrape. skuller.

which doe better so sound, then if written with *c.*

L

^w Is a Letter *hcdfe*-vowellish: which, though the *Italians* (especially the *Florentines*) abhorre, wee keepe entire with 100 the *Latines*, and so pronounce.

71-2 strong] long *F, Fj* 72 *gitterne* *F* 87 and] And *F*
88 *mickle.* om. *F3* *tickle.*] *tickle, F3* 94 many] some *Fj* 95
skape. skoure. om. *Fj* 96 *skrape. skuller.* om. *£3* 97 which]
Which *F*

It melteth in the sounding, and is therefore call'd a liquidité the tongue striking the root of the palate gently.

It is seldom doubled, but where the Vowel sounds hard
105 upon it: as in

hell, hell, kill, shrill, trull, full.
~~shrill. trull. full.~~

And, even in these, it is rather the haste, and superfluitie of the pen, that cannot stop itself upon the single /. then any no necessitie we have to use it. For, the letter should be doubled only for a following Syllable's sake: as in

killing, beginning, begging, swimming.

M

^(l) Is the same with us in sound, as with the *Latines*. It is
115 pronounc'd with a kind of humming inward, the lips clos'd. Open, and full in the beginning: obscure in the end: and meanly in the midd'st.

N

^w Ringeth somewhat more in the lips and nose: the tongue
120 striking back on the palate, and hath a threefold soundt *shrill* in the end: *full* in the beginning, and *flatin* the mid'st.

They are Letters neere of kin, both with the *Latines*, and us.

P

125 ^(H) Breaketh softly through the lips; and is a Letter of the same force with us, as with the *Latines*.

Q

^(w) Is a Letter we might very well spare in our *Alphabet*, if we would but use the serviceable *k*. as he should be, and restore
130 him to the right of reputation he had with our Fore-fathers.

104 It is] It's *F* 104-5 It is ... upon it:] It's always doubled at the end of words of one Syllable; *Fj* 108-ji And, even . . . sake:] And even in these Custom rather than Necessity obliges us to use a Double /. For the Consonant should be doubled only for the sake of an additional Syllable at the end of a word, beginning with a Vowel; *Fj* 108 these, corr. *F*: these *F* originally 112 swimming] Swimming *F* 124 *P* corr. *F*: *O F* originally 129-30 he . . . him . . . he] it . . . it . . . it *Fj* 130 reputation corr. *F*: reputationt *F* originally

qua nos scribimus cum e. in fine, vulgd

able, stable, fable.

Bed certi illud e. non tarn sonathlc, qudm fuscum illud, & fcemininum Francorum e. Nam nequicquam sonat.

Alii hcec scribunt

abil. stabil. fabul.

tanquam d fontibus

habilis. stabilis. fabula.

Verius) sed nequicquam proficiunt. Nam, consider atius auscultanti, nee i. nee u. est, sed tinnitus quidam, vocalis naturam habens, qua naturaliter his liquidis inest. (Smithus.)

M

(s) Labris imprimitur. M. Capella.

Mugitintus abditum, ac c&cum sonum. Terent.

Triplex sonus hujus literCE M. Obscurum, in extremitate dictionum sonat u. templum: Apertum, i. n principio, magnus: Mediocre, in mediis, ut umbra. Prisc. (Ramus.)

(t)

N

Quartcesonitus fingitur u. s. sub n. a. l. a. t. 0, Quo spiritus anceps coeat naris, & oris. Terentian.

Lingud dentibus appulsd collidit. Mart. Capella.

Splendidissimo sono in fine; & subtremulo pleniore in prineipiis; medioeri in media. Jul. C. Seal.

(u)

P

Labris spiritu erumpit. Mar. Cap.

Pellitsonitum de mediis fords labellis. Ter. Maurus.

Q

(w) Estlitera mendica, supposititia, vertfervilis, manca, & decrepita; & sine u tanqudm bacillo nihil potest: & rum u.

(r) 9 qua] Qua ¥ 13 h&c] hac haud inconsultd F\$ 15 tanquam] Tanquam F 16 stabilis Fj: stabulis F 17 Verius, sed] Sed Fj

(s) i Labris Capella: Libris F, Fj 2 c&cum] cacutn F 5 mediis,] mediis F umbra.] umbra F

(t) 3 appulsd] applausd F3

nihil valet amplius quant k. Qualis qualis est, hanc jam habemus, sed semper cum prtzcendente sud u. ancilld superbd.

Smithus.

*Nam& Q. prcemissd semper u. simul mugit sibi,
Syllabam non editura, ni comes sit tertia
Qu&libet vocalis. Ter. Mau.*

Diomedes ait Q. esse compositam ex c. & u. (Ramus.)

Appulsu palati ore restricto {profertur. M. Cap.

R

(x) *Vibrat tremulis ictibus aridum sonorem. Ter. M.*

—*Sonat hlc de ndre canind*

Litera.—————*Pers. Sat. I.*

R Spiritum lingua crispante corraditur. M. Cap.

Dionysius TWV o/oyeveeui' •yewcuorarov •ypdpjia.

2 congeneribus generosissimam appellavit. (Ramus.)

S.

(y) *S promptus in ore (est)_t agitur& ponk denies,
Sic lenis & unum ciet auribus susurrum. (Ter. M.)*

*Quare non est merita, ut a Pindaro diceretur Zav icijSS^Aoi/.
Dionysius quo£ cum ipsum expellit, rejicit^ ad Serpentes,
maluit canem irritatam imitari_t quam arboris naturales
susurros sequi. Seal.*

*Ram. Est Consonantium prima, & fortissima hcec litera,
ut agnoscit Terentianus,*

Vivida est hcec inter omnes, at% densa liter a.

Sibilum facit dentibus verberatis. M. Cap.

*Quotils litera media Vocalium longarum, vel subjecta longis
esset, geminabatur ; ut Causa. Cassus. Quintil.*

(w) 3 Qualis Fa : Qualis, F 4 cum precedents . . . superbd]
pracedentem suae u, vt ancilla superba Smith : Jonson's praccdentc
should be sequente 6 mugif] So misprinted in Ramus : iungit
Maurus (see p. 456)

(x) 4 Spiritum] Spiritum, F 5 yffuainoanooj] yccauibnaFv F
(y) i est Mamus 3 5ffr 5ffr^Aov] Zay]pbh]6v F 5 anboris
F3 : arbores F : arborum Scaliger 8 Terentianus,] Terentianus. F:
12 geminabatur Quintilian : geminabitur F, F3

For, the *English-Saxons* knew not this halting Q. with her waiting-woman u. after her, but expressed

quaile. kuaile.
quest. , kuest.
quick. ^y kuick. 135
quit. kuil.

Till *custome*, under the excuse of expressing enfranchis'd words with us, intreated her into our Language, in

quality, quantityé
quarel, quintescence, &c. 140

and hath now given her the best of k^s. possessions.

R

^w Is the *Dogs Letter*, and hurreth in the sound ; the tongue striking the inner palate, with a trembling about the teeth. It is sounded firme in the beginning of the words, and more 145
liquid in the middle, and ends : as in

raare, rrip, e r , And so in the *Latine*.

S

W Is a most easie, and gentle Letter, and softly hisseth 150
against the teeth in the prolation. It is called the *Serpents Letter*, and the chiefe of the *Consonants*. It varieth the powers much in our pronounciation, as in the beginning of words, that the sound is weak before *o w e l l s* , *D i p* (

Dip(h)thong(s), or Consonant(s): as, 155

Salt. say. small, sell.
shrik. shift, soft. &c.

Sometime it inclineth to z. as in these

Muse. use. rose.
nose. wise. 160

and the like: where the latter *Vowel* serves for them a r
or accent of the formers production.

So,after the *Halfe-Vowells*,or the obscure *e.* as in
Bels. gems. wens. burs.

165 *Chimes,rimes,games.*

Where the *Vowell* sits *hard*,itis commonly doubled.

Tt

^{U)} Is sounded with the tongue striking the upper teeth,and
hath one constantpower,save where itprecedeth (*i*),and
170 thatfollowed by a *Vowell*; as in

Faction,action,generation,corruption.

where ithath the force of *s.* or *c.*

Xt

W *b* rather an abbreviation,or way of shortwriting with
175 *us*,then a Letter. For,ithath the sound of *k.* and *s.* It
begins no word with *us*,thatI know,butends many : as

Ax. hex. six. fox. box.

which sound the same with theset

Backs,knacks,knocks,locks. &c.

180 *Zt*

⁽¹⁾ Is a Letter often heard amongstus,butseeldome seene:
borrow¹ d of the *Greekes* atfirst,being the same with (*.* and
soundeth a double *ss.* With *us* ithath obtained another
sound ; butin the end of words : as

185 *Muse. maze. nose.*

Hose. gaze. as.

Never in the beginning,save with rustick people,thathavet
zed. zay. zit. zo. zome.

and the like,for

190 *Said. say. sit. so. some.*

Or in the body of words indenison'd ; as

azure,zeale. zephyr e. &c.

165 *rimest]* Names,F3 169 *it]*; F (cf. *Love Restored*,175): I; Fj
170 *that]* thatagain Fj a *Vowell]* another *Vowel* F\$ 172 *where]*
Where F 175 A. and s.] *c* and *s*; or *k* and *s.* Fj 177 *hex.* om. Fj
178 *which]* Which F the same with] like Fj 183-6 *soundeth . . .*
as.] *soundeth*,in the middle,as double *ss.* tho' in the end of many
English words (where 'tis only properly used) it seems to sound as *s* ;
as in *maze,gage* ; And on the contrary,words writwith *s* sound like * ;
as *Muse,nose,hose.* as. Fa 183 *With]* with F 187 with rustick]
in the West-Country Fj 189 *and]* And F 191 *indenison'd;]* in-
denison'd,i.e. derived from the *Greek*,and commonly us'd as English; Fj

T.

(x) tqd^ssuperidentibusintimae s t o r i g o , S u m m d
Summā satis est ad sonitum ferire linguā.

Teren.

tappulsu lingua,dentibus% appulsis excuditur.

M. Cap.

Latini factio. actio. generatio. corruptio. vitium. otium. &c.

X.

(y) Xpotestatem habetcs,& gs. utex crux. <& frux,appare[a]t.

Quorum obliqui casus suntCrucis 6- Frugis. Ram. in Gram,ex Varrone.

X quicquid c. <S- s. formavit,exsibilat. Capell.

Neque Latini,neq` Nos illd multum utimur. (Smithus.)

Z.

(z) Z vero idcirco Appius Claudius detestabatur; quad denies mortui,dum exprimitur,imitatur. M. Capel.

£ compendium duarum liter arum esta. 8. in und notd,& compendium Orthographic,non Prosodiz; quia hie in voce non una liter a effertur,sed dues distinguntur. Compendium ineleganter,& fallaciter inventum. Sonus enim,notd

illdsignificatus,inunamSyllabamnonperpetudc o n c l u
sed dividitur, aliquando. Ut in illo Plauti loco: Non Atticis-
 sat,sed Sicilissat,pro āTruci'fci,(7iiceAi(cij Greeds; £• ubi
 initium facit,estSa. non oaa. sicuti Zeus',non oaaev?,sed
 &o€vs. Ram. in lib. 2.

(x) origot~\ origo F

2 Summd| Summa F,Fa

(y) i ex| ex. F

(z) 8-9 AtticissatFj : AtticicissatF 9 drrriirfCcftFj : arrticf{n F
 10 Zdcf| {rife F. Fj

(a)

Ht

*Nulli dubium est, faucibus emicet quod ipsis**H litera, sive est nota, qua spiret anhelum. Ter.**H, contractis paulum faucibus, ventus exhalat. Mar. Cap.**Vocalibus anti sed (& antepostacunctis, Hastas, Hederas, quum loquor, Hister, Hospes, Hujus.**Soleis quanta nominibus Latina forma est, Graecis quoque
Si quando Choros, Phillida, Rhamnes, Thima dico.*

(Ter.)

*Recti quidem in hac parte Graecissanti nostri Walli. Smithus.**H. verb K O t e f o é v, aspiratio vocatur. Est enim omnium
literarum spirituosissima, vel spiritus potius i p s e, n u l l i
quam minimum egens officii eorum, quae modo nominavimus
instrumenta literarum formandarum. (Idem.)**H. extrinsecus ascribitur Vocalibus, ut minimum
Consonantibus autem intrinsecus, ut plurimum. (Ramus.)*

Ch.

*(b) Omnis litera, sive vox, plus sonat ipsa sese, cum post-
ponitur, quam cum anteponitur. Quod Vocalibus accidens
esse videtur: nee si tollatur ea, perit etiam, vis significationis:
ut, si dicam Erennius, absq> aspiratione, quamvis vitium
videar facere, intellectus tamen integer permanet. Conso-
nantibus autem, si (c) coharet, ut ejusdem penitus substantive**si dicam Cremos, pro Chremos. Unde hac considerata ratione,
Graecorum doctissimi singulas fecerunt eas quoque literas, ut
pro th. θ. pro ph. φ. pro chi. χ. Ram.*

(a) 5 anteposta Maurus : anteposita F, F\$ cunctis] cunctis F
6 Hister. Hospes] Hister. Hospes. F 9 Chore] Chores. F
Phillidat] Phillida. F : Phyllida Maurus Rhamnest] Rhamnes. F
Thimat] Thima. F : Thyma, Maurus 12 omnium] variarum FS
13 ipse. nullius] ipse. Nullius F 16 Vocalibus] omnibus Vocalibus
Fj 17 intrinsecus, ut plurimum] quibusdam intrinsecus F3
(b) 6 sic Ramus

H,

^w Whether it be a Letter or no, hath beene much examined by the Ancients, and by some, too much of the *Greeke* 195 partie, condemned, and throwne out of the *Alphabet*, as an *Aspirate* meere, and in request only before *Vowells* in the beginning of words, and after *p*. where it added a strong Spirit, which the *Welsh* retain after many *Consonants*. But, be it a Letter, or Spirit, we have great use of it in our 200 tongue, both beforehand after *Vowells*. And though I dare not say, she is, (as I have heard one call her) the *Queene mother of Consonants* : yet she is the life, and quickening of them.

Whether powers are before *Vowells* and *Dip(h)tongs*, 205 will appeare in

hal. heale. hill. hot. how. hew. hoiday. &c.

In some it is written, but sounded without power : as
host, honest, humble.

where the *Vowel* is heard without the *Aspiration*, *ost. onest.* 210
umbl.

After the *Vowel* it sounds ; as in *ah*, and *oh*.

Beside, it is coupled with divers *Consonants*, where the force varies, and is particularly to be examin'd.

Wee will begin with *Ch*. 215

Ch

^w Hath the force of the *Greeke* χ or *K*. in many words derived from the *Greeke*: as in

Charact. Christian. Chronicle.

Archangel. Monarch.

220

In meere *English* words, or fetch'd from the *Latine*, the force of the *Italian* *c*.

Chaplain. chast. chest, chops.

chin. chuf. churle.

194 Letter] Lerter F 195-6 much . . . partiet] much. . . ,partie
F some, . . . condemned] some of the Greek Party too much con-
demned -Fj 198-9 words, . . . retainel] words. The Welsh retain
it still F S1 9 8p Editor from Smith: xF203-4^o them.] o f
g. p, s, t, w; as also r when derived from the aspirate Greek j; as
Cheat, Ghost, Alphabet, shape, that, what, Rhapsody. Of which more here-
after. Fj 205 Diphthongs FS 207 hoiday] heiday FS : holiday
F. Cunningham con;. 209-11 humble . . . umble. om. F3 210
where] Where F ost.] as ost, Fj 221 Latinet] Latine F

225

Gh

^w Is only a piece of ill writing with us : if we could obtaine
of *Custome* to mend it, it were not the worse for our Lan-
guage, or us : for the *g.* sounds just nothing in

trough, cough.

230

might, night. &c.

Only, the writer was at leisure, to adde a superfluous
Letter, as there are too many in our *Pseudographie.*

Ph. & Rh

U> Are used only in *Greeke* infranchis'd words : as

235

Philip. Physick. Rhetorick. Rhodes. &c.

Sh

^w Is meerely *English* ; and hath the force of the *Hebrew* V.
shin, or the *French* *ch.* as in

shake, shed, shine, show.

240

shrinke. rush, blush.

Th

*'> Hath a double, and doubtfull sound, which must be
found out by use of speaking ; sometimes like the *Greeke* O.
as in

245

thief, thing, lengthen, strengthen, loveth. &c.

In others, like their 8. or the *Spanish* d. as

this. that. then. thence. those. bathe. bequeath.
~~*those. bathe. bequeath.*~~

And in this consists the greatest difficulty for a *l p h*
250 and true writing : since we have lost the Saxon Characters
6. and p. that distinguished the

Se. frick.

Sou. pin.

*Dine. from * pred.*

255

So. prive.

Wh

Hath beene inquir'd of in w. And this for the Letters.

257 And Fj : and F

Gh.

(c) Sonum illius g. queer ant, quibus ita libet scribere : aures
profectumecenunquam in h i svocibussonitumTOU.g.p o t e r a
haurire.

Smithus de rect. §§•emend. (L.A. Script.)

Ph. & Rh.

(d) Liter a <f>. apud Graecos PV aspirata.

Sh.

(e) Siquis errori n literis ferendus est, cum corrigi
nusquam in ullo sono tolerabilior est, quam in hoc, si scribatur
Sh. & in \>. si scribatur per th. Nam hae duae quandam violentiam
grandiorem spiritus in proferendo requirunt, quam
ceterae literae. (Smithus) ibid.

Th.

(f) Hoc literisive characterem, quam spinam, id est, s. t. p. o
nostri Proān appellabant. At nostri, & qui proximè ante
librorum impressionem vixerunt, sunt abusi, ad omnia ea
scribenda, quae nunc magno Magistrorum errore per th.
scribimus: utt

Sed ubi mollior exprimebatur sonus, superne scribebant;
ubi durior, in eodem sulco: molliorem appello ilium, quern
Anglo-Saxones per 5. Duriorem, quern per J>. exprimebant.
Nam illud Saxonum 8. respondet illi sono, quern vulgaris
Graeca lingua facit, quando pronuncians suum S. aut Hispani
d. literam suam molliorem, ut cum veritatem verdad appel-
lant. Spina autem illa J>. videtur referre prorsus Graecorum 0.
Ath. sonum 6. non recte dat. Nam si 0. non esset alia deflexio
vocis, nisi aspirationis additae, ceque facile fuit Graecis rp. r.
aspirationem adjungere, quam ro>. />. (Smithus.)

(c) 2 TOO F3 : oC F

(d) P'] p F3

(e) 5 ctBtera Fj : cetera F

(f) i)orne Fj : pome F n Graca] Orzca Fj 12 veritatem]
veritatem, F 15-16 rut. . . r\$ Fj : rut. . . rcD F

CHAP. V.

Of the Diphthongs.

D*Ip(h)thongs* are the complexions, or couplings of Vowells, when the two Letters send forth a joynt sound, so as in one Syllabe both sounds be heard : as in

Ai. or Ay.

5 *Aide, maide. said. pay. day. way.*

Au. or Aw.

audience, author, aunt. law. saw. draw.

Ea.

Earle. Pearle. meate. seate. sea. flea.

1° To which adde *Yea*, and *plea* ; and you have at one view all our words of this termination.

Ei.

*sleight, streight. weight,
theirs, peint. feint.*

15

Ew.

Few. strew, dew. mew.

Oi. or, Oy,

*Point, joynt. soile. koile.
joy. toy. boy.*

20

Oo.

good. food, moode. brood. &c.

Ou. or, Ow.

*rout, stout, how.
now. bow. low.*

ch. v. Heading. *Diphthongs* F3 (so I, 39) (*) om. FS (Jonson forgot to insert a note) 4 Ai. or Ay.] Ai. or Ay. F 6 Au. or Aw.] Au. or Aw. F 14 *peint. feint.* om. Fa 16 *mew* Mark Hunter from Smith : *anew* F, Fj 18 *koile]* coil Fj 20 Oo] OO F

Vi. or, Vy. 25

buye. or buie. juice, or juyce.

These nine are all I would observe: for to mention more
were but to perplex the Reader. The *Oa.* and *Ee.* will be r
 better supplied in our *Orthographic* by the accenting *e.* in
 the end: as in 30

brd de. I de. c o t e, b o t e .qu&ne.sine.
bote. quene. sene.

Neither is the double *ee.* to be thought on, but in *deriva-*
tives; as *trees, sees,* and the like: where it is as two Syllables.
 And for *eo.* it is found but in three words in our tongue. 35

Yeoman, people, jeopard.

which were truer written

Ye-man. p&ple. jtpard.

And thus much shall suffice for the *Dip(h)thongs.*

The *Trip(h)thong* is of a complexion, rather to be fear'd 4°
 then lov'd: and would fright the young *Grammarians* to
 see him. I therefore let him passe, and make haste to the
notion—

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Syllables.

A *Syllabe* is a part of a word, that may of itselfe make a
 perfect sound; and is sometimes for one only *e t t e r*,
sometimes of more.

Of one, as in every first *Vowel* in these words:

- a. *abated.* 5
- e. *ec[c]lipsed.*

~~i. *imagined.*~~ o. *omitted.* u. *usurped.*
u. *usurped.*

ch. v. 26 *buye.* or *buie.*] *puissance,* or *puysance*; F3 29-32 by the
 accenting . . . *sine.* om. £3 36, 38 *jeopard* . . . *jepard*] *jeopardy* . . .
jeopardy F\$ 37 which] Which F 40 *Triphthong* F3 43
notion—] *notion.* F
 ch. vi. CHAPTER] CHAPTER. F 2 letter] Letter, which is always
 a Vowel: Fj 5 *abated*] *a-bated* Fj (marking off the first syllables
 thus up to 1. 17) 6 *c-clipsed* F\$

1 °A Syllabeo fmore letters i smade, either o fVawells so

n

l

or of Consonants joyned with Vowells.

Of Vawells only, as the *Dip(h)thongs*

Ai. in *Aiton.* *Ayding.*

Au. in *Austere.* *Audients.*

15

Ea. in *Easy.* *Eating.*

Ei. in *Eirie* of *Hawkes.*

Ew. in *Ewer.* &c.

and in the *Trip(h)thong* *Yea.*

Of the Vowells mixt; sometimes but with one Consonant
20 as *to*: sometimes two, as *try*; sometimes three, as *best*:
or *four*, as *nests*: or *five*, as *stumps*: other-while *sixe*, as
the latter Syllabe in *re-straints*. At the most they can have
but *seven*, as *strengths*.

Some Syllabes, as

25

The. *then,* *there,* *thatt*
with, *and* *which.*

are often compendiously, and shortly written : as

*y*_m yen y~e y.*

lt^{ph}. & *lf^{ph}.*

3 0 which whosolist may use: but **Orthographic commands**
not. A man may forbear it, without danger of falling
into *Pramunire*.

Here order would require to speake of the *Quantitie* of
Syllabes, their speciall *Prerogative* among the *Latines* and
35 *Greekes*: whereof so much as is constant, and derived from
Nature, hath beene handled already. The other which

growes by *Position*, and placing of letters, as *y e t* (*n* 0 t
through default of our Tongue, being able enough to receive
it, but our owne *carelesnesse*, being negligent to give it) is
ruled by no *Art*. The principal! cause whereof seemeth to

12 as] i.e. F3 *Diphthongs* FS 13 *Aiton.* om. F\$ *Ayding]*
Ai-dmg F\$ 14 *Audients.* om. V\$ 18 *Tripthong* F\$ 23 *seven]*
eight Fj, correctly if the final 8 of *strengths* is kept. 26 *and]* and. F
27 *are]* Are F 30 *which]* which F 32 *Pramunire* FS
Prcmunire F

bethis; because our Verses, and Rythmes (as it is a l m.
~~with all other people, whose Language is spoken at this~~ 0
 day) are *naturall*, and such whereof Aristotle speaketh, CK
 ratv auTooxeStaoTAarajv, that is, made of a *naturall*, and
voluntarie composition, without regard to the Quantitie of 45
 Syllabes.

This would aske a larger time and field, then is here
 given, for the examination : but since I am assigned to this
 Province ; that it is the lot of my age, after thirty yeares
 conversation with men, to be *elementarius Senex*: I will 50
 promise, and obtaine so much of my selfe, as to give, in

t h ehee leo ft h ebooke, some spurrea n d incitement tot h a
~~which I so reasonably seeke: Not that I would have the~~
 vulgar, and practised way of making, abolish'd and abdi-
 cated, (being both sweet and delightful!, and much taking 55
 the eare) but, to the end our *Tongue* may be made equall to
 those of the renowned Countries, *Italy*, and *Greece*, touching
 this particular. And, as for the difficultie, that shall never
 withdraw, or put me off, from the Attempt: For, neither
 is any excellent thing done with ease, nor the compassing of 60
 this any whit to be despaired : Especially, when *Quintilian*
 hath observ'd to me, by this *naturall Rythme*, that we have
 the other *Artificiall*, as it were by certaine *Markes*, and
footing(s), first traced, and found out. And the *Grecians*
 themselves before *Homer*, as the *Romans* likewise before 65
Livius Andronicus, had no other *Meters*. Thus much there-
 fore shall serve to have spoken concerning the *Parts* of a
Word, in a *Letter*, and a *Syllabe*.

It followeth to speake of the common *affections*, which
 unto the *Latines*, *Greekes*, and *Hebrewes*, are two ; the 70
Accent, and *Notation*. And first

41 *Rythmes*] *Rhymes* F\$ 62 *Rythmē*] *Rhyme* F3 64 *footings*
 first] *Footings*, first Fj: *footing*, was first F

CHAPTER VII.

Of the Accent.

THe *Accent* (which unto them was a *tuning* of the voyce, in lifting it up, or letting it downe) hath not yet obtained with us any signe ; which notwithstanding were most needfull to be added ; not wheresoever the force of an
5 *Accent* lieth, but where for want of one, the word is in danger to be *mis-tuned*: as in

abdsed. excessive, besoted.

obttine. ungddly. surrender.

But the use of it will be seene much better by collation of
10 words, that according unto the divers place of their *Accent*, are diversly pronounc'd, and have divers significations. Such are the words following, with their like ; as

differ, diffbr. dtsert, destrt. present, present,

rtfuse, reftise. dbject, object, incense, inchise.

15 *convert, convert, torment, torment. &c.*

In originall *Nounes Adjective*, or *Substantive*, derived according to the rule of the writer of *Analogie*, the *Accent* is intreated to the first: as in

fdtherlinesse. mdtherlinesse.

20 *peremptory, haberdasher.*

Likewise, in the *Adverbs*:

brdtherly. sisterly.

All *Nounes Dissyllabick*, simple, in the first; as

bteefe. honor, credit.

25 *silver, stirety.*

All *Nounes trissyllabick*, in the first:

countenance, jtopardye. &c.

ch. vii. Heading. *Accent.] Accent F* 7 *btsdted.] besdted, F :*
bcsdUcd, F₃ 8 *obteine] obtidin F₃* 13 *difftr] deftr F₃* *dtsertr]*
dteart Fa 16 *Adjective corr. F : Adjective F originally* 18 *first:]*
 first | Fj 23 *simple,] sample F*

All Nounes compounded in the first, of how many Syllables soever they be: as

Tennis-court-keeper. Chimney-sweeper. 30

Words simple in *able*, draw the Accent to the first, though they be of four Syllables: as

Sociable, idler able

When they be compounded, they keepe the same Accent: as 35

insociable. intolerable.

But in the way of comparison, it altereth thus: Some men are *sociable*, some *insociable*; some *idler able*, some *intolerable*. For, the Accent sits on the Syllable that puts difference: as

Sincerity, insincerity. 40

Nounes ending in *tion*, or *sion*, are accented in *antepenultim*d: as

condition, infusion. &c.

In *ty*, a *Latinis*, in *antepenultim*d: as

verity, charity, simplicity. 45

In *ence*, in *antepenultim*d: as

pestilence, abstinence, sustenance, consequence.
sustenance. consequence.

All Verbes dissyllables, ending in *er*, *el*, *ry*, *a* n d i s h. a c
in *prim*d: as 50

cover, cancel, carry, bury, levy, ravish. &c.

levy. ravish. &c.

Verbes made of Nounes, follow the Accent of the Nounes: as

to blanket, to bdsquet. 55

or otherwise, hold the Accent, as it is found in the first person present of those *Latine* Verbes: as from p

dnimo, animate, celebroy, celebrate.
celebro, celebrate.

60
60

38 some *insociable* . . . some *Intolerable*] others *insociable* . . . others
intolerable F3 41 *sion*.] *sion*; F 50 *prim*d] *prima* F 57
otherwiset] otherwise; F 59 *dnimot*] *dnimo*. F

Except words compound *otfacio*: as

liqueficio, liquefi.

and of *statuo*. *constituo, constitute.*

All variations of Verbes hold the *Accent* in the same place,
65 as the *Theme*,

I *animate*: thou *danimatest*. &c.

And thus much shall serve to have opened the fountaine
of *Orthographic*. Now let us come to the *notation* of a word.

CHAPTER VIII.

The Notation of a Word

IS, when the originall thereof is sought out, and consisteth
in two things ; the *Kind*, and the *Figure*.

Genus. The *Kind* is to know, whether the word bee a *Primitive*,
or *Derivative*, as

5 *Man. love*

are *Primitives*:

Manly, lover

are *Derivatives*.

Figura. The *Figure* is to know, whether the word bee *simple*, or
10 *compounded*; as,

learned, say

are *simple*:'

unlearned, gain-say

are *compounded*.

15 In which kind of composition, our *English* tongue is
above all other very hardy, and happy; joyning to-
gether, after a most eloquent manner, sundry words of
every kind of *Speech* : as

Composite.
Sape tna coagtnen-
(ten/ur) JVom(fna):
A foot-ball-plaier.
ATennis-court-
keeper.
Saptissime duo Sub-
stent(uu>: ut Hand-
kerchif. Rain-bow.
Ey-sore. Table-nap-
Jjn.Head.e.e..

Mil-horse, lip-wise, self-love.

buy-light, there-about.

not'With-standing. by-cause.

cut-purse, never-the-lesse.

ch. vii. 62 *liquefi*] *hquefie* ¥3 63 and] And F
ch. viii, CHAPTER] CHAPTER. F 3, 9 (margin) *Genus*. . . . *Figura*.
corr. F: not in F originally, not in Fj 6, 8, 12 are] Are F 16 (margin)
coagmentantur Nominal F\$: coagmen: Nom: F A] id, A Fj
Substantiva F3: Substant: F Hand-kerchif] Hand-ker-chif F
-ach,] -ach. F 21 *by-cause*] *be-cause* F3

These are the common *affections* of a word: his divers sorts now follow. A word is of *Number*, or without *Number*. Of *Number*, that word is termed to be, which signifieth a number *singular*, or *plurall*.

Singular, which expresseth one only thing : as

tree, (booke. teacher.

Plural, when it expresseth more things then one : as

trees.) bookes. teachers.

Againe, a word of number is *finite*, or *infinite*.

Finite, which varieth his number with certaine ends : as

man. run. horse,
(men. runs, horses.)

Infinite, which varieth not: as

true, strong, running.

Moreover, a word of number is a *Noune*, or a *Verbe*. But, here it were fit, we did first number our Words, or parts of Speech, of which our Language consists.

CHAP, IX.

Of the Parts of Speech.

In our English speech, we number the same parts with the Latines.

Noune.	Adverbe.
Pronoune.	Conjunction.
Verbe.	Proposition.
Participle.	Interjection.

5

ch. viii. 23 (margin), Wood-bind] ut Wood-bind Fj -love,] -love. F
 -freedome,] freedome. F aurovopia] aorow/u'a F -cheeke,] -cheeke. F
 New-ton,] New-ton. F -craft,] -craft. F Down-fall] Downfall F
 23 his] His F: The Fj 28 booke . . . trees. ¥\$ 32 ends]
 endings Fj 33 man . . . horse.] Man, men; run, runs; horse,
 horses. F\$ 37 strong.] strong F strong, running] strong. &c.
 both in the Singular and Plural. F\$

Sbstantivum cum verbo: <id> Wood-bind.
Pronomen cum Substantivo: id Self-love, fAaim'a. self-free-dome, avrovofila.
Verbum cum Substantivo.-ula Puff-cheeke, éuoiyvafloy. Draw-well. Draw-bridge.
Adjectivum cum Substantivo: id New-ton, pfaTroAir. Handicraft, vtipoffojia..
Adverbum cum Substantivo: ut Down-fall.
Adverbiwn cum Participo: id Vp-rising. Downe-lymg.

Only, we adde a ninth, which is the *Article*: And that is two-fold

Finite, as *The*.

10

Infinite, as *A*

The *finite* is set before *Nounes Appellatives*: as

77é Horse. *The* Tree.

TTii Earth, or specially

· *The* nature of the Earth.

15 *Proper Names*, and *Pronounes*. refuse *Articles*, but, for *Emphasis* sake : as

The Henry of Henries.

The only *Hee* of the Towne.

where *Hee* stands for a *Noune*, and signifies Man.

20 The *Infinite* hath a power of declaring, and designing uncertaine, or infinite things : as

A man. A house.

This *Article A*. answers to the *Germane Ein*. or the *French*, or *Italian Articles*, deriv'd from one, not *N u n*

25 **but Prepositive : as**

A House. Ein Haus[e].

· Un Maison. Una Casa.

The is put to both numbers, and answers to the *Dutch Article*

30

Der. die. das.

save, that it admits no inflexion.

9 *Finite*, as *The*.] *Finite*, i.e. relating to both *Numbers* ; as, *The* Fj
 10 *Infinite*, as *A*.] *Infinite*, relating only to the *Singular*; as, *A*. Fj
 12 *The* Horse. TAe Tree.] *The* Horse, *Ae Horses ; *The* Tree, /Ac Trees. F₃
 13-14 Tfc Earth . . . Earth, om. Fj 15 but] except Fj 19
 where] Where F 22 A man. A house] é man, A house : not-4
 men, A houses. Fj 25 *Prepositive*] *Prepositive* Fj 26 J/au5]>].]
 House. G0r. Fj 27 Un] Une G Maison. French. Fj Casa.
 Italian. F3 31 save] Save F

CHAP. X.

O/léNoune.

ALl Nounes are words of *Number'*, *Singular*, OT'*Plurall*.

They are $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} c o m \\ p r o p e r . \\ p e r s o n a l l . \end{array} \right\}$ o n . C Substantive.
 And are all < or, L Adjective.

Their Accidents are,

5

Gender. Case. Declension.

Of the *Genders* there are sixe. Firrf, the *Masculine*, which i. Mascu-
 comprehendeth all *Males*, or what is understood under a ^{lme,}
Masculine species: as *Angels*, *Men*, *Starres*: and (by
Prosop(op)ceia) the *Moneth's*, *Winds*, almost all the *Planets*. 10

Second, the *Feminine*, which compriseth *Women*, and 2. *Femin-*
 /«no/ species: ^{ine-}

riands. Countries. Cities.

And some &'Z;OT with us : as

Severne. Avon, &c.

15

Third, the *Neuter*, or /iz'noi *Gender*: whose notion con- 3- *Neuter*,
 ceives neither *Sexe*; under which are compriz'd all *in-*
animate things ; a ,?/»/> excepted : of whom we say, *shee*
sayles well, though the name be *Hercules*, or *Henry*, (or) the
Prince. As *Terence* call'd his *Comedie Eunuchus* (*feminine*), 20
per vocabulum Artis.

Fourth, the *Promiscuous*, or *Epicene*, which understands 4- *Epi-*
 both kindes: especially, when we cannot make the dif- ^{cene,}
 ference ; as, when we call them *Horses*, and *Dogges*, in the
Masculine, though there be *Bitches*, and *Mares* amongst 25
 them. So to *Fowles* for the most part, we use the *Feminine*;
 as of *Eagles*, *Hawkes*, we say, *shee flies well*; and call them
Geese, *Ducks*, and *Doves*, which they flye at.

ch. x. 10 *Prosopopaia* Fj : *Prosopana* F *Moneth's*] *Months* Fj
Winds Fa : *winds* F 13 *I'lands*] *Islands* Fj 19 or Fj 20
feminine Editor 26 ***Feminine*** ;] *Feminine*, F 27 *Hawkes*,]
Hawkes; F 28 flye at.] fly at. not distinguishing the Sex. Fj

5. Doubtful- Fift, the *Common*, or rather *Doubtful gender*, wee use
full. often, and with elegance : as in

31 Cosin, Gossip, Friend, Neighbour,
Enemie, Servant, Theefe, &c.

when they may be of either Sexe.

6. Common- Sixt, is the *Common of three* Genders : by which a *Noune*
pore of three. is divided into *Substantive*, and *Adjective*. For a *Substantive* is a *Noune* of one only Gender, or (at the most) of two. And an *Adjective* is a *Noune* of three Genders, being alwayes infinite.

CHAP. XL

Of the Diminution of Nounes.

THe common Affection of *Nounes* is *Diminution*. A *Diminutive* is a *Noune* noting the *diminution* of his *Primitive*.

The *diminution* of *Substantives* hath these foure divers
5 terminations :

Ell, *part*, *parcell*. *cocke*, *cockrell*.

Et, *capon*, *caponet*. *poke*, *poket*. *Baron*, *Baronet*.

Ock, *Hill*, *hillock*. *Bull*, *bullock*.

Ing, *Goose*, *gosling*. *Duck*, *duckling*.

10 So from the *Adjective*, *Deare*, *darling*.

Many *Diminutives* there are, which rather be abusions of
speech, then any proper *English* words. And such for the
most part are *Mens*, and *Womens Names*: Names, which
are spoken in a kind of flatterie, especially among familiar
15 friends and lovers : as

Richard, *Dick*. *William*, *Will*.

Margery, *Madge*. *Mary*, *Mai*.

Diminution of *Adjectives* is in this one end, *ish*: as

White, *whitish*. *Greene*, *greenish*.

ch. x. 29 Fift] Fifth F\$ 31 Friend F3: friend F 32-3 Theefe,
... Sexe.] Thief, &c. including both Sexes. Fj 33 when] When F
34 Sixt] The Sixth Fj
ch. xi, 2 Nounel] Nounel, F 6-9 Spaced as in Fj: F has 'Ell, part,
parcell' and so on 9 I*g.] Query, Ling, 19 whitish] Whitish F

After which manner certain *Adjectives of likeness* are also formed from their *Substantives* : as

Divel,divelish. Theefe,theevish.
Coult,coultish. Elf,elvish.

Some *Nounes* steale the forme of *Diminution*, which neither in signification shew it,nor can derive it from a *Primitive* : as

Gibbet. Doublet,peevish.

CHAP. XII.

Of Comparisons.

THese then are the *common Affections*,both of *Substantives* and *Adjectives*:there follow certaine **not generall to them both, but proper and peculiar to each** one. The *proper affection* therefore of *Adjectives* is *Comparison* ; of which,after the *Positive*,there be two degrees reckoned,namely,the *Comparative*,and the *Superlative*.

The *Comparative* is a degree declared by the *Positive* with this **Adverbe more ; as**

Wiser',more wise.

The *Superlative* is declared by the *Positive* with this **Adverbe most: as**

Wisest,mostwise.

Both which degrees are formed of the *Positive*: the *Comparative*,by putting to *er*: the *Superlative* by putting to *est*. as in these examples : 15

Learned,learneder,learnedest.
Simple,simpler,simplest.
Trew,trewer,trewest.
Black,blacker,blackest.

ch. xi. 22 *Divel,divelish*} *Devil,devilish* ; F3 23 COM//,*coultish*]
Colt,coltish F3
ch. xii. 9 *more*] or *more* F3 12 *mosf*] or *most*F\$

20 From this general! rule a few speciall words are excepted :
as

Good, better, best.

III. worse, worst.

Little, lesse. least.

25 *Much. more. most.*

Many Words have no comparison ; as

Reverend. Puissant.

Victorious. Renowned.

Other have both degrees ; but lacke the *Positive*: as

3° *former, formost.*

Some are formed of Adverbes : as

Wisely, wiselier. wiseliest.

Justly, justlier. justliest.

Certaine *Comparisons*, forme out of themselves : as

35 *Lesse. lesser.*

Worse, worser.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the First Declension.

AND thus much concerning the *proper Affection of Adjectives* : The *proper Affection of Substantives* followeth :
And that consisteth in Declining.

A *Declension* is the varying of a Noun Substantive into

5 *diverse terminations*. Where besides the *Absolute*, there is
as it were, a *Gentive Case*, made in the Singular number by
putting to s.

Of *Declensions* there be two kindes : the first maketh the
Plurall of the Singular, by adding thereunto 5. as

10 *Tree. Trees.*

Thing. Things.

Steeple. Steeples.

ch. xii. 23 *III.] Ill or bad, ¥3*

ch. xiii. 6 *were, F3 : were F*
Things] things F

9 thereunto] thereto *Fj*

iz

So with *e*. by reason of the neere affinitye of these two Letters, whereof we have spoken before :

Parke, Parkes. Eucke, Buckes. 15
Dwarfe, Dwarfes. Path(e\ Palhes.

And in this *first Declension*, the *Genitive plurall* is all one with the *plurall absolute*.

§ i bñ g {^{Father.}_{Father(s).}} -r̄ . {*Fathers.*
Fathers.} 20

Generall exceptions :

Nounes ending in *z. s. sk. g. and ch.* in the declining take to the genitive singular *i.* and to the plurall *e.* as

Sing. {*Prince,*
Prncis.} Plur. {*Princes.*
Princes.} 25

So, rare. fewéA. age. *breech.* &c. Which distinctions, not observed, brought in first the monstrous Syntaxe of the *Pronoune*, *his*, joyning with a *Noune*, betokening a *Possessor* ; as, the *Prince* his A<ttff ; for, the *Princis* house.

Many words ending in *Dip(h)thongs*, or *Vowells*, take 30 neither *z.* nor 5. but only change their *Dip(h)thongs* or *Vowells*, retaining their last *Consonant*: as

Mouse. Mice, or Meece.
Louse. Lyce, or Lio.*
G005, Geece. Foot, Feet.* 35
TWA, Teeth.

Exception of number: Some Nounes of the *first Declension* lacke the *Plurall*: as

Rest. Gold. Silver. Bread.

14 *e* Editor: sF, F\$ 16 Po/A»] />o/fc£ F 18 *absolute.*]
absolute ; as Fj 22-9 Nounes . . . house.] To the *Genitive Cases* of
all Nouns denoting a Possessor, is added 's with an *Apostrophe*, thereby
to ayoid the gross Syntax of the *Pronoun* his joyning with a *Noun*;
as *The Emperor's Court*, *The General's Valour* ; not *The Emperor* his
Court, &c. F3 25 *Prncis* Editor: *Princes* F (so 29) 30-1 Many
words . . . nor 5.] Many *Monosyllables* containing a *Diphthong*, never
take s. in the *Plural Number*, Fj 31 *Diphthongs* F3 31-2 or
Vowells, om. F3 32 *Consonant*:] *Consonan*/, or one of like force, Fj
33 or *Meece.* om. F3 34 or *Leece.* om. F3 35 *Geece*] *Geese* F\$

4° Other the *Singular*: as

Riches. Goods.

Many being in their principal! signification *Adjectives* are here declined, and in the *Plurall* stand in stead of *Substantives*: as

45 *Other, others. One, ones.*

Hundred, hundreds. Thousand, thousands.

Necessarie, necessities: and such like.

CHAPTER XIII.

Of the second Declension.

THe *second Declension* formeth the *Plurall* from the *Singular*, by putting to *n.* which notwithstanding it have not so many Nounes, as hath the former, yet lacketh not his difficultie, by reason of sundry exceptions, that cannot easily be reduced to one general! head. Of this former are,

Oxe, Oxen. Hose, Hosen.

Exceptions. *Man*, and *Woman*, by a contraction make *men* and *women*, or *wemen*, in stead of *manen* and *womanen*.
 10 *Cow*, makes *Kine*, or *keene*: *Brother*, for *Brotheren*, hath *Brethren*, and *Brethern*. *Child* formeth the plurall by adding *r.* besides the root; for we say not *children*, which according to the Rule given before, is the right formation, but *children*, because that sound is more pleasant to the eares.

15 Here the genitive plurall is made by adding *s.* unto the Absolute: as

Sing. { *childe.* } Plur. { *children.* }
 { *childēs.* } { *childrens.* }

ch. xiv. 6 are] is Fj 7 *Hose, Hosen.* om. Fj 9 *womanen*
 F. Cunningham : *womenen* F : *Womenen* Fj 10 or *keene* om. Fj
Brotheren F. Cunningham : *Bretheren* F, F3 n *Brethren* F3 :
Bnthren F and *Brethern.* om. Fj 13 *children*] *childern* F: *Children*
 FS (so 17) 15 plurall] *Plural* (denoting the Possessor) F3 s.] 's F3
 18 *childrens*] *childerns* F : *Children's* FS

20

Eye. eyes. eyen.

Shoo,shoes. shooen.

Of Pronounes.

as

5

Foure Possessives. *My*,or *Myne*. Plurall,*Our*,*ours*.

Thy, thine. Plurall, *Your, yours.* *His, Hers,* both in the 10

• *A smany Demonstratives. This, plural, These.* That,

Three *Interrogatives*, whereof one requiring both G and e, and i

Two *Articles* in gender, and number infinite, which the

One *Relative, which*: One other signifying a Reciproca- 20

ch. xiv. 19 Nounes] *Nouns* (according to the different Dialects of

ch. xv. CHAPTER] CHAPTER. F 4 as] as. F 8 y Editor:

I.1

Composition of *Pronounes* is more common :

My-self. *our-selves.*

Thy-self. *your-selves.*

25 *Hint-self.*' ,

Her-self. I plurall: *Themselves.*

It-self. ,

This-same, that-same, yonne-same, yonder-same, self-same.

CHAP. XVI.

Of a Verbe.

Hitherto we have declared the whole *Etymologic* of
Nounes : which in easinesse, and shortnesse, is much
tob. e preferred before the Latines, and the Grecians. I t r e m
remaineth with like brevity, if it may be, to prosecute the

5 *Etymologic* of a *Verbe*. A *Verbe* is a word of number, which
hath both *Tyme*, and *Person*. *Tyme* is the difference of a
Verbe, by the *present*, *past*, and *future*, or *to come*. A *Verbe*
finite therefore hath three only *Tymes*, and those alwayes
imperfect.

10 The first is the *present*: as

Amo, Lave.

The second is the *Tyme past*: as

Amdbam, loved.

The third is the *Future* : as

15 *Ama, amato: Lave, lave.*

The other *Tymes* both *imperfect*: as

Amem, amarem, amabo.

and also *perfect*: as

Amavi, amaverim, amaveram, 20 Amavissem, amavero.

20

Amavissem, amavero.

wee use to expresse by a *Syntaxe*, as shall be seene in the
proper place.

ch. xvi, 7 to come F3 : to come F 18 and] And F 21 wee]
WeeF

The *future* is made of the *present*, and is the same always with it.

Of this *future* ariseth a *Verbe infinite*, keeping the same 25
 termination: as likewise of the *present*, and the *Tyme* a
are formed the Participle present by adding of ing: as s

Love, laving.

The other is all one with the *Tyme past*.

The *Passive* is expressed by a *Syntaxe*, like the *tymes* 30
 going before, as hereafter shall appear.

A *Person* is the especial difference of a *verb* in u m b e r
whereof the present, and the Tyme past, have in every
 number three.

The second, and third person singular of the *present* are 35
 made of the first, by adding *est*, and *eth*; which last is
 sometime shortned into *z*. or *s*.

The *tyme past* is varied, by adding in like manner in the
 second *person* singular *est*: and making the third like unto 40
 the first.

The *future* hath but only two *persons*; the second, and
 the third, ending both alike.

The *persons* Plurall, keepeth the termination of the first *person* Singular. In for-
mer times, till about the reigne of Info
 King *Henry* the eighth, they were wont to be formed, by 45
 adding *en*: thus

Loven. sayen. complainen.

But now (whatsoever it is because) it hath quite grown out
of use, and that other so generally prevailed, that I dare u
 not presume to set this a-foot againe. Albeit, (to tell you 50
 my opinion) I am perswaded, that the lacke hereof, well
 considered, will be found a great blemish to our tongue.
 For, seeing *time*, and *person* be, as it were, the right, and
 lefthand of a *Verbe*; what can it have among bringe l s e
but a lamenesse to the whole body? 55

And by reason of these two differences, a *Verbe* is divided
 two manner of wayes. First, in respect of *persons*, it is

called *personally* or *impersonall*. *Personall*, which is varied by three persons : as

60 *Love, lovest, loveth.*

Impersonall, which onely hath the third *person* : as
 behoveth. yrketh.

Secondly, in consideration of *times*, *wherein* it is termed
active, or neuter : **Active**, whose **Participle past may be**
65 joyned with the Verbe *am* : as
 / am loved. Thou art hated.

Neuter, which cannot be so coupled : as
 Pertaine. Dye. Live.

This therefore is the generall forming of a *Verbe*, which
70 must to every speciall one hereafter be applied.

CHAP. XVII.

Of the first Conjugation.

The varying of a *Verbe* by persons, and times, both finite, and infinite, is termed **and infinite, is termed a Conjugation.** Whereof there
bee two sorts. The first fetcheth the *time past* from the
present, by adding *ed*: and is thus varied.

5 Pr. *'Love, lovest, loveth.* PL *Love, love, love.*
 Pa. *Loved, loved'st, loved.* PI. *Loved, loved, loved.*
 Fu. *Love, love.* PL *Love, love.*

 Inf. *Love.*

 Part. pr. *Loving.*

10 Part. past. *Loved.*

Verbes are oft-times shortned : as

Sayest, sest. would, woud.
 should, shoud. holpe, hope.

But, this is more common in the leaving out of *e*. as

15 *Loved'st, for lovedest.*
 Rubbed, rub'd. tookest, took'st.

ch. xvii. 4 varied.] varied F 12 sesf] saiest Fa : saist W
woud] wou'd Fj 13 shoud] shou'd FS hope] ho'pe F\$ 16
Rubbed . . . took'sf] rubb'd, rubbed ; took'st, tookest W

Exception(s) of the *time-past*,for *ed.* have *t.* as

Lickedé lick't. *Leaved*,left.

Gaped,gap't. *Blushed*,blush't.

Where *Verbes* ending with *d.* for avoyding the concourse of 20 too many Consonants,doe castitaway : as

Lend,lent. *Spend*,spent. *Gyrd*,gyrt.

Make by a rare contraction is here turned into *Made*.

Many *Verbes* in the *time past*vary notatall from the present: such are

25

Cast. hurt. *cost*,burst. &c.

CHAP. XVIII.

Of the second Conjugation.

And so much for the *first Conjugation* ; being indeed the most usuall forming of a *Verbe*,and thereby also the common Inne to lodge every strange,and forraine guest. That which followeth,for any thing,I can find (though I have with some diligence searched after itt) intertaineth 5 none,but naturall,and home-borne words,which though in number they be not many,a hundred and twenty,or there-

they need much the stamp of some good *Logick*, to beat i n e them into proportion. We have set downe that, that in 10 our judgement agreeth best with reason,and good order. Which,notwithstanding,if it seeme to any to be too rough

only decrie it, but in the behalfe of my Countrey, most t heartily thanke him for so great a benefit ; hoping that I 15 shall be thought sufficiently to have done my part,if in towling this Bell,I may draw others to a deeper consideration of the matter: for touching my selfe,I must needs

ch. xvii. 17 /.] 4 or /; Fa 18 lick'i] Kck'd Fj *Leaved]*
leaved F 19 gap't. . . blush't] gap'd . . . blush'd F₃ 20 Where]
 Some F₃ with d.] in d.F₃ 21 too Fj : two F
 ch. xviii. 2 usuall] useful W 3 forraine] foreign Fj 4
 followeth] followeth F 17 towling] tolling F₃

confesse, tha,after much painfull churning, this only
20 would come,which here we have devised.

The *second Conjugation* therefore turneth the *present* into
the *time past*, by the only change of his Letters, namely of
Vowells alonet. or *Consonants* also.

Verbes changing Vowells only, have no certaine termina-
25 tion of the *Participle past*, but derive it as well from the
present, as the *time past*, and that otherwhile differing from
either, as the examples following do declare.

The change of Vowells is, either of *simple Vowells*, or of
Dip(h)thongs; whereof the first goeth by the order of
q30 Vowells, which we also will observe.

An a. is turned into oo.

Pres. Shake, shakestt Plur. Shake, shaket
shaketh. shake.

Past. Shooke, shookest, P L S h o o k e , s h o o
35 **shooke.** **shooke.**

Put. Shake, shake. Plur. Shake, shake.

Inf. Shake.

Part. pre. Shaking.

Part. pa. Shaken.

40 This formed o et h e Verbes, take, wake, forsake, and h a n g , follow,
follow, but hang, in the *time past* maketh hung; not, hangen.

Hereof the Verb, am, is a speciall exception, being thus
varied :

Pr. Am, art, is. Pl. are, are, are; or, Be, be, be, of the unused
45 word, Bee, beast, beeth, in the singular.

Past. Was, wast, was. or, Were, wert, were. P L W e r e , w
were, were.

Put. Be, be. Plur. Be, be.

Inf. Be.

50 Part. pr. Being.

Part. past. Bene.

Ea. maketh firste. short:

Pr. Leade. Past. Ledde. Part. pa. Ledde.

29 Diphthongs F3 51 Bene] Been Fq3 52 Ea.] Ea casteth
away a, and FS firstom. F3 5q3 Past] PastF

The rest of the *times* and *persons*, both singular, and plurall in this, and the other *Verbs* that follow, because 55 they jumpe with the former examples, and rules, in every point, we have chosen rather to omit, then to thrust in needlesse words.

Such are the *Verbs*, *eate*, *beate*, (both making *Participles past*: besides *ette*, and *bette*; *eaten*, and *beaten*) *spread*, 60 *shead*, *dread*, *sweate*, *shread*, *tread*.

Then *a*, or *o*. indifferently;

Pr. *Breake*.

Past. *Brake*, or *broke*.

Par. pa. *Broke*, or *broken*. 65

Hither belong, *speake*, *sweare*, *teare*, *cleave*, *weare*, *steale*, *beare*, *sheare*, *sheave*, *weave*. **So, *gett*, and *helpe*: but *halpe*, is seldom used, save with the Poets.**

i. is changed into *a*.

Pr. *give*. 70

Past. *gave*.

Par. pa. *given*.

So, *bid*, and *sit*.

And here sometimes *i*. is turned into *a*. and *o*. both.

Pr. *Winne*. 75

Past. *Wanne*, or *Wonne*.

Par. pa. *Wonne*.

Of this sort are *fing*, *ring*, *wring*, *sing*, *sting*, *stick*, *spinne*, *strick*, *drinke*, *sinke*, *spring*, ***strick*, *drinke*, *sinke*, *spring*, *begin*, *stinke*, *shrinke*, *swing*, *swimme*.** 80

Secondly, long *e*. into (short) *e*.

Pr. *reede*.

Pa. *read*.

Par. pa. *read*.

Also *feed*, *meet*, *breed*, *bleed*, *speed*. 85

60 *ette*] et F3 *bette* ; *eaten*] *bet*, or *eaten* F3 61 *she ad* . . . *shreade* om. Fq3 67-8 **but**. . . Poets, om. F3 67 *halpe*] *holpe* G 79 *strick*] *strike* W 81 Secondly . . . «.] Secondly, Ferbs that have ce lose one ; as, F3 long e. Editor: long i. F short Editor 82 *reede*] *Feed* FS 8q3,84 *read*] *Fed* F3 85 *feed* om. F3

Then into o.

Pr. *Seeth.*

Pa. *sodde.*

Par. pa. *sodde, or sodden.*

90 Lastly, it makes, *aw.*

Pr. *see.*

Pa. *saw.*

Par. Pa. *scene.*

0. hath a.

93 Pr. *come..*

Pa. *came.*

Par. Pa. *come..*

And here it may besides keepe his proper *Vowell.*

Pr. *runne.*

100 Pa. *ranne, or runne.*

Par. pa. *runne.*

oo. maketh 0.

Pr. *choose.*

Pa. *f&orc.*

¹⁰5 Par. pa. *chosen.*

And onemore, shoote, shotte, in the *Participle* past. shott, or shotten.

Some pronounce the Verbs by the *Dip(h)thong ew. chewse, shewte,* and that is *Scottish-like.*

CHAP. XIX.

Of the third Conjugation.

THe change of *Dip(h)thongs* is of *ai.* and *y.* or *aw.* and *ow.*
All which are changed into *ew.*

5 *ai* { Pr. *Slay,*
Pa. *few.*
Par. pa. *slaine.*

ch. xviii. 86 Then into o.] Or change them into o ; as, F₃ 90 it makes, aw] into an; as, Fj 106 *Participle* Fj : *Participle.* F 108

Diphthong F₃ : *Diphthong** F

ch. xix. i *Diphthongs* F₃ ai. and y. or] ay, y FS

4 at.] ay. F3

y. { Pr. Fly.
Pa. flew.
Par. pa. flyne, orflowne.

aw. { Pr. draw.
Pa. drew.
Par. pa. drawne.

x0

aw. { Pr. know,
Pa. knew.
Par. pa. knowne.

This forme commeth oftener, then the three former : *snow*, 15
grow, *throw*, *blow*, *crow*.

Secondly, y. is particularly turned, sometimes into the
Vowells i. and o.

i. { Pr. Byte,
Pa. Eitte.
Par. pa. Bitte, or friffen.

20

Likewise, Ayfe, *quyte*, *chyde*, *stride*, *slyde*.

o { Pr. Hyght.
Pa. Heght.
Par. pa. Hoght.

25

So, *Shine*, *strive*, *thrive*.

And, as F. severally frameth either; so may it joyntly
have them both:

Pr. Ryse.
Past. Rise, or rose.
Par. pa. Rise, or risen.

30

To this kind pertaine : *Smyte*, *wryte*, *byde*, *ryde*, *clyme*,
dryve, *clyve*.

8 *flyne*, or *om*. F₃ 15 This] This last F₃ *snoiu*] as *snow* F₃
17,18 y. is ... and o.] Some Verbs in *ite* and *d*, lose *e* as. F₃ 19 Btyte]
Bte F₃ 20, 21 Ettfe] Bit F₃ 22 *hyde*, *quyte*,] *hide*, *quite* make
hid, *quit*. F₃ n20, 5/rf3. om. F₃ 23-5 Pr. HW . . . *Hoght*.
om. F₃ 26 *thrive*.] *thrive*, change *i* into *o* in the *Time past*; as.
5Aon3, *strove*, *throve*. F₃ 27 y.] i F₃ either] either *o* or *o* F₃ 29
.Rys3] *rise* F₃ 30 J?iw, or *rose*] *Rise*, or *row* F₃ 31 .*Rise*, or
risen] *Rise*, or *ris*3i F₃ 32-3 *Smyte* . . . *clyve*.] *Smite*, *write*, *bide*,
ride, *climb*, *drive*, *chide*, *stride*, *slide*; which make *smit*, *writ*. *bid*. *rid*. *climb*,
drive, *chid*, *strid*, *slid*; or *smote*, *wrdte*, *bode*, *rode*, *cldmb*. *drove*, *chdd*.
strdd, *sldd*. F₃ (the printer wrongly accenting this last group, • which
should be 'smdtc, Ac.)

Sometimes, into the *Dip(h)thongs*, *ai*, and *ou*.

3 5 P { . *Lye*.
 ai. { Pa. *lay*.
 Par. pa. *lyne*, or *layne*.

 ou. { Pr. *Fynd*.
 Pa. *found*.
 4° Par. pa. *found*.

So, *bynde*, *grynde*, *wynde*, *fyght*.

Last of all; *aw*, and *ow*, doe both make *e*.

45 aw. { Pr. *Fa//*,
 Past. *fell*
 Par. pa. *fallen*.

Such is the *Verbe*, *fraught*, with *Chaucer* in the *-Afan of Lawes tale*:

Tkis(e) Merchants have done freight their ships new.

50 ou. { Pr. *Mould*.
 Pa. *Held*.
 Par. pa. */feW*, or *houlden*.

Exceptions of the *Time past*. Some that are of the *first Conjugation* only, have in the *Participle past*, besides their owne, the forme of the second, and the third : as

55 *Hew*, *hewed*, and *hewne*.
 Mow, *mowed*, and *mowen*.
 Load, *loaded*, and *loaden*.

34 Sometimes . . . *ou*.] Thirdly, *i* is sometimes changed into the *Diphthongs ay* and *ou*; as F3 35 *Lye*] *Lie* Fj 36 *ai*] *ay*. F3 37 *ty*e*] *Lien* FS : /oy[n*] *lain* FS 38 *Fynd*] *Find* ¥3 41 So .. *[fyght]* So, Bind, grind, wind, fight, make bound, ground, wound, fought. F3 42 *ow*.] *ou*; F 44 *aw*.] *e*, Fj 46 *fraught*, with Editor: *fraught*: which F (a confusion of *w^{ch}* and *wth*) 48 Thise *Chaucer* done] *done*. F, Fj *freight*] *fraught* *Chaucer* (han don fret *Speght* 49 *Mould* Editor: *Howld* F: *Hold* F3 50 *ou*.] o F3 51 *houlden* Editor: *howlden* F: *holden* F3 53 *Conjugation* only, Fj : *Conjugation*, only F 55 *hewne*] *hewn* FS

CHAP. XX.

Of the fourth Conjugation,

Verbs that convey the Time *past* from the *present*, by the change both of Vowells and Consonants, following the terminations of the first Conjugation, end in *d.* or *t.*

Pr. *Stand.*

Pa. *Stood.*

5

Such are these words,

Pr. *Wolle. wolt. wolle.*

Pa. *wolde, or wouLde. wouldest, would.*

Put. *wolle. woU.*

The *infinite* Times are not used :

10

Pr. { *Can, canst, can.*

Pa. { *Colde or could.*

Pr. { *Sholle. sholt. sholl.*

Pa. { *Sholde, or shoulde.*

•An old English word, for which now we commonly use, *shall*, or *shawll*.

The other Times of either *Verbe* are lacking.

Pr. { *Heare.*

Pa. { *Heard.*

Pr. { *Sell.*

Pa. { *SoW.*

So, *Tell, told.*

20

Of the other sort are these, and such like :

Pr. { *Feele.*

Pa. { *felt.*

So, *creepe, sleepe, weepe, keepe, sweepe, meene.*

Pr. { *Teach.*

Pa. { *Taught.*

25

ch. xx. i from] for F 3 t.] / F, F₃ 7 Wo/fe. watt. **wolle.**] Will, will, witl. F₃ 8 wolde, or would.] Would, F₃ 9 wolle woll.] will, will. F₃ 12 Colde]colde F: CoW F₃ 13 Sholle] sholle F (margin) or shawll. om. F₃ shawll,sholt sholl] shall F₃ 14 sholde, or shoulde] should F₃ 24 meme] mean F₃

To this forme belong : *thinke, retch, seake, reach, catch, bring, worke*; and *buy, and owe*, which make, *bought, and ought*.

3°	Pr.	{	<i>Dare, darest, dare.</i>
	Pa.	{	<i>Durst, durst, durst.</i>
	Pr.	{	<i>May, mayst, may.</i>
	Pa.	{	<i>Might, mightest, might.</i>

These two *Verbs* want the other *Times*.

A generall exception from the former Conjugations.
35 Certaine *Verbs* have the forme of either Conjugation : as

Hang, hanged, and hung.
Reach, reach't, and raught.

So, *cleave, sheare, sting, clyme, catch, &c.*

CHAP. XXL

Of Adverbes.

THUS much shall suffice for the *Etymologic* of *Words*, that have number, both in a *Noune*, and a *Verbe* : whereof the former is but short, and easie : the other longer, and wrapped with a great deale more difficultie. Let us now
5 proceed to the *Etymologic* of words without number.

A *Word* without number is that, which without his principall signification noteth not any number. Whereof there be two kindes, an *Adverbe* and a *Conjunction*.

An *Adverb* is a word without number, that is joyned to
10 another word : as

Well-learned.
Hee fighteth valiantly.
Hee disputeth very subtilty.

So that an *Adverbe* is as it were an *Adjective* of *Nounes*,
15 *Verbes* ; yea, and *Adverbs* also themselves.

ch. xx. 27 *scahe| seek* F3 37 *Reach .. . raught, om.* F3 *raught|*
rought F 38 *catch* FS : *cetch* F
ch. xxi. 11-13 *Well- . . . valiantly . . . subtilty* roman type in F3

Adverbs are either of *Quantitie*, or *Qualitie*.

Of *Quantitie*: as

Enough, too-much, altogether.

Adverbs of *Qualitie* be of divers sorts :

First of *Number*: as *Once, twice, thrice.* 20

Secondly, of *Time* : as

To day. yesterday, then.

By, and by. ever. when.

Thirdly of *Place* : as

Here, there, where, yonder. 25

Fourthly, in affirmation, or negation : as

I. yes. indeed, no. not. nay.

Fifthly, in wishing, calling, and exhorting :

Wishing, as *O. Yf.*

Calling; as *Ho. sirrah.* 30

Exhorting : as *So, so. There, there.*

Sixtly in similitude, and likenesse : as

So, even so. Likewise, even as.

To this place pertaine (all) *Adverbs* of *qualitie* whatsoever, being formed from *Nounes*, for the most part, by adding *ly*: as

Just, justly. True, truly.

Strong, strongly. Name, namely.

Here also *Adjectives*, as well *positive*, as *compared*, stand for *Adverbs*: 40

When he leaſtweeneth, ſoonest ſhall he fall.

Interjections, commonly ſo termed, are in ſhort, ſuch as *A d v*
and therefore may juſtly lay title to this roome. Such are
 theſe, that follow, with their like: as

Ah. alas. wo. fie. tush, ha, ha, he. 45

st. a note of ſilence.

Rr. that ſerveth to ſet dogges together by the eares.

Hrr, to chaſe birds away.

27 /.] I, or ay, G 28 Fiftly] Fifthly F3 29 Wishing]
 wishing¹ y/] /Fq3 q31 Sd]soF There]there? q32 Sixtly]
 Sixthly F3 q3q3 Sot] So. F q34 allF3 q39 compared] com-
 pared F 41 weeneth] thinketh Fq3 48 birds away] away Birds F3

Prepositions are also a peculiar kind of Adverbs, and
 50 to be referred hither. **Prepositions are separable, or in-**
 separable. Separable are for the most part of *Time*, and
Place: as

Among, according, without.

Afore, after, before, behind.

55 *Under, upon, beneath, over.*

Against, besides, neere.

Inseparable Prepositions are they which signify
 if they be not compounded with some other word : as
re. un. in Release, unlearned.

CHAP. XXII.

Of Conjunctions.

A Conjunction is a word without number, knitting divers
 speeches together: and is *declaring, or reasoning.*

Declaring, which uttereth the parts of a Sentence: And
 againe is ***gathering, or separating.*** *Gathering, whereby the*
 5 parts are affirmed to be true together, which is
 or ***conditioning.*** *Coupling, when the parts are severally*
 affirmed : as

And. also, neither.

Conditioning, by which the part following dependeth, as
 10 true, upon the part going before ; as

//. unlesse. except.

A *separating conjunction* is that, whereby the parts (as
 being not true together) are separated ; and is

S e v e r i n g , ' 5 o r ,

13 **or,**
sundring.

Severing, when the parts are separated only in a certaine
respect, or reason : as

But. although, notwithstanding.

Sundring, when the parts are separated indeed, and truly, so 20
as more then one cannot be true: as

Either, whether, or.

Reasoning Conjunctions are those which conclude one of
the parts by the other, whereof some render a reason ; and
some do inferre. 25

Rendring are such, as yeeld the cause of a thing going
before : as

For. because.

Inferring, by which a thing that commeth after, is con-
cluded by the former : as q30

Therefore. Wherefore.

So that, insomuch that.

22 *whether* F3 : *whither* F

THE SECOND BOOKE, OF THE ENGLISH GRAMMAR.

Of Syntaxe.

CHAP. I.

Of Apcestrophus.

AS yet we have handled *Etymologic*, and all the parts thereof. Let us come to the consideration of the *Syntaxe*.

The
Latines
and
Hebrews
have
none.

4 *Syntaxe* is the second part of *Grammar*, that teacheth the Construction of words; whereunto *Apostrophus*, an affection of words coupled, and joyned together, doth belong.

Apostrophus is the rejecting of a Vowell from the beginning, or ending of a Word. The note whereof, though it many times, through the negligence of Writers and Printers, 10 is quite omitted, yet by right should, and of the learned sort hath his signe and marke, which is such a *Semicircle* placed in the top.

In the end a Vowell may be cast away, when the word next following beginneth with another: as

15 *TVoutward man decayeth:*
So th¹ inward man getteth strength.
If ye¹ utter such words of pure love, and friendship,
What then may wee lookefor, if ye¹ once begin to hate ?

Gower. lib. I. de confess. Amant.

20 // *thou'art of his company,*
Tell forth, my sonne.

It is time to'awake from sleepe.

Vowells suffer also this *Apostrophus* before the Consonant *h*.

Book II, ch. i. 8 though] tho¹ Fj 17, 18 ye'] y¹ FS : auery
yo' 20-i //., sonne. one line in F, F3 20 tkou'arf] thourt FS
22. 27 to'] /' FS

Chaucer in theq3.Booke of Troilus.

For of Fortunes sharpe adversitiet 25

The worstkind of infortune is this:

Amanto¹havebeeneinp r o s p e r i t i e , A n d i t [to] ~~remember~~ when it passed is.

which followeth, is proper to us, which though it bee not so of any, that I know, either in Writing, or Printing, usually express'd: Yet considering that no ur commons **nothing is more familiar,** (upon the which all Precepts are grounded, and to the which they ought to be referred) who can justly blame me, if, as neere as I can, I follow Natures 35 call?

This rejecting therefore, is both in Vowells, and Consonants, going before.

Cower, lib. 4.

There is no fire,there is no sparket 40

There is no dore, which may charke.

(And in Vowels going after.)

(Norton in Arsan.) *Who answered, that he was not privy
to it, and in excuse seem'd to be very sore displeased
with the matter, that this men of Warre had done it*45
withouthis commandement, or consent.

CHAP. II.

Of the Syntaxe of one Noun with another.

S*yntaxe* appertaineth, both to words of number, and without number, where the want, and superfluity of any part of speech are two generall, and common exceptions. Of the former kind of *Syntaxe* is that of a Noun, and Verbe.

ch. i. 26 *infortune*] *unfortune* W 27 to¹] f F3 28 *itrenumber*
 Speght'i Chaucer q36 call ?] call. F 38 *before.*] *before.* F
 40-1 *There*] *Query* *Ther'* 4q3-6 *Roman type in F* 44 *to' if*
 to it-F. F3

ch. ii. 4 Nounet] Noun; F

5 The Syntaxe of a Noime,with a Noune,is in *number*,and
gender: as

Esau could notobtaine his fathers blessing,though he
soughtitwith teares.

10 Jezabel was a wicked woman,for she slew the Lords
Prophets.

An Idol is no god,for itis made with hands.

In all these examples you see *Esau*,and *hee* ; *Jezabel*,and
shee; *Idol*,and *it*,to agree in the singular number. The
firstexample also in the Masculine gender: the second,in
15 the *Feminine*: the third, in the *Neuter*. And in this
Construction (as also throughoutthe whole English Syn-
taxe) order,and the placing of words is one especiall thing
to be observed. So thatwhen a Substantive, and an
Adjective,are immediatly joyned together,the Adjective
20 mustgoe before : as

Plato shutPoets outof his Common-wealth,as effeminate
Writers,unprofitable members,and enemies to vertue.

When two Substantives come together,whereof one is
the name of a *Possessor*,the other of a thing possessed,then
25 hath the name of a *Possessor* the former place,and thatin
the *Genitive*:

All mans righteousnesse is like a defied cloth.

Gower. lib. I.

30 ~~An Owle f i i a t h b y n~~
~~Out of all other birds sight.~~ g h t , q

Butif the thing possessed goe before,then doth the Prepo-
sition *of*,come betweene :

Ignorance is the mother of errour.

Gower. lib. (i.)

q35 So thatitproveth well therefore,
The strength of man is sone lore.

9 Jezabel] Jesabel F II Idol] Idol F 12 you F3: yee F (influenced
by the'see' following) 13 to] do F3 14 second.] second F
17 especiall] special F3 21-2 effeminate ... unprofitable roman type
inFs 27 mans] Man's F3 q30 all other birds roman type in Fq3 q3q3 of
err0ur]of ErrourF3 q35 therefore.] therefore F q36 of man] o/Man F3

Which Preposition may be coupled with the thing possessed, being in the *Genitive*.

Nort. in Arsan. *A road made into Scanderbech's Countrey by the Duke of Mysia's men ;* 40
for, *the Dukes men of Mysia.*

Here the *absolute* serveth sometimes in stead of a *Genitive*:
All trouble is light, which is endured for righteousness sake.

Otherwise, two Substantives are joyned together by apposition ;

Sir Thomas More in King Richards Storie :
George Duke of Clarenceé was a Prince at all points fortunate.

Where if both be the names of Possessors, the latter shall be in the *Genitive*.

Foxe in the 2. Volume of *Acts and Monuments*:

King Henry the Eight, married with the Lady Katherine his Brother, Prince Arthurs wife.

The generall exceptions : 55

The Substantive is often lacking:

Sir Thomas More. *Sometime without small things, greater cannot stand.*

Chaucer. *For some folke woll be wonne for richest*

And some {folke, for strokes, and some {folke, for gentlenesse. 60

41 lort] for F: for, F3 the Dukes men] The Men of the Duke FS 4q3-4 for righteousness sake.] for righteousness sake; i.e. for the sake of Righteousness. F3 47 Thomas... Storie italic type in F 48 of] of F3 52 in the 2. Volume of italic type in F 5q3 Eigh] Eighth Fq3 54 Arthurs] Arthur's F3 57 Sir Thomas More italic type in F 58 stand.] stand: i.e. Greater things, &c. F3 59 Chaucer.] The Verb is also often wanting : Chaucer. F3 60-91 Words bracketed with a brace are printed without any brackets as part of the text in F and F3. Jonson inserted them in all the quotations to illustrate his points of syntax. He probably gave some such clue, either by brackets or the use of roman type, and the printer failed to understand it. We have adopted the brace because Jonson himself used it in B k. I. ch. iv. note (w.) on line 1 where he supplied conjecturally the word {proferitur in a quotation from Martianus Capella. 61 gentlenesse.] Gentleness: Where, woll be won once express'd, serves for the three Parts of the Sentence, -F3 (wrongly : see the previous note)

Likewise the *Adjective*:

It is hard in prosperitie to preserve true Religion, {true} godlinesse, and {true} humilitie.

- 65 Lidgate, lib. 8. speaking of Constantine,

That whilome had the domination

As chiefe Monarch, {chiefe} Prince, and {chiefe} President

Over all the world, from East to Occident.

In Greek. and Latine this want were barbarous: the Hebrewes notwithstanding use it. But the more notable lacke of the *Adjectives* is in the want of the *relative*;

In the things, {which} we least mistrust, the greatest danger doth often lurke.

- Gower, lib. 3.

Forthy the wise-men ne demen

The things after that [their] they semen.

But, after that, [which] they know, andfinde.

Ps. 118. 22. *The stone, the builders refused. For, which the builders refused.*

- 80 And here besides the common wanting of a Substantive, whereof we spake before; there is another more speciall, and proper to the Absolute, and the *Genitive*.

Chaucer in the 3. booke of Fame.

This is the mother of tydings,

- 85 *As the Sea [is mother} of Wells, and [is mother of] Springs.*

Rebecca clothed Jacob with garments of his brothers.

Superfluity also of Nounes is much used :

- 90 Sir Tho: More. *Whose death King Edward (although he commanded it) when he wist it was done, pitiously bewailed [it], and sorrowfully repented [it].*

63 *hard]* hard Fj (*wrongly*) 66 *domination* Lydgate : *divination* F
74 lib. 3.] lib. 2. F 75 *Forthy* W : *For thy* F, FS 76 *their]* there W :
not in Gower, but perhaps due to his spelling 'after that thin semen'.
78 *For]* for F 87 *brothers.]* brothers F 89 *More. Whose]* More,
whose F

Chaucer in his Prologue to the *Man of Lowes tale*.

Such law, as a nyveeth another way, i g h t ,
He should himself usen it by right.

Cower, 1. I. *For, whoso woll another blamet* 95
Hee seeketh of this owne shame.

Special! exceptions, and first of *Number*. Two Singulars are put for one Plurall:

All Authority, and Custome of men, exalted against the
word of God, must yeeld themselves prisoners. 100

Gower. *In thine aspect are all alicht*
The poore man, and eke the rich.

The second Person plurall is for reverence sake to one singular thing:

Gower, lib. I. *O good Father deare* 105
Why make ye this heaveie cheare?

Where also after a *Verbe* plurall, the singular of the *Noune* is retained:

I know you are a discreet, and faithfull man, and there-
fore am come to aske your advice. no

Exceptions of *Genders*. The Articles *hee*, and *it*, are used in each others *Gender*.

Sir Tho. More. *The south wind sometime swelleth of him-*
selfe before a tempest.

Gower of the earth. 115

An d forth mye nit delve, and i t c h , A n d e
And eaven it, with strength of plough.

Where it hatho fhimselfe n o u g h , S o t h a t h i s
So that his need is (atle) least.

It, also followeth for the Feminine : 120

Gower, lib. 4. *He sayd it should nought be* T h a t , i f s h
That, if she had a daughter bore,
That it ne should be forelore.

CHAP. III

Of the Syntaxe of a Pronoun with a Noun.

THe Articles *a.* and *the,* are joyned to Substantives common, never to proper names of men :

William Lambert in the Perambulation of Kent.

The cause only, and not the death maketh a Martyr.

5 Yet, with a proper name used by a *Metaphor,* or borrowed manner of speech, both Articles may be coupled :

(*Jewell against Harding :*)

10 *Who so ever he hath manifested himselfe, now he is not therefore to be called a Goliath, that is a monster, and impudent fellow, as he was.*

Jewell against Harding:

You have adventured your selfe to be the noble David, to conquer this Giant.

15 *Nort. in Arsan. And if ever it were necessarie, now it is when many an Athanasius, many an Atticus, many a noble Prince, and godly Personage lyeth prostrate at your feet for succour.*

where this *Metaphor* is expounded. So, when the proper name is used to note ones parentage, which kind of Nounes
20 the *Grammarians* call *Patronimicks :*

Nort. in Gabriells Oration to Scanderbech.

For you know well enough the wiles of the Ottomans.

25 *Perkin Warbeck, a stranger borne, fained himselfe to be a Plantagenet.*

When a Substantive, and an Adjective are joyned together, these Articles are put before the Adjective :

A good conscience is a continuall feast.

q30 *Gower, lib. I. For false semblance hath evermore Of his counsell in companie*

The darke untrue Hypocrisie.

ch. iii. 1-2 common] common F q3 the] the F 9 Goliath
Jewell 18 where] Where -F 19 which] which F3

Which Construction in the Article, A, n o t w i t h s t a n d
some Adjectives will not admit :

Sir Tho: More.

Such a Serpentis ambition, and desire of vain-glory. q35
 Chaucer.

~~Under a Shepheard false, and n e a r l i g e n t , T h~~
The Wolfe hath many a Sheepe, and Lamb to reni.

Moreover, both these Articles are joyned to any cases of
 the Latines, the Vocative only excepted : ast 40

Am a nsai th. The strengtho fam a n , Is

I sent to a man. I hurt a man.

I was sued by a man.

Likewise, The Apostle testifieth : The zeale of the Apostle :
 Give eare to the Apostle: Follow the Apostle: Depart not 45
 from the Apostle.

So that in these two Pronounes the whole Construction
 almost of the Latines is contained. The, agreeth to any
 number: A, only to the singular, save when it is joyned
 with those Adjectives, which doe of necessitie require a 50
 Plurall:

The Conscience is a thousand witnesses.

Lidgate, lib. I.

~~Though for a season they sit in high c h e a r e s , T h~~
their fame shall fade within a few yeares. 55

A, goeth before words beginning with Consonants, and
 before all Vowells, (Dip(h)thongs, whose first letter is y, or
 w. excepted) it is turn'd into An :

Sir Tho: More :

For men use to write an evill turne in marble stone ; but a 60
 good turne they write in the dust.

Gower, lib. I.

For all shall dye, and all shall passe ;

As well a Lyon, as an Asse.

So may it be also before h. 65

q32 notwithstanding] notwithstanding F q34 Sir] Sir F Tho.
 More, italic type in F 44 the Apostle] the Apostle F3 44-5
 Apostle : Give] Apostle ; Give F 57 Diphthongs Fq3 6q3 dye,
 . . . passe;] dye; . . . passe, F

Sir Tho: More.

What mischief worketh the proud enterprise of an high heart.

A, hath also the force of governing before a Noun :
 70 Sir Tho. More :

And t\le Protector had layd to herfor manner sake, that she was a Councell with the Lord Hastings to destroy him.

Chaucer, 2. booke of Troylus:

75 *And on his way fast homeward he sped,
 And Troylus he found alone a bed.*

Likewise, before the Participle present, (A, or) An, hath the force of a Gerund:

Nort. in Arsan.

But there is some great tempest a brewing towards us.

80 Lidgate, lib. 7.

*The King was slaine, and ye did assent,
 In a Forrest an hunting, when that he went.*

The Article, *The* joyned with the Adjective of a Noun proper may follow, after the Substantive :

85 Chaucer.———*Ther Chaunticleer the faire
 Was wont, and eke his Wives to repaire.*

Otherwise it varieth (not) from the common Rule. Againe, this Article by a *Synecdoche* doth restraine a generall, and common name to some certaine and speciall one :

90 Cower in his Prologue :

*The Apostle writeth unto us all,
 And saith, that upon us is fall
 TKend of the world. For Paul.*

So by *The Philosopher, Aristotle:* by *The Poet*, among the
 95 *Grecians, Homer:* with the *Latines, Virgill*, is understood.

75 a bed Chaucer: in bed F: in Bed Fj 76 An, hath] A, An
 havcFj 79 a-FjraF 81 assent,] assent F 85 Ther Chaucer:
 Their F, FS 87 not Editor 92 is fall Gower, Fj : his fall. F
 93 For]for F 94 The] the F Aristotle: by The] Aristotle. By the F

This, and that, being Demonstratives; and what, the Interrogative, are taken for Substantives :

Sir John Cheeke, in his Oration to the Rebels :

Ye rise for Religion: What Religion taught you that ?

Chaucer, in the *Reves tale* :

100

And this is very sooth, as I you tell.

Ascham, in his Discourse of the Affaires of Germanie.

A wonderfull folly in a great man kinselpe, and some peece of miserie in a whole Common-wealth, where fooles chiefly, and flatterers, may speake freely what they will ; 105 and good men shall commonly be shent, if they speake what they should.

What, also for an Adverbe of Partition:

Lambert. *But now, in our memorie, what by decay of the haven, and what by overthrow of Religious Houses, and losse of Calice, it is brought in (a) manner to miserable nakednesse, and decay.*

In to-
other
tongues,
Wid, ri,
have not
the force
of parti-
tion, nor
illud
faino, of
a Rela-
tive.

Chaucer. 3. booke of *TroUus*:

*Then wot I well, shee might never faile
For to beene holpen, what at your instance,
What at your other friends governance.*

"5

That, is used for a Relative :

Sir John Cheeke. *Sedition is an Aposteame, which, when it breaketh inwardly, putteth the State in great danger of Recovery; and corrupteth the whole Common-wealth, 120 with the rotten furie, that it hath putrefied with. For, with which.*

98 Cheeke,] Cheeke; F 99 What] What F zoo Reves tale] reves
tale F 103-7 A wonderfull. . . should, roman type in F, italic in
F3 109-10 what by ... and F3 : what by decay of the haven, and F
no what by overthrow of F3 : what by overthrow of -F Houses/
House F3 110-11 and losse of Calice] and losse of Calice, F: F3 as text
HI-12 it is ... decay, roman type in F, italic in Fj HI a Lambert,
Fj 115 instance,] instance? F 118 Sir] Sir, F 118-21 which
... furie, ... it. ... with roman type in F, italic in Fj 121 that
Fj : that F 122 which.] which F

They, and those, are sometimes taken, as it were, for Articles:

125 Fox, 2. Volume of Acts :

That no kind of disquietnesse should be procured against them of Bern, and Zurich.

Gower, lib. 2.

My brother hath us all sold

130 *To them of Rome.*

The Pronoun *These*, hath a rare use, being taken for an Adjective of similitude :

It is, neither the part of an honest man to tell these tales: nor of a wise man to receive them.

135 Lidgate, lib. 5.

Lo, how these Princes proud, and e, t, c. h, l, e, s, s, e, , i
Have shamefull ends, which cannot live in peace.

Him, and Them, be used reciprocally for the compounds, himself, themselves :

140 Fox. *The Garrison desired, that they might depart with baggage, and baggage.*

Chaucer in the Squires tale :

So deepe in graine he dyed his colour, Right, as a
Right, as a Serpent hideth him under flowers.

145 *His, their, and theirs, have also a strange use ; that is to say, being Possessives, they serve instead of Primitives :*

Chaucer :

An shortly of ane forth this thing, e, n, t, , T h a
That my will, was his wills instrument.

150 Which in Latin were as solecismes; for they should
say, suæ voluntatis, but voluntatis ipsius.

Pronouns have not the Articles *a*, and *the*, going before ; which, the *Relative*, *selfe*, and *same*, only excepted :

(Norton.) The same lewd cancred Carle, practiseth

125 Acts :] Acts, Ac. F3 131 use.] use F 134 nor o/Fs :
nor if F 140 depart] Query depart them 142 in the] in the F
152 before ; F3 : before F 153 which, the Relative] the Relativest
which Fa

nothing, but how he may overcome, and oppresse the
Faith of Christ, for the which, you, as you know, have
determined to labour and travell continually.

The Possessives, My, thy, our, your, and their, goe before
words: as, my land; thy goods; and so in the rest: Myne, thine, ours, yours,
~~thyne, ours, yours, hers, and theirs, follow, as it were, in the 160~~
Genitive case: as, these lands are mine, thine, &c.

His, doth indifferently goe before, or follow after: as, his
house is a faire one; and, this house is his.

CHAP. IIII.

Of the Syntaxe of Adjectives.

Adjectives of Qualitie are coupled with Pronounes.
Accusative cases:

Chaucer. *And he was wise, hardy, secret, and rich,
Of these three points, nas none him lyck.*

Certaine Adjectives include a Partition: 5
*From the head doth life and motion flow to the rest of the
members.*

The Comparative agreeth to the parts compared, by The
adding this Preposition, then: Latines

Chaucer, 3. booke of Fame. 10
*What did this A Lolus, but he
Tooke out his blacke trumpe of brasse,
That blacker then the Dwell was.*

The Superlative is joyned to the parts compared by this
Preposition, of: 15

Gower, lib. I. *Pride is of every misse the prick:
Pride is the worst vice of all wick.*
Jewell. *The friendship of truth is best of all.*

Oftentimes both Degrees are expressed by these two
Adverbs, more, and most: as, more excellent, most excellent.

ch. iii. 156 the which] the which F 159 as,] as F
ch. iv. I Pronounes.] Pronounes F 4 nas] was F₃ 9, 13 then...
then] than ... than F 16 of] of F
twene...

The
Latines
Compara-
tive
govern-
eth an
Ablative;
their Su-
perlative
a Genitive
plural:
The
Greekes,
both
Compara-
tive, and
Superla-
tive hath
a Geni-
tive; but
in neither
tongue is
the signe
going be-
twene...

Whereof the latter seemeth to have his proper place in those

that are spoken in a certain kind of English Atticisme, ore **Phrase of speech, imitating the manner of the most ancientest, and finest Grecians, who, for more emphasis, and vehemencies séke used (so) to speake.**

25 Furthermore, these Adverbs, *more*, and *most*, are added to the Comparative, and Superlative degree, **which should (be) before the Positive :**

Sir Tho. More.

Forasmuch as she saw the Cardinall more readier to
30 depart, then the remnant; For, not only the high dignitie
of the Civill Magistrate, but the most base sthandy crafts
are holy, when they are directed to the honour of God.

And this is a certain kind of English Atticisme, ore **Phrase of speech, imitating the manner of the most ancientest, and finest Grecians, who, for more emphasis, and vehemencies séke used (so) to speake.**

Positives are also joyned with the Preposition, *of*, like the Superlative :

40 Elias was the only man alive.

Gower. lib. 4. The first point of slouth I call
Lachesse, and is the chiefe of all.

CHAPTER V.

Of the Syntaxe of a Verbe with a Nounne.

Hitherto we have declared the Syntaxe of a Nounne : The Syntaxe of a Verbe followeth, being either of (a) Verbe with a Nounne ; or, of one Verbe with another.

The Syntaxe of a Verbe with a Nounne is in *number*, and 5 *person*: as

I am content. You are mis-inform'd.

Chaucer 2. booke of Fame.

*For, as flame is but lighted smoke ;
Right so is sound ayr ybroke.*

*I my selfe, and \your selves, agree unto the first person : 10
 You, than, [itt] thy selfe, your selves, to the second : All other
 Nounes and Pronounes (that are of any person) to the third :
 Againe, /, we, thou, he, she, they, who, doe ever governe :
 unlesse it be in the Verbe, am, that requireth the like case
 after it, as is before it. Mee, us, thee, her, them, him, whom, 15
 are govern'd of the Verbe. The rest, which are A b s o l u t e
may either governe, or bee governed.*

A Verbe impersonall in *Latins* is here expressed by an
 English impersonall, with this Article, *it*, going before: *a s , o p o r t e t*
oportet, it behoveth : decet, it becommeth. 20

General! Exceptions :

The person governing is oft understood by the h a t w e n
before : True Religion glorifieth them that honour it; and is
a target unto them that are a buckler unto it.

Chaucer. *Womens counsells brought us first to woet* 25
And made Adam from Paradise to goe.

But this is more notable, and also more common in the
future; wherein for the most part we never expresse any
 person, not so much as at the first:

Feare God. Honour the King. q30

Likewise the Verbe is understood by some other going
 before :

Nort. in Arsan.

When the danger is most great, naturall strength m o s t f e e
feeble, and divine ayde most needfull. 35

Certaine Pronounes, governed of the Verbe, doe here
 abound.

Sir Thomas More.

*And this I say, although they were not abused, as now
 they be, and so long have beene, that I feare me ever they 40
 will be.*

10 ourselves W n itom. W 15 it.] it, F thee the F q3
 q38 Thomas More italic in F q39-41 / say . . . they . . . abused . . .
 they be . . . they will be roman type in F

Chaucer, 3. booke of Fame :

*And as I wondred me, ywis,
Upon this house.*

45 Idem in Thisbe:

*She rist her up with a full dreary heart:
And in (a) cave with dreadfull foote she start.*

Special! Exceptions.

Nounes signifying a multitude, though they be of the
50 Singular number, require a Verbe plurall.

Lidgate, lib. 2.

*And wise men rehearsen in sentence,
Where folke be drunken, there is no resistance.*

This exception is in other Nounes also very common;
55 especially when the Verbe is joyned to an Adverbe, or
Conjunction:

*It is preposterous to execute a man_j before he have beene
condemned.*

Gower, lib. I.

60 *Although a man be wise himselfe,
Yet is the wisdom more of twelve.*

• Which
notwith-
standing
the
Hebrewes
use very
strangely,
Kullain
taiubu
ubouna,
7oft.17.io.
All they
returne
ye and
come
now.

Chaucer:

*Therefore I read you this counsell take,
Forsake sinne, ere sinne you forsake.*

In this exception of *number*, the Verbe sometime agreeth
not with the governing Noun of the plurall number, as it
should, but with the Noun governed : as, *Riches is a thing*
oft-times more hurtfull, then profitable to the owners. After
which manner the Latines also speake: *omnia pontus erat*.
The other special! * exception is not in use.

43 ?"5,] ywis F 47 a Chaucer foote Chaucer: fate F she
start] she start F 52 sentence,] sentence F 64 Forsake] Forsaketh
Chaucer: To for sake Speght

CHAP. VI.

Of the Syntaxe of a Verbe, with a Verbe.

When two Verbes meet together, whereof one is governed by the other, the latter is put in the infinite, and that with this signe *to*, comming betweene ; as *Good men ought to joyne together in good things.*

But, *will, doe, may, can, shall, dare*, (when it is intransitive) *must*, and *lett*, when it signifieth a sufferance, receive not the signe:

Gower. *To God no man may be fellow.*

This signe set before an *infinite*, not govern'd of a *Verbe*, changeth it into the nature of a *Noune*.

Nort. in Arsan. *To winne is the benefit of Fortune: but to keepe is the power of wisdom.*

General! Exceptions.

The Verbe governing is understood :

Nort. in Arsan.

For if the head, which is the life, and stay of the body, betray the members, must not the members also needs betray one another; and so the whole body, and headgoe altogether to utter wreck, and destruction ?

The other generall exception is * wanting.

The Speciall exception. Two Verbes, *have*, and *am*, require alwayes a Participle *past* without any signe : as, *am pleased. Thou art hated.* Save when they import a necessitie, or conveniencie of doing any thing: In which case they are very * eloquently joyned to the *infinite*, the signe comming betweene :

By the example of Herod, all Princes are to take heed how they give eare to flatterers.

Lidgate, lib. I.

Truth, andfalsnesse in what they have done,

May no while assemble in one person.

• So in Greek and Latine, but in Hebrew this exception is often. Esai. 6. 9. which hebraisme the New Testament is wont to retain by turning the Hebrew infinite, either into a verbal, diroff iKOVOTOBC, Matth. 13. 14. or a Participle, i&iw elSov. act1.7.34. •Aphrase proper unto our tongue, save that iht Hebrews seem to have the former. 70620.23. When he 15 to fill his belly.

ch. vi. 5-6 intransitive] in Transitive F, Fj 11 To... to] To... to F 15 Nort. in Arsan. italic in F 20 note * New] new F a«og dfoifofoef] ajfov aimwitoO<u F IBwv ctfov] Ifov eifiov F 34.] 34 F

And here those Times, which in *Etymologic* we remembred to be wanting, are set forth by the *Syntaxe* of Verbes joyned together.

q35 The *Syntaxe* of *imperfect* Times in this manner :

The Presents by the *infinite*, and the Verbe, *may*, or *cant* as for, *Amem*, *Amarem*: *I may love*: *I might love*. And againe, / *can love*: *I could love*.

The *future* is declared by the *infinite*, and the Verbe *shall*, or *will*: as *Amabo*: *I shall*, or, *will love*. *Amavero* addeth thereunto, *have*, taking the nature of two divers Times ; that is, of the *future*, and the Time *past*:

I shall have loved: or, *I will have loved*.
***I will have loved*.**

4 5 The *perfect* Times are expressed by the Verbe, *have*: as,

***Amavi*. *Amaveram*.**

I have loved. *I had loved*.

Amaverim, and *Amavissem* adde *might* unto the former

Verbe: as ***I might have loved*.**

The *infinite past*, is also made by adding, *have*: as, *Amavissem*, to

***Amavisse*, to have loved.**

Verbes Passive are made of the Participle *passive*, and the Verbe. ***Amor*, and *Amabar*, by the only putting to of**
55 the Verbe: as

Amor, *I am loved*.

Amabar, *I was loved*.

Amer, and *Amarer*, have it governed of the Verbe *may*, or

60 *can*: as, ***Amer*, *I may be loved*: or, *I can be loved*.**

Amarer, *I might be loved*, or, / *could be loved*.

In *Amabor*, it is governed of *shall*, or, *will*: as,
***I shall*, or, *will be loved*.**

q32 here those] herethose F q37 might] miéA/ F q38 could]
could F 57 was] was F

CHAP. VII.

Of the Syntaxe of Adverbs.

THis therefore is the Syntaxe of words, having *number* ; there remaineth that of words *without number*, which standeth in *Adverbs*, or *Conjunctions*.

Adverbs are taken on of two sort h e other; that is of *Adverbs of likenesse*, for *Adverbs of Time*.

As he spake those words, he gave up the ghost.

Gower, lib. I.

Anone, as he w as meeke, and t he same, H
He found towards his God the same.

The like is to be scene in *Adverbs of Time*, and *Place*, used 10 in each others stead, as among the *Latines*, and the *Grecians*.

Nort. in Arsan.

Le, us no, be ashamed to follow the counsell, and example of our enemies, where it may doe us good.

Adverbs stand instead of *Relatives*:

'5

Lidgate, lib. I.

*And little worth is fairenesse in certaine
In a person, where no vertue is seene.*

Nort. to the Northerne Rebels.

*Few women storme against the marriage of Priests, but 20
such as have beene Priests harlots, or faine would be.*

Chaucer in his Ballad.

*But great God disposeth, And maketh casual by his Providence
And maketh casual by his Providence*

Such things as fraile man purposeth. For, those things, 25
which.

Certaine *Adverbs* in the Syntaxe of a Substantive, and an Adjective meeting together, cause, a, the Article, to follow the Adjective.

ch. vtf. i number ;] number, F 6 As -F3 : As F 26 which]
which F 28 Article, F3 : Article F
445.8 N n

- 301 Sir John Cheeke: *O! with what spite was sundred so noble a body, from so godly a mind.*

Jewell. *It is too light a labour to strive for names.*

Chaucer.

Thou art at ease, and hold thee well therein.

- 35 *As great a praise is to keepe well, as win.*

• The
Greeke
Article is
set before
the posi-
tive also :
Theocrif.
αἰδ. γ.
τίττω' εἰμὼν
τὸ καλὸν
σεφελή-
μην.

Adjectives * compared, when they are used Adverbially, may have the Article *the*, going before.

Jewell. *The more enlarged is your libertie, the lesse cause have you to complaine.*

Adverbs are wanting.

Sir Tho. More. *And how farre be they off that would helpe, as God send grace, they hurt not; for, that they hurt not.*

Often-times they are used without any necessitie, for greater vehemencie sake ; as,

- 45 *Then, afterward. Againe, once more.*

Cower. *Hee saw also the bowes spread
Above all earth, in which were
The kinde of all birds there.*

• In
Greeke,
and in
Latine,
they are
coupled;
some,
with one
oblique
case ;
some with
another.

Prepositions are joyned with the * Accusative cases of Pronounes:

Sir Thomas More. *I exhort, and require you, for the love that you have borne to me; and, for the love that I have borne to you; and for the love, thai our Lord bearetk to us all.*

Gower. lib. I.

*For Lucifer, with them that fell,
Bare Pride with him into Hell.*

They may also be coupled with the Possessives : *Myne, thyne, ours, yours, his, hers, theirs.*

- 60 NorL to the Rebels. *Thinke you, her Majestie, and the wisest of the Realme, have no care of their owne soules, that have charge both of their owne, and yours?*

36 note * αἰδ.] αἰδ. F τίττω' εἰμὼν] τίττω' εἰμὼν F σεφελήμην] σεφελήμην
F 45 Then, afterward.] Then-afterward, F Againe . . . more]
roman type in F 49 note * oblique] oblique F3 56, 57 with] with F
37 into] into F

These * *Prepositions* follow sometimes the Nounes they are coupled with:

God hath made Princes their Subjects guides, to direct them in the way, which they have to walke in. 66

But, ward, or wards; and, toward, or, towards, have the same Syntaxe, that versus, and adversus, have with the Latines: that is, the latter comming after the Nounes, which it governeth, and the other contrarily : 70

Nort. in Paul Angells Oration to Scanderbech. For, his heart being uncleane to Corf-ward, and spitefull towards men, doth alwayes imagine mischief.

Lidgate, lib. 7,

And south-ward runneth to Caucasus, 75
Andfolke O/Scythie, that bene laborious,

Now, as before in two Articles, *a*, and *the*, the whole construction of the Latines, was contain'd: so their whole rection is by *Prepositions* neerehand declared : where the *Preposition* of, hath the force of the Genitive; *to*, of the Dative ; *from*, of(f), *in*, *by*, and such like of the Ablative : as, the praise of God. Be thankfull to God. Take the cock of(f) the hoope. I was saved from you, by you, in your house.

Prepositions matched with the * *Participle present*, supply the place of *Gerundes*: as, In loving, of loving, by loving, with loving, from loving, &c. 86

Prepositions doe also governe * *Adverbs*.

Lidgate, lib. 9.

Sent from above, as shee did understand.

General! exceptions : Divers *Prepositions* are very often wanting, whereof it shall be sufficient to give a taste in those, that above the rest, are most worthy to be noted.

Of, in an Adjective of Partition :

Lidgate, lib. 5.

His Lieges eche one being of one assent
To live, and dye with him in his intent.

65 Princes] Princes, F 66 in] in F in] in F 69 latter
should be former 84 note * 87 F3: 87 F 85 by loving,
by loving F 89 from] from F 94 Lidgate, lib.] Lidgate, lib. F

* The Hebrews set them alwayes before.

* The like nature in Greeks, and Hebrew have *Prepositions* matched with the infinite, as 87 88 89 90 91 92 93 94 95 96 97 98 99 100 101 102 103 104 105 106 107 108 109 110 111 112 113 114 115 116 117 118 119 120 121 122 123 124 125 126 127 128 129 130 131 132 133 134 135 136 137 138 139 140 141 142 143 144 145 146 147 148 149 150 151 152 153 154 155 156 157 158 159 160 161 162 163 164 165 166 167 168 169 170 171 172 173 174 175 176 177 178 179 180 181 182 183 184 185 186 187 188 189 190 191 192 193 194 195 196 197 198 199 200 201 202 203 204 205 206 207 208 209 210 211 212 213 214 215 216 217 218 219 220 221 222 223 224 225 226 227 228 229 230 231 232 233 234 235 236 237 238 239 240 241 242 243 244 245 246 247 248 249 250 251 252 253 254 255 256 257 258 259 260 261 262 263 264 265 266 267 268 269 270 271 272 273 274 275 276 277 278 279 280 281 282 283 284 285 286 287 288 289 290 291 292 293 294 295 296 297 298 299 300 301 302 303 304 305 306 307 308 309 310 311 312 313 314 315 316 317 318 319 320 321 322 323 324 325 326 327 328 329 330 331 332 333 334 335 336 337 338 339 340 341 342 343 344 345 346 347 348 349 350 351 352 353 354 355 356 357 358 359 360 361 362 363 364 365 366 367 368 369 370 371 372 373 374 375 376 377 378 379 380 381 382 383 384 385 386 387 388 389 390 391 392 393 394 395 396 397 398 399 400 401 402 403 404 405 406 407 408 409 410 411 412 413 414 415 416 417 418 419 420 421 422 423 424 425 426 427 428 429 430 431 432 433 434 435 436 437 438 439 440 441 442 443 444 445 446 447 448 449 450 451 452 453 454 455 456 457 458 459 460 461 462 463 464 465 466 467 468 469 470 471 472 473 474 475 476 477 478 479 480 481 482 483 484 485 486 487 488 489 490 491 492 493 494 495 496 497 498 499 500 501 502 503 504 505 506 507 508 509 510 511 512 513 514 515 516 517 518 519 520 521 522 523 524 525 526 527 528 529 530 531 532 533 534 535 536 537 538 539 540 541 542 543 544 545 546 547 548 549 550 551 552 553 554 555 556 557 558 559 560 561 562 563 564 565 566 567 568 569 570 571 572 573 574 575 576 577 578 579 580 581 582 583 584 585 586 587 588 589 590 591 592 593 594 595 596 597 598 599 600 601 602 603 604 605 606 607 608 609 610 611 612 613 614 615 616 617 618 619 620 621 622 623 624 625 626 627 628 629 630 631 632 633 634 635 636 637 638 639 640 641 642 643 644 645 646 647 648 649 650 651 652 653 654 655 656 657 658 659 660 661 662 663 664 665 666 667 668 669 670 671 672 673 674 675 676 677 678 679 680 681 682 683 684 685 686 687 688 689 690 691 692 693 694 695 696 697 698 699 700 701 702 703 704 705 706 707 708 709 710 711 712 713 714 715 716 717 718 719 720 721 722 723 724 725 726 727 728 729 730 731 732 733 734 735 736 737 738 739 740 741 742 743 744 745 746 747 748 749 750 751 752 753 754 755 756 757 758 759 760 761 762 763 764 765 766 767 768 769 770 771 772 773 774 775 776 777 778 779 780 781 782 783 784 785 786 787 788 789 790 791 792 793 794 795 796 797 798 799 800 801 802 803 804 805 806 807 808 809 810 811 812 813 814 815 816 817 818 819 820 821 822 823 824 825 826 827 828 829 830 831 832 833 834 835 836 837 838 839 840 841 842 843 844 845 846 847 848 849 850 851 852 853 854 855 856 857 858 859 860 861 862 863 864 865 866 867 868 869 870 871 872 873 874 875 876 877 878 879 880 881 882 883 884 885 886 887 888 889 890 891 892 893 894 895 896 897 898 899 900 901 902 903 904 905 906 907 908 909 910 911 912 913 914 915 916 917 918 919 920 921 922 923 924 925 926 927 928 929 930 931 932 933 934 935 936 937 938 939 940 941 942 943 944 945 946 947 948 949 950 951 952 953 954 955 956 957 958 959 960 961 962 963 964 965 966 967 968 969 970 971 972 973 974 975 976 977 978 979 980 981 982 983 984 985 986 987 988 989 990 991 992 993 994 995 996 997 998 999 1000

* This in Hebrew is very common: from now, that is, from this time, whence proceed those hebraismes in the New Testament; and 95 96 97 98 99 100 101 102 103 104 105 106 107 108 109 110 111 112 113 114 115 116 117 118 119 120 121 122 123 124 125 126 127 128 129 130 131 132 133 134 135 136 137 138 139 140 141 142 143 144 145 146 147 148 149 150 151 152 153 154 155 156 157 158 159 160 161 162 163 164 165 166 167 168 169 170 171 172 173 174 175 176 177 178 179 180 181 182 183 184 185 186 187 188 189 190 191 192 193 194 195 196 197 198 199 200 201 202 203 204 205 206 207 208 209 210 211 212 213 214 215 216 217 218 219 220 221 222 223 224 225 226 227 228 229 230 231 232 233 234 235 236 237 238 239 240 241 242 243 244 245 246 247 248 249 250 251 252 253 254 255 256 257 258 259 260 261 262 263 264 265 266 267 268 269 270 271 272 273 274 275 276 277 278 279 280 281 282 283 284 285 286 287 288 289 290 291 292 293 294 295 296 297 298 299 300 301 302 303 304 305 306 307 308 309 310 311 312 313 314 315 316 317 318 319 320 321 322 323 324 325 326 327 328 329 330 331 332 333 334 335 336 337 338 339 340 341 342 343 344 345 346 347 348 349 350 351 352 353 354 355 356 357 358 359 360 361 362 363 364 365 366 367 368 369 370 371 372 373 374 375 376 377 378 379 380 381 382 383 384 385 386 387 388 389 390 391 392 393 394 395 396 397 398 399 400 401 402 403 404 405 406 407 408 409 410 411 412 413 414 415 416 417 418 419 420 421 422 423 424 425 426 427 428 429 430 431 432 433 434 435 436 437 438 439 440 441 442 443 444 445 446 447 448 449 450 451 452 453 454 455 456 457 458 459 460 461 462 463 464 465 466 467 468 469 470 471 472 473 474 475 476 477 478 479 480 481 482 483 484 485 486 487 488 489 490 491 492 493 494 495 496 497 498 499 500 501 502 503 504 505 506 507 508 509 510 511 512 513 514 515 516 517 518 519 520 521 522 523 524 525 526 527 528 529 530 531 532 533 534 535 536 537 538 539 540 541 542 543 544 545 546 547 548 549 550 551 552 553 554 555 556 557 558 559 560 561 562 563 564 565 566 567 568 569 570 571 572 573 574 575 576 577 578 579 580 581 582 583 584 585 586 587 588 589 590 591 592 593 594 595 596 597 598 599 600 601 602 603 604 605 606 607 608 609 610 611 612 613 614 615 616 617 618 619 620 621 622 623 624 625 626 627 628 629 630 631 632 633 634 635 636 637 638 639 640 641 642 643 644 645 646 647 648 649 650 651 652 653 654 655 656 657 658 659 660 661 662 663 664 665 666 667 668 669 670 671 672 673 674 675 676 677 678 679 680 681 682 683 684 685 686 687 688 689 690 691 692 693 694 695 696 697 698 699 700 701 702 703 704 705 706 707 708 709 710 711 712 713 714 715 716 717 718 719 720 721 722 723 724 725 726 727 728 729 730 731 732 733 734 735 736 737 738 739 740 741 742 743 744 745 746 747 748 749 750 751 752 753 754 755 756 757 758 759 760 761 762 763 764 765 766 767 768 769 770 771 772 773 774 775 776 777 778 779 780 781 782 783 784 785 786 787 788 789 790 791 792 793 794 795 796 797 798 799 800 801 802 803 804 805 806 807 808 809 810 811 812 813 814 815 816 817 818 819 820 821 822 823 824 825 826 827 828 829 830 831 832 833 834 835 836 837 838 839 840 841 842 843 844 845 846 847 848 849 850 851 852 853 854 855 856 857 858 859 860 861 862 863 864 865 866 867 868 869 870 871 872 873 874 875 876 877 878 879 880 881 882 883 884 885 886 887 888 889 890 891 892 893 894 895 896 897 898 899 900 901 902 903 904 905 906 907 908 909 910 911 912 913 914 915 916 917 918 919 920 921 922 923 924 925 926 927 928 929 930 931 932 933 934 935 936 937 938 939 940 941 942 943 944 945 946 947 948 949 950 951 952 953 954 955 956 957 958 959 960 961 962 963 964 965 966 967 968 969 970 971 972 973 974 975 976 977 978 979 980 981 982 983 984 985 986 987 988 989 990 991 992 993 994 995 996 997 998 999 1000

The Preposition, *touching, concerning, or* some such like doth often want, after the manner of the Hebrew *Lamed* :

100 Gower. *The privities of man sh^e ^e ^a ^r ^t , i o*
~~*They speak, and sound in his eare,*~~
As though they loude windes were.

(Sir John Cheeke.) *Riches, and inheritance, they be given by Gods providence, to whom of his wisdome hee thinketh good: For, touching, riches, and inheritance ;*
 105 *or some such like Preposition.*

If, is somewhat strangely lacking :

Nort. in Arsan. *Unwise are they, that end their matters with, Had I wist.*

Lidgate, lib. I.

no *For, ne were not this prudent ordinance*

~~*Some, too bey, and (some) above it on y. e , D e s t r*~~
~~*Destroyed were all worldly Policie.*~~

The superfluitie of *Prepositions* is more rare :

Jewell. *The whole Universitie, and City of Oxford.*

115 Gower. *So that, my Lord, touchend of this I have answered, how that it is.*

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Syntaxe of Conjunctions.

THe Syntaxe of *Conjunctions* is in order only ; *Neither,* and, *either,* are placed in the beginning of words :
Nor, and *or,* comming after:

5 Sir Thomas More: *Hee can be no Sanctuary-man, that hath neither discretion to desire it, nor malice to deserve it.*

Sir John Cheeke. *Either by ambition you seeke Lordlinessse, much unfit for you ; or by covetousnesse, ye be*

ch. vii. 99 *heart,*] *heart* F 109 lib. I. *should be* lib. 2 no
 not] *nat* Lydgate 111 *some* Lydgate *gye,*] *gye* F 115 *that, my*
Lord,] *that my* Lord F 116 *how*] *how.* F
 ch. viii. 4 Thomas More *italic in F*

unsuitable, a thing likely enough in you: or else by
folly, ye be not content with your estate, a fancie to be so
plucked out of you.

Lidgate, lib. 2.

~~Bring, by my order, for by false treasons,~~ e e s , E i
Asketh a fall, for their finall guerdons. 15

Here, for *nor* in the latter member, *ne* is sometime used :

Lambert. But the Archbishop set himselfe against it, affirm-
ing plainly, that *hee* neither could, *ne* would suffer it.

The like Syntaxe is also to be marked in *so*, and *as*, used
comparatively : for, when the comparison is in quantitie, then 20
so goeth before, and *as* followeth.

Ascham, H e hateth himselfe, and hateth h i s owne h . u e t ,
that is content to heare none so gladly, as either a foole,
or a flatterer.

Cower, lib. I. 25

Men wistin thilk time none
So faire a wight, as she was one.

Sometime for *so*, as commeth in.

Chaucer, lib. 5. Troil.

And said, I am, albe it to you no joyt q30
As gentle a man, as any wight in Troy.

But if the Comparison be in qualitie, then it is contrary :

Gower; For, as the fish, if it be d r y , M o t e i n default of wa
Mole in default of water dye :
Right so, without ayre, on live t q35
No man, *ne* beast, might thrive.

And, in the beginning of a sentence, serveth in stead of an
Admiration :

And, what a notable signe of patience w a sit in I o b ,
not to murmur against the Lord ! 40

14 treasons] treasons F 17 Lambert] Lambert F 20 Chaucer]
Chaucer F (so 41, 47) q30 to not in Chaucer q3q3 Gower] Gower F
dryt] dry F q35 wit/wuten Cower on live Gower : or live F
40 Lord I F q3 : Lord? F

Chaucer q3. booke of Fame.

What, quoth shee, and be ye wood ?

And, wene ye fort o doo e n o o d A n d , f o r t o h a v e o
And, for to have of that no fame :

4 5 Conjunctionso fdiverssortsa r etakeno n. e f o. r another: a
But, a severing Conjunction, for a conditioning :

Chaucer in the Man of Lowes tale.

But it were with the il keyen of his m i n d e , W
With which men seen, after they ben blinde.

50 Sir Thomas More. Which, neither can they have, but you
give it: neither can you give it, if ye agree not.

The selfe-same Syntaxe as in And, the coupling Conjunction ;

The Lord Berners in the Preface to his translation of
55 Froisart: What knowledge should we have of ancient
things past, and historie were not?

Sir John Cheeke. Ye have waxed greedyen o w upon C i t i
and have attempted mightie spoiles to glut up, and you
could, your wasting hunger.

60 On the other side, for, a cause-renderer, hath sometime
the force of a severing one.

Lidgate, lib. q3.

But it may fall a Drewry in his r i g h t ,
To outrage a Giant for all his great might.

65 Here the two generall exceptions are termed, Asyndeton, and Polysyndeton. Asyndeton, when the Conjunction wanteth :

The Universities of Christendome are the eyes, the light to
the leaven, the salt, the seasoning of the world.

7° Cower. To whom her heart cannot heale, Turne it to woe, turne it to weale.
Turne it to woe, turne it to weale.

Here the sundring Conjunction, or, is lacking ; and in the
former example, and, the coupler.

42 wood ?] wood / F

47 Man of Lawes tale] man of lawes tale F

49 seen.] seen' F, Fq3

56 not?] not. F

59 could, Fq3 : could F

6q3 Dewry] dwery Lydgate : Drewry F

64 To outrage] Toutrate

Lydgate : To outrage F

Polysyndeton is in doubling the *Conjunction* more then it need to be : 75

Gower, lib. 4.

*So, whether that the frieze, or sweatt
Or He be in, or He be outt
Hee will be idle all about.*

CHAPTER IX.

Of the Distinction of Sentences.

ALL the parts of *Syntaxe* have already been declared. There resteth one generall Affection of the whole, dispersed thorow every member thereof, as the blood is thorow the body ; and consisteth in the breathing, when we pronounce any *Sentence*; For, whereas our breath is by nature so short, that we cannot continue without a stay to speake long together ; it was thought necessarie, as well for the speakers ease, as for the plainer deliverance of the things spoken, to invent this meanes, whereby men pausing a pretty while, the whole speech might never the worse be understood.

These Distinctions are, either of a *perfect*, or *imperfect* Sentence. The distinctions of an *imperfect* Sentence are two, a *sub-distinction*, and a *Comma*.

A *Sub-distinction* is a humane breathing, when the word serveth indifferently, both to the parts of the Sentence going before, and following after, and is marked thus (;)

A *Comma* is a distinction of an *imperfect* Sentence, wherein with somewhat a longer breath, the Sentence (going before is marked off from the Sentence) following; and is noted with this shorter semicircle (,).

ch. viii. 78 *He . . . He* | *he . . . he* Gnwr : 'He . . . 'He F, F3

ch. ix. 14 a *sub-distinction*, and a *Comma* | a *Comma*, and a *Semicolon* J'''3 15 *Sub-distinction* | *Comma* 13 17 (;) F 18
Comma | *Semicolon* F3 19-20 *Koini*; before . . . *Sentence Editor from*
Kamus 20 following] following is included Fj 21 with this
. . . (,)] thus (;). F3

•TheHe-
brewcs
have no
peculiar
note to
discerne
this
Parenthe-
sis by,
nor the
Interroga-
tion, and
Admira-
tion fol-
lowing.

Hithe^r pertaineth a * *Parenthesis*[^] wherein two *Comma*'s include a Sentence:

Jewell. *Certaine falshoods* (by meane of good utterance)
have sometime more likely-hood of truth, then truth it selfe.

Gower, lib. I.

Division, (the Gospel saith)
One house upon another laith.

Chaucer 3, booke of *Fame*.

For time, ylost (this know ye)
By no way may recovered be.

These imperfect distinctions in the *Syntaxe* of a Substantive, and an Adjective give the former place to the
35 Substantive:

Ascham. *Thus the poore Gentleman suffered grieffe ; great for the paine ; but greater for the spite.*

Gower, lib. 2. Speaking of the envious person :

40 *Though he a man see vertuous,*
And full of good condition,
Thereof maketh he no mention.

The Distinction of a perfect Sentence hath a more full stay, and doth rest the spirit, which is a *Pause*, or a *Period*.

A *Pause* is a Distinction of a Sentence, though perfect
45 in it selfe, yet joyned to another, being marked with two pricks. (.)

A *period* is the Distinction of a Sentence, in all respects perfect, and is marked with one full prick, over against the lower part of the last letter, thus (.)

50ⁱ If a Sentence be with an *Interrogation*, we use this note (?)

Sir John Cheeke. *Who can perswade, where treason is above reason; and might ruleth right; and it is had for lawfull, whatsoever is lustfull; and Commotioners*
55^l - *are better then Commissioners; and common woe is named Commonwealth ?*

Chaucer, 2. booke of *Fame*.

~~To let a foole have governance,~~
~~Of things, that he cannot demayne ?~~ 60

Lidgate, lib. I.

~~For, if wives be found v a r i a b l e ,~~ W h e r e s h a l l h u s b a n d s
~~Where shall husbands find other stable ?~~

If it be pronounced with an *Admiration*, then thus (!)

Sir Tho. More. O Lord God, the blindness of our mortall 65
nature !

Chaucer, I. booke of *Fame*.

~~Alas ! what harme doth a p p a r e n c e ,~~ W h e n i t i s
~~When it is false in existence !~~

These Distinctions (whereof the first, is commonly 70
neglected) as they best agree with nature : so come they

nearest to the ancient stories of Sentences amongst the R o m a
and the Grecians. An example of all four to make the
matter plaine, let us take out of that excellent Oration of
Sir John Cheeke, against the Rebels, whereof before we 75
have made so often mention : *When common order of the law
can take no place in unruly, and disobedient subjects; and
all men will of wilfulnesse resist with rage, and thinke their
owne violence, to be the best justice: then be wise Magistrates
compelled by necessitie, to seeke an extreme remedy, 80
where meane salves helpe not, and bring
in the Martiall Law, where none
other law serveth.*



The End.

TIMBER, OR DISCOVERIES

THE TEXT

Timber: or, Discoveries was first printed in the Folio of 1640 in the section including *Horace his Art of Poetry* and *The English Grammar*, which it followed on signatures M to R in fours, pages 85-132. Like *The Sad Shepherd*, it is dated 1641 in the imprint. The title before the text is 'EXPLORATA: OR, DISCOVERIES'. The running title is 'Discoveries'.

Two copies are recorded with an important variation in the catchword of M I verso—that in the University of Tours used by Professor Castelain for his edition, and the British Museum copy with press-mark C 28. m. 11. These copies have 'THE', though M 2 recto has 'EXPLORATA'

for the heading. In most copies the catchword is 'EX-', but in some of these the two letters have been stamped in separately over an erasure, as they are not quite in line: in other copies the printing appears to be normal. The error must have been quickly corrected.

Professor Castelain has an elaborate explanation. Comparing the note on the back of the title-page of *The Underwood*, he conjectures that the similar part of the note here was Jonson's Latin translation of it; that he intended the note to be printed at the head of *The Forest*; that the editor¹ substituted 'TIMBER'¹ for 'EXPLORATA'¹ in the title-page, and then transferred the Latin note on 'SYLVA' to the *Discoveries* in order to explain the unintelligible 'TIMBER' and to make it harmonize with the sylvan names of *The Forest* and *The Underwood*.

This theory presupposes some very silly meddling on the part of the editor. The note on *The Underwood*, so entitled

¹out of the Analogy they hold to the Forrest, have x . c . e . l . l . e . n . t . p
point, relating the later set of poems to the earlier; and the sturdier *Timber* (or 'Tymber-trees' of the preliminary note) fits the prose miscellany equally well. The Latin note is not Jonson's, but a quotation from Caspar Gavartius' commentaries on Statius, 1616, explaining the title *Sylvae* for

Statius' lyrics. In the whole of the 'Third Volume'—that is to say, the plays, poems, and prose works added in 1640 to the three plays of 1631—there is nothing to suggest that the printer did more than set up the copy just as it reached his hands, without any attempt to manipulate it.

A certain number of errors are corrected, notably ~~ἀνθρώποιον~~ for ~~ἀνθρώποιον~~ in a quotation from Hesiod (l. 357) and 'Stobus' for 'Stobaus' (l. 2500). These suggest scholarly knowledge, but the corrections are mostly of the punctuation, and here the printer has not always understood Jonson's system. Thus in 'Speech is the only benefit, man hath to expresse his excellencie of mind' (l. 1881), 'short, and succinct periods' (l. 2063), 'Discoveries of truth, and fitnessse' (l. 2102) he modernized by removing the commas.

Occasionally he dropped out words, which can be supplied from the writer whom Jonson used, as 'The next property of *Epistolarie* style is *Perspicuity*, and is often-times (endangered by the former qualitie (brevity), often-times) by affectation of some wit ill angled for, or ostentation of some hidden terms of Art' (ll. 2237-40), where the missing words are recovered from John Hoskyns's *Directions for Speech and Style*, which Jonson is copying verbally; or, 'So a Lion is a perfect creature in himselfe, though it be lesse, then (an Elephant. The head of a Lion is a whole, though it be lesse, then) that of a *Buffalo*, or a *Rhinocerote*' (ll. 2712-3), where Daniel Heinsius' *De Tragoediae Constitutione* is similarly drawn upon. These omissions are examples of haplography, the printer's eye running on to the repetition of 'often-times' and 'lesse, then' and overlooking the intervening words. Only once does the printer make good an omission, 'judgement, or measure' in line 354, where he printed at first only 'judgement'.

The Folio arrangement of the text is haphazard. It is clear that Sir Kenelm Digby gathered up Jonson's loose papers and handed them over to the publisher just as he found them. It would have been possible, for instance, to print in some sort of sequence Jonson's reflections on life,

literature, and kingship, but nothing of the kind was done. Two passages in the text are obviously misplaced, and one of them plays havoc with its context. They were evidently written on loose slips of paper which went astray. After a section on the Prince (ll. 986-91) two pointless sentences on the theme of propagation beginning 'Doe but aske of nature . . . ' were inserted. We have removed them to lines 967-71, before the discussion of the Prince begins. This is the only place in which we have deviated from the order of the Folio. The last paragraph (ll. 2816-20) Swinburne calls 'a repetition of a former remark and a former quotation'¹ tumbled in by some blundering printer's devil with no reference whatever to the sentence preceding it'.² No place can be found for this fragment.

We have made the text easier to follow by leaving a clear space of one line where each section ends. The Folio prints the paragraphs consecutively without a break.

¹ Ll. 695-6, 1944-6.

² *A Study of Ben Jonson*, p. 168.

TIMBER:

OR,

DISCOVERIES

MADE VPON MEN
AND MATTER.: ASTHEY,
 have flow'd out of his daily Read-
 ings; or had cheir refluxe to his
 peculiar Notion of the Times.

By
BEN: IOHNSON.

Ternum habita, ut moris quam fit sibi curia fupellix.
 Pers. sat. 4:

LONDON,
Printed M.D.C.XLI.

SYLVA.

Rerum, & sententiarum, quasi **Υλη** dicta a multiplici
materid, & varietate, in iis contentd. Quemadmodum
enim vulgd solemus infinitam arborum nascentium indiscri-
mination multitudinem Sylvam dicere : Ita etiam libros sius in
5 quibus varies, & diverse materice opuseula temert congesta
erant, Sylvas appellabant Antiqui : Tymber-trees.

EX-

EXPLORATA:

OR,

DISCOVERIES.

ILl *Fortune* never crush't that man, whom good *Fortune Fortuna*.
 I deceived not. I therefore have counselled my friends,
 never to trust to her fairer side, though she seem'd to make
 peace with them : But to place all things she gave them so,
 as she might aske them againe without their trouble ; she 5
 might take them from them, not pull them: to keepe
 alwayes a distance betweene her, and themselves. He
 knowes not his own strength, that hath not met Adversity.
 Heaven prepares *good men* with *crosses*; but no ill can
 happen to a *good* man. Contraries are not mixed. Yet, 10
 that which happens to any man, may to every man. But it
 is in his reason what hee accounts it, and will make it.

Change into extremity is very frequent, and easie. As *Casus*.
 when a beggar suddenly growes rich, he commonly becomes
 a Prodigall; for, to obscure his former obscurity, he puts 15
 on riot and excesse.

No man is so foolish, but may give an other good counsell *Consilia*.
 sometimes ; and no man is so wise, but may easily erre, if
 hee will take no others counsel!, but his owne. But very
 few men are wise by their owne counsell; or learned by 20
 their owne teaching. For hee that was onely taught by *Am&lkL*-
 himselfe, had a foole to his Master. TM^{fi}

A *Fame* that is wounded to the world, would bee better *Fama*.
 cured by anothers *Apologie*, then its owne: For few can
 apply medicines well themselves. Besides, the man that 25

is once hated, both his *good*, and his *evill* deeds oppresse him : Hee is not easily *emergent*.

Negotia. In great *Affaires* it is a worke of difficulty to please all. And oft-times wee lose the occasion of carrying a *busines*
 30 well, and thoroughly, by our too much haste. For *Passions* are spirituall Rebels, and raise sedition against the understanding.

Amor Patria. There is a *Necessity* all men should love their countrey : He that professeth the contrary, may be delighted with his
 35 words, but his heart is there.

Ingenia. *Natures* that are hardned to *evill*, you shall sooner breake, then make straight; they are like poles that are crooked, and dry: there is no attempting them.

Applausus. Wee *praise* the things wee heare, with much more willingness, then those wee see: because wee envy the present, and reverence the past; thinking our selves instructed by the one, and over-laid by the other.

Opinio. *Opinion* is a light, vaine, crude, and imperfect thing, settled in the Imagination ; but never arriving at the under-
 45 standing, there to obtaine the tincture of *Reason*. Wee labour with it more then Truth. There is much more holds us, then presseth us. An ill fact is one thing, an ill fortune is another: Yet both often-times sway us alike, by the error of our thinking.

Impthura. Many men beleeve not themselves, what they would perswade others; and lesse doe the things, which they would impose on others : but least of all, know what they themselves most confidently boast. Only they set the signe of the Crosse over their outer doores, and sacrifice to their
 55 gut, and their groyne in their inner Closets.

What a deale of cold busines doth a man mis-spend the better part of life in I in scattering *complements*, tendring visits, gathering and venting *newes*, following *Feasts* and *Playes*, making a little winter-love in a darke corner. *lactura vita.*

Puritanus Hypocrita est Hcereticus, quern opinio propria perspicacice, qud sibi videtur, cum paucis, in Ecclesia dogmatibus errores quosdam animadvertisse, de statu mentis deturbavit: unde sacro furore percitus, phrenetice pugnat contra Magistratus, sic ratus, obedientiam pr&stare Deo. *Hypo-cnta.* 64

Learning needs rest: Sovereignty gives it. Sovereignty needs counsell: Learning affords it. There is such a Con-sociation of offices, betweene the *Prince*, and whom his favour breeds, that they may helpe to sustaine his power, as hee their knowledge. It is the greatest part of his Liberality, his Favour: And from whom doth he heare 70 discipline more willingly, or the Arts discours'd more gladly, then from those, whom his owne bounty, and benefits have made able and faithfull ? *Mutua auxiha.*

In being able to counsell others, a Man must be furnish'd with an universall store in himselfe, to the knowledge of all *Nature*: That is the matter, and seed-plot; There are the seats of all Argument, and Invention. But especially, you must be cunning in the nature of Man : There is the variety of things, which are as the *Elements*^ and *Letters*, which his art and wisdom must ranke, and order to the present 80 occasion. For wee see not all letters in single words ; nor all places in particular discourses. That cause seldome happens, wherein a man will use all Arguments. *Cognit. universi.*

The two chiefe things that give a man reputation in counsell, are the opinion of his *Honesty*; and the opinion of his *Wisdom*: The authority of those two will perswade, *Con-siliarii adjunct. Probitas. Sapientia.*

61-2 *paucis*, . . . *dogmatibus* Schelling : *paucis* . . . *dogmatibus*, F
61 *Ecclesia* Castelain : *Eccksid* F 84 (margin) *Sapientia]*
sapientia F

when the same Counsels, utter'd by other persons lesse
88 qualified, are of no efficacy, or working.

Wisedome without *Honesty* is meere craft, and coosinage.
And therefore the reputation of *Honesty* must first be
Vita gotten ; which cannot be, but by living well. A good life
recta. is a maine Argument.

Obse- Next a good life, to beget love in the persons wee counsell,
quentia. by dissembling our knowlege of ability in our selves, and
95 avoyding all suspition of arrogance, ascribing all to their
instruction, as an *Ambassadour* to his Master, or a *Subject*

to his *Sovereigne*; seasoning all with humanity and sweet-
ness, onely expressing care and sollicitude. And not to
Hwnani- counsel! rashly, or on the suddaine, but with advice and
tas. Sollici- meditation : (*Dat nox consilium.*) For many foolish things
tudo. 100 fall from wise men, if they speake in haste, or be *extemporall*.
It therefore behooves the giver of counsell to be circum-

spect ; especially to beware of those with whom hee is not
thoroughly acquainted, lest any spice of rashnesse, folly, or
105 selfe-love appeare, which will be mark'd by new persons,
and men of experience in affaires.

Modestia. And to the *Prince*[^] or his *Superiour*, to behave himselfe
Parr- modestly, and with respect. Yet free from *Flattery*, or
kesia. *Empire*, Not with insolence, or precept; but as the *Prince*

no were already furnished with the parts hee should have,
especially in affaires of *State*, For in other things they will
more easily suffer themselves to be taught, or reprehended :
They will not willingly contend. But heare (with *Alexander*)
Plutarc. the answer the *Musician* gave Kim, *Absit, 6 Rex, ut tu*
in vita *melius hac scias, quàm ego.*
Alex.

Per- A man should so deliver himselfe to the nature of the
spicuitas. subject, whereof hee speakes, that his hearer may take
Elegantia. knowledge of his discipline with some delight: and so
apparell faire, and good matter, that the studious of

87 Counsels,] Counsels *F*
things] otherthings *F*
114 *Absit,*] *Absit F*

103 those] those, *F* in other
113 contend. But] contend, but *Schelling*

elegancy be not defrauded; redeeme Arts from their 120
rough, and braky seates, where they lay hid, and over-
growne with thornes, to a pure, open, and flowry light:
where they may take the eye, and be taken by the hand.

I cannot thinke *Nature* is so spent, and decay'd, that she *Natura*
can bring forth nothing worth her former yeares. She is *non*
always the same, like her selfe: And when she collects *effceta.*
her strength, is abler still. Men are decay'd, and *studies*: 127
Shee is not.

I know *Nothing* can conduce more to letters, then to *Non*
examine the writings of the *Ancients*, and not to rest in *nimum*
their sole Authority, or take all upon trust from them; *creden-*
provided the plagues of *Judging*, and *Pronouncing* against *dum*
them, be away; such as are *envy*, *bitternesse*, *precipitation*, *anti-*
impudence, and *scurrile scoffing*. For to all the observations *quitah.*
of the *Ancients*, wee have our owne experience: which, if 135
wee will use, and apply, wee have better meanes to pro-
nounce. It is true they open'd the gates, and made the
way, that went before us; but as Guides, not Command-
ders: *Non Domini nostri, sed Duces fuere*. Truth lyes open
to all; it is no mans severall. *Patet omnibus veritas*; 140
nondum est occupata. Multum ex Hid, etiam futuris relic-
turn est.

If in some things I dissent from others, whose *Wit*, *Dissentire*
Industry, *Diligence*, and *Judgement* I looke up at, and admire: *licet* :
let me not therefore heare presently of Ingratitude, and 145
Rashnesse. For I thanke those, that have taught me, and
will ever: but yet dare not thinke the *scope* of their labour, *Sed cum*
and enquiry, was to envy their posterity, what they also *ratione.*
could adde, and find out.

If I erre, pardon me: *Nulla ars simul inventa est, & Non*
absoluta. I doe not desire to be equall to those that went *mihi*
before; but to have my reason examin'd with theirs, and *ceden-*
dum,

so much faith to be given them, or me, as those shall evict,
 I am neither *Author*, or *Fautor* of any sect. I will have
 155 no man addict himselfe to mee; but if I have any thing
 right, defend it as Truth's, not mine (save as it conduceth
 to a common good.) It profits not me to have any man
 fence, or fight for me, to flourish, or take a side. Stand for
Truth, and 'tis enough.

*Sed
 verituti.*

*Scientia.
 liberates.*

Arts that respect the mind, were ever reputed nobler,
 then those that serve the body: though wee lesse can bee
 without them. As *Tillage, Spinning, Weaving, Building, &c.*,
 without which, wee could scarce sustaine life a day. But
 these were the workes of every hand; the other of the braine:
 165 only, and those the most generous, and exalted wits, and
 spirits that cannot rest, or *acquiesce*. The mind of man is
 still fed with labour: *Opere pascitur*.

*Non
 tulgi
 sun/.*

There is a more secret *Cause*: and the power of liberal
 studies lyes more hid, then that it can bee wrought out b^r
 profane wits. It is not every mans way to hit. They are
 171 men (I confesse) that set the *Caract*, and *Value* upon things,
 as they love them; but *Science* is not every mans *Mistresse*,
 It is as great a spite to be praised in the wrong place, and
 by a wrong person, as can be done to a noble nature.

*Honesta
 Ambitio.*

If divers men seeke *Fame*, or *Honour*, by divers wayes ;
 so both bee honest, neither is to be blam'd: But they that
 177 seeke *Immortality*, are not onely worthy of leave, but oif
 praise.

*Maritus
 improbus.*

Hee hath a delicate Wife, a faire fortune, and family to
 goe to (to) be welcome; yet hee had rather be drunke with
 181 mine Host, and the Fidlers of such a Towne, then goe home,

Afflictio

*his
 Magistra.*

Affliction teacheth a wicked person sometime to pray;
Prosperity never.

Many might goe to heaven with halfe the labour they goe
to hell, if they would venture their industry the right way :
But the Divell take all (quoth he) that was choak'd i¹ the
Mill-dam, with his foure last words in his mouth.

*Deplo-
ratis
facilis
descensus
Averni.
The
Divell
take all.
Aegidius
cursu
super at.*

A Cripple in the way out-travels a Foot-man, or a Post out
of the way.

Bags of money to a prodigall person, are the same that
Cherry-stones are with some boyes, and so throwne away.

*Prodigo
nummi
nauci.*

A woman, the more curious she is about her face, is com-
monly the more carelesse about her house.

*Mundaet
sordida.*

Of this *Spilt water*, there is little to bee gathered up : it
is a desperate debt.

*Debitum
deplora-
tum.*

The *Theife* (with a great belly) that had a longing at the
Gallowes to commit one Robbery more, before hee was
hang'd.

*Latro
sesqm-
pedalts.*

And like the *German-Lord*, when hee went out of New-
gate into the Cart, tooke order to have his *Armes* set up in
his last Herborough: Said he was taken, and committed
upon suspition of Treason ; no witnesse appearing against
him : But the Judges intertain'd him most civilly, dis-
cours'd with him, offer'd him the court'sie of the racke;
but he confessed, &c.

*Com.de
Schorten-
hien.*

205

I am beholden to *Calumny*, that shee hath so endeavor'd,
and taken paines to bely mee. It shall make mee set a surer
Guard on my selfe, and keepe a better watch upon my
Actions.

*Calu-
mma
fructus.*

209

A *tedious* person is one a man would leape a steeple from ;
gallop down any steepe Hill to avoid him; forsake his

*Imperti-
nens.*

196 (with a great belly) in *F* a marginal note marked by asterisks
199 (margin) *Schortenhien.*'] *schortenhien* *F*

meat, sleepe, nature it selfe, with all her benefits, to shun him. A meere *Impertinent*: one that touch'd neither heaven nor earth in his discourse. Hee open'd an entry into a faire
 215 roome; but shut it againe presently. I spake to him of *Garlicke*, hee answered *Asparagus*: consulted him of marriage, hee tels mee of hanging; as if they went by one, and the same *Destiny*.

*Bellum
scriben-
tium :*

What a sight it is, to see *Writers* committed together by the eares, for *Ceremonies, Syllables, Points, Colons, Comma's, Hyphens*, and the like ? fighting, as for their fires, and their Altars ; and angry that none are frighted at their noyses, and loud brayings under their asses skins ?

There is hope of getting a fortune without digging in these
 225 quarries. *Sed meliore (in omne) ingenio, animoꝛ quam fortund, sum usus.*

Pingue solum lassat: sed iuvat ipse labor.

*Differen-
tia inter
Doctos et
Sciolos.*

Wits made out their severall expeditions then, for the discovery of *Truth*, to find out great and profitable *Knowledges* ; had their severall instruments for the disquisition of Arts. Now, there are certaine *Scioli*, or *smatterers*, that are busie in the skirts, and out-sides of Learning, and have scarce any thing of solide literature to commend them. They may have some edging, or trimming of a Scholler, a
 235 welt, or so : but it is no more.

*Impo-
storum
fucus.*

Imposture is a specious thing ; yet never worse, then when it faines to be best, and to none discover'd sooner, then the simplest. For *Truth* and *Goodnesse* are plaine, and open : but *Imposture* is ever asham'd of the light.

*Icuncu-
larum
motio.*

A *Puppet-play* must be shadow'd, and seene in the darke : For draw the Curtaine, *Et sordet gestictdatio*.

212 benefits,] benefits *F*
Knowledges;] *Knowledges,*
 litterature *F* originally
Icuncular motto F originally:

227 *Pingue*] *Pingue F*
 231 Now,] Now 5
 240 (margin) *Icuncularum motio* corr. *F*:
Icuncularum motio F3

229-30

233 literature]

There is a great difference in the understanding of some Princes, as in the quality of their Ministers about them. Some would dresse their Masters in gold, pearle, and all true Jewels of Majesty : Others furnish them with feathers, bels, and ribbands; and are therefore esteemed the fitter servants. But they are ever good men, that must make good the times : if the men be naught, the times will be such. *Finis expectandus est in unoquoque hominum; animali, ad mutationem promptissimo.*

Principes, et Administri.

245

250

It is a quick saying with the Spaniards: *Aries inter hceredes non dividi.* Yet these have inherited their fathers lying, and they brag of it. Hee is a narrow-minded man, that affects a Triumph in any glorious study: but to triumph in a lye, and a lye themselves have forg'd, is frontlesse. *Folly* often goes beyond her bounds ; but *Impudence* knowes none.

Scitum Hispanicum.

255

Envy is no new thing, nor was it borne onely in our times. The Ages past have brought it forth, and the comming Ages will. So long as there are men fit for it, *quorum odium virtute relictū placet*, it will never be wanting. It is a barbarous envy, to take from those mens vertues, which because thou canst not arrive at, thou impotently despair(s) to imitate. Is it a crime in me that I know that, which others had not yet knowne, but from me ? or that I am the Author of many things, which never would have come in thy thought, but that I taught them ? It is a new, but a foolish way you have found out, that whom you cannot equal!, or come neere in doing, you would destroy, or ruine with evill speaking : As if you had bound both your wits, and natures prentises to slander, and then came forth the best Artificers, when you could forme the foulest calumnies.

Non nova res livor.

200

265

270

Indeed, nothing is of more credit, or request now, then a petulant paper, or scoffing verses ; and it is but convenient

Nil. gratius protervo lib.

251 (margin) *Hispanicum.*] *Hispanictm F*
narrow- F 263 despairst] despairst Fj

253 a narrow-Fj: an

275 to the times and manners wee live with, to have then the
worst writings, and studies flourish, when the best begin
to be despis'd. *Ill Arts* begin, where good end.

The time was, when men would learne, and study good
279 things ; not envie those that had them. Then men were

*Iam
litter
sordtnt.*

had in price for learning : now, letters onely make men vile.
Hee is upbraydingly call'd a *Poet*, as if it were a most
contemptible *Nick-name*. But the *Professors* (indeed) have
made the learning cheape. Rayling, and tinckling *Rimers*,

*Pastus
hodie.
Ingen.*

284 whose Writings the vulgar more greedily reade ; as being
taken with the scurrility, and petulancie of such wits. Hee
shall not have a Reader now, unlesse hee jeere and lye. It
is the food of mens natures: the diet of the times! *Gallant**
cannot sleepe else. The Writer must lye, and the gentle
Reader rests happy, to heare the worthiest workes mis-
290 interpreted ; the clearest actions obscured ; the innocent's!
life traduc'd; And in such a licence of lying, a field so fruit-
full of slanders, how can there be matter wanting to his
laughter? Hence comes the *Epidemicall* Infection. For
how can they escape the contagion of the Writings, whom
295 the virulency of the calumnies hath not stav'd off from
reading ?

*Sed
seculi
morbus.*

Nothing doth more invite a greedy Reader, then an
unlook'd-for *subject*. And what more unlock'd-for, then to
see a person of an unblam'd life, made ridiculous, or odious,
300 by the Artifice of lying ? But it is the disease of the Age :
and no wonder if the world, growing old, begin to be infirme:
Old age it selfe is a disease. It is long since the sick world
began to doafee, and talke idly : Would she had but doated
still; but her dotage is now broke forth into a madnesse,
305 and become a meere phrensy.

*Alastoris
malina.*

This *Alastor*, who hath left nothing unsearch'd, or unas-
sayl'd, by his impudent, and licentious lying in his aguish
writings (for he was in his cold quaking fit all the while:)

275 with,] with; F 289-90 mis-interpreted] misinterpreted f'
originally 296 reading ?] reading. F 298 unlook'd-for]
unlook'd for F 300 But] but F

what hath he done more, then a troublesome base curre ?
 bark'd, and made a noyse a farre off: had a foole, or two 310
 to spit in his mouth, and cherish him with a musty bone ?
 But they are rather enemies of my fame, then me, these
 Barkers.

It is an Art to have so much judgement, as to apparell *Mali choragi*
 a Lye well, to give it a good dressing; that though the *fuere.*
 nakednesse would shew deform'd and odious, the suiting
 of it might draw their Readers. Some love any Strumpet
 (be shee never so shop-like, or meritorious) in good clothes.
 But these, nature could not have form'd them better, to
 destroy their owne testimony; and over-throw their 330
 calumny.

That an *Elephant*, 630. came hither Ambassadour from *Heare-*
 the great *Mogull*, (who could both write and reade) and was *say*
 every day allow'd twelve cast of bread, twenty Quarts of *newes.*
Canary Sack ; besides Nuts and Almonds the Citizens wives 325
 sent him. That hee had a *Spanish Boy* to his Interpreter,
 and his chiefe *negotiation* was, to conferre or practise with
Archy, the principall foole of *State*, about stealing hence
Windsor Castle, and carrying it away on his back if he can. 329

A wise *tongue* should not be licentious, and wandring; *Lingua*
 but mov'd, and (as it were) govern'd with certaine raines *sapientis,*
 from the heart, and bottome of the brest: and it was *potius*
 excellently said of that Philosopher; that there was a Wall, *quàm*
 or Parapet of teeth set in our mouth, to restraine the petu- *loquentis,*
 lancy of our words: that the rashnesse of talking should 335 *optanda.*
 not only bee retarded by the guard, and watch of our heart;
 but be fenced in, and defended by certaine strengths, placed
 in the mouth it selfe, and within the lips. But you shall see
 some, so abound with words without any seasoning or taste
 of matter, in so profound a security, as while they are 340

318 meritorious]meretricious Fj.W.G 319 these,] theseF
 322 630,] in 1630, W 330 (margin) sapicntis,] sapientis. F poitus
 .. . loquentis, optanda] Potius . . . loquents: Optanda F

speaking, for the most part, they confesse to speake they know not what.

Of the two (if either were to bee wisht) I would rather have a plaine downe-right wisdome, then a foolish and
 345 affected eloquence. For what is so furious, and *Bethlem*-like, as a vaine sound of chosen and excellent words, without any subject of sentence, or science mix'd ?

Whom the disease of talking still once possesseth, hee can never hold his peace. Nay, rather then hee will not dis-
 350 course, hee will hire men to heare him. And so heard, not hearkn'd unto, hee comes off most times like a *Mountebanke*, that when hee hath prais'd his med'cines, finds none will take them, or trust him. Hee is like *Homers T her sites*,
Thersites *Homeri.* **Α'μετροεπής, Α'κριτόμυθος** : speaking without judgement, or
Salust. measure. *Loquax magis, qudm facundus.* *Satis loquentice, sapientia parum.*

Hesiodus.

Γλώσσης τοι θησαυρός ἐν ἀνθρώποισιν ἄριστος
Φειδωλῆς, πλείστη δὲ χάρις κατὰ μέτρον ἰούσης.
Optimus est homini linguae thesaurus, & ingens
Gratia, quae parvis mensurat singula verbis.

360

Homeri
Vlysses.
Pindari
Epami-
nond.
Demara-
tus Plu-
tavchi.

Vlysses, in *Homer*, is made a long-thinking man, before hee speaks; and *Epaminondas* is celebrated by *Pindar*', to be a man, that though he knew much, yet hee spoke but little. *Demaratus*, when on the Bench he was long silent, and said nothing; one asking him, if it were folly in him, or want of language P hee answer'd : *A foole could never hold his peace.* For too much talking is ever the *Indice* of a foole.

Vid.
Zeuxidis
pict.
serm. ad
Mega-
bisum.
Plutarch,

Dum tacet indoctus, poterit cordatus haberi;
Is morbos animi namque tacendo tegit.

345 *Beth'lem-like*] *Beth'lem like F* 353 *Thersites.*] *Thersites. F*
 354-6 Three lines in *F*, divided at 'measure', 'facundus', 'parum'
 354 *Α'μετροεπής.*] *Α'μετροεπής F* *Α'κριτόμυθος W*: *Α'κριτόμυθος F*
 354-5 or measure. corr. *F*: not in *F* originally 357 *ἀνθρώποισιν*
 corr. *F*: *ἀνθρώπων F* originally 358 *Φειδωλῆς.*] *Φειδωλῆς F* *ἰούσης*] *ἰούσης F* originally 361 *Vlysses.*] *Vlysses F* long-thinking] long
 thinking *F* 362 *Pindar*] *Spintharus Schelling* (margin) *Pindarus*
 corr. *F*: *Pindar. F* originally 364 (and margin) *Demaratus E. A.*
 Abbott: *Demaratus F* 368 (margin) *Megabismus.*] *Megabismus F.*

Nor is that worthy speech of Zeno the Philosopher to 370
 be past over, without the note of ignorance: who being
 invited to a feast in *Athens*, where a great Princes Amba-
 sadours were entertain'd, and was the onely person had said
 nothing at the table; one of them with courtesie asked
 him ; What shall we returne from thee, Zeno, to the Prince 375
 our Master, if hee aske us of thee ? Nothing, he replied,
 more, but that you found an old man in *Athens*, that knew
 to be silent amongst his cups. It was nere a Miracle, to see
 an old man silent; since talking is the disease of Age:
 but amongst cups makes it fully a wonder. 380

It was wittily said upon one that was taken for a great, *Arguti*
 and grave man, so long as hee held his peace: This man *dictum.*
 might have beene a Counsellor of *State*, till he spoke : But
 having spoken, not the Beadle of the Ward. *Εἴχεμυθία*
Pythag(ora) quàm laudabilis ! γλωσσῆς πρὸ τῶν ἄλλων κράτει, 385
θεοῖς ἐπόμενος. Linguam cohibe, prae aliis omnibus, ad Deorum
*exemplum. * Digito compesce labellum.* *Vide*
Apu-
leium.
•luvenal.

There is almost no man, but hee sees clearlier, and *Acutius*
 sharper, the vices in a speaker, then the vertues. And there *cernuntur*
 are many, that with more ease, will find fault with what is *vitia,*
 spoken foolishly, then that can give allowance to that wherein *quàm*
 you are wise silently. The treasure of a foole is alwayes in *virtutes.*
 his tongue (said the witty *comick Poet*) and it appears not *Plautus.*
 in any thing more, then in that nation ; whereof one, when
 hee had got the inheritance of an unlucky old *Grange*, 395
 would needs sell it; and to draw buyers, proclaim'd, the *Tnn.*
 vertues of it. *Nothing* ever thriv'd on it (saith he.) *No* *Act. 2.*
 owner of it, ever dyed in his bed ; some hung, some drown'd *Scan. 6.*

370 Zeno] Zeno corr. F : Zeno, F originally 371 without] with W
 373 had] that W 376 aske] asks W 381 one corr. F : one,
 F originally (margin) *Arguti dictum*] *Argute dictum* F 383 *State*,]
State F 384 Ward.] Ward- F originally: Ward corr. F 384-5 *Εἴχεμυθία*]
Εἴχεμυθία, F originally : *Εἴχεμυθία. miscorr. F Pythag. F* 385-6 *κράτει,*
θεοῖς ἐπόμενος] *κρά ται, θεοῖς ἐπόμενος* F 387 *επεμήνιμ.* F3 :
επεμήνιμ. F *compesce*] *com-]pesce* corr. F : *com]pesce* F originally
 391 allowance to corr. F : allowance to, F originally 394 one.] one F
 396 (margin) *Scan. 6*] *Scan. 4 G*

themselves; some were banisht, some starv'd; the trees
 400 were all blasted; the Swyne dyed of the *Measils*, the
 Cattell of the *Murren*, the Sheepe of the *Rot*; they that
 stood, were ragg'd, bare, and bald as your hand ; nothing
 51m<ili- was ever rear'd there ; not a Duckling, or a Goose. *Hospi-*
 ter> *tium fuerat calainitatis*. Was not this man like to sell it ?
 Mart. lib. I. ep. 85.

Vulgi
expectatio.

Expectation of the *Vulgar* is more drawne, and held with
 newnesse, then goodnesse ; wee see it in *Fencers*^ in *Players*,
 in *Poets*, in *Preachers*, in all, where *Fame* promiseth any
 thing; so it be new, though never so naught, and depraved,
 they run to it, and are taken. Which shewes, that the only
 410 decay, or hurt of the best mens *reputation* with the people,
 is, their wits have out-liv'd the peoples palats. They have
 beene too much, or too long a feast.

Claritas
Patria.

Greatnesse of name, in the Father, oft-times helps not
 forth, but o'rewhelmes the Sonne: they stand too neere
 415 one another. The shadow kils the growth ; so much, that
 wee see the Grand-child come more, and oftner, to be the
 heire of *the first*, then doth the *second*: He dies betweene ;
 the Possession is the *thirds*.

Eloqucn-
tia.

Eloquence is a great, and diverse thing : Nor did she yet
 ever favour any man so much, as to become wholly his.
 Hee is happy, that can arrive to any degree of her grace.
 Yet there are, who prove themselves Masters of her, and
 absolute Lords: but I beleeeve, they may mistake their
 evidence : For it is one thing to be *eloquent* in the *Schooles*,
 425 or in the *Hall*; another at the *Barre*, or in the *Pulpit*.
 There is a difference betweene *Mooting*, and *Pleading*;
 betweene *Fencing*, and *Fighting*. To make Arguments in

400 blasted; corr. F: blasted, *Foriginally* 401 *Murren*, corr. F:
Murren ; F originally 402 stood, corr. F: stood F originally
 bald corr. F : bald, F originally 405 (margin) *Vulgi expectatio*.
 at 1. 404 originally in F 408 new corr. F : now F originally
 413 name,] name F oft-times] oft times F (margin) *Patria* F3 :
Patria F: *Patris* F. Cunningham 414 o'rewhelmes] overwhelms G
 416 oftner,] oftner F

my Study, and confute them, is easie ; where I answer *my* selfe, not an Adversary. So, I can see whole *volumes* dispatch'd by the *umbraticall* Doctors on all sides : But draw 430 these forth into the just lists; let them appeare *sub dio* and they are chang'd with the place, like bodies bred i' the *shade* ; they cannot suffer the *Sunne*, or a *Shawre*; nor beare the open Ayre : they scarce can find themselves, they that were wont to domineere so among their Auditors : but 435 indeed I would no more chuse a *Rhetorician*, for reigning in a *Schoole* ; then I would a *Pilot*, for rowing in a Pond.

Love, that is ignorant, and *Hatred*, have almost the same *Amot,* ends : many foolish *Lovers* wish the same to their friends, *et odium.* which their enemies would : As to wish a friend *banish't*, that they might accompany him in *exile*: or some great want, that they might relieve him : or a disease, that they might sit by him. They make a *Cawsway* to their court'sey by Injury; as if it were not honeste to do nothing, then to seek a way to doe good by a *Mischiefe*. 445

Injuries doe not extinguish courtesies : they only suffer *Injuna.* them not to appeare faire. For a man that doth me an injury after a courtesie, takes not away the courtesie, but defaces it: As he that writes other verses upon my verses, takes not away the first Letters, but hides them. 450

Nothing is a courtesie, unlesse it be meant us ; and that *Beneficia.* friendly, and lovingly. Wee owe no thanks to *Rivers*, that they carry our boats; or *Winds*, that they be favouring, and fill our sayles ; or meats, that they be nourishing. For these are, what they are *necessarily*. Horses carry us, Trees 455 shade us ; but they know it not. It is true, some man may receive a Courtesie, and not know it; but never any man

428 them.] them F 430 umbraticall] vmbrattcall F 434-5 they
that Editor: that they F 438 Hatred.] Hatred F 443 court'-
sey] courtesy Swinburne: countrey F 445 seek . . . good . . .
Mischiefe corr. F : seeke . . . good, . . . *Mischeffe* F originally 446
(margin) *Injuring* badly printed in some copies of F, so that it looks like
Injuna, which Fj reads 448 the courtesie] that courtesy W

received it from him, that knew it not. Many men have
 beene cur'd of diseases by Accidents ; but they were not
 Remedies. I my selfe have knowne one help'd of an Ague, by
 460 falling into a water; another whip'd out of a *Fever*: but no
 man would ever use these for med'cines. It is the mind, and
 not the event, that distinguisheth the courtesie from wrong.
 My Adversary may offend the Judge with his pride, and
 465 impertinences, and I win my cause : but he meant it not me,
 as a Courtesie. I scap'd *Pyrats*, by being ship-wrack'd, was
 the wrack a benefit therefore ? No : The doing of *Courtesies*
 aright, is the mixing of the respects for his owne sake, and
 for mine. He that doth them meerly for his owne sake, is
 470 like one that feeds his Cattell to sell them : he hath his
 Horse well drest for *Smitkfield*.

*Valor
rerun.*

The price of many things is farre above, what they are
 bought and sold for. *Life*, and *Health*, which are both
 inestimable, we have of the *Physician*: As *Learning*, and
 475 *Knowledge*, the true tillage of the *mind*, from our *Schoole-*
masters. But the fees of the one, or the *salary* of the other,
 never answer the *value* of what we received ; but serve to
 gratifie their labours.

Memoria.

Memory, of all the *powers* of the mind, is the most delicate,
 480 *and fraile*: it is the first of *our faculties*, that Age invades.
Seneca, the father, the *Rhetorician*, confesseth of himselfe,
 hee had a miraculous one ; not only to receive, but to hold.
 I my selfe could, in my youth, have repeated all, that ever I
 had made ; and so continued, till I was past fortie : Since,
 485 is much decay'd in me. Yet I can repeate whole books
 that I have read, and *Poems*, of some selected friends, which
 I have lik'd to charge my memory with. It was wont to be
 faithfull to me, but shaken with *age* now, and *sloath* (which
 weakens the strongest abilities) it may performe somewhat,
 490 but cannot promise much. By exercise it is to be made

477 serve *Editor* : serv'd *F*
 could,] could *F*

479 *Memory*,] *Memory* *F*
 486 friends,] friends. *F*

better, and serviceable. Whatsoever I pawn'd with it, while I was young, and a boy, it offers me readily, and without stops : but what I trust to it now, or have done of later yeares, it layes up more negligently, and often-times loses ; so that I receive mine owne (though frequently call'd for) 495 as if it were new, and borrow'd. Nor doe I alwayes find presently from it, what I doe seek; but while I am doing another thing, that I labour^d for, will come : And what I sought with trouble, will offer it selfe, when I am quiet. Now in some men I have found it as happy as nature, who, 500 whatsoever they reade, or pen, they can say without booke presently ; as if they did then write in their mind. And it is more a wonder in such, as have a swift stile ; for their *memories* are commonly slowest: such as torture their writings, and go into councell for every word, must needs 505 fixe somewhat, and make it their owne at last, though but through their owne vexation.

Suffrages in Parliament are numbred, not weigh'd : nor *Comit. Suffragia.* can it bee otherwise in those publike *Councils*, where nothing is so unequall, as the equality : for there, how odde 510 soever mens braines, or wisdomes are, their power is alwayes even, and the same.

Some Actions be they never so beautifull, and generous, *Stare a partibus.* are often obscur'd by base, and vile mis-constructions; either out of envy, or ill nature, that judgeth of others, as of 515 it selfe. Nay, the times are so wholly growne, to be either partiall, or malicious ; that, if hee be a friend, all sits well about him ; his very vices shall be vertues : if an enemy, or of the *contrary faction* ; nothing is good, or tolerable in him : insomuch, that wee care not to discredit, and shame 520 our judgements, to sooth our passions.

Man is read in his face : *God* in his creatures ; but not as

494 often-times] often times F 497 doe seek] seek G 504
slowest:] slowest; F 513 (margin) a] d F

*Deus in
creaturis.*

the *Philosopher*, the creature of glory, reads him : But, as the *Divine*, the servant of *humility*: yet even hee must take
525 care, not to be too curious. For to utter Truth of *God* (but as hee thinkes onely) may be dangerous; who is best knowne, by our not knowing. Some things of him, so much as hee hath revealed, or commanded, it is not only lawfull, but necessary for us to know: for therein our ignorance
530 was the first cause of our wickednesse.

*Veritas
pro-
prium
hominis.*

Truth is mans proper good; and the onely *immortall* thing, was given to our mortality to use. No good *Christian*, or *Ethnick*, if he be honest, can misse it: no *States-man*, or *Patriot* should. For without truth all the Actions of man-
535 kind, are craft, malice, or what you will, rather then *Wisdom*. *Homer* saves, hee hates him worse then hell-mouth, that utters one thing with his tongue, and keepes another in his brest. Which high expression was grounded on divine *Reason*. For a lying mouth is a stinking pit, and murders
540 with the contagion it venteth. Beside, nothing is lasting that is fain'd; it will have another face then it had, ere long: As *Euripides* saith, *No lye ever growes old*.

*Nullum
vitium
sine
patro-
cinio.*

It is strange, there should be no vice without his patronage, that (when wee have no other excuse) wee will say, wee love it; wee cannot forsake it: as if that made it not more a fault. Wee cannot, because wee thinke wee cannot: and wee love it, because wee will defend it. Wee will rather excuse it, then be rid of it. That wee cannot, is pretended ; but that wee will not, is the true reason. How many have I
550 knowne, that would not have their vices hid ? Nay, and to bee noted, live like *Antipodes* to others in the same *Citie* ; never see the Sunne rise, or set, in so many yeares ; but be as they were watching a Corps by Torch-light; would not sinne the common way; but held that a kind of *Rusticity* ;
555 they would doe it new, or contrary, for the infamy ? They

523 glory,] glory F 545 it: as corr. F: it. As F originally
551 *Antipodes*] *Antipodes*, F

were ambitious so flying backward; and at last arrived
that, as they would love nothing but the vices; not the
 vitious customes. It was impossible to reforme these
 natures; they were dry'd, and hardned in their ill. They
 may say, they, desir'd to leave it; but doe not trust them: 560
 and they may thinke they desir'd it, but they may lye for
 all that; they are a little angry with their follies, now and
 then; marry they come into grace with them againe
 quickly. They will confesse, they are offended with their
 manner of living: like enough, who is not? When they 565
 can put me in security, that they are more then offended;
 that they hate it: then He hearkent to them; and p e r. h a p s , b
believe them: But many, now a dayes, love and hate their
 ill together.

Id o e heare them say oftentimes: Some men are not witty; D e v. *Arguhs.*
because they are not every where witty; then which
 nothing is more foolish. If an eye or a nose be a n e x. c e l l e n
part in the face, therefore be all eye or nose? I thinke the
 eye-brow, the fore-head, the cheek, chyn, lip, ora n y p a r t e l
else, are as necessary, and naturall in the place. But now 575
 nothing is good that is naturall!: Right and naturall!
 language seeme(s) to have least of the wit in it; that which
 is writh'd and tortur'd, is counted the more exquisite.
 Cloath of Bodkin, or Tissue, must be imbrodered; as if no
 face were faire, that were not pouldred, or painted? No 580
 beauty to be had, but in wresting, and writhing our owne
 tongue? Nothing is fashionable, till it bee deform'd; and
 this I stow write like a Gentleman. All must be as a f f e c t e
and preposterous as our Gallants cloathes, sweet bags, and
 night-dressings: in which you would thinke our men lay in, 585
 like Ladies: it is so curious.

Nothing in our Age, I have observ'd, is more preposterous, *Censura*
 then the running Judgements upon Poetry; and Poets; when *Poet! Sm*

557 not] Query nor 561 desir'd it] desire it W 568 many] *Castelam conj.*
 many F 573 therefore] should we therefore
 577 seems G 585 in, corr. F: in; F originally

wee shall heare those things commended, and cry'd up for
 590 the best writings, which a man would scarce vouchsafe, to
 wrap any wholesome drug in; hee would never light his
Tobacco with them. And those men almost nam'd for
Miracles, who yet are so vile, that if a man should goe
 about, to examine, and correct them, hce must make all
 595 they have done, but one blot. Their good is so intangled
 with their bad, as forcibly one must draw on the others
 death with it. A Sponge dipt in Inke will doe all:

—Comitetur punica librum
Spongia.—

600 Et paulo post,

Mart. *Non possunt. . . multce, una litura potest.*

14..
eptg. 10.

Yet their vices have not hurt them : Nay, a great many
 they have profited ; for they have beene lov'd for nothing
 else. And this false opinion growes strong against the best
 men : if once it take root with the *Ignorant*. *Cestius*, in his
Cicero. time, was preferr'd to *Cicero*; so farre, as the *Ignorant*
 durst: They learn'd him without booke, and had him often
 in their mouthes. But a man cannot imagine that thing so
 foolish, or rude, but will find, and enjoy an Admirer; at

610 least, a Reader, or *Spectator*. The Puppets are seene now

Heath.
Taylor.

in despite of the Players: *Heath's Epigrams*, and the
Skullers Poems have their applause. There are never want-
 ing, that dare preferre the worst *Preachers*, the worst
Pleaders, the worst *Poets*: not that the better have left to

615 write, or speake better, but that they that heare them judge
 worse; *Non illi pejus dicunt, sed hi corruptiis judicant.*

Spencer.

Nay, if it were put to the question of the Water-rimers
 workes, against *Spencers*; I doubt not, but they would
 find more *Suffrages*; because the most favour common
 620 vices, out of a Prerogative the vulgar have, to lose their
 judgements, and like that which is naught.

596 *punica]* *pauca* W 605 *Cestius,]* *Cestius* F 607 *durst:]*
durst. F 608 *mouthes.]* *mouthes :* F 621 *judgements,]*
judgements; F

Poetry, in this latter Age, hath prov'd but a meane *Mistresse*, to such as have wholly addicted themselves to her, or given their names up to her family. They who have but saluted her on the by, and now and then tendred their 625 visits, shee hath done much for, and advanced in the way of their owne professions (both the *Law*, and the *Gospel*) beyond all they could have hoped, or done for themselves, without her favour. Wherein she doth emulate the judicious, but preposterous bounty of the times *Grandes*: who 630 accumulate all they can upon the *Parasite*, or *Fresh-man* in their friendship ; but thinke an old Client, or honest servant, bound by his place to write, and starve.

Indeed, the multitude commend Writers, as they doe Fencers, or Wrastlers; who if they come in robustiously, 635 and put for it, with a deale of violence, are received for the *braver-fellows*: when many times their owne rudenesse is a cause of their disgrace ; and a slight touch of their Adversary, gives all that boisterous force the foyle. But in these things, the unskilfull are naturally deceiv'd, and judging 640 wholly by the bulke, thinke rude things greater then polish'd ; and scatter'd more numerous, then compos'd : Nor thinke this only to be true in the sordid multitude, but the neater sort of our *Gallants*: for all are the multitude ; only they differ in cloaths, not in judgement or under- 645 standing.

/ *remember*, the Players have often mentioned it as an honour to *Shakespeare*, that in his writing, (whatsoever he penn'd) hee never blotted out line. My answer hath beene, <sup>DCShake-
speare
nostrat.</sup> Would he had blotted a thousand. Which they thought a 650 malevolent speech. I had not told posterity this, but for their ignorance, who choose that circumstance to commend their friend by, wherein he most faulted. And to justifie mine owne candor, (for I lov'd the man, and doe honour his

622 *Poetry*,] *Poetry* F latter om. Gollancz hath] had Gollancz
623-4 to her]to her ; F 625 by,] by; F 630 *Grandes*] *Grandees*FS
635 Fencers.] Fencers; F 643 this only]
this only F multitude,] multitude F 649 line] a line Fj 650
Would] would F 652 choose] chose W

655 memory (on this side Idolatry) as much as any.) Hee was
 (indeed) honest, and of an open, and free nature : had an
 excellent *Phantsie*; brave notions, and gentle expres-
 sions : wherein hee flow'd with that facility, that sometime
 it was necessary he should be stop'd : *Sufflaminandus erat*;
Augustus as *Augustus* said of *Haterius*. His wit was in his owne
in Hat. power ; would the rule of it had beene so too. Many times
 hee fell into those things, could not escape laughter: As
 when hee said in the person of *Casar*, one speaking to him ;
Ccesar, thou dost me wrong. Hee replied : *Ccesar did never*
 665 *wrong, but with just cause:* and such like; which were
 ridiculous. But hee redeemed his vices, with his vertues.
 There was ever more in him to be praysed, then to be
 pardoned.

*Ingeni-
 orum
 dis-
 crimina.*
Not. I, ,

In the difference of wits, I have observ'd ; there are many
 notes: And it is a little *Maistry* to know them: to dis-
 cerne, what every nature, every disposition will beare:
 For, before wee sow our land, we should plough it. There
 are no fewer formes of minds, then of bodies amongst us.
 The variety is incredible ; and therefore wee must search.
 675 Some are fit to make *Divines*, some *Poets*, some *Lawyers*,
 some *Physicians* ; some to be sent to the plough, and trades.
 There is no doctrine will doe good, where nature is want-
 ing. Some wits are swelling, and high; others low and
 still: Some hot and fiery; others cold and dull: One must
 680 have a bridle, the other a spurre.

Not. 2.

There be some that are forward, and bold ; and these will
 doe every little thing easily : I meane, that is hard by, and
 next them ; which they will utter, unretarded, without any
 shamefastnesse. These never performe much, but quickly.
 685 They are, what they are on the sudden; they shew pre-
 sently, like *Graine*, that, scatter'd on the top of the ground,
 shoots up, but takes no root; has a yellow blade, but the
 eare empty. They are wits of good promise at first, but

664 *Casar,thou]* *Casar than F* 682 *meanet]* *meane F* 683
 unretaided,]unretarded *F* 685-6 *presentlyt]* *presently F*

there is an **Ingeni-stitium*: They stand still at sixteene, they get no higher. •A wit-stand.

You have others, that labour onely to ostentation ; and are ever more busie about the colours, and surface of a worke, then in the matter, and foundation: For that is hid, the other is seene. Not. 3.

Others, that in composition are nothing, but what is rough, and broken: *Qua per salebras, altafi saxa cadunt.* And if it would come gently, they trouble it of purpose. They would not have it run without rubs, as if that stile were more strong and manly, that stroke the eare with a kind of uneven(n)esse. These men erre not by chance, but knowingly, and willingly; they are like men that affect a fashion by themselves, have some singularity in a Ruffe, Cloake, or Hat-band; or their beards, specially cut to provoke beholders, and set a marke upon themselves. They would be reprehended, while they are look'd on. And this vice, one that is in authority with the rest, loving, delivers over to them to bee imitated : so that oft-times the faults which he fell into, the others seeke for : This is the danger, when vice becomes a *Precedent*. 694

Others there are, that have no composition at all; but a kind of tuneing, and riming fall, in what they write. It runs and slides, and onely makes a sound. Womens-P0*fr they are call'd : as you have womens-Tay/or\$. Not. 5.

They write a verse, as smooth, as soft, as creame;

In which there is no torrent, nor scarce streame. 715

You may sound these wits, and find the depth of them, with your middle finger. They are *Creame-bowle*, or but puddle deepe.

Some, that turne over all bookes, and are equally searching in all papers, that write out of what they presently find or meet, without choice ; by which meanes it happens, that what they have discredited, and impugned in one

706 in *om. G* 708 the others] theothers *F* 713 call'd :]
call'd. *F* 718 deepe *om. J.* War ton 719 Some,] Some *F*

Mic..de
Mon-
taigne.

worke, they have before, or after, extolled the same in another. Such are all the *Essayists*, even their Master *Mountaigne*. These, in all they write, confesse still what bookes they have read last; and therein their owne folly, so much, that they bring it to the *Stake TZW*, and undigested : not that the place did need it neither; but that they
729 thought themselves furnished, and would vent it.

Not. 7. Some againe, who (after they have got authority, or, which is lesse, opinion, by their writings, to have read much) dare presently to faine whole bookes, and Authors, and lye safely. For what never was, will not easily be
734 found ; not by the most *curious*.

Not. 8. And some, by a cunning protestation against all reading, and false venditation of their owne *naturals*, thinke to divert the *sagacity* of their Readers from themselves, aflid coole the sent of their owne *fox-like* thefts ; when yet they are so ranke, as a man may find whole pages together
740 usurp^d from one Author, their necessities compelling them to read for present use, which could not be in many books ; and so come forth more ridiculously, and palpably guilty, then those, who, because they cannot trace, they yet would slander their industry.

Not. 9. But the Wretcheder are the obstinate contemnners of all helpes, and Arts : such as presuming on their owne *Naturals* (which perhaps are excellent) dare deride all diligence, and seeme to mock at the termes, when they understand not the things; thinking that way to get off wittily, with their
750 Ignorance. These are imitated often by such, as are their Peeres in negligence, though they cannot be in nature : And they utter all they can thinke, with a kind of violence, and *indisposition* ; unexamin'd, without relation, either to person, place, or any fitnessse else ; and the more wilfull, and
753 stubborne, they are in it, the more learned they are esteem'd of the *multitude*, through their excellent vice of Judgement:

723 worke] weeke W after,] after F 725 These,] These F
740 Author, their] Author. Their F 743 those, who,] those; who F
trace] grace W

who thinke those things the stronger, that have no Art:
as if to breake, were better then to open ; or to rent asunder,
gentler then to loose.

It cannot but come to passe, that these men, who com- [Not. 10.]
monly seeke to doe more then enough, may sometimes
happen on some thing that is good, and great; but very
seldome : And when it comes, it doth not recompence the
rest of their ill. For their jests, and their sentences (which
they onely, and ambitiously seeke for) sticke out, and are 765
more eminent; because all is sordid, and vile about them ;
as lights are more discern^d in a thick darknesse, then a
faint shadow. Now because they speake all they can (how
ever unfitly) they are thought to have the greater copy;
Where the learned use ever election, and a meane; they 770
looke back to what they intended at first, and make all an
even, and proportion'd body. The true Artificer will not
run away from nature, as hee were afraid of her; or depart
from life, and the likenesse of Truth; but speake to the
capacity of his hearers. And though his language differ from 775
the vulgar sorp,pwhat; it shall not fly from all humanity,
with the *Tamerlanes*, and *Tamer-Chains* of the late Age,
which had nothing in them but the *scenicall* strutting, and
furious vociferation, to warrant them to the ignorant gapers.
Hee knowes it is his onely Art, so to cany it, as none but 780
Artificers perceive it. In the meane time perhaps hee is
call'd barren, dull, leane, a poore Writer (or by what
contumelious word can come in their cheeks) by these men,
who without labour, judgement, knowledge, or almost
sense, are received, or preferr'd before him. He gratulates 785
them, and their fortune. An other Age, or juster men, will
acknowledge the vertues of his studies: his wisdom, in
dividing: his subtilty, in arguing : with what strength hee
doth inspire his Readers ; with what sweetnesse hee strokes

757 who] Who F 758 rent] rend Schelhng 760 (margin)
Not. 10. em. Editor 777 -Chams corr. F: Chants, F originally 779
them corr. F: them | them F originally: them then G. B. Harrison
conj. 789 Readers; corr. F: Readers: F originally sweetnesse
corr. F: sweetnesse, F originally

790 them: in inveighing, what sharpenesse; in J. e. s. t. ; w. h. a. t.
urbanity hee uses. How he doth raigne in mens affections ;
 how invade, and breake in upon them; and makes their
 minds like the thing he writes. Then in his Elocution to
 behold, what word is proper: which hath ornament:
 795 which height: what is beautifully translated: where
 figures are fit: which gentle, which strong to shew the
 composition Manly. And how he hath avoyded faint, o b s c u r e ,
obscure, obscene, sordid, humble, improper, or effeminate
Phrase ; which is notonly prais'd of the most, but com-
 800 mended, (which is worse) especially for that it is naught.

*Ignorantia
 anima.*

/ know no disease of the Soide, but *Ignorance*; not of the
 Arts, and Sciences, but of it selfe: Yet relating to those, it
 is a pernicious *evill*: the darkner of mans life: the dis-
 turber of his *Reason*, and common Confounder of *Truth*:
 805 with which a man goes groping in the darke, no otherwise,
 then if hee were blind. Great understandings are most
 wrack'd and troubled with it: Nay, sometimes they will
 rather choose to dye, then not to know the things they study
 for. Thinke then what an *evill* it is; and what good the
 810 contrary.

Scientia.

Knowledge is the action of the Soule; and is perfect
 without the *senses*, as having the seeds of all *Science*, and
Verlue in its selfe; but not without the service of the
senses: by those Organs, the Soule workes: She is a per-
 815 petuall Agent, prompt and subtile; but often flexible, and
 erring; intangling her selfe like a Silke-worme: But her
Reason is a weapon with two edges, and cuts through. In
 her Indagations oft-times new Sents put her by; and shee
 takes in errors into her, by the same conduits she doth
 820 Truths.

79P inveighing, *corf. F: inveighing: F originally*
 make *Schelling* 794 ornament] Ornaments Fj

corf. F: avoyded, F originally

originally

Swinburne

808 things *corf. F: things, F*

809 is; *corf. F: is: F originally*

813 selfe; *corf. F: selfe: F originally*

792 makes]

797 avoyded

good] a good

Ease, and relaxation, are profitable to all studies. The mind is like a Bow, the stronger by being unbent. But the temper in Spirits is all, when to command a mans wit ; when to favour it. I have knowne a man vehement on both sides; that knew no meane, either to intermit his studies, or call upon them againe. When hee hath set himselfe to wri(t)ing, hee would joyne night to day; presse upon himselfe without release, not minding it, till hee fainted: and when hee left off, resolve himselfe into all sports, and loosenesse againe; that it was almost a despaire to draw him to his booke : But once got to it, hee grew stronger, and more earnest by the ease. His whole Powers were renew'd: he would worke out of himselfe, what hee desired ; but with such excesse, as his study could not bee rul'd: hee knew not how to dispose his owne Abilities, or husband them, hee was of that immoderate power against himselfe. Nor was hee only a strong, but an absolute *Speaker*, and *Writer*: but his subtilty did not shew it selfe; his judgement thought that a vice. For the ambush hurts more that is hid. Hee never forc'd his language, nor went out of the high-way of *speaking* ; but for some great necessity, or apparent profit. For hee denied *Figures* to be invented for ornament, but for ayde; and still thought it an extreme madnesse to bend, or wrest that which ought to be right.

*Otium
Studi-
orum.*

825

830

*[Studio-
rum.]*

835

840

845

It is no *Wonder*, mens eminence appeares but in their owne way. *Virgils* felicity left him in prose, as *Tuillies* forsooke him in verse. *Salusts* Orations are read in the honour of *Story*: yet the most eloquent *Plato's* speech, which he made for *Socrates*, is neither worthy or the *Patron*, or the *Person* defended. Nay, in the same kind of *Oratory*, and where the matter is one, you shall have him that reasons strongly, open negligently : another that prepares

*Et stilt
eininsn-
tia. Vir
gil.
Tully.
Salust.
Plato.*

851

821 (margin) *Otium*] *Otium*. F *Studiorum*. at 1. 834 in F: then inserted as a correction in F at 1. 831 841 high-way] high way F
846 (margin) *Et stili eminentia* in Fj at 1. 839 850 or the *Patron*] of the *Patron* F3

well, not fit so well: and this happens, not onely to braines,
 855 but to bodies. One can wrastle well; another runne well;
 a third leape, or throw the barre; a fourth lift, or stop a
 Cart going: Each hath his way of strength. So in other
 creatures; some dogs are for the Deere: some for the wild
 Boare: some are Fox-hounds: some Otter-hounds. Nor
 860 are all horses for the Coach, or Saddle; some are for the
 Cart, and Panniers.

De claus / have knowne many excellent men, that would speake
Oratari- suddenly, to the admiration of their hearers; who upon
bus. study, and premeditation have beene forsaken by their
 865 owne wits; and no way answered their fame: Their elo-
 quence was greater, then their reading: and the things they
 uttered, better then those they knew. Their fortune
 deserved better of them, then their care. For men of
 present spirits, and of greater wits, then study, doe please
 870 more in the things they invent, then in those they bring.
 And I have heard some of them compell'd to speake, out of
 necessity, that have so infinitely exceeded themselves, as it
 was better, both for them, and their Auditory, that they
 were so surpriz'd, not prepar'd. Nor was it safe then to
 875 crosse them, for their adversary, their anger made them
 more eloquent. Yet these men I could not but love, and
 admire, that they return'd to their studies. They left not
 diligence (as many doe) when their rashnesse prosper¹d.
 For diligence is a great ayde, even to an indifferent wit;
 880 when wee are not contented with the examples of our owne
 Age, but would know the face of the former. Indeed, the
 more wee conferre with, the more wee profit by, if the
 persons be chosen.

Dominus One, though hee be excellent, and the chiefe, is not to bee
Vcrulanus. imitated alone. For never no Imitator, ever grew up to his
Author; likenesse is alwayes on this side Truth: Yet there
 hapn'd, in my time, one noble *Speaker*, who was full of

854 fit] fill *Castelain*: finish /. *Warton* 884 (margin) *Verulanus*]
Vmdamius F3 885 never om. *W*

gravity in his speaking. His language, (where hee could spare, or passe by a jest) was nobly *ensorious*. No man ever spake more neatly, more presly, more weightily, or 890 suffer'd lesse emptinesse, lesse idlenesse, in what hee utter'd. No member of his speech, but consisted of the owne graces: His hearers could not cough, or looke aside from him, without losse. Hee commanded where hee spoke ; and had his Judges angry, and pleased at his devo- 895 tion. No man had their affections more in his power. The feare of every man that heard him, was, lest hee should make an end.

Cicero is said to bee the only wit, that the people of Rome had equall'd to their *Empire*. *Ingenium par imperio*. We have had many, and in their severall Ages, (to take in but the former *Seculum*.) Sir Thomas Moore, the elder Wiat ; Henry, Earle of Surrey ; Chaloner, Smith, Eliot, B. Gardiner, were for their times admirable : and the more, because they began Eloquence with us. Sir Nico: Bacon, was singular, and almost alone, in the beginning of Queene Elizabeths times. Sir Philip Sidney, and Mr. Hooker (in different matter) grew great Masters of wit, and language; and in whom all vigour of Invention, and strength of judgement met. The Earle of Essex, noble and high ; and Sir Walter Rawleigh, not to be contemn'd, either for judgement, or stile. Sir Henry Savile grave, and truly letter'd; Sir Edwin Sandes, excellent in both : Lo: Egerton, the Chancellor, a grave, and great Orator; and best, when hee was provok'd. But his learned, and able (though unfortunate) Successor is he, who hath fill'd up all numbers; and perform'd that in our tongue, which may be compar'd, or preferr'd, either to insolent Greece, or haughty Rome. In short, within his view, and about his times, were all the wits borne, that could honour a language, or helpe study. Now things daily fall: wits grow downe-ward, and Elo-

Scriptorum Catalogus.
Sir Thomas Moore.
Sir Thomas Wiat.
Hen: Earle of Surrey.
Sir Thomas Chaloner.
Sir Thomas Smith
Sir Thomas Eliot.
D. Gardiner.
Sir Nic: Bacon. L.K,
Sir Philip Sidney.
M. Richard Hooker.
Rob. Earle of Essex.
Sir Walter Raleigh.
Sir Henry Savile.
Sir Edwin Sandes.
Sir Thomas Egerton,
L.C.
Sir Francis Bacon.
L.C.

890 presly] prestly F₃ 892-3 the owne] his own F₃ 903
(and margin) Eliot W: Clot F. F₃ 913 Sandes (margin Sands)]
Sandys W 916 Successor] Successor] F

quence growes back-ward : So that hee may be nam'd, and stand as the *marke*, and akun of our language.

*DeAug-
mentis scien-
tiam.*

*Iulius
Cesar.
Lord S. Al-
bane.*

/ have ever observ'd it, to have beene the office of a wise Patriot, among the greatest affaires of the *State*, to take care of the *Common-wealth* of Learning. For Schooles, they are the *Seminaries* of State: and nothing is worthier the study of a States-man, then that part of the *Republicke*,
929 which wee call the *advancement* of Letters. Witnesse the care of *Iulius Casar*; who, in the heat of the civill warre, writ his bookes of *Analogic*, and dedicated them to *Tully*. This made the late Lord S. *Albane* entitle his worke, *nouum Organum*. Which though by the most of superficial! men, who cannot get beyond the Title of *Nominals*, it is not
935 penetrated, nor understood: it really openeth all defects of Learning, whatsoever; and is a Booke,

*Horat: de
art- Poetica.*

Qui longum noto scriptori porriget ovum.

My conceit of his Person was never increased toward him, by his place, or honours. But I have, and doe reverence
940 him for the greatnesse, that was onely proper to himselfe, in that hee seem'd to mee ever, by his worke, one of the greatest men, and most worthy of admiration, that had beene in many Ages. In his adversity I ever prayed, that *God* would give him strength : for *Greatnesse* hee could not
945 want. Neither could I condole in a word, or syllable for him ; as knowing no Accident could doe harme to vertue; but rather helpe to make it manifest.

*De corrup-
tcla morum.*

There cannot be one colour of the mind ; an other of the wit. If the mind be staid, grave, and compos'd, the wit is
950 so ; that vitiated, the other is blowne, and deflowr'd. Doe wee not see, if the mind languish, the members are dull P Looke upon an effeminate person : his very gate confesseth him. If a man be fiery, his motion is so: if angry, 'tis

930 who,] who F 932 *Albane*] *Albane*, F 933 men,] men; F
936 Booke,] Booke. F 937 *porriget*] *proroget* W 941 worke,]
worke F 949-50 compos'd,... so;] compos'd;,... so, F

troubled, and violent. So that wee may conclude : Where-soever, manners, and fashions are corrupted, Language is. 955
It imitates the publicke riot. The excesse of Feasts, and apparel], are the notes of a sick State; and the wantonnesse of language, of a sick mind.

If wee would consider, what our affaires are indeed ; not *De rebus* what they are call'd ; wee should find more evils belong us, *mun-* then happen to us. How often doth that, which was call'd *danis.* a calamity, prove the beginning, and cause of a mans happinesse ? And on the contrary : that which hapned, or came to an other with great gratulation, and applause, how it hath lifted him, but a step higher to his ruine I As if hee 965 stood before, where hee might fall safely.

Doe but aske of nature, why all living creatures are lesse delighted with meat, and drinke, that sustaines them, then with *Venery*, that wastes them. And she will tell thee, the first respects but a private ; the other, a common good, 970
Propagation.

The vulgar are commonly ill-natur'd ; and alwayes grudging against their *Governours*: which makes, that a Prince has more busines, and trouble with them, then ever *Hercules* had with the Bull, or any other beast: by how much 975 they have more heads, then will be rein'd with one bridle. There was not that variety of beasts in the Arke; as is of beastly natures in the multitude ; especially when they come to that iniquity, to censure their *Soveraign's* actions. Then all the *Counsels* are made good, or bad by the events. *Morbus* And it falleth out, that the same facts receive from them *Comiti-* the names ; now, of diligence ; now, of vanity; now, of *alis.* Majesty ; now, of fury : where they ought wholly to hang

955 corrupted,] corrupted ; F 960 call'd ;] call'd, F belong
us] belong to us F} : belonging to us W 965 As] As, F 967-71
At 991 in F 982 names ; now,] names ; now F 982-3 now,
of Majesty] now of Majesty F 983 now, of fury] now of fury F

on his mouth; as hee to consist of himselfe, and not others
985 counsels.

Princcps. After God, nothing is to be lov'd of man like the Prince :
He violates nature, that doth it not with his whole heart.
For when hee hath put on the care of the publike good, and
common safety; I am a wretch, and put of man, if I doe
990 not reverence, and honour him : in whose charge all things
divine and humane are plac'd.

De eodem. Hee is the Arbiter of life, and death : when hee finds no
other subject for his mercy, hee should spare himselfe. All
his punishments are rather to correct, then to destroy. Why
Orpheus are prayers with *Orpheus* said to be the daughters of *Iupiter*;
hymn. but that Princes are thereby admonished, that the petitions
997 of the wretched, ought to have more weight with them, then
the Lawes themselves ?

Deopt. It was a great accu(mu)lation to his Majesties deserved
Rege prayse; that men might openly visit, and pittie those,
lacobo. whom his greatest prisons had at any time received, or his
1002 Lawes condemned.

De Print: Wise, is rather the Attribute of a Prince, then *learned*, or
adjunctis. *good.* The learned man profits others, rather then himselfe :
—*Sed* the good man, rather himselfe then others : But the Prince
verē the good man, rather himselfe then others : But the Prince
prudens commands others, and doth himselfe. The wise *Licurgus*
haud gave no Law, but what himselfe kept. *Sylla*, and *Lysander*,
concupi did not so: the one, living extreamely dissolute himselfe,
possit inforced frugality by the Lawes : the other permitted those
Pnnceps, Licences to others, which himselfe abstained from. But the
nisi *Princes* Prudence is his chiefe Art, and safety. In his
simul Counsels, and deliberations, hee foresees the future times.
& *bonus.* In the equity of his judgement, hee hath remembrance of
Licurgus. the past; and knowledge of what is to bee done, or avoyded
Sylla. for the present. Hence the *Persians* gave out their *Cyrus*,
Lysan- to have beene nurs'd by a Bitch, a creature to encounter il,
der.

Cyrus. 1016 to have beene nurs'd by a Bitch, a creature to encounter il,

984 himselfe] himselfe; F 986 of] off Fj 998 themselves ?]
themselves. F 999 Accumulation Fj 1009 (margin) nisi
simul] nisi—simul F 1008 one, living] one living, F 1012
deliberations.] deliberations F 1016 il,] it: F: ill Anon, con;,
1893 (and Editor independently)

as of sagacity to seeke out good; shewing that *Wisdome* may accompany fortitude, or it leaves to be, and puts on the name of *Rashnesse*.

1019

There be some men are borne only to sucke out the poyson *De* of bookes : *Habent venenum pro victu: into, pro deliciis.* *malign: studen-*
And such are they that only relish the obscene, and foule *tium.* things in *Poets* : Which makes the profession taxed. But by whom ? men, that watch for it, and (had they not had this hint) are so unjust valuers of Letters ; as they thinke 1025
 no Learning good, but what brings in gaine. It shewes, they themselves would never have beene of the professions they are; but for the profits and fees. But, if an other Learning, well used, can instruct to good life, informe manners ; no lesse perswade, and leade men, then they 1030
 threaten, and compell; and have no reward: is it therefore the worse study ? I could never thinke the study of *Wisdome* confin'd only to the Philosopher : or of *Piety* to the *Divine*: or of *State* to the *Politieke*. But that he which can faine a *Common-wealth* (which is the *Poet*) can governe 1035
 it with *Counsels*, strengthen it with *Lawes*, correct it with *Judgements*, informe it with *Religion*, and *Morals*; is all these. Wee doe not require in him meere *Elocution*; or an excellent faculty in verse ; but the exact knowledge of all vertues, and their Contraries ; with ability to render the 1040
 one lov'd, the other hated, by his proper embattaling them. The Philosophers did insolently, to challenge only to themselves.that which the greatest *Generals*, and gravest *Counselors* never durst. For such had rather doe, then promise the best things. 1045

Some *Controversers* in Divinity are like Swaggerers in a *Contr.* Taverne, that catch that which stands next them, the *vers.* candlestickke, or pots ; turne every thing into a weapon : *scrip-*
itores.

1024 and (had F_3 : (and had F 1026 shewes,] shewes F :
 shews, F_3 1031 compell,] compell, F reward :] reward, F
 1033 *Piety* G : *Poetry* F 1035 governe] govern W : gowne F
 1040 vertues,] vertues ; F 1047 them,] them ; F

1049 oft-times they fight blind-fold ; and both beate the Ayre.
More The one milkes a Hee-goat, the other holds under a Sive.
Andaba- Their Arguments are as fluxive as liquour spilt upon a Table ;
larum which with your finger you may draine as you will. Such
qui Controversies, or Disputations, (carried with more labour,
clausis then profit) are odious : where most times the Truth is lost
oculis
pugnant.

1055 in the midst; or left untouch'd. And the fruit of their
 fight is ; that they spit one upon another, and are both
 defil'd. These Fencers in Religion, I like not.

Morbi. The Body hath certaine diseases, that are with lesse evill
 tolerated, then remov'd. As if to cure a *Leprosie*, a man
 1060 should bathe himselfe with the warme blood of a murdered
 Child: So in the Church, some errors may be dissimuled
 with lesse inconvenience, then can be discover'd.

lactantia Men that talke of their owne benefits, are not beleev'd
intemp- to talke of them, because they have done them: but to
estiva. have done them, because they might talke of them. That
 1065 which had beene great, if another had reported it of them,
 vanisheth; and is nothing, if hee that did it speake of it.
 For men, when they cannot destroy the deed, will yet be
 glad to take advantage of the boasting, and lessen it,

Adulatio. / have seene, that *Poverty* makes men doe unfit things;
 1071 but honest men should not doe them : they should gaine
 otherwise. Though a man bee hungry, hee should not play
 the Parasite. That houre, wherein I would repent me to be
 honest: there were wayes enow open for me to be rich. But
 1075 *Flattery* is a fine Pick-lock of tender eares : especially of
 those, whom fortune hath borne high upon their wings, that
 submit their dignity, and authority to it, by a soothing of
 themselves. For indeed men could never be taken, in that
 abundance, with the Sprindges of others *Flattery*, if they
 1080 began not there ; if they did but remember, how much more
 profitable the bitterness of *Truth* were, then all the honey

1049 oft-times] oft times F 1062 can] they can W 1076 their
 wings] Query her wings

distilling from a whorish voice; which is not praise, but poyson. But now it is come to that extreme folly, or rather madnesse, with some : that he that flatters them modestly, or sparingly, is thought to maligne them. If their friend 1085 consent not to their vices, though hee doe not contradict them ; hee is neverthelesse an enemy. When they doe all things the worst way, even then they looke for praise. Nay, they will hire fellowes to flatter them, with suites, and suppers, and to prostitute their judgements. They have **logo** *Livery-friends*, friends of the dish, and of the *Spit*, that waite their turnes, as my Lord has his feasts, and guests.

/ have considered, our whole life is like a *Play*: wherein *De vitd humand.* every man, forgetfull of himselfe, is in travaile with expression of another. Nay, wee so insist in imitating others, as 1095 wee cannot (when it is necessary) returne to our selves : like Children, that imitate the vices of *Stammerers* so long, till at last they become such ; and make the habit to another nature, as it is never forgotten.

Good men are the Stars, the Planets of the Ages wherein *De pits & probts.* they live, and illustrate the times. *God* did never let them be wanting to the world: As *Abel*, for an example, of Innocency; *Enoch* of Purity, *Noah* of Trust in Gods mercies, *Abraham* of Faith, and so of the rest. These, sensuall men thought mad, because they would not be par- 1105 takers, or practisers of their madnesse. But they, plac'd high on the top of all vertue, look'd downe on the Stage of the world, and contemned the Play of *Fortune*. For though the most be Players, some must be *Spectators*.

/ have discovered, that a fain'd familiarity in great ones, *Mores Aulici.* is a note of certaine usurpation on the lesse. For great and popular men, faine themselves to bee servants to others, to

1084 madnesset] madnesse F 1089 themt] them F 1093
wherein] Wherein F 1093 (margin) humand] humana F 1094
mant] man F 1100 Starst] Stars F 1104 Theset] These F
1106 theyt] they F

make those slaves to them. So the Fisher provides baits
for the Trowte, Roch_f Dace, &c. that they may be food to
1115 him.

*Impi-
orum
qucrela.
Augus-
tus.
Vans.
Tiberius.*

The Complaint of Caligula, was most wicked, of the condi-
tion of his times : when hee said; They were not famous
by any publike calamity, as the reigne of *Augustus* was, by
the defeat of *Varus*, and the *Legions* ; and that of *Tiberius*,
by the falling of the Theater at *Fidence*: whilst his oblivion
was imminent, through the prosperity of his affaires. As
that other voice of his, was worthier a heads-man, then a
head ; when hee wished the people of *Rome* had but one
neck. But he found (when he fell) they had many hands.
1125 A Tyranne, how great and mighty soever hee may seeme to
Cowards and *Sluggards* ; is but one creature, one *Animal*.

*Nobilium
Ingtnia.*

I have mark'd among the *Nobility*, some are so addicted
to the service of the *Prince*, and Common-wealth, as they
looke not for spoyle ; such are to be honour'd, and lov'd.
1130 There are others, which no obligation will fasten on; and
they are of two sorts. The first are such as love their owne
ease: or, out of vice of nature, or selfe-direction, avoide
busines and care. Yet, these the *Prince* may use with
safety. The other remove themselves upon craft, and
"35 designe (as the *Architects* say) with a premeditated thought
to their owne, rather then their *Princes* profit. Such let
the *Prince* take heed of, and not doubt to reckon in the List
of his open enemies.

*Prin-
cipum
varia.
—Firmis-
rima vefb
omniū
basis jus
haredi-
tarium
Prin-
cipis.*

There is a great variation betweene him, that is rais'd to
the *Sovereignty*, by the favour of his Peeres ; and him that
comes to it by the suffrage of the people. The first holds
with more difficulty; because hee hath to doe with many,
that thinke themselves his equals ; and rais'd him for their
owne greatnesse, and oppression of the rest. The latter hath

iziB by] for G	1120 <i>Fidena W</i> : <i>lidena F</i>	1121 imminent
Code/apt: eminent F	1132 vice] vice, F	1144 (margin)
<i>Principis.] Principis--. F</i>		

no upbraiders; but was rais'd by them, that sought to be 1145
 defended from oppression: whose end is both the easier,
 and the honester to satisfie. Beside, while he hath the
 people to friend, who are a multitude, he hath the lesse feare
 of the *Nobility*, who are but few. Nor let the common
 Proverbe of (Hee that builds on the people, builds on the 1150
 dirt) discredit my opinion: For that hath only place,
 where an ambitious, and private person, for some popular
 end, trusts in them against the publike Justice, and Magis-
 trate. There they will leave him. But when a *Prince*
 governs them, so as they have still need of his Administra- 1155
 tion (for that is his Art) hee shall ever make, and hold them
 faithfull.

A *Prince* should exercise his cruelty, not by himselfe, but *Clemen-*
 by his Ministers : so hee may save himselfe, and his dignity *tia.*
 with his people, by sacrificing those, when he list, saith the 1160
 great *Doctor of State*, *Macchiavell*. But I say, he puts off *Mac-*
 man, and goes into a beast, that is cruell. No vertue is a *chiavell.*
Princes owne; or becomes him more, then his *Clemency*:
 And no glory is greater, then to be able to save with his
 power. Many punishments sometimes, and in some cases, 1165
 as much discredit a Prince, as many Funeral? a *Physician*.
 The state of things is secur'd by Clemency; Severity
 represseth a few, but it irritates more. * The lopping of *•Haud*
 trees makes the boughes shoote out thicker; And the tak- *infima*
 ing away of some kind of enemies, increaseth the number. *ars in*
 It is then, most gracious in a Prince to pardon, when many *Principe,*
 about him would make him cruell; to thinke then, how *ubi leni-*
 much he can save, when others tell him, how much he can *tas, ubi*
 destroy : not to consider, what the impotence of others hath *severitas,*
 demolish'd; but what his owne greatnesse can sustaine. *plus*
 These are a *Princes* vertues ; And they that give him other *polleat in*
 counsels, are but the *Hahgmans* Factors. *commune*
bonum
callere.
dementia
tutela
optima.

Hee that is cruell to halfe, (saith the said St. *Nicolas*) *St.*
Nicolas.

1163 his *Editor* : this *F*
 (margin) *seventas,* *severitas*—*F*
 (margin) *tutela optima* *W*: *tutelat opima* *F*

1165 cases,] cases *F*
 1176 These *Fj* ; There *F*

1172 (mar-
 1176

looseth no lesse the opportunity of his cruelty, then of his
 1180 benefits : For then to use his cruelty, is too late; and to use
 his favours will be interpreted feare and necessity; and so
 hee looseth the thanks. Still the counsell is cruelty. But
Princes, by harkning to cruel! counsels, become in time
 obnoxious to the Authors, their Flatterers, and Ministers ;
 1185 and are brought to that, that when they would, they dare
 not change them: they must goe on, and defend cruelty
 with cruelty: they cannot alter the Habit. It is then
 growne necessary, they must be as ill, as those have made
 them: And in the end, they will grow more hatefull to
 1190 themselves, then to their Subjects. Whereas, on the con-
 trary, the mercifull *Prince* is safe in love, not in feare. Hee
 needs no Emissaries, Spies, Intelligencers, to intrap true
 Subjects. Hee feares no Libels, no Treasons. His people
 speake, what they thinke; and talke openly, what they
 1195 doe in secret. They have nothing in their brests, that they
 need a Cipher for. He is guarded with his owne benefits.

Rehgio.
Palla-
dium
Homeni.

The strength of Empire is in Religion. What else is the
Palladium, (with Homer) that kept Troy so long from sack-
 ing? Nothing more commends the *Sovereigne* to the Sub-
 1200 ject, then it. For hee that is religious, must be mercifull
 and just necessarily. And they are two strong ties upon
 mankind. Justice is the vertue,, that *Innocence* rejoyceth
 in. Yet even that is not alwayes so safe; but it may love
 to stand in the sight of mercy. For sometimes misfortune
 1205 is made a crime, and then *Innocence* is succor'd, no lesse
 then vertue. Nay, often-times vertue is made Capital!:
 and through the condition of the times, it may happen, that
 that may be punish'd with our praise. Let no man therefore
 murmur at the Actions of the Prince, who is plac'd so farre
 1210 above him. If hee offend, he hath his Discoverer. *God* hath
 a height beyond him. But where the *Prince* is good,
Euripides saith : *God is a Guest in a humane body.*

Ewi-
pides.
Tyranni.

There is nothing with some Princes sacred above their

Majesty; or prophane, but what violates their Scepters. But a Prince, with such Counsel), is like the *God Terminus*,¹²¹⁵ of Stone, his owne Land-marke; or (as it is in the Fable) a crowned Lyon. It is dangerous offending such an one; who, being angry, knowes not how to forgive. That cares not to doe any thing, for maintaining, or inlarging of *Empire*; kils not men, or Subjects, but destroyeth whole¹²²⁰ Countries, Armies, mankind, male, and female; guilty or not guilty, holy or prophane: yea, some that have not seene the light. All is under the Law of their spoyle, and licence. But *Princes* that neglect their proper office thus, their fortune is often-times to draw a *Seianus*, to be neere *Seianus*. about 'hem ; who will at last affect to get above 'hem, and put them in a worthy feare, of rooting both them out, and their family. For no men hate an evill *Prince* more, then they, that help'd to make him such. And none more boasting, weepe his ruine, then they, that procured and practis'd it.¹²³⁰ The same path leads to ruine, which did to rule, when men professe a *Licence* in governing. A good King is a publike Servant.

A *Prince* without Letters, is a Pilot without eyes. All his Government is groping. In *Soveraignty* it is a most happy thing, not to be compelled ; but so it is the most miserable not to be counsell'd. And how can he be counsell'd that cannot see to read the best Counsellors (which are books.) for they neither flatter us, nor hide from us ? Hee may heare, you will say. But how shall he alwayes be sure to heare Truth ? or be counsell'd the best things, not the sweetest ? They say *Princes* learne no Art truly, but the Art of *Horse-manship*. The reason is, the brave beast is no flatterer. Hee will throw a *Prince*, as soone, as his Groome. Which is an Argument, that the good Counsellors to Princes¹²⁴⁵ are the best instruments of a good Age. For though the

1215 Prince.] Prince *F* Counsel] a council *W* 1218 who,] who *F*
 1220 Subjects,] Subjects; *F* 1222 yea] Yea *F* 1225
 often-times] often times *F* (margin) *Seianus*] *Sejanus W*: *Seianus F*
 1226 about 'hem Editor: about him *F*: about them *G* above 'hem
 Editor: above 'him *F*: above them *G* 1239 for] For *F*

Prince himselfe be of most prompt inclination to all vertue :
Yet the best *Pilots* have need of *Mariners*, beside *Sayles*,
Anchor, and other Tackle.

*Character
Principis.*

If men did know, what shining fetters, guilded miseries,
and painted happinesse, Thrones and Scepters were, there
would not bee so frequent strife about the getting, or hold-
ing of them. There would be more *Principalities*, then
Princes. For a *Prince* is the Pastor of the people. Hee
1255 ought to sheere, no(t) to flea his sheepe; to take their
fleeces, not their fels. Who were his enemies before, being
a private man, become his children, now hee is publike. Hee
is the *soide* of the Commonwealth ; and ought to cherish it,
Alex-
ander
magnus. as his owne body. *Alexander* the Great was wont to say:
Hee hated that Gardiner, that pluck'd his herbes, or flowers up
by the roots. A man may milke a beast, till the blood come :
Churne milke, and it yeeldeth butter: but wring the nose,
and the blood followeth. Hee is an ill *Prince*, that so puls
his Subjects feathers, as hee would not have them grow
265 againe : that makes his *Exchequer* a receipt for the spoyles
of those hee governs. No, let him keepe his owne, not affect
his Subjects : strive rather to be call'd just, then powerful!.
Not, like the *Roman Tyrans*, affect the Surnames that grow
by humane slaughters: Neither to seeke warre in peace,
.270 or peace in warre ; but to observe faith given, though to an
Enemy. Study Piety toward the Subject: Shew care to
defend him. Bee slow to punish in diverse cases ; but be
a sharpe, and severe Revenger of open crimes. Breake Ao
decrees, or dissolve no orders, to slacken the strength of
1275 Lawes. Choose neither Magistrates *civill*, or *Ecclesiastick*,
by *favour*, or *Price* : but with long disquisition, and report
of their worth, by all Suffrages. Sell no honours, nor give
them hastily; but bestow them with counsell, and for
reward ; If hee doe, acknowledge it, (though late) and mend

1247 to] to to F 1250 (margin) *Character Principis*] *Character.*
Principis coir. F: *Character.* F originally at 1253 1251 were,
there F3 : were. There F 1255 not F3 1268 *Roman*] *Roman*
W: Romans F grow] grows F3 1270 or] nor W
1279 doe,] doe F: *douot.ScheUingconj.*

it. For *Princes* are easie to be deceiv'd. And what wis- 1280
dome can escape it; where so many Court-Arts are studied ?
But above all, the *Prince* is to remember, that when the
great day of Account comes, which neither Magistrate, nor
Prince can shunne, there will be requir'd of him a reckoning
for those, whom hee hath trusted ; as for himselfe : which 1285
hee must provide. And if *Piety* be wanting in the *Priests*,
Equity in the Judges, or the *Magistrate* be found rated at a
price ; what Justice or Religion is to be expected ? Which
are the only two Attributes make *Kings* a kinne to *Gods* ;
and is the *Delphick* sword, both to kill Sacrifices, and to 1290
chastise offenders.

When a vertuous man is rais'd, it brings gladnesse to his *De Gra-*
friends : grieve to his enemies, and glory to his Posterity. *tiosis.*
Nay, his honours are a great part of the honour of the times :
when by this meanes he is growne to active men, an 1295
example; to the sloathfull, a spurre; to the envious, a
Punishment.

Hee, which is sole heire to many rich men, having (beside *Divites.*
his Fathers, and Vncles) the states of diverse his kindred
come to him by accession; must needs bee richer then 1300
Father, or *Gran-father*: So they which are left heires *ex Haredes*
Asse, of all their Ancestors vices ; and by-their good hus- *ex Asse*
bandry improve the old, and daily purchase new; must
needs be wealthier in vice, and have a greater revenue, or
stock of ill to spend on. 1305

The great thieves of a State are lightly the officers of the *Fures*
Crowne ; they hang the lesse still; play the Pikes in the *Pubkci.*
Pond ; eate whom they list. The Net was never spread
for the Hawke or Buzzard that hurt us, but the harmelesse
birds, they are good meate. 1310

Dai veniam corvis, vexat censura columbas.

Iuvenalis.

Non rete Accipitri tenditur, ne& miluo.

Plautos.

1280 itom. W 1285 himselfe:] himselfe, F 1288 Which]
which F 1294 Nay.] Nay F 1301 Gran-father] Grand-father F₃
1311 veniam] veni am F 1312 miluo Editor: milvo F

But they are not alwayes safe, though, especially, when they meet with wise Masters. They can take downe all the
 1315 huffe, and swelling of their lookes; and like dexterous Auditors, place the Counter, where he shall value nothing.
Lewis xi. Let them but remember *Lewis* the eleventh, who to a *Clarke* of the *Exchequer*, that came to be Lord *Treasurer*, and had (for his device) represented himselfe sitting upon fortunes
 1320 wheele: told him, hee might doe well to fasten it with a good strong nayle, lest, turning about, it might bring him, where hee was, againe. As indeed it did.

De bonis el malis. A good man will avoide the spot of any sinne. The very aspersion is grievous : which makes him choose his way in
 1325 his life, as hee would in his journey. The *Ill-man* rides through all confidently; hee is coated, and booted for it, The oftner hee offends, the more openly; and the fowler, the fitter in fashion. His modesty, like a riding Coat, the more it is worne, is the lesse car'd for. It is good enough
De Inno- for the durt still; and the wayes he travels in. An *Innocent* man needs no *Eloquence*: his *Innocence* is in stead of it: else I had never come off so many times from these *Precipices*, whether mens malice hath pursued me. It is true, I have beene accus'd to the Lords, to the *King*; and by
 1335 great ones : but it hap'ned my accusers had not thought of the Accusation with themselves; and so were driven, for want of crimes, to use invention, which was found slander : or too late, (being entred so farre) to seeke starting-holes for their rashnesse, which were not given them. And then they
 1340 may thinke, what accusation that was like to prove, when they, that were the *Engineers*, fear'd to be the *Authors*. Nor were they content, to faine things against mee, but to urge things, fain'd by the *Ignorant*, against my profession: which though from their hired, and mercenary impudence,
 1345 I might have past by, as granted to a Nation of *Barkers*,

1313 though,] though *F* 1320 him *om.* *G* 1321 lest,] lest *F*
 1322 was,] was *F* 1328 modesty,] modesty *F* 1333 whether]
 whither *F*₃ 1336 driven,] driven *F* 1338 farre] fair *W*
 starting-holes] starting holes *F* 1343 things,] things *F* profession:]
 profession; *F*

that let out their tongues to lick others sores ; yet I durst not leave my selfe undefended, having a paire of eares unskilfull to heare lyes ; or have those things said of me, which I could truly prove of them. They objected, making of verses to me, when I could object to most of them, their not
 1350 being able to reade them, but as worthy of scorne. Nay, they would offer to urge mine owne Writings against me ; but by pieces, (which was an excellent way of malice) as if any mans Context, might not seeme dangerous, and offensive, if that which was knit, to what went before, were
 1355 defrauded of his beginning; or that things, by themselves utter'd, might not seeme subject to Calumnies, which read entire, would appeare most free. At last they upbraided my poverty ; I confesse, shee is my Domestick ; sober of diet, simple of habit; frugall, painefull; a, good Counsellor
 1360 to me ; that keepees me from Cruelty, Pride, or other more delicate impertinences, which are the Nurse-children of Riches. But let them looke over all the great, and monstrous wickednesses, they shall never find those in poore families. They are the issue of the wealthy *Giants*, and the
 1365 mighty Hunters : Whereas no great worke, or worthy of praise, or memory, but came out of poore cradles. It was the ancient poverty, that founded Common-weales ; built Cities, invented Arts, made wholesome Lawes ; armed men against vices; rewarded them with their owne vertues ;
 1370 and preserv'd the honour, and state of Nations, till they betray'd themselves to Riches.

Money never made any man rich, but his mind. He that *Amor* can order him selfe to the Law of nature, is not onely without
 1375 the sense, but the feare of poverty. O ! but to strike blind the people with our wealth, and pompe, is the thing I what a wretchednesse is this, to thrust all our riches outward, and be beggars within : to contemplate nothing, but the little, vile, and sordid things of the world ; not the great, noble, and pretious ? Wee serve our avarice, and not con-
 1380

1356 things,] things *F* 1362 impertinences,] impertinences; *F*
 1363-4 monstrous] monstrous *F*₃ 1380 Wee] wee *F*

tent with the good of the Earth, that is offer'd us; wee search, and digge for the evill that is hidden. *God* offer'd us those things, and plac'd them at hand, and neere us, that hee knew were profitable for us; but the hurtfull hee laid
 1385 deepe, and hid. Yet doe wee seeke onely the things, whereby wee may perish; and bring them forth, when *God* and nature hath buried them. Wee covet superfluous things; when it were more honour for us, if wee could contemne necessary. What need hath nature of silver
 1390 dishes, multitudes of Waiters, delicate Pages, perfum'd Napkins? She requires meat only, and hunger is not ambitious. Can wee thinke no wealth enough, but such a state, for which a man may be brought into a *Pramunire*, beg'd, proscrib'd, or poyson'd? O I if a man could restraine the
 1395 fury of his gullet, and groyne, and thinke how many fires, how many kitchens, Cookes, Pastures, and plough'd Lands; what Orchards, Stewes, Ponds, and Parkes, Coupes, and Garners he could spare: what Velvets, Tissues, Imbroderies, Laces he could lacke; and then how short, and
 1400 uncertaine his life is; Hee were in a better way to happinesse, then to live the Emperour of these delights; and be the *Dictator* of fashions? But wee make our selves slaves to our pleasures; and wee serve *Fame*, and Ambition, which is an equall slavery. Have not I seen the pompe of a
 1405 whole Kingdome, and what a forraigne King could bring hither also to make himselfe gaz'd, and wonder'd at, laid forth as it were to the shew, and vanish all away in a day? And shall that which could not fill the expectation of few houres, entertaine, and take up our whole lives? when even
 1410 it appear'd as superfluous to the Possessors, as to me that was a Spectator. The bravery was shewne, it was not possess'd; while it boasted it selfe, it perish'd. It is vile, and a poor thing to place our happinesse on these desires. Say we wanted them all: *Famine ends famine*.

1387 superfluous] super-fluous F 1388 could] would W 1397
 what] What F 1406 hither also *Schilling*: hither. Also F: hither,
 all *Swinburne conj.* 1411-12 possess'd;] possess'd F 1414 all:]
 all. F

There is nothing valiant, or solid to bee hop'd for from such, as are alwayes kempt, and perfum'd ; and every day smell of the Taylor: the exceedingly curious, that are wholly in mending such an imperfection in the face, in taking away the Morpew in the neck; or bleaching their hands at Mid-night, gumming, and bridling their beards ; 1420 or making the waste small, binding it with hoopes, while the mind runs at waste : Too much pickdnesse is not manly. Nor from those that will jeast at their owne outward imperfections, but hide their ulcers within, their Pride, Lust, Envie, ill nature, with all the art and authority they can. 1425 These persons are in danger; For whilst they thinke to justifie their ignorance by impudence, and their persons by clothes, and outward ornaments ; they use but a Commis- sion to deceive themselves. Where, if wee will looke with our understanding, and not our senses, wee may behold 1430 vertue, and beauty, (though cover'd with rags) in their brightness ; and vice, and deformity so much the fowler, in having all the splendor of riches to guild them, or the false light of honour and power to helpe them. Yet this is that, wherewith the world is taken, and runs mad to gaze 1435 on : Clothes and Titles, the Birdlime of Fools.

What petty things they are, wee wonder at? like children, that esteeme every trifle ; and preferre a *Fairing* before their Fathers : what difference is betweene us, and them ? but that we are dearer Fooles, Cockscombes, at a 1440 higher rate ? They are pleas'd with Cockleshells, Whistles, Hobby-horses, and such like: wee with Statues, marble Pillars, Pictures, gilded Roofes, where under-neath is Lath, and Lyme ; perhaps Lome. Yet, wee take pleasure in the lye, and are glad, wee can cousen our selves. Nor is it 1445 onely in our wals, and seelings ; but all that wee call happi- nesse, is meere painting, and guilt: and all for money:

1415 (margin) *effaminatis] effaminatis F* 1416 kempt] kempt
W: kempt'dF 14x7 Taylor: the[Taylor. TheF 1420 beards;]
beards, F 1423 Nor *Castelain* : Not F 1427 impudence,]
impudence; F 1428 ornaments;] ornaments, F 1447 all
for money] as for money *Castelain*

what a thinne Membrane of honour that is ? and how hath all true reputation falne, since money began to have any ?

1450 Yet the great heard, the multitude ; that in all other things are divided; in this alone conspire, and agree: To love money. They wish for it, they embrace it, they adore it ; while yet it is possest with greater stirre, and torment, then it is gotten.

*Desibi
molestis.*

Some men, what losses soever they have, they make them greater: and if they have none, even all, that is not gotten, is a losse. Can there be creatures of more wretched condition, then these ; that continually labour under their owne misery, and others envie P A man should study other things,
1460 not to covet, not to feare, not to repent him : to make his Base such, as no Tempest shall shake him : to be secure of all opinion ; and pleasing to himselfe, even for that, wherein he displeaseth others. For the worst opinion gotten for doing well, should delight us : would'st not thou be just,
1465 but for fame; thou ought'st to be it with infamy: Hee that would have his vertue published, is not the servant of vertue, but glory.

*Pericu-
losa
Melan-
cholia.*

It is a dangerous thing, when mens minds come to sojourn,with their affections, and their diseases eate into their strength : that when too much desire, and greedinesse of vice, hath made the body unfit, or unprofitable; it is yet gladded with the sight, and spectacle of it in others : and for want of ability to be an Actor; is content to be a Witnesse. It enjoyes the pleasure of sinning, in beholding
1475 others sinne ; as in Dicing, Drinking, Drabbing, &c. Nay, when it cannot doe all these, it is offended with his owne narrownesse, that excludes it from the universall delights of Man-kind; and oft-times dies of a *Melancholy*, that it cannot be vitious enough.

*Falsa
stories
fugienda.*

/ am glad, when I see any man avoid the infamy of a vice ; but to shun the vice it selfe were better. Till hee doe

1450 Yet] yet F 1460 to make] To make F 1475 Dicing]
dining G 1478 oft-times] oft times F

that, he is but like the Prentise, who being loth to bee spied by his Master, comming forth of *Black-Lucis*, went in againe; to whom his Master cried; The more thou runnest that way to hide thy selfe, the more thou art in the Place. 1485
So are those, that keepe a Taverne all day, that they may not bee scene at night. I have knowne *Lawyers, Divines*; yea, great ones, of this Heresy.

There is a greater Reverence had of things remote, or *Decipi-* strange to us, then of much better, if they bee neerer, and *mur* fall under our sense. Men, and almost all sort of creatures, *specie.* have their reputation by distance. Rivers, the farther they runne, and more from their spring, the broader, they are, and greater. And where our originall is knowne, we are the lesse confident: Among strangers wee trust fortune. Yet 1495
a man may live as renown^d at home, in his owne countrey, or a private Village, as in the whole world. For it is Vertue that gives glory: That will endenizon a man every where. It is onely that can naturalize him. A native, if hee be vitious, deserves to bee a stranger, and cast out of the 1500
Common-wealth, as an Alien.

A *dejected* countenance, and meane clothes, beget often a *Dejectio* contempt; but it is with the shallowest creatures: *Aulic.* *Courtiers* commonly: looke up even with them in a new suite; you get above 'hem streight. Nothing is more short-liv'd then 1505
(their) Pride: it is but while their clothes last; stay but while these are worne out, you cannot wish the thing more wretched, or dejected,

Poetry, and *Picture*, are Arts of a like nature; and both *Poesis, et* are busie about imitation. It was excellently said of *Pictura.* *Plutarch.* *Plutarch.* *Poetry* was a speaking Picture, and *Picture* a mute Poesie. For they both invent, faine, and devise many things, and accommodate all they invent to the use, and

1484 The] the F 1486 day,] day; F 1488 ones,] ones-F
1497 Vertue] vertue-F 1504 commonly:] commonly F 1506
their Swinburne it] It F

service of nature. Yet of the two, the Pen is more noble,
 1515 then the Pencill. For that can speake to the Understand-
 ing; the other, but to the Sense. They both behold
 pleasure, and profit, as their common Object; but should
 abstaine from all base pleasures, lest they should erre from
 their end; and while they seeke to better mens minds,
 1520 destroy their manners. They both are borne *Artificers*, not
 made. Nature is more powerfull in them then study.

*De Pic-
turd.*

Whosoever loves not *Picture*, is injurious to Truth: and
 all the wisdome of *Poetry*. *Picture* is the invention of
 Heaven: the most ancient, and most a kinne to Nature.
 1525 It is it selfe a silent worke: and alwayes of one and the
 same habit: Yet it doth so enter, and penetrate the
 inmost affection (being done by an excellent Artificer) as
 sometimes it orecomes the power of speech, and oratory.
 There are diverse graces in it; so are there in the Artificers.
 1530 One excels in care, another in reason, a third in easinesse,
 a fourth in nature and grace. Some have diligence, and
 comelinesse: but they want Majesty. They can expresse
 a humane forme in all the graces, sweetnesse, and elegance;
 but they misse the Authority. They can hit nothing but
 1535 smooth cheeks; they cannot expresse roughnesse, or gravity.
 Others aspire to Truth so much, as they are rather Lovers
 of likenesse, then beauty. *Zeuxis*, and *Parrhasius*, are said
 to be contemporaries: The first, found out the reason of
 lights, and shadowes in *Picture*: the other, more subtilly
 1540 examined the lines.

*De stylo.
Pliny.*

In Picture, light is requir'd no lesse then shadow: so in
 stile, height, as well as humblenesse. But beware they be
 not too humble; as *Pliny* pronounc'd of *Regulus* writings:
 You would thinke them written, not on a child, but by a
 1545 child. Many, out of their owne obscene Apprehensions,
 refuse proper and fit words; as *occupie*, *nature*, and the like:
 So the curious industry in some of having all alike good,
 hath come neerer a vice, then a vertue.

1519 end;] end: *F*
 comes] overcomes *G*

1522 (margin) *Picturd*] *Pictura* *F*
 1543 writings:] writings. *F*

1528 ore-

Picture tooke her faining from Poetry: from Geometry her *De progress.* rule, compasse, lines, proportion, and the whole Symmetry. *Pictura.* Parrhasius was the first wan reputation, by adding Symmetry to Picture : hee added subtilty to the countenance, elegance to the haire, lovelines to the face; and, by the publike voice of all Artificers, deserved honour in the outer lines. Eupompus gave it splendor by numbers, and other elegancies. From the Opticks it drew reasons ; by which it considered, how things plac'd at distance, and a farre off, should appeare lesse: how above, or beneath the head, should deceive the eye, &c. So from thence it tooke shadowes, reccessor, light, and heightnings. From morall *Eupompus.* Philosophy it tooke the soule, the expression of Senses, Perturbations, Manners, when they would paint an angry person, a proud, an inconstant, an ambitious, a brave, a magnanimous, a just, a mercifull, a compassionate, an humble, a dejected, a base, and the like. They made all heightnings bright, all shadowes darke, all swellings from a plane; all solids from breaking. See * where he complains of their painting Chinuerd's, by the vulgar unaptly called Grottesque: Saying, that men who were borne truly to study, and emulate nature, did nothing but make monsters against nature; which Horace so laught at. The Art *a Horat. in arte Poet.* Plasticke was moulding in clay, or potters earth anciently. This is the Parent of Statuary: Sculpture, Graving and Picture, cutting in brasse, and marble, all serve under her. ^b Socrates taught Parrhasius, and Clito (two noble Statuaries) first to expresse manners by their looks in Imagery. ^c Polygnotus, and Aglaophon were ancients. After them ^dZeuxis, who was the Law-giver to all Painters, after ^eParrhasius. They were contemporaries, and liv'd both about Philips time, the Father of Alexander the Great. *b* Socrates. Parrhasius. Clyto. *c* Polygnotus. Aglaophon. *d* Zeuxis. *e* Parrhasius.

1553 lovelines (i.e. loveliness)] love-lines F 1560 reccessor] recessor
 sion Schelhng (perhaps rightly) 1565 (margin) Plin. lib. ... 7. in F
 otl. 1559 and asterisked 1567 he] Pliny J. Warton 1567
 (margin) * Vitruv.] Vitruv. F at 1. 1568 1573 Statuary: Sculpture]
 Statuary sculpture F 1574 Picture,] Picture; F 1578 Painters,]
 Painters: F

There liv'd in this latter Age six famous Painters in Italy: who were excellent, and emulous of the Ancients :

¹ Raphael ^f *Raphael de Urbino, Michel Angela Buonarota, Titian, Antonie of Correggio, Sebastian of Venice, Iulio Romano, and Andrea Sartorio.*

Titian,
Antonie

de Corf eg.

Sebast:

de Venet.

Iulio

Romano.

Andrea

Sartorio.

**Parasiti*

ad men-

sam.

* *There* are Flatterers for their bread, that praise all my oraculous Lord do's or sayes, be it true or false: invent tales that shall please : make baites for his Lordships eares : and if they be not receiv'd in what they offer at, they shift a point of the Compasse, and turne their tale, presently tacke about; deny what they confest, and confesse what they denied ; fit their discourse to the persons, and occasions. What they snatch up, and devoure at one table, utter at another : and grow suspected of the Master, hated of the servants, while they inquire, and reprehend, and compound, and delate busines of the house they have nothing to doe with: They praise my *Lords* wine, and the sauce he likes; observe the Cooke, and Bottle-man, while they stand in my Lords favour, speake for a pension for them: but pound them to dust upon my Lords least distaste, or change of his palate.

How much better is it, to bee silent; or at least, to speake sparingly ! For it is not enough to speake good, but timely things. If a man be asked a question, to answer, but to repeat the Question, before hee answer, is well, that hee be sure to understand it, to avoid absurdity. For it is lesse dishonour, to heare imperfectly, then to speake imperfectly. The eares are excus'd, the understanding is not. And in things unknown to a man, not to give his opinion, lest by affectation of knowing too much, hee lose the credit hee hath by speaking, or knowing the wrong way, what hee utters. Nor seeke to get his Patrons favour, by imbarking himselfe in the Factions of the Family: to inquire after

1581 There . . . J No paragraph in F 1583 (margin) Urbino]
Mfbino F 1585 Sartono] del Sarto /. Warton. Schdhng 1586
* There Editor; These F 1590 tale,] tale F: Tale, Fj 1596
delate] dilate Schelling 1610 affectation] the affectation W

domesticke simalties, their sports, or affections. They are an odious, and vile kind of creatures, that fly about the house all day; and picking up the filth of the house, like Pies or Swallowes, carry it to their nest (the Lords eares) and oftentimes report the lyes they have fain'd, for what they have seene and heard. 1615

These are call'd instruments of grace, and power, with great persons; but they are indeed the Organs of their impotencie, and markes of weaknesse. For sufficient Lords are able to make these Discoveries themselves. Neither will an honourable person inquire, who eats, and drinks together, what that man playes, whom this man loves; with whom such a one walkes; what discourse they held; who sleepes, with whom. They are base, and servile natures, that busie themselves about these disquisitions. How often have I seene, (and worthily) these Censors of the family, undertaken by some honest *Rustick*, and cudgel'd thriftily? These are commonly the off-scowring, and dregs of men, that doe these things, or calumniate others: Yet I know not truly which is worse; hee that malignes all, or that praises all. There is as great a vice in praising, and as frequent, as in detracting. 1625 1630 1635

// *pleas'd* your Lordship of late, to aske my opinion, touching the education of your sonnes, and especially to the advancement of their studies. To which, though I return'd somewhat for the present.; which rather manifested a will in me, then gave any just resolution to the thing propounded: I have upon better cogitation call'd those ayds about mee, both of mind, and memory; which shall venter my thoughts clearer, if not fuller, to your Lordships demand. I confesse, my Lord, they will seeme but petty, and minute things I shall offer to you, being writ for children, and of them. But studies have their Irtfancie, as well as creatures. Wee see in men, even the strongest compositions had their beginnings from milke, and the 1640 1645

Cradle ; and the wisest tarried sometimes about apting
 1650 their mouthes to Letters, and syllables. In their education,
 therefore, the care must be the greater had of their begin-
 nings, to know, examine, and weigh their natures : which
 though they bee proner in some children to some disciplines ;
 yet are they naturally prompt to taste all by degrees, and
 1655 with change. For change is a kind of refreshing in studies,
 and infuseth knowledge by way of recreation. Thence the
 Schoole it selfe is call'd a Play, or Game : and all Letters
 are so best taught to Schollers. They should not be
 afrighted, or deterr'd in their Entry, but drawne on with
 1660 exercise, and emulation. A youth should not be made to
 hate study, before hee know the causes to love it: or taste
 the bitternesse before the sweet; but call'd on, and
 allur'd, intreated, and praised : yea, when hee deserves it
 not. For which cause I wish them sent to the best schoole,
 1665 and a publike ; .which I thinke the best. Your Lordship,
 I feare, hardly heares of that, as willing to breed them in
 your eye, and at home ; and doubting their manners may
 bee corrupted abroad. They are in more danger in your
 owne Family, among ill servants, (allowing, they be safe
 1670 in their Schoole-Master) then amongst a thousand boyes,
 however immodest: Would wee did not spoyle our owne
 children, and overthrow their manners our selves by too
 much Indulgence ! To breed them at home, is to breed
 them in a shade; where in a schoole they have the light,
 1675 and heate of the Sunne. They are us'd, and accustom'd to
 things, and men. When they come forth into the Common-
 wealth, they find nothing new, or to seeke. They have
 made their friendships and ayds ; some to last till their
 Age. They heare what is commanded to others, as well as
 1680 themselves, much approv'd, much corrected; all which
 they bring to their owne store, and use; and learne as

1650 education,] education F 1652 natures :] natures ; F
 1663 yea] Yea F 1665-6 Lordship, I feare,] Lordship I feare F
 1671 Would] would -F 1673 Indulgence !] Indulgence. F 1674
 where] whereas Schilling 1678 till om. G 1680 themselves,
 much Schelling: themselves. Much F

much, as they heare. *Eloquence* would be but a poore thing, if wee should qnely converse with singulars ; speake, but man and man together. Therefore I like no private breeding. I would send them where their industry should be daily increas'd by praise ; and that kindled by emulation. It is a good thing to inflame the mind : And though Ambition it selfe be a vice, it is often the cause of great vertue. Give me that wit, whom praise excites, glory puts on, or disgrace grieves: hee is to bee nourish'd with Ambition, prick'd forward with honour ; check'd with Reprehension ; and never to bee suspected of sloath. Though hee be given to play, it is a signe of spirit, and livenessse ; so there be a meane had of their sports, and relaxations, And from the rodde, or ferule, I would have them free, as from the menace of them : for it is both deformed, and servile.

For a man to write well, there are required three Necessaries. To reade the best Authors, observe the best Speakers : and much exercise of his owne style. In style to consider, what ought to be written; and after what manner ; Hee must first thinke, and excogitate his matter ; then choose his words, and examine the weight of either. Then take care in placing, and ranking both matter, and words, that the composition be comely; and to doe this with diligence, and often. No matter how slow the style be at first, so it be labour'd, and accurate : seeke the best, and be not glad of the forward conceipts, or first words, that offer themselves to us, but judge of what wee invent; and order what wee approve. Repeat often, what wee have formerly written; which beside, that it helps the consequence, and makes the juncture better, it quickens the heate of imagination, that often cooles in the time of setting downe, and gives it new strength, as if it grew lustier, by the going back. As wee see in the contention of leaping, they jumpe farthest, that fetch their race largest: or, as in throwing a Dart, or lavelin, wee force back our armes, to

De stylo, et optima scribendi genere.

1706 accurate :] accurate; F

make our loose the stronger. Yet, if we have a faire gale of wind, I forbid not the steering out of our sayle, so the favour of the gale deceive us not. For all that wee invent
 1720 doth please us in the conception, or birth; else we would never set it downe. But the safest is to returne to our Judgement, and handle over againe those things, the easinesse of which might make them justly suspected. So did the best Writers in their beginnings ; they impos'd upon
 1725 themselves care, and industry. They did nothing rashly. They obtain'd first to write well, and then custome made it easie, and a habit. By little and little, their matter shew'd it selfe to 'hem more plentifully; their words answer'd, their composition followed ; and all, as in a well-order'd
 1730 family, presented it selfe in the place. So that the summe of all is: Ready writing makes not good writing; but good writing brings on ready writing : Yet when wee thinke wee have got the faculty, it is even then good to resist it: as to give a Horse a check sometimes with (a) bit, which doth
 1735 not so much stop his course, as stirre his mettle. Againe, whether a mans *Genius* is best able to reach, thither it should more and more contend, lift and dilate it selfe, as men of low stature, raise themselves on their toes ; and so oft-times get even, if not eminent. Besides, as it is fit for
 1740 grown and able Writers to stand of themselves, and worke with their owne strength, to trust and endeavour by their owne faculties: so it is fit for the beginner, and learner, to study others, and the best. For the mind, and memory are more sharply exercis'd in comprehending an other mans
 1745 things, then our owne ; and such as accustome themselves, and are familiar with the best Authors, shall ever and anon find somewhat of them in themselves, and in the expression of their minds, even when they feele it not, be able to utter something like theirs, which hath an Authority above their
 1750 owne. Nay, sometimes it is the reward of a mans study, the

1718 steering out] *Query* veering out 1720 in the conception, or
 birth] in conception of birth W 1734 a W 1736 reach, thither
 Swinburne \ reach thither, F 1739 oft-times] oft times F

praise of quoting an other man fitly : And though a man be more prone, and able for one kind of writing, then another, yet hee must exercise all. For as in an Instrument, so in style, there must be a Harmonie, and concent of parts.

I take this labour in teaching others, that they should not be alwayes to bee taught; and I would bring my Precepts into practise. For rules are ever of lesse force, and valed, then experiments. Yet with this purpose, rather to shew the right way to those that come after, then to detect any that have slipt before by error, and I hope it will bee more profitable. For men doe more willingly listen, and with more favour, to precept, then reprehension. Among diverse opinions of an Art, and most of them contrary in themselves, it is hard to make election ; and therefore, though a man cannot invent new things after so many, he may doe a welcome worke yet to helpe posterity to judge rightly of the old. But Arts and Precepts availe nothing, except nature be beneficiall, and ayding. And therefore these things are no more written to a dull disposition, then rules of husbandry to a barren Soyle. No precepts will profit a Foole; no more then beauty will the blind, or musicke the deafe. As wee should take care, that our style in writing, be neither dry, nor empty: wee should looke againe it be not winding, or wanton with far-fetcht descriptions ; Either is a vice. But that is worse which proceeds out of want, then that which riots out of plenty. The remedy of fruitfulness is easie, but no labour will helpe the contrary: I will like, and praise some things in a young Writer ; which yet if hee continue in, I cannot but justly hate him for the same. There is a time to bee given all things for maturity ; and that even your Countrey-husband-man can teach; who to a young plant will not put the proyning knife, because

1754 and concent *Editor*: and consent *F*: in consent *Gollancz*
 1755 (margin) *Prcipiendi* *F3* : *Præcipiendi* *F* 1762 favour,]
 favour *F* 1770 barren *om.* *W* ' 1774 -fetcht descriptions]
 -fetcht-descriptions *F* 1777 contrary :] contrary ; *F* 1779
 cannot] cannot, *F*

it seemes to feare the iron, as not able to admit the scarre.
 No more would I tell a greene Writer all his faults, lest I
 1785 should make him grieve and faint, and at last despaire.
 For nothing doth more hurt, then to make him so afraid
 of all things, as hee can endeavour nothing. Therefore
 youth ought to be instructed betimes, and in the best
 things : for we hold those longest, wee take soonest. As the
 1790 first sent of a Vessell lasts : and that tinct the wooll first
 receives. Therefore a Master should temper his owne
 powers, and descend to the others infirmity. If you powre
 a glut of water upon a Bottle, it receives little of it; but
 with a Funnell, and by degrees, you shall fill many of them,
 1795 and spill little of your owne ; to their capacity they will all
 receive, and be full. And as it is fit to reade the best
 Authors to youth first, so let them be of the openest, and
 clearest. As *Livy* before *Salust*, *Sydney* before *Donne*: and
 beware of letting them taste *Gower*, or *Chaucer* at first, lest
 falling too much in love with Antiquity, and not apprehend-
 ing the weight, they grow rough and barren in language
 onely. When their judgements are firme, and out of danger,
 let them reade both, the old and the new : but no lesse take
 heed, that their new flowers, and sweetnesse doe not as
 1805 much corrupt, as the others drinnesse, and squallor, if they
 choose not carefully. *Spencer*, in affecting the Ancients,
 writ no Language: Yet I would have him read for his
 matter; but as *Virgil* read *Ennius*. The reading of *Homer*
 and *Virgil* is counsell'd by *Quintilian*, as the best way of
 informing youth, and confirming man. For besides, that
 the mind is rais'd with the height, and sublimity of such a
 verse, it takes spirit from the greatnesse of the matter, and
 is tinted with the best things. *Tragicke*, and *Liricke*
 Poetry is good too: and *Comicke* with the best, if the
 1815 manners of the Reader be once in safety. In the *Greeke*
 Poets, as also in *Plautus*, wee shall see the Oeconomy, and
 Terence. disposition of *Poems*, better observed then in *Terence*, and

Livy.
 Salust.
 Sydney.
 Donne.
 Gower.
 Chaucer.

Virgil.
 Ennius.
 Homer.
 Virgil.

Quintilian.

the later : who thought the sole grace, and vertue of their Fable, the sticking in of sentences, as ours doe the forcing in of jests.

1820

Wee should not protect our sloath with the patronage of difficulty. It is a false quarrell against nature, that shee helps understanding, but in a few ; when the most part of mankind are inclin'd by her thither, if they would take the paines ; no lesse then birds to fly, horses to run, &c. Which if they lose, it is through their owne sluggishnesse, and by that meanes (they) become her prodigies, not her children. I confesse, nature in children is more patient of labour in study, then in Age ; for the sense of the paine, the judgement of the labour is absent, they doe not measure what they have done. And it is the thought, and consideration, that affects us more, then the wearinesse it selfe. Plato was not content with the Learning, that Athens could give him, but sail'd into Italy for Pythagoras knowledge: And yet not thinking himselfe sufficiently inform'd, went into Egypt to the Priests, and learned their mysteries. Hee labour'd, so must wee. Many things may be learn'd together, and perform'd in one point of time; as Musicians exercise their memory, their voice, their fingers, and sometime their head, and feet at once. And so a Preacher, in the invention of matter, election of words, composition of gesture, looke, pronounciation, motion, useth all these faculties at once. And if wee can expresse this variety together, why should not diverse studies, at diverse houres, delight, when the variety is able alone to refresh, and repaire us ? As when a man is weary of writing, to reade; and then againe of reading, to write. Wherein, howsoever wee doe many things, yet are wee (in a sort) still fresh to what wee begin :

Fals. querel. fugiend.

1825

1830

Platonis Peregrinatio in Italian.

1835

1840

1845

1818 later] latter W: later Greek poets Schelling conj.: Latin (or later Latin) Castalam conj, 1821 (margin) Fals. Fj : lals. F
1823 understanding, . . . few ;] understanding ; . . . few, F 1827
they Editor 1832 (margin) Platonis F₃ : Platonis. F 1834
Pythagoras] Pythagora's F : Pythagoras's F₃ 1840 Preacher,]
Preacher F 1844 houres,] houres F

wee are recreated with change, as the stomacke is with
 1850 meats. But some will say, this variety breeds confusion,
 and makes, that either wee loose all, or hold no more then
 the last. Why doe wee not then perswade husbandmen,
 that they should not till Land, helpe it with Marie, Lyme,
 and Compost? plant Hop-gardens, prune trees, looke to
 1855 Bee-hives, reare sheepe, and all other Cattell at once? It
 is easier to doe many things, and continue, then to doe one
 thing long.

*Pracft.
 Element.*

It is not the passing through these Learnings that hurts
 us, but the dwelling and sticking about them. To descend
 1860 to those extreame anxieties, and foolish cavils of *Gram-*
marians, is able to breake a wit in pieces; being a worke of
 manifold misery, and vainenesse, to bee *Elementarij series*.
 Yet even Letters are, as it were, the Banke of words, and
 restore themselves to an Author, as the pawnes of Language.
 1865 But talking and Eloquence are not the same: to speake,
 and to speake well, are two things.. A foole may talke, but
 a wise man speakes, and out of the observation, knowledge,
 and use of things. Many Writers perplexe their Readers,
 and Hearers with meere *Non-sense*. Their writings need
 1870 sunshine. Pure and neat Language I love, yet plaine and
 customary. A barbarous Phrase hath often made mee out
 of love with a good sense; and doubtful! writing hath
 wrackt mee beyond my patience. The reason why a *Poet*
 is said, that hee ought to have all knowledges, is that hee
 1875 should not be ignorant of the most, especially of those hee
 will handle'. And indeed, when the attaining of them is
 possible, it were a sluggish, and base thing to despaire. For
 frequent imitation of any thing, becomes a habit quickly.
 If a man should prosecute as much, as could be said of
 1880 every thing; his worke would find no end.

*De ora-
 tionis
 dignitate.*

Speech is the only benefit man hath to expresse his excel-

1863 are,... were,] are... were *F* 1864 Language.] Language :
F 1868 use] the use *W* 1876 indeed,] indeed *F* 1881 (margin) *orotionis*
 benefit corr. *F*: benefit, *F* originally
 corr. *F*; *orationis*. *F* originally

lencie of mind above other creatures. It is the Instrument of Society. Therefore *Mercury*, who is the President of Language, is called *Deorum hominumq̃ interpres*. In all speech, words and sense, are as the body, and the soule. 1885
 The sense is as the life and soule of Language, without which all words are dead. Sense is wrought out of experience, the knowledge of humane life, and actions, or of the liberall Arts, which the *Greeks* call'd **Εγκυκλοπαιδείαν**. Words are the Peoples ; yet there is a choise of them to be made. For *Verborum delectus, origo est eloquently*. They are to be chose according to the persons wee make speake, or the things wee speake of. Some are of the Campe, some of the Councell-board, some of the Shop, some of the Sheepe-coat, some of the Pulpit, some of the Barre, &c. And herein is scene their Elegance, and Propriety, when wee use them fitly, and draw them forth to their just strength and nature, by way of Translation, or *Metaphore*. But in this Translation wee must only serve necessity (*Nam temere nihil transfertur a prudenti*) or commodity, which is a kind of necessity; that is, when wee either absolutely want a word to expresse by, and that is necessity ; or when wee have not so fit a word, and that is commodity. As when wee avoid losse by it, and escape obscenenesse, and gaine in the grace and property, which helps significance. *Metaphors* farfet hinder to be understood, and affected, lose their grace. Or when the person fetcheth his translations from a wrong place. As if a Privie-Counsellor should at the Table take his *Metaphore* from a Dicing-house, or Ordinary, or a Vintners Vault; or a Justice of Peace draw his similitudes from the *Mathe-* 1905
matics; or a *Divine* from a Bawdy-house, or Tavernes ; or a Gentleman of *Northampton-shire*, *Warwick-shire*, or the *Mid-land*, should fetch all his Illustrations to his country neighbours from shipping, and tell them of the maine *sheat*, and the Boulin, *Metaphors* are thus many times deform'd, 1915
 as in him that said, *Castratam morte Aphricani Rempubicam*.

1886 is corr. F: is, F originally 1889 (and margin) **Εγκυκλοπαιδείαν**
Εγκυκλοπαιδείαν F 1904 obscenenesse] obscureness F. Cunningham
 conj. (cf. 2026) 1916 Aphncani] Afncant W

Εγκυκλοπαιδείαν
 Iulius
 Caesar.
Of words
 in Hor.
de Art.
Poetic.
Quintil.
 / 8.
 Ludov.
 Vives.
 pag. 6.
 & 7.
Meta-
phora.

And an other, *stercus curia Glauciam*. And *Cand nive conspuat Alpes*. All attempts that are new in this kind, are dangerous, and somewhat hard, before they be softned
 1920 with use. A man coynes not a new word without some perill, and lesse fruit; for if it happen to be received, the praise is but moderate; if refus'd, the scorne is assur'd. Yet wee must adventure, for things, at first hard and rough, are by use made tender and gentle. It is an honest errour
 1925 that is committed, following great *Chiefes*.

Consuetude.

Perspicuitas.
Venustas.

Authority.

Virgil.
Lucretius.
Chancierism.

Custom is the most certaine Mistresse of Language, as the publicke stampe makes the current money. But wee must not be too frequent with the mint, every day coining. Nor fetch words from the extreme and utmost ages ; since the chiefe vertue nf a styIt is perspicuitie, and nothing so vitious in it, as to need an Interpreter. Words borrow'd of Antiquity, doe lend a kind of Majesty to style, and are
 1933 not without their delight sometimes. For they have the Authority of yeares, and out of their intermission doe win to themselves a kind of grace like newnesse. But the eldest of the present, and newest of the past Language is the best. For what was the ancient Language, which some men so doate upon, but the ancient Custom ? Yet when I name Custom, I understand not the vulgar Custom : For that
 1940 were a precept no lesse dangerous to Language, then life, if wee should speake or live after the manners of the vulgar: But that I call Custom of speech, which is the consent of the Learned; as Custom of life, which is the consent of the good. *Virgill* was most loving of Antiquity ; yet how rarely doth hee insert *aquai*, and *pictai* ! *Lucretius* is scabrous and rough in these ; hee seekes 'hem : As some doe *Ckaucerismes* with us, which were better expung'd and banish'd. Some words are to be cull'd out for ornament and colour, as wee gather flowers to straw houses, or make
 1950 Garlands; but they are better when they grow to our

1917 other] othet F

1930 (margin)

grace-like F

strow W

1923 things, at first] things at first, F
 Perspicuitas F • 1935 grace like]

1936 newest Schilling : newnesse F

1949 straw]

style ; as in a Meadow, where though the meere grasse and
greennesse delights, yet the variety of flowers doth heighten
and beautifie. Marry, we must not play, or riot too much
with them, as in *Paranomasies*: Nor use too swelling, or Parano-
ill-sounding words; *Qua per salebras, alta% saxa cadunt.* masia.
It is true, there is no sound but shall find some Lovers, as
the bitter'st confections are gratefull to some palats. Our
composition must bee more accurate in the beginning and
end, then in the midst; and in the end more, then in the
beginning; for through the midst the streame beares us. 1960
And this is attain'd by Custome more then care, or diligence.
Wee must expresse readily, and fully, not profusely. There
is difference betweene a liberall, and a prodigall hand. As
it is a great point of Art, when our matter requires it, to
enlarge, and veere out all sayle ; so to take it in, and con- 1965
tract it, is of no lesse praise when the Argument doth aske
it. Either of them hath their fitnessse in the place. A good
man alwayes profits by his endeavour, by his helpe ; yea,
when he is absent; nay, when he is dead, by his example
and memory. So good Authors in their style : A strict and Dt style.
succinct style is that, where you can take away nothing Tacitus.
without losse, and that losse to be manifest. The brieft style The
is that which expresseth much in little. The concise style, Laco-
which expresseth not enough, but leaves somewhat to bee nich.
understood. The abrupt style, which hath many breaches, Sue-
and doth not seeme to end, but fall. The congruent, and tonius.
harmonious fitting of parts in a sentence, hath almost the Seneca 6.
fastning, and force of knitting, and connexion : As in stones Fabi-
well squar'd, which will rise strong a great way without anus.
mortar. 1980

Periods are beautifull when they are not too long ; for so Periodi.
they have their strength too, as in a Pike or Javelin. As
wee must take the care that our words and sense bee cleare ;
so, if the obscurity happen through the Hearers, or Readers

1952 delights,] delights ; F: delight, G 1953 Marry,] Marry F
1954 *Paranomasies*] *Paronoznasies* W 1969 nay,... dead,] nay...
dead F 1970-6 (margin) *Notes misplaced in F* 1981 No
paragraph in F beautifull.] beautifull; F 1984 so,] so F

- 1985 want of understanding, I am not to answer for them ; no more then for their not listning or marking; I must neither find them eares, nor mind. But a man cannot put a word so in sense, but some thing about it will illustrate it, if the Writer understand himselfe. For Order helps much to
- 1990 Perspicuity, as Confusion hurts. *Rectitude lucem adfert ; obliquitas et circumductio offuscat.* We should therefore speake what wee can, the neerest way, so as wee keepe our gate, not leape ; for too short may as well be not let into the memory, as too long not kept in. Whatsoever looseth the grace, and clearenesse, converts into a Riddle; the obscurity is mark'd, but not the vawle. That perisheth, and is past by, like the Pearle in the Fable. Our style should be like a skeine of silke, to be carried, and found by the right thred, not ravel'd, and perplex'd ; then all is a knot, a heape.
- 2000 There are words, that doe as much raise a style, as others can deprese it. Superlation, and overmuchnesse amplifies. It may be above faith, but never above a meane. It was ridiculous in *Cesius*, when hee said of *Alexander*: *Fremitt Oceanus, quasi indignetur, quod terras relinquit*; But propitiously from *Virgil*:—
- Obscuritas offundit tenebras.*
- Super-laho.*
- Cestius.*
- Virgil.*

Credas innare reuulsas

Cycladas.

- Hee doth not say it was so, but seem'd to be so. Although it be somewhat incredible, that is excus'd before it be spoken. But there are *Hyperboles*, which will become one Language, that will by no meanes admit another. As *Eos esse P. R. exercitus, qui ccdum possint perrumpere*: who would say this with us, but a mad man ? Therefore wee must consider in every tongue what is us'd, what receiv'd.
- 2010 *Quintilian.* *Quintilian* warnes us, that in no kind of Translation, or *Metaphore*, or *Allegory*^ wee make a turne from what wee began ; As if wee fetch the originall of our *Metaphore* from
- Caesar comment: circa fin.*

1990 Confusion hurts] Confusionhurts F 1995 grace,] grace. F
 1998 silke,] silke F found] Query wound 2003-4 *Fremitt... relinquit* ;
 quoted as a line of verse in F 2006-7 *Credas... Cycladas* quoted as
 prose in F 2006 *innare* W : *innate* F

sea, and billowes; wee end not in flames and ashes; It is a most fowle inconsequence. Neither must wee draw out our *Allegory* too long, lest either wee make our selves 2020 obscure, or fall into affectation, which is childish. But why doe men depart at all from the right, and naturall wayes of speaking? Sometimes for necessity, when wee are driven, or thinke it fitter to speake that in obscure words, or by circumstance, which utter¹d plainly would offend the 2025 hearers. Or to avoid obscenenesse, or sometimes for pleasure, and variety; as Travailleurs turne out of the high way, drawne, either by the commodity of a foot-path, or the delicacy, or freshnesse of the fields. And all this is call'd *εσχηματισμένη*, or figur'd Language. 2030

Language most shewes a man: speake that I may see *Oratio* thee. It springs out of the most retired, and inmost parts *imago* of us, and is the Image of the Parent of it, the mind. No *aninti* glasse renders a mans forme, or likenesse, so true as his speech. Nay, it is likened to a man; and as we consider 2035 feature, and composition in a man; so words in Language: in the greatnesse, aptnesse, sound, structure, and harmony *Structura.* of it. Some men are tall, and bigge, so some Language is *&• statura.* high and great. Then the words are chosen, their sound *sublimis.* ample, the composition full, the absolution plenteous, and *humilis.* 2041 powr'd out, all grave, sinnewye and strong. Some are little, and Dwarfes: so of speech it is humble, and low, the words poore and flat; the members and *Periods*, thinne and weake, without knitting, or number. The middle are of a just *Media-* stature. There the Language is plaine, and pleasing: even *cris,* without stopping, round without swelling; all well-torn'd, *plana* 6- *placida.* compos'd, elegant, and accurate. The vitious Language is *Vitiosa* vast, and gaping, swelling, and irregular; when it contends *oratio,* to be high, full of Rocke, Mountaine, and pointednesse: as *vasta.* *humilis,* *enormis,* *affectata,* *abjecta.* 2037

2026 obscenenesse] obscureness *F. Cunningham conj.* 2037
(margin) *statura, sublimis, humilis, F3: statwa. Sublimis, Humilis F*
2043 weake,] weake *F* 2044 (margin) *Mediocris, plana] Mediocris*
PlanaF vasta, tumens, enormis, affcctata, abjecta} vasta. Tumens.
Enormis. Affcctata. Abjecta F 2048 as]As-F

2050 it affects to be low, it is abject, and creeps, full of bogs, and
holes. And according to their Subject, these stiles vary,
and lose their names: For that which is high and lofty,
declaring excellent matter, becomes vast and tumorous,
speaking of petty and inferiour things : so that which was
2055 even, and apt in a meane and plaine subject, will appeare
most poore and humble in a high Argument. Would you
not laugh, to meet a great Counsellor of state in a flat cap,
with his trunck hose, and a hobby-horse Cloake, his Gloves
under his girdle, and yond Haberdasher in a velvet Gowne,
2060 furr'd with sables ? There is a certaine latitude in these
things, by which wee find the degrees. The next thing to
the stature, is the figure and feature in Language : that is,
whether it be round, and straight, which consists of short
and succinct *Periods*, numerous, and polish'd; or square and
2065 firme, which is to have equall and strong parts, every where
answerable, and weighed. The third is the skinne, and coat,
which rests in the well-joyning, cementing, and coagmenta-
tion of words ; when as it is smooth, gentle, and sweet ;
like a Table, upon which you may runne your finger without
2070 rubs, and your nayle cannot find a joynt; not horrid,
rough, wrinckled, gaping, or chapt. After these the flesh,
blood, and bones come in question. Wee say it is a fleshy
style, when there is much *Periphrasis*, and circuit of words ;
and when with more then enough, it growes fat and corpu-
2075 lent ; *Arvina orationis*, full of suet and tallow. It hath
blood, and juyce, when the words are proper and apt, their
sound sweet, and the *Phrase* neat and pick'd. *Oratio uncta*,
& *bene pasta*. But where there is Redundancy, both the
blood and juyce are faulty, and vitious. *Redundat sanguine*,
2081 *qua multo plus dicit, quam necesse es*. Juyce in Language is
somewhat lesse then blood ; for if the words be but becom-
ming, and signifying, and the sense gentle, there is Juyce:

Figura.

Cutis
sive
Cortex.
Compo-
sitio.

Carnosa.
Adipala.

Redun-
dant.

2053-4 tumorous, speaking] tumorous: Speaking *F* 2063 short
corr. *F*: short, *F* originally 2064 polish'd;] polish'd, *F* 2065
firme,] firme ; *F* parts] patts *F* 2068 when as] whenas *Schelling*
2071 chapt.] chapt: -*F* 2073 *Periphrasis*] *Periphrases* *F*: peri-
phrasis *G* 2080 *quae* *Vives*: *qua* *F*: *quid* *W*: *quia* *G*

but where that wanteth, the Language is thinne, flagging, *lejuna.*
 poore, starv'd, scarce covering the bone; and shewes like *madlenta,*
 stones in a sack. Some men, to avoid Redundancy, runne *strigosa.*
 into that; and while they strive to have no ill blood, or 2086
 Juyce, they loose their good. There be some styles, againe,
 that have not lesse blood, but lesse flesh, and corpulence.
 These are bony, and sinnewy : *Ossa habent, et nervos.*

It was well noted by the late L. St. Alban, that the study
 of words is the first distemper of Learning: Vaine matter *Ossea, & .*
 the second: And a third distemper is deceit, or the like- *nervosa.*
 nesse of truth ; Imposture held up by credulity. All these *Notæ*
 are the Cobwebs of Learning, and to let them grow in us, *Domini*
 is either sluttish or foolish. Nothing is more ridiculous, then *St.*
 to make an Author a Dictator, as the schooles have done *Albani de*
Aristotle. The dammage is infinite, knowledge receives by *doctrin:*
 it. For to many things a man should owe but a temporary *intemper.*
 believe, and a suspension of his owne Judgement, not an *Dictator.*
 absolute resignation of himselfe, or a perpetuall captivity. 2100 *Aristo-*
 Let Aristotle, and others have their dues; but if wee can *teles.*
 make farther Discoveries of truth and fitnessse then they,
 why are we envied ? Let us beware, while wee strive to
 adde, wee doe not diminish, or deface ; wee may improve,
 but not augment. By discrediting falshood, Truth growes 2105
 in request. Wee must not goe about like men anguish'd,
 and perplex'd, for vitious affectation of praise : but calmly
 study the separation of opinions, find the errors have
 intervened, awake Antiquity, call former times into ques-
 tion ; but make no parties with the present, nor follow any 2110
 fierce undertakers, mingle no matter of doubtfull credit,
 with the simplicity of truth, but gently stirre the mould
 about the root of the Question, and avoid all digladiations,
 facility of credit, or superstitious simplicity; seeke the
 consonancy, and concatenation of Truth; stoope only to 2115
 point of necessity, and what leads to convenience. Then

• 2083 (margin) *lejuna,*] *lejuna* F: *Jejuna,* F3 2084 starv'd,...
 bone;] starv'd; .. . bone, F 2085 men,] men F 2087 styles,]
 styles F 2089 (margin) *Ossea* W : *Ossia* F 2090 Alban] Albans
Sckffling 2093 truth;] truth. F 2116 necessity,] necessity; F

make exact animadversion where style hath degenerated, where flourish'd, and thriv'd in choisenesse of Phrase, round and cleane composition of sentence, sweet falling of the
 2120 clause, varying an illustration by tropes and figures, weight of Matter, worth of Subject, soundnesse of Argument, life of Invention, and depth of Judgement. This is *Monte potiri*, to get the hill. For no perfect Discovery can bee made upon a flat or a levell.

*De
Optimo
tcnptoft.*

Now, that I have informed you in the knowing these things; let mee leade you by the hand a little farther, in the direction of the use ; and make you an able Writer by practice. The conceits of the mind are Pictures of things, and the tongue is the Interpreter of those Pictures. The
 2130 order of Gods creatures in themselves, is not only admirable, and glorious, but eloquent; Then he who could apprehend the consequence of things in their truth, and utter his apprehensions as truly, were the best Writer, or Speaker. Therefore *Cicero* said much, when hee said, *Dicere recti nemo*
Cicero. 2135 *potest, nisi qui prudenter intelligit.* The shame of speaking unskilfully were small, if the tongue onely thereby were disgrac'd: But as the Image of a *King*, in his Seale ill-represented, is not so much a blemish to the waxe, or the Signet that seal'd it, as to the Prince it representeth; so
 2140 disordered speech is not so much injury to the lips that give it forth, as to the disproportion, and incoherence of things in themselves, so negligently expressed. Neither can his mind be thought to be in tune, whose words doe jarre ; nor his reason in frame, whose sentence is preposterous; nor
 2145 his Elocution cleare and perfect, whose utterance breakes it selfe into fragments and uncertainties: Were it not a dishonour to a mighty Prince, to have the Majesty of his embassage spoyled by a carelesse Ambassadors ? and is it not as great an Indignity, that an excellent conceit and

2125 knowing] knowing of Schelling 2128-60 In John Hoskyns's
 'Directions for Speech and Style', HarL MS. 850 f. 2 2140 give] gave
 GoUanci 2141 forth,] forth, or the thoughts which put it forth,
 Hoskyns

capacity, by the indiligence of an idle tongue, should be 2150
 disgraced? Negligent speech doth not onely discredit the
 person of the Speaker, but it discredited! the opinion of his
 reason and judgement; it discredited the force and uni-
 formity of the matter, and substance. If it be so then in
 words, which fly and escape censure, and where one good 2155
Phrase begs pardon for many incongruities, and faults;
 how shall he then be thought wise, whose penning is thin
 and shallow? How shall you looke for wit from him, whose
 leasure and head, assisted with the examination of his eyes,
 yeeld you no life, or sharpenesse in his writing? 2160

In writing (of letters) there is to be regarded the Inven- *De stylo*
 tion, and the Fashion. For the *Invention*, that ariseth upon *Episto-*
 your busines; whereof there can bee no rules of more cer- *lari.*
 tainty, or precepts of better direction given, then conjec- *Inuentio.*
 ture can lay downe, from the several! occasions of mens 2165
 particular lives, and vocations: But sometimes men make
 businesse of kindnesse: As (*I could not satisfie my selfe, till*
I had discharged my remembrance, and charged my Letter
with commendations to you.) Or, (*My busines is no other,*
then to testifie my love to you, and to put you in mind of my 2x70
willingnesse to doe you all kind offices.) Or, (*Sir, have you*
leasure to descend to the remembring of that assurance you
have long possest in your servant; and upon your next
opportunity, make him happy with some commands from
you?) Or, the like; that goe a begging for some meaning, 2175
 and labour to be deliver'd of the great burthen of nothing.
 When you have invented, and that your busines bee
 matter, and not bare forme, or meere Ceremoney, but some
 earnest: then are you to proceed to the ordering of it,
 and digesting the parts, which is had out of two circum- 2180
 stances. One is the understanding of the Persons, to whom

2150 tongue,] tongue F 2160 writing?] writing. F 2161-2289 In
 John Hoskyns's 'Directions for Speech and Style', Harl. MS. 850 ff. 3, 4
 2161 off letters Hoskyns 2167 businesse Hoskyns: baseness F
 2169-71 (My... offices)] [My . . . offices.] F 2168 Letter] letter
 Hodcyns: Letter F 2169 commendations] commendation W 2171-5
 (Sir ...you?)] [Sir... you?] F

you are to write ; the other is the coherence of your Sentence. For mens capacity, (you are) to weigh, what will be apprehended with greatest attention, or leisure ; what next
 2185 regarded, and long'd for especially; and what last will leave (most) satisfaction, and (as it were) the sweetest memorial!, and briefe of all that is past in his understanding, whom you write to. For the consequence of Sentences, you must bee sure, that every clause doe give the Q. one to
 2190 the other, and be bespoken ere it come. So much for *Invention* and *order*.

Modus.
 i. *Brevitas.*

Now for fashion, it consists in foure things, which are Qualities of your style. The first is *Brevity*. For they must not be Treatises, or Discourses (your Letters) except it be
 2195 to learned men. And even among them, there is a kind of thrift, and saving of words. Therefore you are to examine the clearest passages of your understanding, and through them to convey the sweetest, and most significant words you can devise ; that you may the easier teach them the
 2200 readiest way to an other mans apprehension, and open their meaning fully, roundly, and distinctly. So as the Reader may not thinke a second view cast away upon your letter. And though respect bee a part following this; yet now here, and still I must remember it. If you write to a man,
 2205 whose estate and [cense as] senses you are familiar with, you may the bolder (to set a taske to his braine) venter on a knot. But if to your Superior, you are bound to measure him in three farther points: First, your interest in him : Secondly, his capacity in your Letters : Thirdly, his leasure
 2210 to peruse them. For your interest, or favour with him, you are to bee the shorter, or longer, more familiar, or submissee, as hee will afford you time. For his capacity, you are to be quicker, and fuller of those reaches, and glances of wit, or

2182-3 Sentence. For] sentence for Schelling 2183 capacity,] capacity F you are Hoskyns 2184 or leisure] and pleasure Hoskyns 2186 most Hoskyns 2187 briefe Hoskyns: beliefef 2192 No paragraph in F fashion,] fashion F 2200 open] penn Hoskyns 2204 it. If Hoskyns : it, if F 2205 cense as senses] senses Hoskyns : census Anon. conj. 1893 •' sense, as senses W: cense Gollancz senses] senses, F 2208 your] with Schelling 2212 capacity,] capacity F

learning, as hee is able to entertaine them. For his leasure, you are commanded to the greater briefnesse, as his place 2215 is of greater discharges, and cares. But, with your betters, you are not to put Riddles of wit, by being too scarce of words : nor to cause the trouble of making *Breviates*, by writing too riotous, and wastingly. *Brevity* is attained in matter, by avoiding idle Complements, Prefaces, Protesta- 2220 tions, Parentheses, superfluous circuit of figures, and digressions : In the composition, by omitting Conjunctions, (*Not onely; But Also*) (*Both the one, and the other*) (*Whereby it commeth to passe*) and such like idle Particles, that have no great busines in a serious Letter, but breaking of sentences; 2225 as often times a short journey is made long, by unnecessary baits.

But, as *Quintilian* saith, there is a briefnesse of the parts *Quin-* sometimes, that makes the whole long, as, / *came to the* *tilian.* *stairesi I tooke a paire of oares, they launch'd out, rowed a* 2230 *pace, I landed at the Court-gate, I paid my fayre, went up to the Presence, ask'd for my Lord, I was admitted.* All this is but, / *went to the Court, and spake with my Lord.* This is the fault of some Latine Writers, within these last hundred years, of my reading, and perhaps *Seneca* may be appeacht 2235 of it; I accuse him not.

The next property of *Epistolarie* style is *Perspicuity*, and 2. *Perspic-* is often-times {indangered by the former qualitie (brevity), *u<i>fas.* often-times) by affectation of some wit ill angled for, or ostentation of some hidden termes of Art. Few words they 2240 darken speech, and so doe too many: as well too much light hurteth the eyes, as too little; and a long Bill of *Chancery* confounds the understanding, as much as the shortest note. Therefore, let not your Letters be penn'd

2216 But,] But F 2218 nor *Hoskyns*: not F 2222 (*Not*) [*Not F*
2223 *But*] But F (*Both... other*) (*Whereby*) *Both... other, whereby F*
2224 *passe*] *passe*] F 2226 often-times] often times *con. F*: often
times *F originally* 2228 But,] But F 2229 as,] as F 2229-32
/ . . , *admitted*, roman type in F 2230-1 *a pace*] a-pace F₃ 2233
/... *Lord*, roman type in F spake F₃: speake F 2237 *No paragraph*
in F 2238 often-times] often times F 2238-9 endangered,..
oftentimes *Hoskyns*: oftentimes lost *Swinburne con;*

2245 like English Statutes, and this is obtain'd. These vices are
eschewed by pondering your busines well, and distinctly
conceiving your selfe, which is much furthered by uttering
your thoughts, and letting them as well come forth to the
light, and Judgement of your owne outward senses, as to
2250 the censure of other mens eares : For that is the reason,
why many good Schollers speake but fumblingly; like a
rich man, that, for want of particular note and difference,
can bring you no certaine ware readily out of his shop.
Hence it is, that talkative shallow men doe often content
2255 the Hearers, more then the wise. But this may find a
speedier redresse in writing; where all comes under the
last examination of the eyes. First mind it well, then pen
it, then examine it, then amend it; and you may bee in
the better hope of doing reasonably well. Vnder this vertue
2260 may come Plainenesse, which is not to be curious in the
order, as to answer a letter, as if you were to answer to
Intergatories: As to the first, first; and to the second,
secondly, &c. But both in method (and wordes) to use (as
Ladies doe in their attyre) a diligent kind of negligence, and
2265 their sportive freedome; though with some men you are
not to jest, or practise tricks : yet the delivery of the most
important things, may be carried with such a grace, as that
it may yeeld a pleasure to the conceit of the Reader. There
must bee store, though no excesse of termes ; as if you are
2270 to name *Store*, sometimes you may call it *choyse*, sometimes
plenty ; sometimes copiousnesse, or variety : but ever so,
that the word which comes in lieu, have not such difference
of meaning, as that it may put the sense of the first in
hazard to be mistaken. You are not to cast a Ring for the
2275 perfumed termes of the time, as *Accommodation*, *Comple-*
ment, *Spirit*, &c. But use them properly in their place, as
others.

3. *Vigor*. There followeth *Life*, and *Quicknesse*, which is the

2247 conceiving *Hoskyns*: concerning *F* (*Jonson would spell 'con-*
tiuing ') 2252 that,] that *F* 2262 Intergatories:] Interga-
toriae. *F* 2263 and wordes *Hoskyns* 2278,2283 *No paragraph in F*

strength and sinnewes (as it were) of your penning by
 pithy Sayings, Similitudes, and Conceits, Allusions (to) 2280
 some knowne History, or other common place, such as are
 in the *Courtier*, and the second booke of *Cicero de oratore*.

• The last is; Respect to discern, what fits your selfe; 4. *Dis-
 him to whom you write; and that which you handle, cretio*
 which is a quality fit to conclude the rest, because it doth 2285
 include all. And that must proceed from ripenesse of
 judgement, which, as one truly saith, is gotten by foure
 meanes, *God Nature, Diligence, and Conversation*. Serve
 the first well, and the rest will serve you.

We have spoken sufficiently of Oratory ; let us now make 2290
 a diversion to *Poetry*. *Poetry*, in the Primogeniture, had *De*
 many peccant humours, and is made to have more now, *Poetica*.
 through the Levity, and inconstancie of mens Judgements.
 Whereas, indeed, it is the most prevailing Eloquence, and
 of the most exalted *Charact*. Now the discredits and dis- 2295
 graces are many it hath receiv'd, through mens study of
 Depravation or Calumny: their practise being to give it
 diminution of Credit, by lessening the Professors estima-
 tion, and making the Age afraid of their Liberty : And the
 Age is growne so tender of her fame, as she cals all writings 2300
Aspersions. That is the State-word, the Phrase of Court,
 (*Placentia Colledge*) which some call *Parasites Place*, the
 Inne of *Ignorance*.

Whilst I name no persons, but deride follies ; why should,
 any man confesse, or betray himselfe ? why doth not that 2305
 of S. *Hierome* come into their minde; *Vbi generalis est D.Hiero-*
de vitiis disputatio, ibi nullius esse persona injuriam? Is it *nimus.*
 such an inexpiable crime in *Poets*, to taxe vices generally;
 and no offence in them who, by their exception, confesse

2280 pithy *Hoskyns* : pretty *F* 2280-1 Allusions to some
Hoskyns : Allusions, some *F*: allusions from *W* 2282 *Courtier*]
Courtier-F 2287 which,] which *F* 2291 *Poetry*,... Primogeniture,]
Poetry ... Primogeniture *F* 2294 Whereas,] whereas *F* 2295
Charact] character *J. Warton* 2301 That a new paragraph in *F*
 2307 Is it *G*: It is *F*

2310 they have committed them particularly ? Are wee fal'ne
into those times that wee must not

Pers. Sat.

Auriculas ieneras mordaci rodere vero ?

I.

Livius.

Remedii votum semper verius erat, qu&m spes. If men may
by no meanes write freely, or speake truth, but when it
2315 offends not; why doe *Physicians* cure with sharpe medi-
cines, or corrosives ? Is not the same equally lawfull in the
cure of the minde, that is in the cure of the body ? Some
vices, (you will say) are soe foule, that it is better they
should bee done, then spoken. But they that take offence
2320 where no Name, Character, or Signature doth blazon them,
seeme to mee like affected as woemen; who, if they heare
Sexus
femlin. any thing ill spoken of the ill of their Sexe, are presently
mov'd, as if the contumely respected their particular : and,
on the contrary, when they heare good of good woemen,
2325 conclude, that it belongs to them all. If I see any thing that
toucheth mee, shall I come forth a betraier of my selfe,
presently ? No ; if I be wise, Tie dissemble it; if honest,
I'll avoid it: lest I publish that on my owne forehead,
which I saw there noted without a title. A man, that is on
2336 the mending hand, will either ingeniously confesse, or
wisely dissemble his disease. And, the wise, and *versus*,
will never thinke any thing belongs to themselves that is
written, but rejoyce that the good are warn'd not to bee
such; and the ill to leave to bee such. The Person offended
2335 hath no reason to bee offended with the writer, but with
himselfe ; and so to declare that properly to belong to him,
which was so spoken of all men, as it could bee no mans
severall, but his that would willfully and desperately
clayme it. It sufficeth I know, what kinde of persons I
2340 displease, men bred in the declining, and decay of vertue,
betroth'd to their owne vices; that have abandoned, or
prostituted their good names; hungry and ambitious of
infamy, invested in all deformity, enthrall'd to ignorance

2310 particularly ?] particularly. F 2312 rodere] rodere Schelling
2327 wise,] wise F 2327-8 I'll ... I'll] i'll ... i'll F 2336
ingeniously] ingeniously W 2338 severall,] severall F

and malice, of a hidden and conceal'd malign!tie, and that
hold a concomitancy with all evill.

2345

What is a Poet ?

A *Poet* is that, which by the *Greeks* is call'd /car' cfogips o *Poeta*.
JTowjrqqf, a *Maker*, or a *fainer*: His *Art*, an *Art* of imitation,
or *faining*; expressing the life of man in fit measure,
numbers, and harmony, according to *Aristotle*: From the 2350
word TToieiv, which signifies to make, or fayne. Hence, hee
is call'd a *Poet*, not hee which writeth in measure only ; but
that fayneth and formeth a fable, and writes things like the
Truth. For, the Fable and Fiction is (as it were) the forme
and Soule of any Poeticall worke, or *Poeme*.

2355

What meane you by a Poeme ?

A *Poeme* is not alone any worke, or composition of the *Poema*.
Poets in many, or few verses; but even one alone verse
sometimes makes a perfect *Poeme*. As, when *Aeneas* hangs *Virgilius*.
up, and consecrates the *Armes* of *Abas*, with this Inscript- *Aeneid*.
tion; lib. 3.

Aeneas h&c de Danais victoribus arma.

And calls it a *Poeme'*, or *Carmen*. Such are those in *Martiall*. *Martial*,
lib. 8.
Omnia, Castor, emis: sic fiet, ut omnia vendas. epigr. 19.

And,

2365

Pauper videri Cinna vult, & est pauper.

So were *Horace* his *Odes* call'd, *Carmina*; his *Lyrik* *Horatius*.
Songs. And *Lucretius* designs a whole booke, in his sixt: *Lucretius*.

Quod in primo quoque carmine claret.

2369

And anciently, all the *Oracles* were call'd, *Carmina*; or, *Epicunt*.
what ever Sentence was express'd, were it much, or little, *Dramati-*
it was call'd, an *Epick*, *Dramatick*, *Lyrike*, *Elegiacke*, or *Lyricum*.
Epigrammatike Poeme. *Elegta-*
mat.

2351 make,] make F 2366 Repeated in F at the foot of p. 125 and
the top of p. 126 2367 Lyrik] Lirih, F 2372 Lyrike] Lirike F
2372 (margin) Lyricum] Ltricum F Epigrammat.] Epigramat. F 2373
Poeme.] Poeme F

Poms. But, haw differs a Pome from what wee call Poesy ?

2375 A Poeme, as I have told you, is the worke of the Poet;
the end, and fruit of his labour, and studye. *Poesy* is his
skill, or Crafte of making: the very Fiction it selfe, the
reason, or forme of the worke. And these three voices
differ, as the thing done, the doing, and the doer; the thing

2380 fain'd, the faining, and the fainer: so the *Poeme*, the
Poesy, and the *Poet*. Now, the *Poesy* is the habit, or the
Artium Art: nay, rather the Queene of Arts: which had her
Regina Originall from heaven, received thence from the '*Ebrewes*,
and had in prime estimation with the *Greeks*, transmitted
2385 to the *Latines*, and all Nations, that profess'd Civility.

Aristotle. The Study of it (if wee will trust *Aristotle*) offers to mankinde
a certaine rule, and Patterne of living well, and happily;
M.T. disposing us to all Civill offices of Society. If wee will
Cicero. beleive *Tully*, it nourisheth, and instructeth our Youth;

2390 delights our Age; adornes our prosperity; comforts our
Adversity ; entertaines us at home; keepes us company
abroad, travailes with us ; watches; divides the times of
our earnest, and sports; shares in our Country recesses,
and recreations; insomuch as the wisest and best learned
2395 have thought her the absolute Mistresse of manners, and
nearest of kin to Vertue. And, wheras they entitle *Philosophy*
to bee a rigid, and austere *Poesie*: they have (on the
contrary) stiled *Poesy*, a dulcet, and gentle *Philosophy*,
which leades on, and guides us by the hand to Action, with

2400 a ravishing delight, and incredible Sweetnes. But, before
wee handle the kindes of *Poems*, with their special! dif-
ferences ; or make court to the Art it selfe, as a Mistresse,
Poet: I would leade you to the knowledge of our *Poet*, by a perfect
differe- Information, what he is, or should bee by nature, by exer-
ntia. cise, by imitation, by Studie; and so bring him downe
through the disciplines of *Grammar*, *Logicke*, *Rhetoricke*,
Gram- and the *Ethicks*, adding somewhat, out of all, peculiar to
malica himselfe, and worthy of your Admittance, or reception.
Logic.
Rhetic.
Etkica.

2375 you,] yon F 2383 'Ebrewes] Hebrewes F₃ 2302 divides]
devides F 2393 manners,] manners; F 2397 Poesie: can. F:
Poesie F originally 2407 (margin) Etkica corr. F: Ethicr F originally

First, wee require in our *Poet*, or maker, (for that Title our Language affordes him, elegantly, with the *Greeke*) a goodnes of naturall wit. For, wheras all other Arts consist of Doctrine, and Precepts: the *Poet* must bee able by nature, and instinct, to powre out the Treasure of his minde ; and, as *Seneca* saith, *Aliquando seeundum Anacreontem insanire, jucundum esse*: by which hee understands, the Poeticall Rapture. And according to that of *Plato*; *Frustra Poeticas fores sui compos pulsavit*: And of *Aristotle*; *Nullum magnum ingenium sine mixturd dementias fuit. Nee potest grande aliquid, & supra ceteros loqui, nisi mota mens*. Then it riseth higher, as by a divine Instinct, when it contemnes common, and knowne conceptions. It utters somewhat above a mortall mouth. Then it gets a loft, and flies away with his Ryder, whether, before, it was doubtfull to ascend. This the *Poets* understood by their *Helicon*, *Pegasus*, or *Parnassus* ; and this made *Ovid* to boast:

*Est, Deus in nobis; agitante calescimus illo :
Sedibus athereis spiritus ille venit.*

I. Ingenium.
2410
Seneca.
2415
Plato.
Aristotle.
2420
Helicon.
Pegasus.
Parnassus.
Ovidius.

And *Lipsius*, to affirme ; *Scio, Poetam neminem prestantem fuisse, sine parte quiddam uberiore divince aura*. And, hence it is, that the comming up of good *Poets*, (for I minde not *mediocres*, or *imos*) is so thinne and rare among us; Every beggerly Corporation affoords the State a *Major*, or two *Bailiffs*, yearly : but, *solus Rex, aut Poeta, non quotannis nascitur*. To this perfection of Nature in our *Poet*, wee require Exercise of those parts, and frequent. If his wit will not arrive suddainly at the dignitie of the Ancients, let him not yet fall out with it, quarrell, or be over-hastily Angry: offer, to turne it away from Study, in a humor ; but come to it againe upon better cogitation; try an other time, with labour. If then it succeed not, cast not away the Quills, yet: nor scratch the *Wainescott*, beate not the

2409-10 Title our] Titleour F originally 2417 Aristotle] Aristole F
2420 divine] devine F 2423 whether] whither F3 2429 quiddam] quadam F
2432 Major] Mayor F3 2437 over-hastily F3: over hastily F

poore Deske ; but bring all to the forge, and file, againe ;
 tourne it a newe. There is no Statute Law of the Kingdome
 bids you bee a Poet, against your will; or the first
 2445 Quarter. If it come, in a yeare, or two, it is well. The
 common Rymers powre forth Verses, such as they are, (*ex*
tempore) but there never come(s) from them one Sense,
 worth the life of a Day. A Rymer, and a Poet, are two
 things. It is said of the incomparable *Virgil*, that he
 2450 brought forth his verses like a Beare, and after form'd them
 with licking. *Scaliger*, the Father, writes it of him, that he
 made a quantitie of verses in the morning, which afore
 night hee reduced to a lesse number. But, that which
VdUr. *Valerius Maximus* hath left recorded of *Euripides*, the
Maxi- *tragicke Poet*, his answer to *Alcestis*, an other Poet, is as
mus. memorable, as modest: who, when it was told to *Alcestis*,
Euri- that *Euripides* had in three daies brought forth but three
pides. verses, and those with some difficultie, and throwes;
Alcestis. *Alcestis*, glorying hee could with ease have sent forth a
 2460 hundred in the space; *Euripides* roundly repl(i)'d, Like
 enough. But, here is the difference; Thy verses will not
 last those three daies ; mine will to all time. Which was,
 as to tell him, he could not write a verse. I have met many
 of these Rattles, that made a noyse, and buz'd. They had
 2465 their humme ; and, no more. Indeed, things, wrote with
 labour, deserve to be so read, and will last their Age. The
 3. *Imita-* third requisite in our Poet, or Maker, is *Imitation*, to bee
tio. able to convert the substance, or Riches of an other Poet,
 to his owne use. To make choise of one excellent man above
 2470 the rest, and so to follow him, till he grow very Hee: or,
 so like him, as the Copie may be mistaken for the Principall.
 Not, as a Creature, that swallowes, what it takes in, crude,
 raw, or indigested; but, that feedes with an Appetite,
 and hath a Stomacke to concoct, divide, and turne all into
Horatius. nourishment. Not, to imitate servilely, as *Horace* saith,

2443 tourne| torn G 2447 comes W 2449 (margin) *Virgil*
VirgiU F 2452 afore| a fore F 2457 forth| forth, F 2460
 Like| like F 2463 as| as much as W him,| him; F 2474
 divide| deuide F

and catch at vices, for vertue : but, to draw forth out of the best, and choisest flowers, with the Bee, and turne all into Honey, worke it into one relish, and savour: make our *Imitation* sweet: observe, how the best writers have 2479 imitated, and follow them. How *Virgil*, and *Statius* have *Virgilius. Statius. Homer. Horat. Archil. Alcaus. &c. 4. Lectio.* imitated *Homer*; how *Horace*, *Archilochus*; how *Alcceus*, and the other *Lyrics*: and so of the rest. But, that, which wee especially require in him is an exactnessc of Studie, and multiplicity of reading, which maketh a full man, not alone enabling him to know the *History*, or Argument of a *Poeme*, and to report it: but so to master the matter, and Stile, as to shew, hee knowes, how to handle, place, or dispose of either, with *elegancie*, when need shall bee. And not thinke, hee can leape forth suddainely a *Poet*, by dreaming hee hath 2489 been in *Parnassus*, or, having washt his lipps (as they say) in *Helicon*. There goes more to his making, then so. For *Parnas- sus. Helicon. Ars coron.* to Nature, Exercise, Imitation, and Studie, Art must bee added, to make all these perfect. And, though these challenge to themselves much, in the making up of our Maker, it is Art only can lead him to perfection, and leave 2495 him there in possession, as planted by her hand, It is the assertion of *Tully*, If to an excellent nature, there happen an accession, or conformation of Learning, and Discipline, there will then remaine somewhat noble, and singular. For, as *Simylus* saith in *Stobceus* ;

Simylus. Stob.

Οὔτε φύσις ἱκανὴ γίγεται τέχνης ἄτερ,
οὔτε πᾶν τέχνη μὴ φύσιν κεκτημένη·

without Art, Nature can ne're bee perfect; &, without Nature, Art can clayme no being. But, our Poet must beware, that his Studie bee not only to learne of himself; 2505 for, hee that shaH affect to doe that, confesseth his ever having a Foole to his master. Hee must read many; but, ever the best, and choisest: those, that can teach him any

2481 how *Alcaus* Fj : how, *Alcaus* F 2482 *Lyrics*] *Liricks* F
2483 (margin) *Alcaus*] *Alceus* F 2498 conformation W: con-
firmation F 2500 *Stobaws* corr. F : *Stobus* F originally 2501-2
Printed as prose in F 2501 Ovrcl^vOurcF 2502 κεκτημένη corr. F:
κεκτημένη. F originally 2503 ne're] nere F

Horaiius.
Aristo-
telis.

thing, hee must ever account his masters, and reverence:
among whom *Horace*, and (hee that taught him) *Aristotle*,
deserve to bee the first in estimation. *Aristotle* was the
first accurate *Criticke*, and truest Judge ; nay, the greatest
Philosopher, the world ever had : for, hee noted the vices
of all knowledges, in all creatures, and out of many mens
2515 perfections in a Science, hee formed still one Art. So hee
taught us two Offices together, how we ought to judge
rightly of others, and what wee ought to imitate specially
in our selves. But all this in vaine, without a naturall
wit, and a Poeticall nature in chiefe. For, no man, so
2520 soone as hee knowes this, or reades it, shall be able to write
the better; but as he is adapted to it by Nature, he shall
grow the perfecter Writer. Hee must have *Civil prudence*,
and *Eloquence*, & that whole; not taken up by snatches,
or peeces, in Sentences, or remnants, when he will handle
2525 businesse, or carry Counsells, as if he came then out of the
Declamors Gallerie, or Shadowe, but furnish'd out of the
body of the State, which commonly is the Schoole of men.
The *Poet* is the neerest Borderer upon the Orator, and
expresseth all his vertues, though he be tyed more to num-
2530 bers ; is his equall in ornament, and above him in his
strengths. And, (of the kind) the *Comicke* comes neerest :
Because, in moving the minds of men,' and stirring of affec-
tions (in which Oratory shewes, and especially approves her
eminence) hee chiefly excells. What figure of a Body was
Lysippus ever able to forme with his Graver, or *Apelles* to
paint with his Pencill, as the Comedy to life expresseth so
many, and various affections of the minde ? There shall the
Spectator see some, insulting with Joy; others, fretting
with Melancholy; raging with Anger; mad with Love ;
2540 boiling with Avarice; undone with Riot; tortur'd with
expectation; consum'd with feare: no perturbation in
common life, but the Orator findes an example of it in the

Vifonttn
sckola
Respub.

Lysippus.
Apelles.

2511 deserve *Editor*: deaerv'd F *Aristotle*] *Aristotle*, F 2526
but fumish'd /. *E. Spingarn*: furnish'd but F 2535 *Lysippus*]
Lysippus, F Graver,] Graver; F

Scene. And then, for the Elegancy of Language, read but this Inscription on the *Grave* of a *Comicke Poet*:

Nævius.

Immortales mortales, si fas esset, flere, 2545
Flerent dives Camcena N&vium Poetam;
Itoque postquam est Orcino tradilus thesauro,
Obliti sunt Roma, lingud loqui Latind.

Or, that modester Testimonie given by *Lucius Aelius Stilo* *L. Aelius Stilo.* upon *Plautus*; who affirmed, *Musas, si latin} loqui* *Stilo. Plautus.* *voluissent, Plautino sermone fuisse loquuturas.* And that illustrious judgement by the most learned *M. Varro* of *M. Varro.* him; who pronounced him the *Prince of Letters*, and *Elegancie*, in the *Roman Language*.

I am not of that opinion to conclude a *Poets liberty* 2555 within the narrowe limits of lawes, which either the *Grammarians*, or *Philosophers* prescribe. For, before they found out those Lawes, there were many excellent Poets, that fulfill'd them. Amongst whome none more perfect then *Sophocles*, who liv'd a little before *Aristotle*. Which of the *Sophocles.* *Greekelings* durst ever give precepts to *Demosthenes*? or to *Demo-* *sthenes.* *Pericles*, (whom the Age surnam'd heavenly) because he seem'd to thunder, and lighten, with his Language? or to *Pericles.* *Alcibiades*, who had rather Nature for his guide, then Art for *Alci-* *biades.* his master?

But, whatsoever Nature at any time dictated to the most happie, or long exercise to the most laborious; that the wisdom, and Learning of *Aristotle*, hath brought into an *Aristotle.* Art: because, he understood the Causes of things: and what other men did by chance or custome, he doth by 2570 reason; and not only found out the way not to erre, but the short way we should take, not to erre.

Many things in *Euripides* hath *Aristophanes* wittily *Euri-* *pides.* reprehended; not out of Art, but out of Truth. For, *Aristo-* *phanes.* *Euripides* is sometimes peccant, as he is most times perfect.

2546 *Camoma]* *Camana* F 2549 *Aelius]* *Aelius*. F: so in margin
 2560 Which a new paragraph in F 2562 (margin) *Pericles.]* *Pericles* F
 2567 happie,. .. laborious ;] happie; . . . laborious. F

But, Judgement when it is greatest, if reason doth not accompany it, is not ever absolute.

Cens:
Seal: in
Lit. Gre.
Senec:
debre:
vit:
cap. 136-
epist. 88.

To judge of Poets is only the facultie of Poets ; and not of all Poets, but the best. *Nemo infaliciits de Poetis judicavit, quam qui de Poetis scripsit.* But, some will say, *Criticks* are a kind of Tinkers ; that make more faults, then they mend ordinarily. See their diseases, and those of *Grammarians*. It is true, many bodies are the worse for the meddling with : And the multitude of *Physicians* hath

2585 destroyed many sound patients, with their wrong practise, But the office of a true *Critick*, or *Censor*, is, not to throw by a letter any where, or damne an innocent Syllabe, but lay the words together, and amend them ; judge sincerely of the Author, and his matter, which is the signe of solid, and perfect learning in a man. Such was *Horace*, an Author of much Civilitie ; and (if any one among the heathen can be) the best master, both of vertue, and wisdom; an excellent, and true judge upon cause, and reason ; not because he thought so; but because he knew so, out of use and
2595 experience.

Heins:
de Sat:
265.

Cato, the *Grammarian*, a defender of *Lucilius*.

Calo Grammaticus, Latina Syren,
Qui solus legit, & facit Poetas.

Pag. 267.

Quintilian of the same heresie, but rejected.

Pag. 270.
271.

Horace his judgement of *Chcmlus*, defended against

Pag. 273.

Joseph Scaliger. And, of *Laberius*, against *Julius*.

& seq.
Pag: in
cotnm.

But chiefly his opinion of *Plautus*, vindicated against many, that are offended, and say, it is a hard Censure upon the parent of all conceipt, and sharpnesse. And, they wish

153&
seq.

2605 it had not fallen from so great a master, and Censor in the Art: whose bondmen knew better how to judge of *Plautus*, then any that dare patronize the family of learning in this Age ; who could not bee ignorant of the judgement of the times, in which hee liv'd, when *Poetrie*, and the *Latin*

2610 Language were at the height: especially, being a man so

2578 (margin Gre. (or Greg.) W. Bang conj.: Germ. F: Gram<ma/tcum>
Schelling conj. 2600 *Chcmlus* J. Warton : *Ckarillus* F

conversant, and inwardly familiar with the censures of great men, that did discourse of these things daily amongst themselves. Againe, a man so gracious, and in high favour with the Emperour, as *Augustus* often called him his wittie *Manting*, (for the littlenes of his stature ;) and (if wee may 2615 trust Antiquity) had design'd him for a Secretary of Estate ; and invited him to the P(a)lace, which he modestly praid off, and refus'd.

Horace did so highly esteeme *Terence* his Comedies, as he ascribes the Art in Comedie to him alone, among the *Latines*, and joynes him with *Menander*. *Terence. Menander.*

Now, let us see what may be said for either, to defend *Horace* his judgement to posterity; and not wholly to condemne *Plautus*.

The parts of a Comedie are the same with a *Tragedie*, and the end is partly the same. For, they both delight, and teach: the *Comicks* are call'd *ScSdovcoAot*, of the *Greekes* ; and no lesse then the *Tragicks*. *The parts of a Comedie and Tragedie.*

Nor, is the moving of laughter alwaies the end of *Comedy*, that is rather a fowling for the peoples delight, or their 2630 fooling. For, as *Aristotle* sales rightly, the moving of laughter is a fault in Comedie, a kind of turpitude, that depraves some part of a mans nature without a disease. As a wry face without paine moves laughter, or a deformed vizard, or a rude Clowne, drest in a Ladies habit, and using 2635 her actions, wee dislike, and scorne such representations; which made the ancient Philosophers ever thinke laughter unfitting in a wise man. And this induc'd *Plato* to esteeme of *Homer*, as a sacrilegious Person; because he presented the *Gods* sometimes laughing. As, also, it is divinely said 2640 of *Aristotle*, that to seeme ridiculous is a part of dishonesty, and foolish.

So that, what either in the words, or Sense of an Author, or in the language, or Actions of men, is a wry, or depraved, *The wit of the old Comedy.*

2617 Palace *Schilling*: place F After 2624 *Schilling* marks a lacuna
 2627 teach :] teach ; F 2630 fowling] fooling Fj 2639 he presented Fj: the presented F 2640 also,] also F 2644 a wry] awry Fj

2645 doth strangely stirre meane affections, and provoke for the
 most part to laughter. And therefore it was cleare that all
 insolent, and obscene speaches ; jest(s) upon the best men ;
 injuries to particular persons ; perverse, and sinister Say-
 ings (and the rather unexpected) in the old Comedy, did
 2650 ~~move laughter; especially where it did imitate any dis-~~
 honesty ; and scurrility came forth in the place of wit:
 which who understands the nature and *Genius* of laughter,
 cannot but perfectly know.

*Aristo-
 phanes.
 Plautus.*

Of which *Aristophanes* affords an ample harvest, having
 not only outgone *Plautus*, or any other in that kinde ; but
 express^d all the moods, and figures, of what is ridiculous,
 oddly. In short, as Vinegar is not accounted good, untill
 the wine be corrupted : so jests that are true and naturall,
 seldome raise laughter, with the beast, the multitude. They
 2660 love nothing, that is right, and proper. The farther it runs
 from reason, or possibility with them, the better it is. What

Socrates.

could have made them laugh, like to see *Socrates* presented,
 that Example of all good life, honesty, and vertue, to have
 him hoisted up with a Pullie, and there play the Philo-
 2665 sopher, in a basquet ? Measure, how many foote a Flea
 could skip *Geometrically*, by a just Scale, and edifie the

*Theatri-
 callwit.*

people from' the ingine ? This was *Theatrical!* wit, right
 Stage-jesting, and relishing a Play-house, invented for
 scorne, and laughter; whereas, if it had savour'd of equity,

2670 truth, perspicuity, and Candor, to have tasten a wise, or a
 learned Palate, spit it out presently; this is bitter and
 profitable, this instructs, and would informe us: what
 neede wee know any thing, that are nobly borne, more then
 a Horse-race, or a hunting-match, our day to breake with

2675 Citizens, and such innate mysteries ? This is truly leaping

The Cart. from the Stage to the Tumbrell againe, reducing all witt to
 the originall Dungcart.

• 2647 speaches;] speaches, F jests IT 2649 Comedy,] Comedy F
 2655 outgone] out, | gone F 2661 What a new paragraph in F
 2665 basquet ?] basque! F 2667 ingine ?] ingine. F 2671
 presently] presently F 2675 mysteries ?] mysteries. F This a new
 paragraph in F 2676 Stage] Stage, F 2677 originall] Originall F

*Of the magnitude, and compasse of any Fable,
Epicke, or Dramatick.*

To the resolving of this *Question*, wee must first agree in the definition of the Fable. The Fable is call'd the *Imitation* of one intire, and perfect Action; whose parts are so joyned, and knitt together, as nothing in the structure can be chang'd, or taken away, without impairing, or troubling the whole ; of which there is a proportionable magnitude in the members. As for example; if a man would build a house, he would first appoint a place to build it in, which he would define within certaine bounds : So in the Constitution of a *Poeme*, the Action is aym'd at by the *Poet*, which answers Place in a building; and that Action hath 2690 his largenesse, compasse, and proportion. But, as a Court, or Kings Palace, requires other dimensions then a private house: So the *Epick* asks a magnitude, from other Poems. Since, what is Place in the one, is Action in the other, the difference is in space. So that by this definition wee conclude the fable, to be the *imitation* of one perfect, and intire Action; as one perfect, and intire place is requir'd to a building. By perfect, wee understand that, to which nothing is wanting; as Place to the building, that is rais'd, and Action to the fable, that is form'd. It is perfect, 2700 perhaps, not for a Court, or Kings Palace, which requires a greater ground ; but for the structure wee would raise. So the space of the Action, may not prove large enough for the *Epick Fable*, yet bee perfect for the *Dramatick*, and whole.

What the measure of a Fable is. The Fable, or Plott of a Poeme, defin'd.

The Epick fable.

Differing from the Dramaticke.

2705

Whole, wee call that, and perfect, which hath a *beginning*, a *mid'st*, and an *end*. So the place of any building may be whole, and intire, for that worke; though too little for a palace. As, to a *Tragedy* or a *Comedy*, the Action may be convenient, and perfect, that would not fit an *Epicke Poeme* 2710

What wee understand by Whole.

2678 *Fable* ?3: *Table* F 2684 chang'd,] chang'd; F 2691-2 Court,... Palace,] Court... Palace F 2694 Poems. Since] poems, since *Schilling* 2695 other,] other; *Schelbng* 2702 wee] he W raise. So] raise, so F (margin) *Differing*] *differing* F

in Magnitude. So a Lion is a perfect creature in himselfe, though it bee lesse, then (an Elephant. The head of a Lion is a whole, though it be lesse, then) that of a *Buffalo*, or a *Rhinocerote*. They differ; *but in specie*: either in the kinde
 2715 is absolute. Both have their parts, and either the whole. Therefore, as in every body; so in every Action, which is the subject of a just worke, there is requir'd a certaine proportionable greatnesse, neither too vast, nor too minute. For that which happens to the Eyes, when wee behold a
 2720 body, the same happens to the Memorie, when wee contemplate an action. I looke upon a monstrous Giant, as *Tityus*, whose body cover'd nine Acres of Land, and mine eye stickes upon every part; the whole that consists of those parts, will never be taken in at one intire view. So in a
 2725 *Fable*, if the Action be too great, wee can never comprehend the whole together in our Imagination. Againē, if it be too little, there ariseth no pleasure out of the object, it affords the view no stay: it is beheld and vanisheth at once. As if wee should looke upon an Ant or Pismyre,
 2730 the parts fly the sight, and the whole considered is almost nothing. The same happens in Action, which is the object of Memory, as the body is of sight. Too vast oppresseth the Eyes, and exceeds the Memory: too little scarce admits either.

What the
 utmost
 bound of
 a fable.

Now, in every Action it behooves the *Poet* to know which is his utmost bound, how farre with fitnessse, and a accessary proportion, he may produce, and determine it. That is, till either good fortune change into the worse, or the worse into the better. For, as a body without proportion cannot
 2740 be goodly, no more can the Action, either in *Comedy*, or *Tragedy*, without his fit bounds. And every bound, for the nature of the Subject, is esteem'd the best that is largest, till it can increase no more: so it behooves the Action in

2712-13 an elephant. The head of a lion is a whole, though it be less, then *Castelain* con), (after *Heinsius*) 2714 differ;] differ Fj in] in F 2725 great,] great F 2728 it is] It is F 2739 For,] For F 2740 *Comedy*] *Comedy* F 2741 *Tragedy*,] *Tragedy* F bound,] bound F

Tragedy, or *Comedy*, to be let 'grow, till the necessity aske
a Conclusion: wherein two things are to be considered; 2745
First, that it exceed not the compasse of one Day : Next,
that there be place left for digression, and Art. For the
Episodes, and digressions in a *Fable*, are the same that
household stuffe, and other furniture are in a house. And
so farre for the measure, and extent of a *Fable Dramaticke*. 2750

Now, that it should be one, and intire. One is consider- *What by*
able two waics: either, as it is only separate, and by it self: *one, and*
or as being compos'd of many parts, it beginnes to be one, *intire.*
as those parts grow, or are wrought together. That it
should be one the first way alone, and by it self, no man that 2755
hath tasted letters ever would say, especially having
required before a just Magnitude, and equall Proportion of
the parts in themselves. Neither of which can possibly bee,
if the Action be single and separate, not compos'd of parts,
which laid together in themselves, with an equall and fit- 2760
ting proportion, tend to the same end ; which thing out of
Antiquitie it selfe, hath deceiv'd many ; and more this Day
it doth deceive.

So many there be of old, that have thought the Action of
one man to be one: As of *Hercules*, *Theseus*, *Achilles*, *Hercules*
Ulysses, and other *Heroes* ; which is both foolish and false ; *Theseus.*
since by one and the same person many things may be *Achilles.*
severally done, which cannot fitly be referred, or joyned to *Vlysses.*
the same end : which not only the excellent *Tragick-Poels*,
but the best Masters of the *Epick*, *Homer*, and *Virgil* saw. *Homer,*
For, though the Argument of an *Epick-Poeme* be farre *and*
more diffus'd, & powr'd out, then that of *Tragedy*; yet *Virgil*[f].
Virgil, writing of *Aeneas*, hath pretermitted many things. *Aeneas.*
He neither tells how he was borne, how brought up ; how
he fought with *Achilles*; how he was snatch'd out of the 2775
battaile by *Venus* ; but that one thing, how *he came into* *Venus.*
Italie, he prosecutes in twelve bookes. The rest of his

2751 (margin) *What]* *What is meant* Schelling
2773 *Virgil,.. . Aeneas,]* *Virgil.. . Aeneas* F
Vennsf

2771 For,] For F
2776 Venus Fj :

journey, his error by Sea, the Sacke of Troy, are put not as the Argument of the worke, but *Episodes* of the Argument. So *Homer* lai'd by many things of *Ulysses* and handled no more, then he saw tended to one and the same end.

Homer.

*Theseus
Hercules.
Juvenal.
Codrus.*

Contrarie to which and foolishly those *Poets* did, whom the *Philosopher* taxeth; Of whom one gather¹d all the Actions of *Theseus*; another put all the Labours of *Hercules* in one worke. So did he, whom *Juvenal* mentions in the begining, *hoarse Codrus*, that recited a volume compil'd, which he call'd his *Theseide*, not yet fmish'd, to the great trouble both of his hearers and himself: Amongst which there were many parts had no coherence, nor kindred one

2790 with other, so farre they were from being one Action, one *Fable*. For as a house, consisting of diverse materialls, becomes one structure, and one dwelling; so an Action, compos'd of diverse parts, may become one *Fable Epicke*, or *Dramaticke*. For *example*, in a *Tragedy*, looke upon

*Sophocles.
Ajax.*

Sophocles his *Ajax*: *Ajax* depriv'd of *Achilles's* Armour, which he hop'd from the suffrage of the *Greekes*, disdaines; and, growing impatient of the Injurie, rageth, and turnes mad. In that humour he doth many senslesse things; and at last falls upon the *Grecian* flocke, and kills a great Ramme for *Ulysses*: Returning to his Sense, he growes asham'd of the scorne, and kills himself; and is by the *Chiefes* of the *Greekes* forbidden buriall. These things agree, and hang together, not as they were done; but as seeming to be

Vlysses.

2804 done; which made the Action whole, intire, and absolute.

*The con-
clusion
concern-
ing the
Whole,
and the
Parts.*

For the whole, as it consisteth of parts; so without all the parts it is not the whole; and to make it absolute, is requir'd, not only the parts, but such parts as are true. For a part of the whole was true; which if you take away, you either change the whole, or it is not the whole. For, if

2810 it be such a part, as being present or absent, nothing concerns the whole, it cannot be call'd a part of the whole:

2780 (margin) *Homer.*] *Honori F* 2784 *Theseus;*] *Theseus;* *F*
2794 *Tragedy,*] *Tragedy F* 2797 *turnes*] *runs W* 2800 *Sense*]
senses W 2803-4 *** done 'o' be done, F* 2809 *For;*] *For F*

and such are the *Episodes*, of which hereafter. For the present, here is one example; The single Combat of *Ajax* with *Hector*, as it is at large "describ'd in *Homer*, nothing belongs to this *Ajax* of *Sophocles*. *Which are Episodes. Ajax, and Hector. Homer.*

You admire no *Poems*, but such as run like a Brewers-
cart upon the stones, hobling, 2816

Et qua per salebras, altaque saxa cadunt.
Actius, & quidquid Pacuviusque vomunt.
Attonitusque legis terrai, frugiferai.

Martial,
lib. ii.
epigr. 91.

FINIS.

* *
•

After 2815 Schelhng marks a lacuna

2819 *Actius] A cans G*

LEGES CONVIVALES
VERSES OVER THE DOOR OF THE APOLLO

THE TEXT

First printed in *Oratio Panegyrica in obitum Reverendi & Clarissimi Viri, Domini M. Jo. Jacobi Frey, Professoris Graci in Academiâ patriâ & Designati Decani Armachani in Hibernia: Recitata in Illustrissimo & frequentissimo Auditorio, XV. Kal. Nov. An. M DC XXXVI. a Daniele Tossano, Gymnasiarchâ Basiliensi Cum Programme, Epitaphio, & Epicediis comæcorum. Basileæ, Typis Georgi Deckeri, Academiæ Typographi. on pages q32-4. Frey on a visit to England copied the *Leges*. His text sounds, and we have printed from it. Note the Jonsonian punctuation in rule 16, 'Admisso ; '—the semicolon preventing the ignorant from construing 'Admisso risu ' together, and giving a certain emphasis, 'When once you have been initiated', then *sacra celebrant* with absolute freedom.*

The *Leges* were next printed in *Songs and other Poems. By Alex. Brome, Gent. Dixero siquid iocosius, hoc mihi juris Cum Venia ddbis - - - HOT. I. Sat. 4. London, Printed for Henry Brome, at the Gun in Ivy-Lane. 1661, on sig. d q3 verso—signature d being inserted between C and D. Brome printed a verse translation opposite the Latin. He read rule 1q3 as *Convivæ nee multi, nee loquaces sunt*, and rendered it 'Let not our Company be, or talk too much'. But in the*

second edition of 1664 (pages q324-6) he restored the *reading multi*, and altered the translation to 'Let none of us be mute, or talk too much'. This second edition has a number of bad misprints in the Latin: nearly all the imperatives (for instance, *repudiantur, ministrantur, cogitur*) are changed into indicatives—*repudiantur, ministrantur, cogitur* **cogitur**, and the printer even turned the substantive *obsonator* into *obsonatur*.

The Folio of 1692 printed the *Leges* for the first time in an edition of Jonson on two unpagèd leaves at the end of the volume after *The New Inn*, with an execrable rendering which is anonymous. It had for title-page:—'Leges

Convivales. RULES FOR THE TAVERN ACADEMY : OR, LAWS FOR THE BEAUX ESPRITS. From the *Latin* of Ben. Johnson, Engraven in Marble over the Chimny, in the

APOLLOOo ft h eO LdDevilTavernat Temple-Bar: T h a
being his CLUB ROOM. *Non verbum reddere verbo.* By

at the George in Fleet Street, near St. Dunstan's Church, s e
MDCXCII.' This was reprinted in the 1716 edition of Dryden's
Miscellany Poems, part V, on pages 149-51

The verses *Over the Door at the Entrance into the Apollo*
were painted on a panel still preserved in the dining-room of
Messrs. Glyn, Mills and Co.'s Bank at No. 1 Fleet Street.
They also have the terra-cotta bust of Apollo¹ which has
been painted black, giving a bronze effect at a distance.
The panel was carefully described by J. H. Burn in his
Catalogue of the seventeenth-century tradesmen's¹ tokens in
the Beaufoycollection of the Guildhall Museum, privately
printed for the Corporation of the City of London in 18 5
on pages 76-7. 'The welcome was originally in gilded

inches long by twenty-seven inches wide e e i g h t m e a s u r
chamfered into a narrow reeded frame. As might be sup-
posed, the gilded letters of Ben's time have not lasted till
now: the table has undergone a repainting black g r o u
and the same verses are restored in gold. The old writing u
of Wadlow's day, when leaf-gold was used much more
solid, may yet be almost wholly read, as a ne m b o s s m e n
through the more modern black ground; while the legibly e n
gilded characters, from the thinness of the metal m p l o
and modern dexterity, scarcely ruffle the surface; the
softest finger would scarcely trace the character in the
dark.¹

The verses were first printed in the Folio of 1692, and
reprinted in the Dryden *Miscellany Poems* of 1716.

Our text is taken from the original panel with two slight

¹ Reproduced by Mrs. Esdaile in *Essays and Studies of the English Association*, xxix, 194q3.

alterations ; when the board was repainted, a coat of black paint was laid on and the inscription painted in gold letters from a copy which had evidently been taken beforehand. We think that in line 9 ' He *thathalf* of Life abuses ' the Folio reading ' *the* half of Life ' is correct: that' came in from the ' That' of line 10. ' Phebian ' in line 15 is an impossible form for Jonson and unmetrical: we a c

' Phœbeian ' from the Folio.

LEGES CONVIVALES

Quod felix ,faustumq,in Apolline sit.

1. Nemo asymbolus,nisi umbra,hue venito.
2. Idiota msulsus,tristis,turpis,abesto.
3. Eruditi,Urbani,hilares,honesti,adsciscuntor.
4. Nee lectae foeminae repudiantor.
- 5 5. In apparatu,quod convivis corrugetnares,nil esto.
6. Epulae delectu potitis,quam sumptu,parantor.
7. Opsonator & coquus,convivarum gulae periti sunt.
8. De Discubitu non contenditor.
- 9 .Ministri ad pibus oculati & muti; apoculisa u r
- 10 & celeres, sunt.**
10. Vina puris fontibus ministrantur; aut vapulethospes.
11. Moderatis poculis provocare sodales,fas esto.
12. At fabulis magis,quam vino,velitatio fiat.
13. Convivae nee muti,nee loquaces sunt.
- 15 14. De seriis,aut sacris,poti & saturi ne disserunt.
15. Fidicen,nisi accersitus,non venito.
- 16 .Admisso;risu,tripudiis,choreis,canty,s a l i b
- omni gratiarum festivitate, sacra celebrantur.**
17. Joci sine felle sunt.
- 20 18. Insipida Poemata nulla recitantur.
19. Versus scribere,nullus cogitor.
20. Argumentations totus strepitus abesto.
21. Amatoriis querelis,ac suspiriis,liber angulus esto.
22. Iéapitharum mores cyphispugnare,vitreac o l l i
- 23 fenestras excutere, supellectilem dilacerare, nefas esto.**
23. Qui foras vel dicta,vel facta,eliminat,eliminator.
24. Neminem reum pocula faciunt.

Focus PERENNIS ESTO.

Heading *faustumq;* *Convivis* F3 q3 *honesti*] *modesti*
Brome 6 *parantor*] *parentur* F3 11 *ministrantur*] *ministrentur* FB
 14 *muti*] *mufti* *Brome,ed. i,corrected edd.* 2,3 15 *aut*] *ac* F3
 17 *Admisso ;*] *Admisso* *Brome,F3* 22 *totus*] *totius* *Brome* 26
 forks F3 : *foras* *Tossanns* *eliminat*] *eliminet* *Brome. ed. i*

Over the Door at the Entrance into
the APOLLO.

Welcome all, whole do you follow, To the Oracle of Apollo.

Here he speaks out of his Pot, to the Oracle of Apollo.
Or the Tripod, his Tower Bottle :

All his Answers are Divine
Truth itself doth flow in Wine. 5

Hang up all the poor Hop - Drinkers, Cries Old
Cries Old Sym, the King of Skinkers ;

He the half of Life abusest
That sits watering with the Muses. 10

Wine it is the Milk of Venus,
And the Poets' Horse accounted.

Ply it, and you all are mounted ;
Tis the true Phœbian Liquor
Clears the Brains, makes Wit the Quicker : 15

Pays all Debts, cures all Diseases, And at once, three Senses pleases.

Welcome all, whole do you follow, To the Oracle of Apollo. 20

*In italic on the Panel. Title from F3. i, 19 who] that F3
8 Symt] Sym Panel. FS 9 the F3] that Panel 14 it] it
Panel. F3 15 Phæbian F3: Phæbian Panel. After 20 'O rare
Ben Johnson I' on the Panel.*

INSCRIPTIONS

INSCRIPTIONS.

I.

EPITAPH ON ROBERT JERMYN OF RUSHBROOKE
in St. Margaret's, Lothbury, 1623.

Quid diurnare magnos invades Parca ?

Heu

Robertus

terminorum a Rushbrooke Nobile germen

Hic situs est

5

flos luenum sub aevi flore raptus

Qui virtutu vtriuscp aetatis apicibus potitus

Ingenio et indole luventutis

Nee non senili pietate ac prudentia

Infra se turbam coctaneam reliquit

10

Impubes senex :

Et quod negavit saeculo, coelo dedit.

Sic sapere ante annos nocuit, nam maxima virtus

Persuasit Morti vt crederetesse senem.

P.P.P.P.

15

Ben: lonson.

i. Inscibedi nacopyo f' Catndeni Annales Rerum Anglicarum' t 1

in the Folger Shakespeare Library, Washington: the leaf is headed 'Sum

ex libris Ed ward j Worsslij. Pars piima donu iacobi Rimey. 162q3.

Pars altera iohis Watersoni. 1627. A A. pp. | In sdibus D. Mar-

garstaei nlothbury. 'Acopy in R P7/. 48. M. Jermyns Epitapha t Lothbury'. Firstp

Lothbury. First printed by John Strype in his edition of Stow's Survey,

1720. book III, pp. 58-9.

15 P.P.P.P. Strype: PP. P. Folger MS.: not in RP

16 Ben:

lonson Folger MS.: not in RP or Strype

II.

To LUCY COUNTESS OF BEDFORD
 in a gift-copy of *Cynthia's Revels*, 1601.

AVTHOR
ad Librum.

GOe little Booke, Go'e little Fable
 vnto the bright, and come.able
 LVCY of BEDFORD ; she, that Bounty
 appropriates still vnto that County :
 5 Tell her, his Muse that did invent thee
 to CYNTHIA's fayrest Nymph hath
And sworne, that he will quite discard thee
 if any way she do rewarde thee —
 But with a Kisse, (if thou canst dare it)
 10 of her white Hand ; or she can spare it.

III.

To WILLIAM CAMDEN
 with a gift-copy of *Cynthia's Revels*, 1601.

GVLIELMVM CAMDENVM

Britanniae p. h. o. e. h. u. m. M. u. s. a. r. u. m. q. u. e. s. u. a. r. u. m. l. i. b. r. i.
Musarumque suarum Parentem Optimum,
 hic cum illis

gi Benicome. n lonsoniust
 Alumnus olim, sternum come. cus
 iuuenari voluit.

Hor.—Non ego te meis
 Chartis innotatum silebo.

ii. In the William Andrews Clark Memorial Library, Los Angeles, a leaf of special dedication inserted after the title-page.

iii. Printed on a leaf inserted in a copy of the Quarto ; now in the Henry E. Huntington Library. See vol. iv, pp. 4, 5.

IV.

To SIR JOHN ROWE

with a copy of Casaubon's edition of Persius, 1605.

D. Joanni Rowe

come.co

Probatissimo

Hunc Amorem & delicias

suas Satiricoru doctissimu

5

PERSIVM cu

doctissimo commentario

sacrauit Ben: Jonsonius

Ben: Jonsonius

&

10

L. M. D. D.

Nee prior est mihi parens come.co.

V.

To QUEEN ANNE

with a gift-copy of *The Masques of Blackness and of Beauty*, 1608.

D. Anns

M. Britanniaru Insu. Hib. &c.

Reginae

Feliciss. Formosiss.

Musaeo

5

S.S.

Hunc librum o u i t F a m a e & honorieius

Fama & honorieius

Seruientiss.

im6 addictissimus

10

Ben: lonsonius

Victurus Genium debethabere liber.

iv. Facsimiled in Cunningham's 1875 revision of Gifford. vol. i. p. cclxxiv.

v. Autograph inscription in a copy of the Garrick Quarto in the British Museum : see vol. vii. p. 164.

VI.

To JOACHIM MORSIUS.

tanquam Explorator

Soleo enim et in aliena castra transire, non tanquam
transfuga, sed tanquam Explorator.

Hanc amoris mei & obseruantiae arrham

5 Viro Clarissimot

~~Eruditissimo Consummatissimo~~
~~Consummatissimo~~

Philologot

Domino Joachimo Morsio

10 Londini, dedi

Cal. Jan. CID DC xix.

Benicome.n Jonsonius

Poeta Regius./

VII.

To CAPTAIN FRANCIS SEGAR.

— Prater aquas, Helicon, & serta, Lyrasq; Deoru
Nil habet:

Cordatissimo

Generosissimo

5 et

nobis postnullos me

morando.

D

Fran: Segar.

10 Amoris & come.citiae ergo

Benicome.n Jonsonius Londinensis

Apollinis & Musarum

Sacerdos

subscripsit./

vi. From the Autograph in the 'Album Academician et Apodemicum' of Joachim Morsius in the Stadt-bibliothek of Lubeck. i January 1620. Facsimiled in Heinrich Schneider's 'Joachim Morsius und sein Kreis', 1929. p. 25.

vii. From the autograph in the Segar Commonplace Booh, HM 743 in the Henry E. Huntington Library.

— Magnum hoc ego duco 15
 Quod placui tibi, qui turpi secernis Honestum.
 |— Nil te quaesiueris extra
 Istano tui vnus— cui on sit publicav e. n a ,
Qui nihil expositū soleat deducere, nec qui
 Communi feriat carmen triuiale moneti. 20

VIII.

To FRANCIS CRANE
 with a copy of the Quarto of *Sejanus*, 1605.
 To my perfect Freind, M^r. Francis Crane.
 I erect this Pillar of Freindship.
 And leaue it as the eternall Witnesse of my Loue.
 Ben: Jonson.

Below the inscription is written in a contemporary hand—was it Francis Crane's?—**Hic est Ben Johnson: ille cui in componendis**
 fabulis parem nee vidit Antiquitas, nee posteritas visura est.¹

IX.

To SIR ROBERT TOWNSHEND
 with a copy of the Quarto of *Sejanus*, 1605.
 The Testemony of my Affection, & Obseruance
 to my noble Freind S^r. Robert Townshend
 w^{ch} I desire may remayne w^h him, &
 last beyond Marble.

X.

To JOHN FLORIO
 with a copy of the Quarto of *Volfoneé* 1607.
 To his louing Father, & worthy Freind
 M^r. John Florio:
 The ayde of his Muses.
 Ben: Jonson scales this testemony
 of Freindship, & Loue.

viii. The Huth copy, now in the Henry E. Huntington Library.

ix. T. J. Wise's copy, now in the British Museum. The signature has been cutoff by the binder, leaving only the tops of the 'j' and the long 'f' visible. Facsimiled in vol. iv. p. 348.

x. From the copy in the British Museum. Facsimiled in vol. i, opposite p. 56.

XI.

To ALEXANDER GLOVER
with a copy of the 1616 Folio.

To my worthy, and deseruing Brother
M^r. Alexander Glouer
As the token of my Loue.

And to the perpetuating of o^r freindship
5 I send this small, but hearty testimony : and w^h charget
that it remayn w^h him
Till I, at much expense of Time, and Taper

~~Shall I please forth many a line, drop many a letter, e~~ r , S
10 ~~To make these good, and what comes after, better./~~
Ben: Ionsen.

XII.

To HENRY THEOBALD
with a copy of Clement Edmondes' *Observations*
'Upon Caesars Commentaries, 1609.

Optimu Belli Magistrum, etiam Authorem cum doctissimis
commentarijs comendatiss. quern ipse mihi, & Musso
meo dono concesserit, & dignatus sit, In sternum pignus
amoris, comendatissimo, siue potius comendatiae ipsi D. Hen. Theo-
baldo Ben Ionsenius sternum comendatiss. vouet.

XL From the autograph in a presentation copy of the Folio belonging to
Mr. Frank Capra. First printed by G in his edition of Jonson, 181
vol. viii, p. 447, in éi note to Urid. lv. from a transcript formerly in //..
Possession of John Hoadley.

xii. From the copy in the British Museum, which is also inscribed.
'Clement Edmondes commendeth him selfe to Ben: Johnson and dedi-
cateth this booke to his vertues and his loue to Clement Edmondes.'
See *Epigrams ex, cxi.*

INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF THE POEMS

An asterisk is prefixed to poems of uncertain authorship, and to poems
not by Jonson.

	PAGE
A Womans friendship I God whom I trust in, ...	171
After many scoraes like these.	133
All men are wormes : But this no man. In silke	31
An elegie ? no, muse ; y t askes a straine	108
And art thou borne, brave Babe ? Blest be thy birth. . .	237
And must I sing ? what subject shall I chuse ?	107
And why to me this, thou lame Lord of fire, ...	202
* Another Phoenix, though the first is dead, ...	427
• Art thou great Ben ? or the revived ghost	445
Aske not to know this Man. If fame should speake . . .	172
A t court I met it, i n clothes brave enough, ...	30
Away, and leave me, thou thing most abhord, ...	48
 Banck feelles no lameness of his knottie gout, ...	 36
Be safe, nor feare thy selfe so good a fame, ...	53
Boast not these Titles of your Ancestors ;	281
• Both robb'd and bound, as I one Night did ride, . . .	446
Brave Infant o f Saguntum, cleare	242
But cause thou hearst the mighty king of Spaine . . .	406
By those bright Eyes, at whose immortall fires	170
 Camden, most reverend head, to whom I owe	 31
Can Beautie that did prompt me first to write. . . .	169
Censure, not sharplye then, but mee advise	421
Chans, guesse, and doe not misse, ...	137
Chans one day i n discourse	139
Chev'ril cryes out, my verses libells are ;	44
Chufie, lately rich in name, in chattels, goods. . . .	41
Cob, thou nor souldier, thiefe, nor fencer art, ...	50
[Come leave the lothed Stage, ... vol. vi, p. 492]	492
Come, let u s here enjoy the shade, ...	189
Come m y Celia, let u s prove	102
Come, with our Voyces, let u s warre, ...	143
Comcedias trusatilis Plauti mola	382
Courting. I rather thou should'st utterly	43
Cum Iuvenale tuo, Farnabi, Persius exit, ...	381
 Doe but consider this small dust, ...	 148
• Doe pious Marble Let thy Readers Knowe	435
Doe what you come for, Captayne, with your newes ; . .	68
Doing, a filthy pleasure is, and short;	294
Don Surly, t o aspire the glorious name	35
Donne, the delight of Phoebus, and each Muse, ...	34
Drinke t o me, onely, with thine eyes, ...	106
Do's the Court-Pucell then s o censure me, ...	222

668 *Index of First Lines of the Poems.*

	PAGE
Envious and foule Disease, could there not be	188
Ere cherries ripe, and straw-berries be gone, ...	58
Faire Fame, who art ordain'd to crowne.	272
*Faire Friend, 'tis true, your beauties move	265
False world, good night: since thou hast brought	100
Farewell, thou child of my right hand, and joy;	41
Father John Burges, ...	231
Fine Madame Would-bee, wherefore should you feare. . . .	46
*Fly Villain hence, or be thy Coat of Steel, ...	445
Follow a shaddow, i t still f l i e s you;	104
For all night-sinnes, with others wives, unknowne, ...	39
For his Mind, I doe not care, ...	142
For Loves-sake, kisse me once againe, ...	139
Forbeare to tempt me, Proule, I will not show	54
Fresh as the Day, and new as are the Howers, ...	416
From Death, and darke oblivion, neere the same, ...	176
*From smallest Springs, arise the greatest streames, ...	452
Goe little Booke, Goe little Fable.	662
*God is best pleas'd when Man forsakes his sin;	425
*God works Wonders now and than, ...	444
Gold is a sutor, never tooke repulse, ...	363
Good, and great God, can I not thinke of thee.	122
Goodyere, I'am glad, and gratefull to report, ...	55
Great Charles, among the holy gifts of grace	235
Groyne, come of age, his state sold out of hand	75
Guiltie, be wise; and though thou know'st the crimes	36
Guiltie, because I bad you late be wise.	38
Gut eates all day, and lechers all the night, ...	76
Gypsee, new baud, is turn'd physitian, ...	39
Haile, happy Genius of this antient pile I	225
Haile Mary, full of grace, it once was said, ...	238
Hang up those dull, and envious fooles, ...	146
Happie is he, that from all Businesse cleere, ...	289
Hardie, thy braine is valiant, 'tis confest, ...	32
Have you scene the white lilly grow	135
He that feares death, or mournes it, in the just.	37
He that should search all Glories of the Gowne, ...	217
Heare mee, O God I	129
Helen, did Homer never see	181
Here, are five letters in this blessed Name, ...	412
Here, like Arion, our Coryate doth draw	374
Here lyes to each her parents ruth, ...	33
High-spirited friend, ...	180
His bought armes Mung' not lik'd; for his first day	42
Hornet, thpu hast thy wife drest, for the stall.	53
How. best of Kings, do'st thou a scepter beare I	28
How blest art thou. canst love the countrey. Wroth, ...	96

Index of First Lines of the Poems, 669

	PAGE
How happy were the Subject, if he knew.	236
How I doe love thee, Beaumont, and thy Muse, ...	44
How like a columnne, Radcliffe, left alone	60
How well, faire crowne of your faire sexe, might hee, . . .	66
 I am to dine, Friend, where I must be weigh'd	 229
I beheld her, o n a day, ...	132
I cannot bring my Muse to dropp her Vies	415
I cannot think there's that antipathy	52
I could begin with that grave forme. Here lies, ...	394
I doe but name thee Pembroke, and I find	66
I grieve not, Courtling, thou art started up	50
I had you for a Servant, once, Dick Brome ;	409
I have m y Pietie too, which could	151
I know to whom I write. Here, I am sure, ...	158
I love, and h e loves m e agame, ...	147
I must beleeve some miracles still bee, ...	73
I now thinke. Love is rather deafe, then blind, ...	149
I sing the birth, was borne t o night, ...	130
I sing the brave adventures of two wights, ...	84
I sing the just, and uncontrol'd Descent	274
I that have been a lover, and could shew it, ...	182
Ideot, last night, I pray'd thee but forbear	45
If all you boast of your great art be true ;	29
If, as their ends, their fruits were so, the same	45
*If heaven be pleased when man doth cease to sin, ...	425
If I would wish, for truth, and not for show, ...	78
I f Men and tymes were nowe	419
If men get name, for some one vertue : Then, ...	68
If, m y religion safe, I durst embrace	61
If, Passenger, thou canst but reade :	233
If Rome so great, and in her wisest age, ...	56
If, Sackvile, all that have the power to doe	153
If thou wouldst know the vertues of Man-kind, ...	185
I f t o a Womans head a Painter would	305, 338
If to admire were to commend, my praise	83
If to my mind, great Lord, I had a state, ...	260
Ile not offend thee with a vaine teare more, ...	37
I l may Ben Johnson slander so his feete.	418
In Picture, they which truly vnderstand, ...	370
In place of scutcheons, that should decke thy herse, . . .	35
*Inevitable fate t o shun.	450
Is there a hope, that Man would thankefull bee, ...	80
Is this the Sir, who, some wast wife to winne,.	42
It fits not onely him that makes a Booke, ...	385
It hath beene question'd, Michael, if I bee	396
It will be look'd for, booke, when some but see	27
 Jephson, thou man of men, to whose lov'd name	 75
Just and f i t a c t i o n s Ptolemy (he saith)	422

670 *Index of First Lines of the Poems.*

	PAGE
Kisse me. sweet: The wane lover	103
Leave. Cod, tabaccq-like, burnt gummes to take, ...	42
Let i t not your wonder move, ...	131
Let me be what I am, as Virgil cold ;	199
Liber, o f all thy friends, thou sweetest care, ...	294
Loe. what my countrey should have done (have rais'd	46
Long-gathering Old-end. I did feare thee wise, ...	43
Looke up. thou seed o f envie. and still bring	250
Lord, how is Gam'ster chang'd I his haire close cut!	33
Lucy, you bhghtnesse of our spehare, who are	60
Madame, had all antiquitie beene lost, ...	67
Madame, I told you late how I repented, ...	54
Madame, whil'st that, for which, all vertue now is sold, ...	113
Marble, weepe, for thou dost cover	39
Martial, thou gav'st farre nobler Epigrammes	38
Master Surveyor, you that f i r s t begann	402
May none, whose scatter'd names honor my booke.	29
May others feare.flic, and traduce thy name, ...	32
Men, i l you love us, play n o more	145
Men that are safe, and sure, i n all they doe, ...	218
•My Altitude high, m y Body foure square, ...	443
M y verses were commended, thou dar'st say, ...	408
New yeares, expect new gifts ; Sister, your Harpe, ...	263
N o cause, nor client fat, will Chev'rill leese, ...	38
N o more let Greece her bolder fables tell	84
Noblest Chans, you that are	136
Not Caesars deeds, nor all his honors wonne, ...	71
Not glad, like those that have new hopes, or sutes, ...	47
Not he that flies the court for want of clothes.	76
Not to know vice at all, and keepe true state, ...	109
Now, after all, let no man.	364
Now that the harth is crown'd with smiling fire, ...	120
O holy, blessed, glorious Trinitie	127
Of your Trouble. Ben, to ease me.	140
O h doe not wanton with those eyes, ...	144
O r Scorne, o r pittie o n m e take.	150
Our King and Queen the Lord-God blesse	418
Painter, yo'are come, but may b e gone.	277
Play-wright, by chance, hearing some toyes I'had writ.	64
Play-wright convict of publike wrongs to men, ...	49
Play-wright me reades. and still my verses damnes.	42
Poore Poet-Ape, that would be thought our chiefe.	44
Poore wretched states, prest b y extremities, ...	248
Pray thee, take care, that tak'st my booke in hand.	27

Index of First Lines of the Poems. 671

	PAGE
•Reade Roy all ffather, mighty Kinge, ...	431
Reader, stay, ...	168
•Reader, wonder thinke i t none	432
•Remember, when blinde Fortune knits her brow, ...	451
Retyr'd, with purpose your faire worth to praise, ...	80
Ridway rob'd Duncote of three hundred pound, ...	29
Rime, the rack o f f i n e s t wits, ...	183
Roe (and my joy to name) th'art now, to goe	80
•Rowse up thy selfe, my gentle Muse, ...	267
Rudyerd, as lesser dames, to great ones use	78
•Scorne, o r some humbler ffate	438
See the Chariot a t hand here o f Love, ...	134
See you yond* Motion ? Not the old Fa-ding	62
•Shall I wastangi n despaire, ...	439
Shall the prosperity of a Pardon still	410
Shee was the light (without reflexe	399
Shift, here, in towne, not meanest among squires, ...	30
Since, Bacchus, thou art father	220
Since men have left to doe praise-worthy things, ...	49
•Since that the Moon was so unkind to make me go about.	446
Since you must goe, and I must bid farewell, ...	199
Sir, I am thankfull, first, to heaven, for you ;	189
Sir Inigo doth feare i t a s I heare	407
Sir Lucklesse. troth, for lucks sake passe by one:	42
•Sir : nowe all troopes have left you, none attend	435
Sitting, and ready t o b edrawne, ...	275
So, justest Lord, may all your Judgements be	185
•So Peleus. when he faire Thetis got, ...	429
So Phoebus makes me worthy of his bayes, ...	73
Some act of Love's bound to reherse, ...	93
Some men, of Bookes or Freinds not speaking right, ...	386
Sonne. and my Friend, I had not call'd you so	241
Sonnes, seeke not me amonge these polish'd stones :	387
Spies, you are lights in state, but of base stuffe.	45
Splendor I O more then mortall, ...	364
Stay, view this stone : And, if thou beest not such, ...	371
Strength of my Countrey, whilst I bring to view	69
Such pleasure as the teeming Earth	250
Surly's old whore in her new silkes doth swim :	54
•Tell me who can when a player dies	439
Temporibus lux magna fuit luvenalis avitis, ...	381
That Cod can get no widow, yet a knight, ...	33
That I, hereafter, doe not thinke the Barre	186
That Love's a bitter sweet, I ne're conceive	197
That neither fame, nor love might wanting be	48
That, not a paire of fhends each other see, ...	81
That Poets are far rarer birthes then kings.	53
That thou art lov'd of God, this worke is done.	268

672 *Index of First Lines of the Poems.*

	PAGE
That tfaou hast kept thy love, encreast thy will, . . .	63
That we thy losse might know, and thou our love, . . .	43
That you have seene the pride, beheld the sport, . . .	234
Th'expençe in odours is a most vaine sinne, . . .	33
•The Gods deare issue. Our great Joves increase. . .	430
The humble Petition o f poore Ben. . .	259
The Judge his favour timely then extends. . .	186
The Kinge. the Queene, the Prince God blesse. . .	419
The ports of death are sinnes ; of life, good deeds : . .	53
The Things that make the happier life, are these. . .	295
The wise, and many-headed Bench, that sits . . .	370
The Wisdome, Madam, o f your private Life, . . .	224
Then his chaste wife, though Beast now know no more, . .	35
There's reason good, that you good lawes should make: . .	34
These Mysteries do point to three more great. . .	413
They are not. Sir, worst Owers, that doe pay . . .	169
They are not those, are present with theyre face. . .	384
They talke of Fencing, and the use of Armes, . . .	232
This Booke will live : It hath a Genius: This . . .	400
This Figure, that thou here seest put, . . .	390
This is King Charles his Day. Speak it, thou Towre, . .	249
This morning, timely rapt with holy fire, . . .	52
Those that in blood such violent pleasure have, . . .	363
Thou art not, Penshurst. built to envious show, . . .	93
Thou call'st me Poet, as a terme of shame : . . .	29
Thou, Friend, wilt heare all censures ; unto thee . . .	232
Thou hast begun well. Roe, which stand well too, . . .	63
Thou, that mak'st gaine thy end, and wisely well, . . .	27
Thou, that wouldst finde the habit of true passion, . .	362
Though Beautie b e the Marke o f praise, . . .	173
Tho', happy Muse, thou know my Digby well, . . .	262
Though thou hast past thy Summer standing, stay . . .	252
Thy praise, or dispraise is to me alike. . .	46
Tilter, the most may'admire thee, though not I : . .	36
'Tis a Record in heaven. You, that were . . .	399
'Tis growne almost a danger t o speake true . . .	116
'Tis true. I'm broke ! Vowes. Oathes. and all I had. . .	191
To day old Janus opens the new yeare. . .	263
To draw no envy (Shakespeare) on thy name, . . .	390
•To make the Doubt cleare that no Woman's true, . . .	194
T o m y worthy and deserving Brother . . .	666
To night, grave sir, both my poore house, and I . . .	64
•To paint thy Worth, if rightly I did know it . . .	226
To plucke downe mine. Poll sets up new wits still, . .	50
To put out the word, where, thou do'st me woo. . .	54
To the wonders of the Peake, . . .	416
To thee, my way in Epigramxnes seemes new. . .	32
To urge, my lov'd Alphonso, that bold fame . . .	82
Touch'd with the sinne of false play, in his punque,. . .	56
Trie and trust Roger, was the word, but now . . .	378

Index of First Lines of the Poems. 573

	PAGE
Truth is the triall of it selfe.	383
'Twere time that I dy'd too, now shee is dead.	387
Two noble knights, whome true desire and zeale,	382
•Underneath this sable Herse	433
Up publike joy, remember.	239
Uv'dale, thou piece of the firsttimes, a man	79
Venus, againe thou mov'st a warre	292
Wake, friend, from forth thy Lethargic : the Drum	162
Warres greatest woes, and miseries increase,	363
Weepe with me a l l y o u that read	77
Welcome all, who lead or follow.	657
Were they that nam'd you, prophets ? Did they see.	67
What Beautie would have lovely stilde,	188
What can the cause be, when the King hath given	241
What charming Peales a r e these,	401
What gentle ghost, besprent with April d e a w ,	268
What I am not, and what I faine would be,	216
What is't, fine Grand, makes thee my friendship flye,	51
What need hast thou of me ? or of my Muse ?	40
What two brave perills of the private sword	37
When first, my Lord, I saw you backe your horse,	228
*When Hope and Prudence kept this House,	447
When I had read your holy Meditations.	411
When I would know thee Goodyere, my thought looks	55
When late (grave Palmer) these thy grafis and flowers	361
When men a dangerous disease did scape,	31
When Mill first came to court, the unprofiting foole.	57
When Nature bids us leave to live, 'tis late	50
When, Rome, I reade thee in thy mighty paire,	395
•When shall wee meete againe and have a tast	448
•When the world was drown'd	447
When these, and such, their voices have employd ;	385
When was there contract better driven by Fate ?	28
When we doe give, Alphonso, to the light,	82
•When witt, and leaminge are so hardly sett	418
•Whenever I die, let this be my fate.	444
Where art thou, Genius ? I should use	176
Where do'st thou carelesse lie,	174
Where lately harbour'd many a famous whore.	29
Which of thy names I take, not onely beares	58
While Beast instructs his faire, and innocent wife,	34
Whilst, Lydia, I was lov'd of thee.	293
Whil'st that, for which, all vertue now is sold,'	113
Whil'st thy weigh'd judgements, Egerton. I heare,	51
Who can consider thy right courses run,	47
Who dares denie, that all first-fruits are due	235
Who Edmonds, reades thy booke, and doth not see	72

674 *Index of First Lines of the Poems.*

	PAGE
Who now calls on thee. Nevil, is a Muse, ...	70
Who saith our Times nor have, nor can	366
Who sayes that Giles and Jone at discord be ?	40
Who shall doubt, Donne, where I a Poet bee. . . .	62
Who takes thy volume to his vertuous hand, ...	383
Who tracks this Authors, or Translators Pen, ...	389
Who would not be thy subject, James, to'obay	37
Whoever he be, would write a Story at	379
Whose worke could this be, Chapman, to refine	388
Why. Disease, dost thou molest	104
Why ? though I seeme of a prodigious wast, ...	226
Why yet, my noble hearts, they cannot say	213
With thy small stocke, why art thou ventring still, ...	72
Would God, my Burges, I could thinke. . . .	229
Would you beleeve, when you this Mounsieur see, ...	56
Would'st thou heare, what man can say	79
Wretched and foolish Jealousie, ...	150
Writing thy selfe, or judging others writ, ...	78
.	
You looke, my Joseph, I should something say	414
You won not Verses. Madam, you won mee. . . .	230
You wonder, who this is I and. why I name	74

PRINTED IN
GREAT BRITAIN
AT THE
UNIVERSITY PRESS
OXFORD
BY
CHARLES BATEY
PRINTER
10 THE
UNIVERSITY

